



LONG LIVE SUMMONS

BOOK 05

Xia Fei Shuang Jia

EPUB CREATION BY LISA HAYES

Long Live Summons

(召唤万岁)

by

Xia Fei Shuang Jia

(霞飞双颊)

Synopsis

The Soaring Dragon Continent is a world of summons, you can only become strong if you become a summoner! Yue Yang, an average high school boy, was suddenly transported into this world. When he woke up, he was greeted with a lot of worried faces and found out that he had assumed another person's identity. Turns out he's the good-for-nothing third son of the Yue Family, who had just recently drowned himself because of a failed engagement. Unlike the third son of the Yue Family who was useless in summoning, Yue Yang succeeded in making a contract with a summoning grimoire on his first try, even when the other guy failed for the past fifteen years. Others would have a headache making contracts with beasts afterwards, but countless beasts tried to gain favour with Yue Yang instead, acting like a good kid before him.

Yue Yang the brat, however, didn't feel grateful at all: "Scram, Mythical Beasts! Do you think you are cool like that? Go away from me now, I only like beautiful summons!"

Even when royal families approached him for his talents, the shameless brat replied, "I'm not interested in government stuff, I'm only interested in beauties!"

Copyright © 2016 by Lisa Hayes

First Edition: October 2016

All rights reserved.

English Translation by Honey, Crayon, Janet, May, Sheng, Andy, Shiro, Augere, Yunichan, Taffy, youcanbeKing, Sephilia, Zaza, Shiroyukineko, Ignis @ [Shiroyukineko Translations](#)

Translation Edits by Khh, Rango, Krithika, Based Jessica @ [Shiroyukineko Translations](#)

ePub conversion by Lisa Hayes @ [Hasseno Blog](#)

This is a free eBook. You are free to give it away (in unmodified form) to whomever you wish.

No part of this eBook may be reproduced or transmitted in any form or by any means, electronic or mechanical, including photocopying, recording or by any information storage and retrieval system, without written permission from the author.

This book is a work of fiction. Names, characters, places, and incidents either are products of the author's imagination or are used fictitiously. Any resemblance to actual persons, living or dead, events, or locales is entirely coincidental.

Chapter 401 – Fight, Fight!

“My God... “ All the adventurers were scared witless as the devious vibe given off by Hui Tai Lang almost suffocated them to death.

“We are dead, it flew away! “ Some realised that they were in trouble as Hui Tai Lang had grown a pair of wings and flew away. Then what about them? Without Hui Tai Lang’s protection, the Flame Demon Commanders would definitely not mind having some beastman or human meat for dinner. They would not even mind having the coarse meat of the ox-head people.

“Quickly, think of something!” Some people panicked as they shouted towards Anna and Lin En, asking them to find a way to save them.

“Call it back! “ some shameless ones even treated Hui Tai Lang as their guard dog.

“Apologies, but we are not its master, if you have the ability, you can call it back!” Seeing these selfish people, Lin En felt disgusted by them instantly. He shrugged his shoulders and indicated that he wasn’t able to help.

“Rest assured, it’s master is fighting over there! Didn’t you see all the fire Monsters and Flame Demons rushing over to help? “ Anna laughed aloofly in contempt.

“Eh?” The adventurers turned their head and realised that it was

true.

All the Flame Demons and Fire Demons who were besieging the lot in the lava lake rushed towards where the tornado was, as if under certain command.

Even those Fire Eels that were hiding in the river bed made their way out.

Seeing that they were no longer in danger, everyone heaved a sigh of relief. Even Ou Gen who was a veteran in the battlefield also felt that he had a narrow escape. The restrictions in the Fire Palace was simply too stringent, causing everyone's power to be diminished to the minimum and only a few with fire type Beast had some combat power.

After the danger passed, the adventurers started to harbour ill thoughts again.

“That Holy Beast has a master? But it doesn't seem to be contracted... “ This shook the hearts of many.

“If only I could contract that Holy Beast!” Despite knowing that it would be impossible, some still couldn't contain their imaginations and those who let their imaginations run wild were already drooling a waterfall. Looking at their shameless behaviour, Ou Gen couldn't help but to despise them deeply. Being associated with these overly confident and greedy people was simply a disgrace. He made the Iron Blood Guards surround the place so as to protect Lin En and Anna. Although nobody had launched a

sneak attack, men are unpredictable animals, so he had to do some sort of defense.

“Idiots!” A Dragon Hunter hiding among the adventurers summoned a Red Flame Flying Dragon and laughed out loud. “Although it is regrettable that I wouldn’t be able to get the treasures here, it will still be rewarding if I can seize this chance to get rid of you all! Die!”

The Red Flame Flying Dragon was Gold-ranked Level 7. Although it was considered quite high-levelled, if everyone come together to attack it, it could be defeated quite easily.

However, due to the restrictions, the Iron Blood Guards’ beasts that were mostly strengthening type Beasts wouldn’t be able to retaliate. The consequences would be unthinkable if they came under attack.

Ou Gen’s heart sank to the bottom of his stomach.

It’s over, he forgot that there was still an evil Dragon Hunter lurking in the team...

When Hui Tai Lang arrived at the central lava lake, Yue Yang was floating in mid air as the Spirit of Flame and Smoke was using her violent tornado to draw in all the lava from below. The entire sky seemed to be filled with raging flame as the Spirit of Flame and Smoke was fighting solo against two Gold King Beast-ranked Guardians of the Fire Palace. The one that couldn’t fly was the ‘Purgatory Flame King’, its body was as huge as a Mountain Giant,

with a height of 30 metres and weighing a hundred ton. It was Platinum-ranked Level 7 and its entire body was made up of rocks and lava, its high temperature prevented anyone alive from going near it. As compared to the King of Black Light, the Purgatory Flame King's ability to kill was even more terrifying. It could be considered to be a super strong Beast that would cause a lot of headache under normal circumstances.

Furthermore, in the Fire Palace that only fire type Beasts could fight, it was even stronger than ever.

In the sky, the other Guardian of the Fire Palace was the 'Red Spirit Fire Demoness'. Although she was only Platinum-rank Level 6, her combat power wasn't weaker than that of the Purgatory Flame King.

She who evolved to possess a human form was more intelligent than the Purgatory Flame King, and in her long course of evolution, she might become a Holy Beast in the future.

However, the current stronger Purgatory Flame King would never become one. This was the difference between the two King-ranked Beasts.

The Red Spirit Fire Demoness was five metres tall with her entire body engulfed in flames. She wasn't very agile when flying as her speed was slowed down by her heavy weight, but her speed was already considered fast, because there was a huge difference between King-ranked Beasts that could fly and those that couldn't. Not only did the Red Spirit Fire Demoness know how to fly, she also knew how to use a weapon. Brandishing a Gold-ranked Fire

Scythe, she slashed it towards Yue Yang repeatedly... Of course they were all in vain as Yue Yang was faster than her by a hundred times, he could even walk idly on the edge of the Fire Scythe.

The Fire Scythe was rendered useless towards Yue Yang and attacking the Spirit of Flame and Smoke who was in the elemental form of a violent tornado was also useless.

The Red Spirit Fire Demoness was initially very depressed, but upon seeing Hui Tai Lang, she immediately switched target and charged towards Hui Tai Lang viciously.

“Awooooo!”

How could Hui Tai Lang, who was intending to show off its skills in front of its master, be scared of her?

Her actions fit its intention perfectly!

Hui Tai Lang's claws changed like a dense liquid as it elongated and reached out towards the Red Spirit Fire Demoness's skull...The Red Spirit Fire Demoness moved backwards slightly and slashed her Fire Scythe down with strength, chopping Hui Tai Lang's back into half.

Not only so, she also used lava as a whip to strike one half of Hui Tai Lang's body and sent them flying into the air.

She thought that Hui Tai Lang would definitely die from the

blow...

Who would know that Hui Tai Lang didn't care at all as it already possessed an undying body like Huang Sha. Its two halved bodies turned into golden sand and rose into the air as if alive, returning back to their respective places and forming a new body that was as good as before in an instant. The Fire Scythe that slashed its body were held tightly by Hui Tai Lang's dense liquid-like claws. To Hui Tai Lang, the fire from the Fire Scythe was completely ineffective against him... After absorbing the nucleus of the Level Eight Innate Huang Sha, Hui Tai Lang had possessed an undead body too. It wouldn't be killed unless the nucleus in its body was destroyed completely.

And after becoming a Divine Beast, Hui Tai Lang gained the power to imitate, fly and morph into different shapes. Its combat power was boosted tremendously.

How could a mere Red Spirit Fire Demoness dream to kill it?

How could it be so easy!

Being a Gold, Dark and Fire type Beast, it was even stronger than Huang Sha who had an undying body.

Huang Sha's undead body was weak to water while Hui Tai Lang's weaknesses were water and light. It might seem that Hui Tai Lang was weaker than Huang Sha due to the additional weakness, but they were not lethal. Water and light definitely wouldn't kill Hui Tai Lang, because Hui Tai Lang was also a metal

type Beast.

The types complemented each other, so its body was a real undying body.

And this was merely just the beginning.

After unleashing its potential fully, together with the Heaven Runes and Innate Qi, it would attain an unimaginable state.

Yue Yang had nurtured Hui Tai Lang with an effort that was more than enough for it to level up to a Divine Beast. Yue Yang wished that Hui Tai Lang could become like Xiao Wen Li, who surpassed the level of being a Divine Beast, and become a Transcending Divine Beast...

Hui Tai Lang and Xiao Wen Li's direction of growth differed and their starting points differed too.

Xiao Wen Li was born possessing a Diamond Grimoire, Yue Yang wasn't sure but she was probably born a Transcending Divine Beast too. On the other hand, Hui Tai Lang was nothing when it was born, and maybe it wouldn't ever become a Transcending Divine Beast like Xiao Wen Li or Immortal beasts like the Phoenix Sisters. But Yue Yang still hoped that it would be able to surpass all Beasts in the world and become the strongest of them all one day.

Just like how not every Thorny Flower could ranked up to become like the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen, not every

wolf could become a World Exterminating Demonic Wolf.

They were epitomes of all creatures, and they were all unique.

The Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen is unique, so is the World Exterminating Demonic Wolf!

Hui Tai Lang need not become like others, it need not become like Xiao Wen Li, Red, [Duo Duo](#) or Ah Man, it just have to be itself! It is Hui Tai Lang, one that nobody in the world can replace!

(want2eat: Duo Duo is a nickname Yue Yang had for the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen)

The current Hui Tai Lang had definitely surpassed all wolves and become the one and only World Exterminating Demonic Wolf. It could even continue to level up from there... The course of its growth was definitely a legend and a miracle among miracles. Of course, if it weren't for Yue Yang, the abnormal man from another world, who had given it everything, Hui Tai Lang would definitely not be the Hui Tai Lang it is today!

“Ah!”

On seeing that Hui Tai Lang had an undead body, the Red Spirit Fire Demoness was extremely frightened and backed off quickly.

The giant Fire Scythe was engulfed by Hui Tai Lang who was in a dense liquid state.

Suddenly it flew towards Yue Yang for help. Yue Yang reached out his hands and drew Heaven Rune Circles on its body. He also channelled an immense amount of Innate Qi to help it assimilate the Fire Scythe.

A dull golden glow shimmered off Hui Tai Lang's body and radiated through the sky.

The Fire Scythe that was engulfed appeared on Hui Tai Lang's back gradually, and with every Heaven Rune that Yue Yang drew, it was absorbed into Hui Tai Lang's body slowly, the first Heaven Runes was 'Melting' and the second one was 'Transform' and the third was 'Recover'. After stabilising it, the Fire Scythe then went out of Hui Tai Lang's back and shot towards the sky with a fiery flame.

However, when the Fire Scythe fell back to the ground, it avoided its original master, the Red Spirit Fire Demoness, and went towards its new master, Hui Tai Lang.

"Ah!" The Red Spirit Fire Demoness cried in alarm, she hadn't expected that a treasure she refined herself would be assimilated by her opponent in front of her.

"Awoooooooooo!" Hui Tai Lang howled proudly.

A deafening roar resonated through the sky, and echoed throughout the Fire Palace.

Dark Hell Flame burst out from its body, forming a long flaming fire tail that latched onto Hui Tai Lang's new high-quality weapon, the Gold-ranked 'Origin Fire Scythe'. Hui Tai Lang waved the Fire Scythe towards the Red Spirit Fire Demoness's body, slashing her... with an unbelievable speed!

The Red Spirit Fire Demoness wasn't fast enough to dodge and before she knew it, she was slashed into half by the Origin Fire Scythe, just like how Hui Tai Lang had been slashed just now.

The Red Spirit Fire Demoness who possessed Fire Nucleus wasn't in life-threatening danger as she would heal and return back to normal after some time of recuperation in the lava lake.

But the situation was ever changing, as the Spirit of Flame and Smoke that attacked the Purgatory Flame King just now floated out of the violent tornado and morphed into a Fire Girl covered in raging flame. She dived down and embraced the halved body of the Red Spirit Fire Demoness and started to absorb her energy. The Red Spirit Fire Demoness screamed as she did not dare to go near the Spirit of Flame and Smoke due to her Nirvana's Flame, and her paralysing electricity attack... Within half a minute, the pure Fire Ability in the consciousnessless halved body had been fully assimilated by the Spirit of Flame and Smoke. The leftover part of the body slowly hardened to form a black rock and sunk into the Lava lake.

The body of the Spirit of Flame and Smoke became clearer, her lower body that was initially covered in flame and smoke started to morph into human form.

She got a pair of legs now.

Just with a little more Fire Ability, she could rank up by one level.

Desiring to rank up, she looked at the Red Spirit Fire Demoness. In her instinct, she did not see the Red Spirit Fire Demoness as an alive being but merely a delicious meal.

The Red Spirit Fire Demoness was both shocked and angry. She wanted to kill the Spirit of Flame and Smoke very much, but in the Fire Palace, killing her wouldn't be possible. It couldn't be determined by level or rank as skills was all that mattered when Beasts of the same type fight in a mutually favourable geographical environment.

Or it could be said that it would be dependant on their intelligence.

The side that was more intelligent and knew how to make full use of the opponent's weakness and complement them with their own strength would emerge victorious.

Hui Tai Lang who had switched opponent morphed into a meteorite like ball and went to bombard the head of the Purgatory Flame King...

The impact of the bombardment shook the entire lava lake.

As the Purgatory Flame King fell into the lava lake, it caused the

burning lava in the lava lake to splatter up a few hundred metres.

Hui Tai Lang who was using its new body to knock down its opponent was similarly dizzy from the shake and regained its wolf form. It then flapped its fire wings and flew at a crooked angle over the lake, like a drunk adventurer.

Yue Yang laughed at it because he had never seen a fool like Hui Tai Lang. He guessed that only Hui Tai Lang would choose to knock down a lava giant like the Purgatory Flame King straight without thinking.

But Yue Yang did not correct Hui Tai Lang and allowed Hui Tai Lang to do whatever it wanted.

Because, after all, this is a battle. This is the process of growing up and a chance to learn!

Chapter 402 – Rock, Scissors, Paper

The Purgatory Flame King was incensed as he reached out his giant hands to drag Hui Tai Lang into the lava lake.

Any beast with a physical body would not be able to fight in a geographical location like the Fire Palace.

More often than not, in a beast fight, location and timing played a bigger role in turning the tables around than skills. For example, even though a Gold-ranked Level 10 Golden Mammoth might be invincible during battle, it would still die instantly if it were to fall down from a height of a few thousand metres. Or taking for example the powerful Purgatory Flame King, if it were to fall into the ocean, it would die before it could even fight and turn into a pile of broken stones... To defeat the Ghost Army that was immune to all attacks, shining them with a ray of sunshine would do.

Cases like these were countless.

Of course, Hui Tai Lang wasn't willing to bathe in the lava lake.

As Hui Tai Lang flapped its fire wings to resist being pulled by the Purgatory Flame King, it used its newly obtained Origin Fire Scythe to slash the Purgatory Flame King's head repeatedly.

Sparks and broken stones flew everywhere. A Gold-ranked equipment's strength was nothing towards the Purgatory Flame King's body that was made of stone. The strength of Hui Tai Lang's flapping definitely paled in comparison with the arm strength of

the Purgatory Flame King's giant arms.

After struggling for a few minutes, Hui Tai Lang was dragged into the lava lake. It struggled with its claws with all of its might, but to no avail.

Yue Yang watched in silence but did not attempt to stop all this.

Few of those Flame Demon Commanders and Fire Monsters that came from far away to help knew how to battle in a long distance fight. Spewing lava and fireballs, the Fire Monsters aimed them towards Yue Yang, but of course all these were meaningless. Although Yue Yang was constrained by the restrictions, he still possessed his skills and strength. He could even ignore all these painless attacks.

When Yue Yang was in mid air, he could dodge all the lava and fireballs just by shifting his body slightly.

When the Spirit of Flame and Smoke saw Hui Tai Lang being dragged into the lava lake, she was angered. She unleashed a world-shaking violent tornado, almost lifting the Purgatory Flame King's body into mid air.

The Purgatory Flame King held onto the fiery red giant reef along the edge of the lava lake embarrassingly, trying to get hold of himself amidst the violent tornado.

If not for it weighing a few hundred tonnes, it would have been

sucked in by the violent tornado.

Large amounts of lava were sucked up into the sky by the violent tornado and splashed all around, causing a rain of lava.

The Flame Demons that were too close and weren't quick enough to escape were immediately sucked up into the sky, their bodies dismantled and broken apart in the centre of the tornado that was like a spiral-shaped whirl of sharp blades, causing them to suffer a horrible death.

There was a large red rock in the distance.

There was a fire ball covered in lava climbing onto it, and like a dog that had fallen into the water, it was desperately shaking its body.

After a long while, the lava dripped off and Hui Tai Lang was revealed underneath... The lava lake wasn't able to kill Hui Tai Lang who possessed an undying body, but it still made Hui Tai Lang suffer as it kept sneezing. The Purgatory Flame King charged towards Hui Tai Lang, reaching his giant hands out to it as he prepared to drag it into the lava lake again. But using the same trick on Hui Tai Lang twice proved to be ineffective. Hui Tai Lang had already morphed into the form of fire hence the Purgatory Flame King weren't able to seize Hui Tai Lang at all. His fingers had passed through Hui Tai Lang... Hui Tai Lang in the fire form exclaimed proudly. "Meow~!"

The meaning of its exclamation was, "Unimpressive, this trick is

outdated already.”

Unfortunately even a cat wouldn't be able to understand what it said.

Waving a strong punch, the Purgatory Flame King smashed the rock under Hui Tai Lang's feet into pieces, but Hui Tai Lang in fire form was still floating in mid air, unharmed.

Its long firetail, curled with its Origin Fire Scythe rained blows on the Purgatory Flame King with a tingling sound. These resulted in a few faint scratches onto solid rock, but towards the Purgatory Flame King, it was nothing and weren't able to injure him.

The situation went on with Hui Tai Lang unable to do anything with the Purgatory Flame King and vice versa.

They came to a stalemate temporarily.

Hui Tai Lang gained the upper hand slightly because it still had chances of defeating the Purgatory Flame King, as long as it found a viable way. But the Purgatory Flame King definitely wouldn't be able to defeat Hui Tai Lang in fire form.

On the other hand, the Spirit of Flame and Smoke bullied the Red Spirit Fire Demoness who was of a higher level terribly.

The injured Red Spirit Fire Demoness hid in the lava lake, but the Spirit of Flame and Smoke had the power to enter the lava lake.

She had always liked to live in volcanoes. Both fought a tough battle, and although the Red Spirit Fire Demoness was of a higher level than the Spirit of Flame and Smoke, her attack towards the Spirit of Flame and Smoke was useless. On the contrary, both the Nirvana Flame and Electricity of the Spirit of Flame and Smoke could injure the Red Spirit Fire Demoness, especially the Nirvana Flame that caused the Red Spirit Fire Demoness to be scared witless.

Both chased each other around and in a blink of the eye, they went out of the central region.

On seeing that Yue Yang did not stop her, the Spirit of Flame and Smoke went after the Red Spirit Fire Demoness immediately, and swore to devour her Fire Ability completely.

The Purgatory Flame King got beaten up horribly by Hui Tai Lang. Whenever the opportunity comes, Hui Tai Lang would fly into the sky and morph into a meteorite to crash onto the Purgatory Flame King, causing the strongest Guardian of the Fire Palace much headache. Finally, the Purgatory Flame King decided to hide into the lava lake to avoid Hui Tai Lang temporarily.

Although this would tarnish the grace of his royalty, it was better than to be beaten up by his opponent for nothing.

On seeing the Purgatory Flame King's withdrawal, Hui Tai Lang was furious.

If he couldn't win the fight, then he should have just conceded

defeat and give up his treasures willingly. Why is he being such an ostrich now?

Hui Tai Lang was really incensed this time!

On seeing that the Flame Demon Commanders and Fire Demons standing around, watching blindly, Hui Tai Lang turned to kill all of these insignificant creatures. Although Hui Tai Lang couldn't kill the big one, it would definitely be able to kill the smaller ones. Except for the Flame Demon Commanders, the rest were killed instantly by Hui Tai Lang.

All the Flame Demons and Fire Monsters dispersed and almost all fire type Beasts went to hide at the bottom of the lava lake, and no matter how Hui Tai Lang killed their comrades, they wouldn't come out.

Hui Tai Lang raised its head and howled into the air, feeling gloomy.

Although it wasn't afraid of the heat of the lava lake, Hui Tai Lang wouldn't be able to catch its opponent if it were to dive in.

The power of the Fire Monsters might be weak, but in the lava lake, they were even more agile than fishes and prawns. Hui Tai Lang chased around for a long while but to no avail.

“Ha! Idiot!” On seeing it, Yue Yang burst out laughing, but he did not advise Hui Tai Lang on any way to continue the fight as he

wanted Hui Tai Lang to think about it on its own.

“Awooooo...” On realising that its master wasn’t willing to help, Hui Tai Lang turned his eyes, and grew a pair of fire wings to besiege and attack the injured Red Spirit Fire Demoness. Sure enough, it was the best way. On seeing Hui Tai Lang’s arrival, the Red Spirit Fire Demoness grew even more panicky as she ran mindlessly. If she were to return back to where the Purgatory Flame King was, she could make use of his immense size as a cover up, and hopefully she would be able to continue the fight.

This decision made the start of the tragedy of the Red Spirit Fire Demoness.

Her power was way weaker than Hui Tai Lang, and was slower in terms of speed. Her intelligence differed from Hui Tai Lang even greater. The only strength she had was the ability to hide in the lava lake to recuperate.

But this strength was rendered useless by the presence of the Spirit of Flame and Smoke.

In the lava lake, the Spirit of Flame and Smoke was even stronger than the Red Spirit Fire Demoness, she could even absorb all of the pure Fire Ability in her body directly.

Within a minute after the battle started, the Red Spirit Fire Demoness was hit by Hui Tai Lang. While she was dizzy from the strike, Hui Tai Lang threw her onto the stone wall directly, causing her body to cave into the wall. The Spirit of Flame and Smoke

charged forth immediately, absorbing all her pure Fire Ability crazily. The Red Spirit Fire Demoness wanted to struggle, but due to Hui Tai Lang who was pressing her down with all its strength like the accomplice of a rapist, this caused the Spirit of Flame and Smoke with 'animal instincts' to take everything away from her... In the end, even her Fire Crystals were sucked out, and was immediately refined by the Nirvana Flame.

After absorbing the Fire Ability and devouring the Fire Crystal, a golden light shimmered off the body of Spirit of Flame and Smoke.

Raging flames rose to the sky.

Thick smoke rose to the sky as if there was a volcanic eruption, and smoke started to fill up the entire Fire Palace.

Thunder rumbled and lightning flashed amidst the thick smoke, giving off a blinding brightness amidst all the noises.

After absorbing the energy in the body of the Red Spirit Fire Demoness, the Spirit of Flame and Smoke started to evolve and morphed into a new form... Her new form was even closer to human form as her ten fingers were distinct, and toes grew out from her feet. Although it was not yet near to being perfect as they would disappear sometimes, at least she developed new features. It could be said that it was like a rebirth, because regardless of her physique or internal body, several human-like features had developed. Of course, these features were formed by fire energy, they were only similar to a human in terms of appearance.

The fire crystal of the Red Spirit Fire Demoness was refined and became a heart gradually.

It differed greatly from a human's heart as it was a ball of flame that was beating with temperature close to a thousand degrees!

Yue Yang's Grimoire appeared and flipped pages automatically. Now the Spirit of Flame and Smoke had switched occupation, but did not level up. She had evolved to become the 'Spirit of Earth Fire'.

"Looks like this is just the beginning of her evolution." Yue Yang remembered that she was a Spirit of Fire and Mist initially, then she became the Spirit of Flame and Smoke, and then now after absorbing the core fire energy, she became the Spirit of Earth Fire. Could it be that she'd become the Spirit of Heaven Fire in the future? Or even Spirit of Nirvana Flames?

Her future evolution would be unpredictable, but Yue Yang was anticipating the future evolved Spirit of Earth Fire.

In short, evolution was definitely a good thing.

No matter which direction the beast was growing towards, as long as it was able to evolve, it'd be good!

Now, her thick smoke had turned into beautiful, shiny black hair while her raging flames had become her body. The tornado had become her mount and electricity was her weapon. With these

changes, it would mark the beginning of the suffering of the Purgatory Flame King. However, the Spirit of Earth Fire was still far from being in human form. Her black hair wasn't very visible and her tornado wasn't similar to a mount, it was actually spiral-shaped. Her electricity did not have a fixed shape and was merely flickering randomly on her arms. But even so, Yue Yang was still delighted.

Any evolutions would pale in comparison to the growth of intelligence... Although the Spirit of Earth Fire lacked intelligence and self control, she had already started to develop a consciousness.

As long as she continued to evolve, she would definitely follow the footsteps of the Bloody Queen and the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen and become a Holy Beast. At least she was moving in the direction of becoming human-like now.

The Purgatory Flame King could only barely defend against her previously, but after her evolution to become the Spirit of Earth Fire, the Purgatory Flame King quickly escaped when she plunged into the lava lake.

Facing the Spirit of Earth Fire that could take in Fire Ability directly in the lava lake, the Purgatory Flame King realised that he wasn't the master of fire anymore. Majority of the fire in the lava lake was controlled by the Spirit of Earth Fire, if he didn't hide, he would solidify at the bottom of the lava lake due to loss of body temperature.

And in the end, his Fire Ability would be sucked dry and the

Purgatory Flame King's energy would wither and die.

“Boom, boom!” The Purgatory Flame King moved ferociously on the surface of the lava lake as he waved his arms vigorously in an attempt to swim away.

“Meow!” Hui Tai Lang was pleased. Serves you right!

Hui Tai Lang reminded the Purgatory Flame King not to forget about it.

Facing attacks from both the Spirit of Earth Fire and Hui Tai Lang, the clumsy Purgatory Flame King lost his favourable geographical location. Even if he could still persevere now, he would definitely face a tragic end. Yue Yang didn't have to continue watching because he knew what the outcome would be. The only question now was whether Hui Tai Lang could devour the Purgatory Flame King's Fire Crystal in its skull before the Spirit of Earth Fire did.

With the cunning Hui Tai Lang and the Spirit of Earth Fire's lack of intelligence, Hui Tai Lang would most probably succeed.

But if it were to be the Bloody Queen or the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen, Hui Tai Lang would definitely fail. Even if it was the Barbarian Cow Shadow, Hui Tai Lang's chances would be slim. The loyal Barbarian Cow Shadow would probably snatch it away and give it to her master... Okay, it's fine for Hui Tai Lang to bully the Spirit of Earth Fire and the Reaper Mantis, at least for now.

After absorbing the Purgatory Fire Crystals, Yue Yang believed that it would increase Hui Tai Lang's combat power.

Yue Yang did not count on its combat power to boost rapidly, but it would be nice if it could help Hui Tai Lang to level up its Bronze Grimoire by a few levels. After all, one has to take things slowly.

After finding the Fire Palace Teleportation Circle, Yue Yang left the hot Fire Palace and went for the last Palace among the Five Elements Palace.

The Sand Palace.

After teleporting, even before he reach the ground, Yue Yang realised that there was a huge crowd below him.

A huge crowd of people was cowering on top of the Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle's back as thousands of hyenas and desert spiders surrounded them. The most ridiculous thing that Yue Yang saw was that a Platinum-ranked Level 10 'King of Earth' that was over 50 metres tall was actually rocking its enormous stony head and huge arms, playing a wagering game with a scrawny-looking human.

That human that looked scrawny in comparison to the King of Earth was none other than Ye Kong.

"If you lose, ten of these men will be mine. After giving me ten

men, we can bet again. If you win, I'll return you 20, if you lose again, you will give me ten men again. Don't hesitate, a real man is never indecisive! Ten of you come down now, if you can't, I will take you all down personally and if i were to break your bones in the process, don't complain that I'm too rough!" This 'King of Earth' was astute, needless to say, he was definitely a Holy Beast. Although he was only higher than the Purgatory Flame King by three levels, his real power might be superior to him by a hundred times.

Forget about him being a superior being in the Sand Palace, even outside of this place, the combined power of Ye Kong, Fatty Hai, Li brothers, Xue Tan Lang, Prince Tian Luo and the rest of the adventurers might not even be enough to defeat him.

The King of Earth had a skill, as long as his feet remained on the ground, the ground would give him limitless energy.

In other words, his energy would never run out.

It was just like the Thorny Flower's 'Take Root', but his skill was even more direct and convenient than that.

Together with the enormous size of the King of Earth's body, with a height of over 50 metres and weighing over a few hundred tonnes, forget about its strong combat power, even if he were to only roll around on the ground, he would be able to crush alot of people...

And if he were to really fight, Ye Kong would be a dead meat even

if he had a hundred lives.

Even if Ye Kong had the Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle, he wouldn't be able to defend against a few punches from the King of Earth.

After Ye Kong betted for a long while, with the bettings mixed with wins and losses, Ye Kong and the King of Earth came to a draw. But his luck ran out as before Yue Yang arrived, Ye Kong had already lost ten rounds consecutively. On top of losing the Desert Spiders that he won previously, he also lost 60 men to the King of Earth.

Why would the King of Earth gamble with Ye Kong?

This made Yue Yang puzzled.

Could it be that he had stayed in the Sand Palace for too long that he got too bored?

“Rock, paper, scissors! Yay, I'm rock and you are scissors, you lost again, hahaha, give me ten men.” When Yue Yang saw the King of Earth playing ‘Rock, Paper, Scissors’ with Ye Kong, Yue Yang almost fell from the sky.

“Idiot!!” Yue Yang dived down in a flash and sent Ye Kong, who was wearing a sorrowful expression, flying into the sky with a mighty kick. “Hey! I love playing the Rock, Paper, Scissors game! Let me bet with you!” Yue Yang said as he lifted his sleeves.

Chapter 403 – What Treasures Do You Have?

Fire Palace, besides the lava river.

Ou Gen believed that they were definitely finished. The evil Dragon Hunter possessed a Red Flame Flying Dragon. Even though he has the ability to escape by himself, he was afraid that the Iron Blood Guards and adventurers would suffer disastrous casualties. The thing he was most worried about would be the Golden Elf woman in front of him. The Evil Dragon Hunter would definitely not let her go...

“You guys quickly run away, I can hold him for at least three minutes. Go!” Ou Gen gnashed his teeth and made a decision that even surprised himself.

He decided to use his body’s defenses to block the enemy in order to let Anna and Lin En escape from the Dragon Hunter’s evil clutches.

The Iron Blood Guards were not that weak and there should be no problem for them to run for their lives.

Regarding those shameless adventurers , Ou Gen was already unable to look after them. He only hoped that the most tragic outcome would not happen in front of him.

Although he cannot attack or summon his beasts, Ou Gen was

still someone who possessed the strength of a Level 1 Innate. Although he could not summon his beasts and his strength was greatly reduced, he believed that as long as he resisted, he could stop the Gold ranked Level 7 Red Flame Flying Dragon for a while. Whether he would still be alive after blocking his enemies, Ou Gen did not think about it. He was unable to summon any beasts and he could not fight back, this was truly... Ou Gen brought out a wrapping cloth from his storage bracelet and gave it to Lin En and Anna: “If I could not safely return, please give this to Elder Matthew of the Warriors Guild. He would help me pass it to my family.”

When Lin En and Anna saw this they were touched.

On the sixth floor of the Tong Tian Tower, other than their own teammates, who fought in life and death battles with each other, who would be so huge hearted and sacrifice themselves to save others?

Even those rescue teams hired by the Warriors Guild would only think of themselves in this kind of hopeless situation.

This middle aged uncle was truly a good person. He possessed honor and values that greatly surpass ordinary warriors.

With only these words of his, Lin En and Anna had developed deep respect for him.

Although Anna was nervous while facing the Dragon Hunter, she was not frantic. She turned around and advised Ou Gen: “The Red

Flame Flying Dragon is very strong. However, its weakness is as obvious as its strength. We should not panic. If everyone worked together to resist, then there is nothing to be afraid of. I believe that Hui Tai Lang would quickly return. Everyone, do not give up hope.”

Lin En did not know that Yue Yang had already left the Fire Palace and believed that as long as Yue Yang was there, there would be no problem.

As long as everybody stalled for time and wait for Yue Yang and Hui Tai Lang’s return, a single Gold Ranked Level 7 Red Flame Flying Dragon would not even be an enemy.

“Boom!”

Ten Iron Blood Guards raised their shield and forcibly blocked the aggressive breath of the Red Flame Flying Dragon.

The weakness and strength of the Red Flame Flying Dragon exists at the same place.

Its strength was that it was stronger than normal flying dragons and capable of breathing fire. It was similar to Lava Dragons and could be considered as one of the strongest flying dragons. The Red Flame Flying Dragon was faster than a Lava Dragon but its body’s build was somewhat inferior and could not live in lava. Moreover, it liked to live in groups and breathing flames on their prey in turns was their favorite past time. Other than being a fire-type beast that was immune to flames, no living creature would be able

to defend against the onslaught of a huge group of Red Flame Flying Dragons.

However, a single Red Flame Flying Dragon was not as scary.

The flames that it would breath out would always go on a straight line, so it could be easily dodged.

The most important thing was that their claws and teeth were not as strong as other normal flying dragons. Due to their small build that was made entirely of fire and their nature to live in flocks, the Red Flame Flying Dragon never needed to fight in close combat. Gradually, their claws and teeth degenerated over the years, hence they lost the ability to fight physically like normal flying dragons.

Everybody knew that the Red Flame Flying Dragon was not good at using its claws and teeth. It was completely different from War Dragons and Poisonous Dragons.

In other words, as long as it lost its ability to fly and fell on the ground, its battle strength would be greatly reduced.

If everybody worked as one to defend against the Red Flame Flying Dragon, then they could definitely stall for time.

However, when those adventurers saw the Red Flame Flying Dragon they had immediately escaped in all directions. In any case, the Dragon Hunter was not eyeing them, he was eyeing for the

Warrior's Guild's Iron Blood Guards and the two Golden Elves. If there was someone who was willing to stand forward and throw away their lives, then they naturally would not meddle in other's business and quickly scattered.

Those Iron Blood Guards knew that if they ran away, their lives would be forfeit. They used their all to guard to the death in front of Ou Gen.

They worked for a common purpose and raised their shields to protect others.

“Keep breathing flames and roast this group of iron turtles.” That Dragon Hunter also knew that his own Red Flame Flying Dragon's body was not very durable. It must continuously stay in the air and breathe flames, using the flames to kill the enemy. At the same time it was to create greater panic and break through the enemy's determination one by one. Only then would he be able to easily eliminate his enemies. No matter how long it took, he was not worried. The wolf beast Hui Tai Lang had already left and would probably not return for a while.

“Defend!” Ou Gen unsheathed the heavy sword on his back, stood at the very front and shouted.

The only thing they could do was make a gamble and defend until death.

If that wolf beast returns, everybody would be safe and sound. If it was too late, then everyone here would be dead...

The Dragon Hunter snorted and laughed: “You have a death wish!”

However, from the sky, a meteor suddenly smashed downwards with a boom. It smashed against the incomparably arrogant Dragon Hunter and made him kiss the ground. Although the Dragon Hunter did not immediately die, his entire body suffered serious damages. The Dragon Hunter shook away the meteor and struggled to crawl back up, swaying all the way. He discovered two boys standing in front of him. One had a face as cool as ice. He was holding his hands behind his back and did not even look at the Dragon Hunter once. The other one was so handsome that he would make other people jealous. The handsome guy snorted disdainfully, “Not bad, you have a Gold Ranked Red Flame Flying Dragon.. However, this does not give you the right to be arrogant.”

“Bastard!” When did the Dragon Hunter’s luck become so bad, meeting with this kind of misfortune?

“Roar...” The Red Flame Flying Dragon that wished to quickly protect its owner, swooped down and breathed fire on the two men’s bodies.

Before the Red Flame Flying Dragon’s fire even reached the handsome guy’s body, he immediately emitted an extremely hot, an even more powerful Skyfire than the dragon’s fire.

His Heaven Fire could completely ignore the effects of the flame breath.

However, the scarier one was the ice cool guy. Although it could not be seen clearly, whenever he received an attack, his body would quickly emit a bone-chilling frost.

The flame breath that the Red Flame Flying Dragon breathed out was instantly turned into an ice pillar by the the cool guy.

If it was not because of this space that restricted his abilities, the cool guy would probably have killed the Red Flame Flying Dragon on the spot.

“Tan Lang, Prince, it’s you guys?” Anna and Lin En called out in surprise.

“Let me slaughter this idiot first, then we’ll talk.” It was very difficult for the Prince of Tian Luo to finally find a good opportunity to show off his grandeur. He quickly summoned his element-type beast, Skyfire Meteor.

The Dragon Hunter was so scared that he immediately turned around and ran. His instincts told him that these two boys would not be easy targets to push around. If he did not run away, he would be dead.

However, it was too late.

Prince of Tian Luo’s Skyfire Meteor was originally very strong. It has especially become stronger after Yue Yang had taught it the

Great Totem Pole Battle Technique and matched it with Hui Tai Lang for sparring. Its original weakness, being hard to be controlled and slow to summon, had been solved. Within the fire-type beasts' ranking, if those who evolved because of wisdom did not exist, the Sky Fire Meteor would be number one.

If the Dragon Hunter was not inside the Fire Palace and was outside this sealed space, he would probably have a chance to escape.

Now, the Dragon Hunter could only suffer a beating and could not counter.

Under the Prince of Tian Luo's command, the Sky Fire Meteor in the air quickly shot down from the sky. It ingeniously made a turn in midair and once again smashed towards the escaping Dragon Hunter... Even if the Dragon Hunter still had the strength to resist, he would still not be able to block the Sky Fire Meteor's second attack and immediately died on the spot. The Red Flame Flying Dragon also self destructed in midair due to his owner's death. Its magic crystal flew in midair and landed on Xue Tan Lang's hands.

Prince of Tian Luo quickly charged over to see if the dead Dragon Hunter had any treasures.

They had been led astray by Yue Yang. Whenever an enemy dies, they would subconsciously search for treasures. They formed a 'killing enemies to level up and collecting their treasures' mindset.

When Ou Gen saw this, he sweated profusely.

The more he looked at today's youths, the more he couldn't understand them.

In the Wood Palace, Fatty Hai was currently standing in front of the Evil Myriad Ancient Tree and arguing with it noisily: "Who do you think I am? I am the Young Master Hai from the Hai Clan in the Soaring Dragon Continent! Do you even know about the Hai Clan? Seeing that you are ignorant and inexperienced, I can tell that you haven't heard of us before. Our Hai Clan is the richest family in the whole of Soaring Dragon Continent! What? Did you say money? I have a lot of that thing, but I don't know what treasures you have... none? This will not do, I hate paupers with no treasures. I normally don't even speak with paupers, do you understand? This is a rich young master's style! Fine, if you have any Myriad Tree Heart or such things, you can bring them out. Did you say Evil Tree Roots? What use are these things? They can become Evil Tree Warriors? It's useless, I don't need it. This master does not need your useless items. If you truly want to sell them, this benevolent and generous young master will buy them for a hundred gold. If you must know, I normally give this amount to beggars... You actually dare say that you won't sell it? You blockhead. Do you even know the selling price of this outside? Once you hear it you would definitely cry. These stuff are worthless. Plant-type beasts are already outdated and nobody wants them! You think that everyone is as stupid as Titan? He is someone who has money but doesn't have anywhere to spend it. Additionally he has a broken heart and giving up to despair. Have you ever seen an idiot that sold their entire fortune just for a broken flower? None! He probably wants to give the flower to his girlfriend, if not your broken flower is simply worthless! For the Evil Tree Root, I can give you at most two hundred gold, any more than that then I don't want it. You are too greedy. You actually

said five hundred gold? Be careful of offending me. Do you still have face to tell me five hundred gold for these broken flowers?”

He already met Yue Yang and now he had met Fatty Hai.

The Evil Myriad Ancient Tree was once again in a tragedy.

Of course, it had thought that it had actually earned a huge amount and was perfectly satisfied. With five hundred gold base price, it sold another ten Evil Tree Root.

Fatty Hai’s face appeared grievous as if another person had cut out his meat. However, his heart was like a blooming flower, as he managed to rip off the Ancient Tree for more good stuff. He strode towards the next palace. An uncontracted Wind Breath Seabird followed behind him.

It was not because Fatty Hai had failed to form a contract with it, but it was because the small bird was too smart.

Whenever the contract succeeded, it would immediately betray him.

Fatty Hai simply did not form a contract with it anymore. However the Wind Breath Seabird still continued to follow him. Whenever it was displeased, it would bestow a wind blade upon Fatty Hai.

“Rock Paper Scissors... King of Earth, you lost again. This is your

1008th loss. Do you still have Earth Wolves and Sand Spiders? If you don't have anything else to bet, then let us end this meaningless gamble! You kept on losing without even winning once. I am fighting a one-sided battle, there is completely no thrill. Moreover, gambling a small amount once in while may bring you some fun, but gambling a large amount will be harmful to you. You should not gamble in excess and stop while you can." Yue Yang criticized the King of Earth failing to live up to expectations. Yue Yang looked like he was an adult criticizing the huge King of Earth like a child, who appeared downcast and sincerely accepting Yue Yang's criticism.

"..." Ye Kong and the others were dumbstruck. They had never seen this kind of situation in their entire lifetime and did not dare believe it.

"Let us bet one last time. I don't have anymore Earth Wolves and Sand Spiders. I will use my treasures to bet with you." The King of Earth weakly pleaded. It felt that it must somehow win one round against this human, or else it would regret it in its entire lifetime. He did not even win once and could not accept this fact.

As long as it can win once, then it would absolutely stop betting.

It possessed sufficient knowledge and knew that it was no match against this abnormally smart human. However, he could not accept it. He must win.

Just win once!

Yue Yang honorably muttered: “Fine. Seeing you lose so pathetically and on the verge of tears, I truly could not reject your wish. Then let us bet one last round to give you a chance to turn around the situation. King of Earth, what treasures do you have?”

Chapter 404 – Instinct, Temptations, Self Discipline

Fire Palace.

Facing the treasure in the Fire Palace, the enormous ‘Earth Fire Magic Sphere’ that was so big that ordinary men wouldn’t be able to wrap their arms around it, the Spirit of Earth Fire’s first instinct was to absorb the Fire Ability inside.

It was due to the presence of the Earth Fire Magic Sphere that two King-ranked Guardians could be born in the Fire Palace.

It was also the reason why there were so many fire monsters here, and why the Fire Demons born here were much stronger.

All these stemmed from the powers of the Earth Fire Magic Sphere. If the Spirit of Earth Fire could absorb all of its Fire Ability, she could level up by a whole new rank, or even higher. The Spirit of Earth Fire that lacked intelligence and acted solely out of instinct was facing a challenge. This challenge was secretly put in place by Yue Yang, who discovered the treasures in the Fire Palace but did not keep them like he would normally. Yue Yang left the Fire Palace even before the battle ended as if he had never seen the treasures... After the battle ended, Hui Tai Lang devoured the Magic Crystal of the Purgatory Flame King before the Spirit of Earth Fire could, leaving her with very little Fire Ability to absorb. Thus, this caused her to feel disadvantaged with her limited intelligence.

Hence, right now, when she found the treasure of the Fire Palace – Earth Fire Magic Sphere, her instinct was to devour it immediately.

But Hui Tai Lang wouldn't do so.

It knew that absorbing treasures recklessly without the permission of its master was a taboo, and that its master hated it the most.

Yue Yang had allowed Hui Tai Lang to compete with the Spirit of Earth Fire for the Magic Crystals of the Purgatory Flame King as a reward of the battle. The rule was simple, each of them would absorb the strength of one of the two King-ranked opponents they were facing together!

However, with regards to treasures, Hui Tai Lang would seek for the permission of its master before it devour those treasures, even if it was something that could help it level up... Otherwise, Yue Yang would definitely be angry! Hui Tai Lang was more intelligent and had higher self-discipline, hence it tried to communicate with the Spirit of Earth Fire who was absorbing the Fire Ability, in various animal languages like wolf howling, cat meowing, dog barking and dragon roaring.

“...” The Spirit of Earth Fire could neither speak, nor could she understand what Hui Tai Lang was talking about.

But she was able to comprehend the meaning behind Hui Tai Lang's words vaguely.

Hui Tai Lang was trying to say that the Earth Fire Magic Sphere cannot be absorbed!

She couldn't understand why because she did not have sufficient intelligence for that. All she could do was to succumb to her inherent instinct because to her, the Earth Fire Magic Sphere was like sweet candies to a child.

This was Yue Yang's challenge to her.

A challenge to test her on her intelligence and self discipline.

Human possessed both IQ and EQ. IQ determined whether a person is smart or not, the higher the better; EQ determined a person's fate and career path, because the most difficult thing about it was self discipline. If one had low EQ with little self discipline, then he might be led wayward if he had a high IQ. For example, some intelligent people who were academically sound would commit suicide after encountering a failed relationship; some others holding high positions made regrettable decisions due to the temptations of power and money, and in the end, they became lost and sunk even deeper.

All these were results of low EQ and little self discipline .

Even if one had high IQ and was an all-rounder, with low self discipline, he wouldn't be able to stand the test of time.

It could be said that the greatest difference between man and animal was the superiority in terms of IQ and EQ. More often than not, IQ and EQ were interconnected. Those with high EQ would have high IQ most of the time, and this kind of people would be knowledgeable with sound moral principles. When facing problems, they exercise strong self discipline and won't succumb to temptations easily; But on the other hand, having a high IQ won't guarantee a high EQ.

Animals possessed nearly zero EQ, apart from those that interacted with men such as the loyal guard dogs, the war horses that fought battles with their masters and trained falcons... These animals would grow out of their inherent ability and achieve things that no other animals can due to the establishment of long term relationship. For example, not hurting their master even when they are hungry, not abandoning their master in dangerous situations, and fighting off opponents with their masters even if they were afraid.

Because of EQ, they were able to forge a closer bond with their master and could become a good assistant for their master.

The Holy Beasts of the Soaring Dragon Continent's goal in evolving to become more human-like ([personification](#)) wasn't to attain a human form, but rather, they aimed to become a complex living form like the human beings, and become wiser, more self-disciplined and more capable to take in knowledge.

(Shiro: Will henceforth call the term 化人 – Personification (evolving to become more human-like))

Human beings possessed unique virtues and this is the result of

self discipline acting as the invisible hand, because after all virtues are extreme forms of self discipline.

Without virtues, one would solely act according to their instinct and would possess little self discipline. These people would have low EQ and they would act differently from the common men.

A phrase that was used frequently, 'worse than a beast', would be an apt description of these people.

Animals don't possess virtues. They are not self disciplined, and the things that they do throughout their whole lives would be purely out of instinct with very few other exceptions.

This was more directly exemplified in the Soaring Dragon Continent and the Tong Tian Tower.

If a beast wished to evolve to become a Holy Beast, then one important thing was that it had to approach human beings.

They had to obtain intellectual capacity, the ability to differentiate right from wrong and possess EQ and self discipline... Only with all these as basis would the Beasts then be able to continue to learn and develop sensitivity, replacing their skills with instinct, replacing their beastly character with virtues and replacing confusion with organised thoughts. And if they could go on further, they would become like human, where they would be able to learn higher skills and be able to comprehend things better, for example, contracting Beasts or Grimoires, and then proceed to lifelong learning.

Yue Yang deliberately left the tempting Earth Fire Magic Sphere as a test and a challenge.

He didn't care about the treasure, but cared more about the improvement of the Spirit of Earth Fire.

In the past, the Spirit of Earth Fire would definitely not be able to resist her instinct and would absorb the treasure completely.

But after her evolution from the Spirit of Flame and Smoke to the Spirit of Earth Fire, she had developed sensitivity, although very faintly, Yue Yang felt that it was still worth a try. Through rigorous trainings, Beasts would be able to expand their sensitivity, just like how Yue Yang trained Hui Tai Lang in the past. He had guided Hui Tai Lang to slowly to develop self discipline and change it's instinct with determination ... Yue Yang succeeded as Hui Tai Lang became very self disciplined and had rapidly developed intellectual ability. Although it was not yet as smart as human beings, it's self discipline had surpassed many men and Holy Beasts already. Therefore it was able to successfully contract a Grimoire with Yue Yang's help.

Bloody Queen Red and Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen Duo Duo were smarter than Hui Tai Lang, undeniably. They were also more similar to human beings. But they were only Holy Beasts now and not yet Divine Beasts.

There could be a lot of reasons for that, but it wouldn't be due to Yue Yang not contracting them with Grimoire as of now.

More importantly, it was because their self discipline wasn't near perfect yet... Of course Hui Tai Lang wasn't perfectly self disciplined too as it would turn into a glutton and lazybum sometimes, but it would prioritise what its master wanted it to do and act accordingly. This was why Yue Yang could make it a Divine Beast so fast.

To put it more directly, it had greater affinity with Yue Yang and they think along the same line, so Yue Yang could make a greater impact on it!

This was Hui Tai Lang's strength!

Similar to Hui Tai Lang was the Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man, but her intellectual capacity was far behind Hui Tai Lang who was smart beyond words.

The Spirit of Earth Fire stopped absorbing the treasure and looked at Hui Tai Lang...

"Awoooo!" Hui Tai Lang wanted to tell her very much that she had to present the treasure to their master. She could only absorb it if Yue Yang was pleased and gave the treasure to her, otherwise Yue Yang would be angry. What she was doing was very foolish. Hui Tai Lang talked for a long time, but the Spirit of Earth Fire couldn't understand as her intelligence was still not there yet.

"..." The Spirit of Earth Fire now was behaving like a child who had seen candies. Without the supervision of adults, how would

she not eat the candies?

And this was Yue Yang's challenge to her.

If the Spirit of Earth Fire could really control herself, even if she just tried to, that would be considered an improvement.

If she did not realise that her action is wrong at all, then she would be just following her instinct and her IQ and EQ wouldn't improve.

The Wisdom Fruit had the ability to make a Beast more sensitive and more intelligent for sure.

However, why did some Beasts, who ate hundreds of Wisdom Fruits and possessed high IQs and skills, unable to level up to become a Holy Beast? The reason behind that was simple, these Beasts only had high IQs but weren't self disciplined. They always succumbed to their instincts, hence they would remain as perpetual wild animals that would never level up to become living form of higher status.

“Woof! “ On seeing that the Spirit of Earth Fire continued to lie on the Earth Fire Magic Sphere to absorb it, Hui Tai Lang exclaimed in disappointment.

Hui Tai Lang had thought of attacking and snatching the Earth Fire Magic Sphere away from her to prevent her from doing so.

But it's high EQ stopped it from doing so.

It slowly morphed into a deep sense of disappointment, a complex feeling that only human beings and a few other living form of high status would feel. Of course, the self discipline that stopped it from attacking was an excellent sign of growth. Hui Tai Lang improved unknowingly, not in terms of power, but in terms of intellectual capacity.

It wasn't shown on the surface but Hui Tai Lang was actually closer to becoming more human-like.

Through many instances of such improvements, Hui Tai Lang would become smarter and stronger...

The Spirit of Earth Fire turned to look again, she saw that Hui Tai Lang was wearing a grievous expression looking unhappy, and it made her confused.

It was especially confused when she saw that Hui Tai Lang ignored her and left slowly, causing her to experience a weird feeling due to her fledgling intelligence. It was unknown why, maybe it was out of instinct or maybe it was due to her intelligence, but she cupped the Earth Fire Magic Sphere in her hands like a precious treasure and chased after Hui Tai Lang like a little kid who wanted to share candies with her fellow friend. Although she wanted to eat most of it, she was still willing to share.

“ Meow~” Hui Tai Lang shook its head, indicating that it doesn't

need it and still proceeded to leave.

“?” The Spirit of Earth Fire was very puzzled, she was unsure why someone would reject such a good stuff.

“Woof woof woof, awooooo!” Hui Tai Lang wanted to tell her very much that she had to give it to their master, but when it saw her laying on the Earth Fire Magic Sphere to absorb it, Hui Tai Lang knew that doing that would just be a waste of it’s effort. She is an idiot... Hui Tai Lang left disappointedly as it felt that the Barbarian Cow who knew how to fight for treasures with him was smarter than this idiot.

The Spirit of Earth Fire who was absorbing Fire Ability uncontrollably turned her head to look at Hui Tai Lang.

Her comrade’s actions made her very puzzled, why did her Hui Tai Lang leave? Why didn’t Hui Tai Lang want to share the treasure with her, she couldn’t understand why!

Out of unknown intentions, the Spirit of Earth Fire decided to follow Hui Tai Lang, of course she wasn’t willing to relinquish the Earth Fire Magic Sphere, so hugging it, she followed behind Hui Tai Lang, absorbing the Earth Fire Magic Sphere at the same time for the entire journey...

When Hui Tai Lang saw a teleportation gate, it hurriedly brought her to see Yue Yang immediately.

Although she was very foolish, her stupidity wasn't yet incurable, maybe Yue Yang would have some ways.

And so the two Beast embarked on a journey to look for their master. What they didn't know was that this was the outcome Yue Yang hoped for the most. This kind of training would be the best kind for their future evolution. Due to a single change that happened in this place, their lives would come to a turning point.

Their beasts' instincts would take a turn here and slant towards being more rational.

Which was what only human beings would possess.

Once a Beast possessed this rationality, it wouldn't be far from becoming a Holy Beast; similarly, if a man lost his rationality, he would then become a beast!

Chapter 405 – The Heart Of Earth And The Bararian Cow

Fatty Hai gathered up Lin En, Anna, Xue Tan Lang and Prince Tian Luo. Following Hui Tai Lang's pawprints, they left the Fire Palace and went for the Sand Palace. At the same time, Yue Yang was patting the shoulders of the King of Earth and comforting him. "Be it winning or losing, it's all a small issue. Be a man and let it go. How about this, I'll leave the five thousand Desert Wolves and Sand Spiders behind for you. They are all your subordinates, how could I bring them away? I was just scaring you. And I'll also pass on the ten thousand gold mine because you know I don't need that money, but I want the treasures I won from playing the 'Hopscotch' and 'five-in-a-row', especially the one where we compared who peed a further distance. I want the Heart of Earth. You still have to give that to me because a man should not go back on his words. Of course I know that you are not like this. I have already heard from the Myriad Ancient Tree at the Wood Palace that you are a professional gambler who keeps his promises, and you wouldn't cry no matter how much you lose!"

The King of Earth started to have suicidal thoughts.

He was very regretful. Had he known the outcome of their gamble, he wouldn't have competed against Yue Yang for the furthest distance travelled by their pee. He did not expect that he would lose in the end.

The Heart of Earth was the most precious treasure in the Sand Palace, anyone who could fuse with it would be able to absorb energy limitlessly from the earth.

The King of Earth had actually lost such a precious, rare treasure in a battle of who peed the furthest. This kind of blow was really a little too much for the King of Earth. Luckily, Yue Yang still had some conscience left and left the Sand Wolves, Desert Spiders, Cliff Edge Lizards and Ground Drilling Snakes behind. Otherwise, the King of Earth would really become a lonely man.

“...” Ye Kong, Ox head Fan Lun Tie, Ox Head Party Leader Li Ao, the four orc girls, the leaders of the Iron Blood Guards and the other adventurers all watched in a daze. They never dreamed that the majestic King of Earth from the Sand Palace would land himself in such a sorry state.

“Okay, come on, give me the Heart of Earth. I know that it’s precious to you, but you have lost after all. How about this, aren’t you bored living here alone? In the future, I can ask more people to come here and play with you. They are all fools, so I can guarantee that you will defeat them easily, just like how you won against Ye Kong that idiot previously. Also, I bet you did not know that I specialise in Heaven Runes. I can put Heaven Runes over your bald head, shoulders, chest and arms. Do you want to own a diamond body? I can help you achieve that too!” Yue Yang placed in a lot of money and effort to get the Heart of Earth.

“Really?” Having a diamond body was very tempting to the King of Earth, and the Heaven Runes was even more so to him.

“I won’t be able to show off my abilities if I don’t get you a diamond body! Not only so, I can also make all your followers become golden, silver and bronze giants, I guarantee that.” Yue

Yang patted his chest with confidence.

After Yue Yang's glib-tongued speech, the King of Earth finally took out the Heart of Earth unwillingly.

With trembling hands, he passed it to Yue Yang, without even daring to look at it.

Yue Yang reached out his hands to receive it faster than the speed of the light and put it into his Grimoire World. He then commanded Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man with his thought to fuse the treasure into her body so that the King of Earth wouldn't be able to have second thoughts later.

What kind of treasure was the Heart of Earth?

To a flying beast, it was like a [chicken's rib](#).

(want2eat: Chicken's rib means something of little value, but sounds yummy to me :p)

But to those that weren't good at flying and were only good at short distance fight, it was an incomparable and unique treasure of the highest value.

After fusing with the Heart of Earth, a Beast would be immuned toward all sand type attacks like sand bury, soil cover, avalanche and sand storm; The effects of absorbing all sand type energy like sand type magic crystals, minerals, jewels would be ten times better; All sand type Puppet Beasts like the Rock Golem, Stone Silk

Snake and Mountain Giant would not develop hostility towards the Beast and would treat the Beast as one of their own kind.

The most important thing was that a Beast who owned the Heart of Earth would be able to absorb endless energy from the Earth as long as its feet remains on the ground, hence it would never face a situation where its energy runs out.

The effects of Bloody Queen Red from using the Heart of Earth wouldn't be much as she predominately battles in the air.

But for the Barbarian Shadow Ah Man, once she fused with the Heart of Earth, she would become a female Barbarian Cow that could never get tired from fighting!

In the Grimoire World, under the envious gaze of the Blood Queen Red and the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen Duo Duo, the Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man began to absorb and fuse with the Heart of Earth. Although the fusion might take a very long time, once it's completed, the Barbarian Cow Shadow would level up to become a two stars Holy Beast. Not only would she become more powerful, she would also become one that wouldn't grow tired from fighting. She would become the nightmare of all her opponents! There wouldn't be another thing scarier than a Guardian Beast, who possessed Doom's Eyes and powerful trampling skills, obtaining the Heart of Earth when she specialised in short distance ground battle...

A tireless female Barbarian Cow, if one were to hear this, even for Rankers like the Great Emperor of Zhi Wei, Shun Tian and the Black Prince, they would be numb from shock!

Of course, Yue Yang gave a lot to get the Heart of Earth too.

Other than racking his brains trying to find a way to win against the King of Earth, Yue Yang also used the Heaven Runes and diamond body to coax him into giving the Heart of Earth to him.

In Yue Yang's eyes, everything could be exchanged in return for the Heart of Earth. Everything would be negotiable for it.

Half a day passed and a lot of Innate Qi was wasted.

Yue Yang drew Heaven Runes on the King of Earth's head, shoulders, chests, back, arms and knees. He left the Heaven Runes, 'Balance', in the centre of his brows, 'Diamond' in his heart and 'Storage' on his belly. With the help of these three Heaven Runes, his body would turn into diamond gradually. Once his body is completely covered with diamond, his combat power would increase by at least ten times.

As for the question if he could switch to become Diamond-ranked, Yue Yang felt that the possibility wasn't high.

Having a diamond body does not equate to being diamond-ranked.

One was the physical form while the other one was the actual level. It was the same as an object being made from gold, it may not be a Gold-ranked treasure.

The best time for the King of Earth to become a Diamond-ranked Beast was over. If there were no accidents, he would only be able to keep on improving his combat power, his level and rank had already been fixed.

But even so, the King of Earth with a diamond body would become an unrivalled presence even outside of the Sand Palace... The King of Earth's mood was slightly lightened up after seeing what Yue Yang gave him.

A golden light shone and lighted up the place. The body of the King of Earth faced a change after Yue Yang used his Innate Qi to connect all the Heaven Runes together.

His previously stony body started to grow beads of diamond.

Although there were only a few beads of diamonds, it wouldn't be a problem for the King of Earth to obtain a diamond body as time passes.

The thought of the fifty metres tall King of Earth weighing a few hundred tonnes with a diamond body would make many shudder. Luckily he had always stayed inside the Sand Palace. If he were to go out of the Sand Palace, the Golden Mammoth, Battle Kodo Beast, ancient Behemoth and even the Black Hell Dragon would run away when they saw him...

When Fatty Hai and the rest caught up to Yue Yang, he had already given all the followers of the King of Earth golden, silver

and bronze bodies.

Not only so, Yue Yang also gave the King of Earth some advices. “Listen, my friend. You can start to collect tax here, collecting tax, do you know it? It means to collect money from all the adventurers who passes by here. Rest assured, this is definitely legal. Think about it, you are the owner here, wouldn’t it be a little shameful if you let them come and go whenever they want? And aren’t you bored? With that money, you can gamble with them, take note that you shouldn’t bet with anything, don’t act like you did just now and bet with all your Desert Wolves and Sand Spiders, just gamble with them with your money, they can lose their treasures to you, but you have to keep your followers and treasures with you... Yes, you are very smart, seems that you have understood my words. After you possess some treasures, I will come and exchange with you again, I’m studying the Heaven Runes now, believe me, as your best and most sincere friend, I won’t deceive you!”

Ou Gen and the Iron Blood Guards who was watching perspired profusely. Fatty Hai and the rest kept nodding, testifying that Yue Yang was an obedient kid that would help old grannies cross the road on some days, and kill people and snatch their treasures on other occasions.

Everyone watched without daring to make a single noise.

The reason was simple. Even fools knew that offending Yue Yang would result in a more tragic death than being punched by the King of Earth and becoming minced meat as a result.

Hui Tai Lang reported the things that happened at the Fire Palace

to Yue Yang. Hui Tai Lang passed the Fire Eye Stones he acquired from the Purgatory Flame King's eyes to Yue Yang, hoping to be praised and affirmed by him. As for the Spirit of Earth Fire, she acted like a child eating candies discreetly, sucking energy from the Earth Fire Magic Sphere occasionally, and turning to see Yue Yang's reactions. Seeing that he did not object to her doing so, she sucked in some energy again... It was similar to the time when Yue Shuang licked her candies discreetly under her mother's objections.

At last, she saw that Hui Tai Lang was praised after offering two Fire Stones, she wanted to offer a treasure to Yue Yang to get praised too.

But other than the Earth Fire Magic Sphere, she did not have anything else.

Yue Yang pretended not to see her struggles and hesitations. After a long while, the Spirit of Earth Fire finally offered it to Yue Yang unwillingly, looking extremely pitiful. Yue Yang nodded his head.

He raised the Earth Fire Magic Sphere and then placed it in her hands again.

Seeing that Yue Yang nodded his head and returning the treasure back to her, the Spirit of Earth Fire developed an excited feeling.

She hugged the treasure and went up thousand metres above the ground and flew around randomly.

It seemed like she wanted to use her actions to express how excited she was... She did not realise how similar her action was to that of human beings’.

Although she was still a long way from becoming a Holy Beast and acquiring complex human feelings, through Yue Yang’s training, she began to have a new start...

“What’s the matter with your bird?” Ye Kong pointed to the Wind Breath Seabird on Fatty Hai’s head.

“Don’t even ask me about it.” Fatty Hai wanted to cry just by thinking of this bird.

“It looks quite smart.” Prince Tian Luo and Xue Tan Lang both noticed this point.

“My god, it’s precisely because its too smart that I’d rather it be a little more stupid...” Before Fatty Hai could finish his sentence, the Wind Breath Seabird spouted out a wind blade on Fatty Hai’s head. Now that it knew how to control its strength. Not only would it not hurt his skin, it would also make his hairstyle messy like a chicken’s nest. Fatty Hai squatted in the corner sadly, and only told the crowd his story after they pressed him for it.

As a result, everyone burst out laughing.

This Wind Breath Seabird could be contracted, but it rebelled too

early.

It was very loyal previously like any other normal contracted Beasts, but when Fatty Hai complained, its loyalty level would dip immediately and rebel. This action made Fatty Hai's intention of abusing it fail, and instead, it tortured Fatty Hai badly. The Wind Breath Seabird followed him around closely even though Fatty Hai did not contract it.

The Ox Head Fan Lun Tie despised Fatty Hai's idea of having barbequed bird's meat previously. Now she could only say that he deserved it.

After an hour, the Li brothers finally arrived.

Since their party members had all arrived, they decided not to wait for Ou Gen and his men.

The underground palace had two teleportation points. One was towards the Gold Palace, and the other one was towards the central area of the Five Element Palace and then to the Jadeite Forest.

“You all go ahead first, we'll wait for three more hours. If we still don't see our comrades, we'll return back to the Warrior Guild and dispatch the Elders to bring them out of the Five Elements Palace. Of course, I think the probability of them having sacrificed themselves is very high...” There was a dim note to Ou Gen's speech, but he knew that if not for Yue Yang, the death toll would be higher, all of them might have perished without anyone knowing.

“Young Titan, you must make more adventurers come here. I’m very lonely, and I hope that when you are free, you can bring your friends here to visit me.” The King of Earth was thankful towards Yue Yang, because after all, not everyone would be as generous as Yue Yang, who returned most of the things he won back to him.

“Definitely. You should just wait here for the money to roll into your pockets!” Yue Yang decided to promote the Five Elements Palace and make it popular when he goes out of this place, he had swept all the treasures here anyway.

“...” A lot of adventurers secretly vowed never to come to this damned Five Elements Palace again.

But Ou Gen felt that it was a very good training ground.

If they could pass through the Five Elements Palaces, he believed that he would be able to move through the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower freely, and even proceed to the Seventh Floor. In the Five Element Palace, reality would tell every adventurer that without a Beast, a warrior would be nothing; Even if a warrior possess a single Beast, he would still be nothing.

If one really wanted to be powerful, then he had to be all-rounded.

A team of adventurers would need to endure hardships together in order to become well trained.

Treasures?

Don't think about it, it would be life's greatest reward if one would be able to make it out of the Five Elements Palace alive. There was only one abnormal person like Yue Yang in this world!

When they made it out of the Jadeite Forest, Fatty Hai boasted about his noble act of exploiting the last treasure, the Evil Tree Root, from the Evil Myriad Ancient Tree throughout the entire journey and got despised by the lot. But it brought Yue Yang to attention. "Don't say that, maybe the Evil Tree Root has other uses."

"You are saying that it has uses for Bing Er?" Fatty Hai was excited from hearing what Yue Yang said, and behaved like he had just been [injected with chicken blood](#).

(want2eat: injecting one with chicken blood was used as a health therapy during the Cultural Revolution)

"Nope, it would be useless to her. But it might be useful for you all." Yue Yang waved his hands, and then shouted to the disappointed Fatty Hai. "Take as much gold as you need and buy the Antiaris Poisonous Wood and the hard Golden Tree. In short, just buy whatever the best kind of woods and I will test if the Evil Tree Roots can be used to make tough Treants later. Even if they couldn't be used to take down demons, they can help to defend a city... How about we go ask the Warrior Guild if they are selling the Jadeite Forest, we'll buy the entire area around the Five Element Palace to build a city, how is that? And then you all will also have a place to settle down. If people from the Dragon Soaring

Continent or your own relatives come, you'd have a place to welcome them. Surely you wouldn't want Jun Wu You and the other old men sit on the floor of the Plaza to chat with you all right?"

"Building a city, where do we get all the money!" The Prince of Tian Luo was completely speechless as building a city was not an easy feat.

"Money is not a problem." Yue Yang had never worried about not having enough money, if he lacked money, he could just snatch it from others... he waved his hands. "Everyone will have a mission of collecting one hundred thousand gold, the rest is on me."

"Who will we collect them from?" The Ox Head Fan Lun Tie couldn't understand, why would anyone donate to help others build a city?

"Snatch them from strangers!" Once the words came out of Yue Yang's mouth, everyone collapsed onto the ground. Surely, this guy was definitely a complete badass.

Chapter 406 – The Art Of Leading

The adventure this time at the Five Elements Palace, had completely frightened Lin En, Anna, Ox-Head man Li Ao, Ox-head girl Fan Lun Tie and her team out of their wits.

Fatty Hai, Ye Kong, Xue Tan Lang and Prince of Tian Luo, as well as the Li Brothers all had to endure the ordeal.

The only one at loss was the loli, Bao Er, who slept since their departure from the Gold Palace.

Of course, the main reason for her to sleep so long was thanks to the Fragrant Sleeping Flower planted by Luo Hua City's Mistress.

The entire team hardly gained any thing, especially treasures. Fatty Hai was the only one who acquired ten "Evil Tree Roots". However, he had accidentally offended an extremely clever Wind Breath Seabird, which tortured him throughout the entire journey. According to Fatty Hai, the gains did not make up for his loss.

However, Yue Yang on the other hand, had much to gain.

From the Gold Palace, Yue Yang gained the Divine Molten Meteorite Gold which could be used to forge divine weapons. With this, Yue Yang was even confident enough to fulfill Ghost Genius Yue Gong's final wish of "the third treasure" by continuously enhancing it.

The Dragon Sealing Pearl which Yue Yang obtained from the Water Palace seemed quite useless on the surface, but it could actually be used as a gem to catch the Dragon Race. However, one must first be able to capture dragons. In the Wood Palace, due to Yue Yang's glib tongue and mind blowing lying skills, the Evil Myriad Ancient Tree suffered tragic losses. The highly valuable treasures, Ancient Cyan Tree Shoot, Earth's Core Dew as well as Wishing Dutchman's Pipe were all dug up by Yue Yang and taken away. What made it worse was that the shameless Fatty Hai decided to scam as well and took away the evil Millennium Ancient Tree's last ten Evil Tree Roots.

The two guards from the Flame Palace suffered twice the loss compared to others. At least the evil Millennium Ancient Tree had some form of income, the Purgatory Flame King and Red Vital Fire Demoness both ended up as stepping stones for Hui Tai Lang and the Spirit of Earth Fire in their paths of evolution.

Hui Tai Lang assimilated the gold-rank treasure Fire Scythe and turned it into Real Essence Fire Scythe.

Hui Tai Lang finally obtained a weapon.

For a Divine Beast, using a Gold-ranked weapon seemed a little low-class, but if one were to put up with it, it was still okay.

The Spirit of Earth Fire had not only evolved by absorbing fire energy but also gained intelligence, she also obtained the Earth Fire Magic Sphere. In future, she would probably level up once again...

As their master, Yue Yang only gained the Purgatory Flame King's two eyes, the "Fire Eye Stones" from the whole of Flame Palace. It was the least that he gained from the Five Element Palace, but it was still better than nothing. Anyways, Hui Tai Lang and the Spirit of Earth Fire's gains made Yue Yang extremely pleased... Of course, the one who benefitted the most was not Hui Tai Lang nor the Spirit of Earth Fire, but the Barbarian Cow Shadow, Ah Man who had been constantly contributing silently.

Ah Man who obtained the Heart of Earth would become a Barbarian Cow with unlimited stamina.

Yue Yang's plan of making a team of Goddess Fighters would officially begin now.

"Looks like you guys still need to train more!" Yue Yang took out some Bronzed-ranked and Silver-ranked equipments from Demon Eye's Platinum Storage Ring as a distraction and before anyone had a chance to react, he slipped away immediately. He feared that they would ask him what treasure he had gained from the Five Element Palace. This was no joke, if they knew that he had obtained the Divine Molten Meteorite Gold, it would be odd if they didn't start clinging to him asking for divine weapons!

"That brat must have gotten something good, or else he wouldn't be so generous. Oh god, these are almost all bronze-ranked, there are only two silver-ranked ones. These are all junks." Fatty Hai knew very well of Yue Yang's character, he knew that Yue Yang must have gained a lot or else he wouldn't leave the Five Element Palace so quickly.

“Alright! So I assume you don’t want any of it?” Ye Kong decide to split the treasures but did not give any to Fatty Hai.

“ What? Did I say I don’t want it?” Fatty Hai glared at him.

“Isn’t Mr. Hai the young master of the richest family in Soaring Dragon Continent? Why would he be interested in these junks?” Ye Kong sneered, he snatched the silver hatchet from Fatty Hai’s hands and tossed it to Ox-head Party Leader Li Ao. Fatty Hai immediately let out a miserable shriek, just like a dying pig. But everyone pretended that they didn’t hear so nobody sympathized with him. Who told him to show off his Evil Tree Roots so pompously? Everyone else was empty handed, but other than the Evil Tree Roots, he even obtained a smart Wind Breath Seabird. That was just illogical, why did the Wind Breath Seabird even fancy him?

“I’m so poor that my pocket jingles sounds of emptiness..... Aren’t you guys being too heartless? No treasures, not even a word of console!” Fatty Hai prepared to throw a fit for a while. Who knew that everyone started to turn and leave, not even giving him a chance to finish his first complaint. In the end Fatty Hai was left to stomp madly all by himself due to his anger.

“Caw caw!” The Wind Breath Seabird loved to see an unlucky Fatty Hai the most. It flew energetically in the sky, crackling with laughter happily.

“I suddenly felt the urge to pluck feathers and eat roasted bird

drumsticks! “ Fatty Hai stared at Wind Breath Seabird sinisterly. The seabird immediately rewarded him with a wind blade and fled quickly.

Yue Yang’s next goal was to go to the secret land, where the mother of Bloody Queen Red roamed.

To explore.

It was said that the Gold King Beast could level up there. Yue Yang decided to take Bloody Queen Red along to check the place out.

To investigate what is actually going on.

The other goal was to find out more about one of the two secrets written in the Fourth Uncle’s will. He said that Yue Qiu had left a gift for his son at the fifth level of Tong Tian Tower. But Fourth Uncle didn’t know where the exact location was, he only heard of the rough location from Yue Qiu. Yue Yang still had to find it himself.

What gift did Yue Qiu leave for the tragic guy?

Yue Yang was also very curious.

After he finished these two things, Yue Yang wanted to explore the Death Canyon alone. The secondary goal was to find out more about the secrets in the treasure map left behind by the Aries

Temple robber, to verify if there any clues about the hidden treasure. If there wasn't enough time, then he would have to focus on going to Tong Tian Tower with Spider Empress Jiang Ying to obtain the “ Ten Thousand Years Mother Earth Potion”. This is more important at hand. Exploration of the Death Canyon can be done later. As for the Heaven Stairway, Yue Yang decided to find a good time to discuss about it with his Fourth Mother..... Yue Yang thought that she would know about the secrets of the Heaven Stairway. She does not take the initiative to start talking about it, making it hard for Yue Yang to ask her.

Maybe she will tell him when the right time comes.

What exactly is Ascension Rhyme ?

Could it be that in the Heaven Stairway, one could actually reach heaven directly from it?.

Yue Yang guessed that it might be possible and felt that the Heaven Stairway may be a secret passage to heaven. Of course, what is the truth he would only know after he finish exploring it.

After returning to the Warrior's Guild, Yue Yang climbed up to the third floor of the Glorious Hall. He stated that he wanted to exchange for the Innate Ranker's prize on the Bloody Villain List. He asked whether he could exchange for the Immortal Spring. The beautiful receptionist looked at Yue Yang, dumbfounded. It took her awhile before she waved her hand said that they didn't have such treasure.

“I need the Immortal Spring. If you prepare it for me, then I will exchange it with the Level 5 Innate Demon Eye and the head of the three great leaders of the Thunder Fortress.” Yue Yang said coolly and left with style.

“Wow.....” The beautiful receptionist stared at Yue Yang’s figure blankly, it was only after three minutes did she started screaming at a high pitch. “ Oh my god! This is so exciting! ”

“What happened? “ A strict steward chided. “This is the Glorious Hall, please maintain your image. “

“I think you don’t know, the Level 5 Innate Demon Eye died! That handsome guy with the mask just now killed it!” The beautiful receptionist revealed Yue Yang’s secret, the steward who didn’t understand at first was astonished. Only after a while, did he questioned, unable to believe his ears. “Really? He said he wanted the Immortal Spring? This might be quite difficult, I need to report this to the Innate Alliance. Remember, this is top secret! Except you and me, no one else is to know about this. Or else the success of the courageous warrior who got rid of evil might be jeopardized! D-did he really said Demon Eye just now? Are you one hundred percent certain? “

“Thunder fortress’ Demon Eye, the head of the three great leaders! How could I hear wrongly? Oh my god, he is so cool! “The beauty’s eyes have already turned into two hearts.

Yue Yang returned to the Thunder Fortress. This time, he did not need to return to An Dong’s mansion.

The Demon Eye's Devil Eye Palace was under bustling construction and rebuilding.

The new Titan Palace would be enlarged based on the Devil's Eye Palace's foundation. The Demon Eye and An Dong's territories would be combined together, as well as the lake region that was given to Yue Yang by the Mountain Elf and Blood River. The new Titan Palace would become the greatest building complex aside from the Zong Ni Palace.

Countless slaves were bustling cheerfully, among them, Yue Yang's first follower was in the highest spirits.

Demon Eye's slaves and servants, although exceptionally diligent, were still cautious.

Thank god the Titan brothers' reputation was known far and wide or else a lot of them would already have escaped.

"Master!" Out of all the calls for master, the fat toad merchant Jia De's voice was the loudest, proudest and the most respectful. "All Demon Eyes assets were turned over smoothly, in total I have

"You and butler Yan Zheng should take care of all these things, you guys have the ability to complete it well, I feel secured. If there are not enough manpower, let the Xia Pu Brothers help you. By the way, if you need to add anything in future, you don't need to ask me. Just do it straight away and report to me afterwards." Yue

Yang is not going to manage their daily routines, anyway as long as they operate as per normal it's fine. Besides, the fat toad merchant Jia De doesn't have the guts to deceive him.

“Understood! ” The fat toad merchant Jia De actually radiated with happiness after hearing from Yue Yang. This actually signified the master's confidence and trust in him.

“Oh, benevolent and invincible master, we found new ores in the fifth mine. We have high quality ores again, it is all thanks to master! “Another who brimmed with pride was the old slave, Pi Ping. He also craves compliments, once you praise him he would feel as if even his bones got lighter by a few kilos.

“Nice work everyone. Thank you for your hard work. This time I'll increase the reward, for those who found high quality ores, their achievement will be recorded once. For all those who were involved in mining, you will be rewarded with a gold coin. Well, as for all of you doing construction, there will be rewards too. How exactly, would be based on merit. Butler Yan Zheng will be in charge of this matter. Remember, there won't be insufficient rewards. When you have accumulated a certain amount of contributions, I will consider awarding you with a 'Loyalty' or 'Devotion' medal. All of you continue to work hard! “Yue Yang waved his hand and gave out rewards that worth around ten thousand. Of course, his own rewards were greater, not only now but also in future, his gains will increase by folds.

“We cannot repay Master's great kindness, not even with a million deaths.....” Old Pi Ping was moved to tears, leading the slaves to bow down repeatedly.

“Stand up!” Yue Yang was secretly embarrassed, the existence of this kind of people was probably why the emperor likes flattery. Nevertheless understanding the art of leadership, he helped old Pi Ping stand up personally and patted him on the shoulder.

This one act, practically made old Pi Ping’s body lighter by a few kilos.

After waiting for the kneeling slaves bowed down for three times, Yue Yang lifted his hand and immediately the slaves clamored up.

Each and every one of them had tears streaming down their face. It is unclear whether they are truly moved or just really good at acting.

After Yue Yang entered the hall, he found that butler Yan Zheng was awfully busy, trying to calculate something. Even when Yue Yang entered he couldn’t spare even a second to greet him. In contrary, the whole bunch of merchants surrounding butler Yan Zheng all greeted him with respectful smiles as if trying to flatter him.

Yue Yang waved his hand and went off. These people thought that Mr. Titian Jr. was really amiable and easygoing. Usually Innate Rankers don’t even glance at merchants.

Each and everyone of them gave him a thumbs up and complimented him endlessly.

“Ah, master’s back. I was so preoccupied with painting I didn’t even prepare a meal. I deserved to be punished for neglecting my duties.....” The big breasted half elf girl with a baby face ran out of the room slightly flustered. The her bouncing breasts placed Yue Yang’s heart to the test. Her fingers which that looked like white champaca still paint on them, while her cheeks were red, as if she did something wrong.

“The painting is not bad.” Yue Yang knew that this girl must have been painting him. He took a quick glimpse of it out of the corner of his eyes. He was right, but in addition, she was in the painting too.

On the white cloth, was Yue Yang with his Gemini Mask, while the half elf girl was holding Yue Yang’s arm and smiling merrily.

After realising that Yue Yang wasn’t angry, the half elf girl stuck out her small pink tongue mischievously.

Yue Yang patted her on the head and gave her a fresh fruit. “Are you hungry? Eat this to fill your stomach a little!”

The half elf girl was so moved her whole face was blushing red.

She took it, lowered her head, nodding.

After Yue Yang returned back to the Grimoire World, she clenched her small fists and encouraged herself with tears

streaming down her face. “This is such a failure! I actually forgot to prepare a meal. Luckily master wasn’t angry..... Even so, master is so gentle! I definitely need to work hard tomorrow!”

On the next day, after handling the administration work at the Thunder Fortress, Yue Yang was about to go down to Tong Tian Tower’s third floor to find out about the secret land which can level up the Gold King Beasts.

Suddenly, butler Yan Zheng approached him with a report. :Mr. Chen from Qi Lan Continent had come to visit.

Chapter 407 – Evil Dragon Lair?

“Mr. Titan Jr., you really surprised me.” Mr. Chen was still wearing that wide-brimmed hat, but now his face looked much better. It’s probably because Yue Yang previously exchanged two Martial Spirit Pills with him, and it allowed his relationship with his daughter and son to improve. Mr. Chen’s complexion looked good, he was practically glowing with health and vigor. When he saw Yue Yang, he immediately bowed like a gentleman.

“My friend, could it be that you have some good news for me this time?” Yue Yang noticed that he seemed to bear some good news.

“Indeed.” Mr. Chen smiled, “My apologies, but, let me keep you in suspense and leave the good news for later. The thing is, regarding the Thunder Ores, would things be carried out as promised? I mean, if it is possible, I would like to buy all the ores in Western Wind Mine. You can use any mode of payment to your liking, it can be exchanged with gold coins, magic crystals or treasures..... Of course, if you wish, we can even pay you with Qi Lan continent’s special wine. Qi Lan Wine is not just a kind of exquisite wine, it is also an excellent rejuvenation potion that can restore Warriors’ vitality. It is effective in restoring energy as well as wound healing. In Qi Lan continent, Qi Lan Wine’s annual output is less than thirty thousand bottles, most of it were shipped to Tong Tian Tower to be sold by merchants. It’s a very popular liquor. “

“ How much Qi Lan Wine do you have?” Yue Yang went straight to the point.

“The maximum we can get would be ten thousand bottles. It includes a hundred bottles of rank five Dragon’s Blood Wine, a thousand bottle of rank four Tiger Bone Wine, and the rest consists of nine thousand rank three Beast Blood Wine.” Mr. Chen knew that ten thousand bottles of wine could only cover a small proportion of the large quantity of ores owned by Yue Yang, he would have to make most of the payment using valuables like Wisdom Fruits and Magic Crystals.

As for gold, Mr. Chen did not believe the other party faced a shortage of money.

Yue Yang was pondering, he started to understand why Mr. Chen was urgently purchasing Thunder Ores.

It’s probably to feed some kind of lightning-attribute beasts to level up and increase their strength.

Supplying Qi Lan continent ores on the long term may affect the Soaring Dragon continent’s future developments. However, to go back on his words and break his promise was a little embarrassing. Besides, Yue Yang now possessed the Demon Eye’s mine, he wasn’t worried about not having enough ores.

As for the high quality ores, Mr. Chen probably wouldn’t want them. Anyways, he could not afford to buy them. Yue Yang would still be keeping the best ores for himself.

He can sell ordinary ores to the other party.

What Yue Yang wanted the most was not Qi Lan Wine. This kind of things are perishables, after you drink it, it would be gone.

What he wanted the most was the wine formula and the method to manufacture weapons and armours with Thunder Ores. With these techniques and skills, Yue Yang would be able to duplicate them immediately and make use of them in the Soaring Dragon continent.

It was still possible to research about it himself, but it was just too time consuming. Yue Yang never really thought about things that didn't benefit him much. He had too many things to handle. If he could really obtain the technique and skills directly, that would be the best. Perhaps the imitations would end up better than the original..... Yue Yang reckoned that Mr. Chen would be willing to exchange the technique of refining and casting Thunder Ores with him. As for how to feed the beasts, even if Mr. Chen told him the method, Soaring Dragon continent may not have any special beasts that eat such ores. Furthermore, supplying ores was not a matter of just one year or two. In the end, Yue Yang decided to put in some effort in researching about the thunder ores himself. Then Yue Yang could give the method to Jun Wu You as a present, he could consider it as dowry for marrying Princess Qian Qian.

This way, Jun Wu You, his future father in-law would definitely be pleased.

Once Yue Yang made up his mind, he nodded. “ Ok, no problem. About the ores, we'll do what you have said. Qi Lan continent can cover a part of it with wine, however most of it will have to be exchanged using Magic Crystals.”

When Mr. Chen saw Yue Yang pondering in silence, his heart was beating like a drum.

He knew how much the Thunder Ores were worth, and that his conditions were definitely not the best. Now with so many competitors, he immediately showed his sincerity in order to forge a win-win situation. “Mr. Titan Jr. , in order to thank you for keeping your promise. To celebrate our friendship, we would like to offer you the various type of technology to extract and forge Thunder Armour from Thunder Ores free of charge. In addition, we will cooperate with you during the process. Mr. Titan Jr. please forgive me but frankly speaking, our techniques are not the best. The way Demon Abyss used Thunder Ores and the Dwarf’s foundry skills are one of the very best. However, those techniques are top secret, we were unable to obtain them. Another thing is that, since the Thunder Beasts that would get stronger when they consume Thunder Ores could only be found in Qi Lan continent, we are willing to cover part of the bill using mature and tamed Thunder Beasts as mount.”

“The technique of extracting from Thunder Ores?” Butler Yan Zheng was shocked, Mr. Chen was being so magnanimous.

“Thunder Beasts are very powerful mounts, they are as fast as lightning. Their attacks are infused with lightning bolts and are capable of paralyzing enemies. If they are higher than bronze-rank or silver-rank they are also suitable for Level 6 Elders and Level 7 Overlords to ride.”

“Qi Lan continent will be able to provide two gold-rank Thunder

Beasts and ten silver-rank Thunder Beasts annually. The rest will be bronze-ranked, the lowest would at least be level 4 and the highest would be level 6. At most we can provide three hundred to five hundred annually. We don't insist on having the best quality ores. Every top grade Thunder Ore can at least be exchanged for two silver-rank Thunder Beasts. “ Mr. Chen handed Yue Yang a copy of the trade agreement he had prepared ahead of time.

“Very well, Mr. Chen. Your sincerity is admirable. That's a deal.” Yue Yang knew the other party would not tell him the way to feed and train Thunder Beasts, every tribe had their very own secrets.

For example, it would be impossible to make elves, gnomes and dwarfs reveal their method in bow making, gem embedding and weapon casting. It would never happen.

Would Yue Yang tell others about the Clan's Puppet Making Technique?

Of course not !

Thunder Beasts' source and entry were still in the hands of the strong in Qi Lan continent, but Yue Yang also benefited from it.

In business, it's not possible to monopolize everything. It is more than enough to monopolize the most valuable resources.

Besides, he nabbed the Thunder Mine in the first place.

This was just like passive gains!

Yue Yang's mission was to improve and strengthen himself. About things like this, there was no need to get too distracted, as long as there were certain benefits.

Scritch scritch, Yue Yang signed his name on the trade agreement.

He then drew a Gemini Mask logo on it.

Now, Mr. Chen's heart has finally calmed down.

He knew that this is a win-win situation for everyone. However, Mr. Titan Jr. had the opportunity to choose other competitors instead of sharing this win-win situation with him. The right over Thunder Mine is entirely in the hands of this unfathomable youngster. He could choose to collaborate and establish a win-win situation, or he could have refused but still had the chance to collaborate with others.

Mr. Chen bowed sincerely. "Thank you so much. As you have known, all this time we were living in the shadows of the Demon Abyss. I believe that with your support, Qi Lan continent will gain a chance to breathe and have a better chance of survival. Before our trade begin, I promise you, An Dong's properties in Qi Lan continent that was transferred by butler Yan Zheng would not be counted in the trade. It belongs to you entirely. If you do not want to accept An Dong's assets in the form of gold coins we can exchange it for other things of equal value, like Qi Lan Wine and

Thunder Beasts. We can also provide a small amount of Thunder Armour.”

“I am very curious about the products in your continent. I would like to widen my horizon, so please give me a little of each.” On the surface, Yue Yang didn’t look like he cared and laughed it off.

However, in his heart he felt that Mr. Chen was too old-fashioned.

If it were those from Soaring Dragon continent, would they take the initiative to give An Dong’s properties to some outsider? Yeah right, Of course not!

Even if they had to, they wouldn’t give all of it.

They would definitely conceal most of it.

On the contrary, look at Mr. Chen! He had transferred the properties to butler Yan Zheng even before he came back, as if hiding the assets was a disgraceful act. After Yue Yang saw this he was slightly touched. He was reminded of Lin En, Anna, Bao Er, Li Ao, Fan Lun Tie and the others. They all had excellent moral character, in fact, many clans other than humans, had moral character that were surprisingly good.

Forget about elves, how could an ox head, an orc, or even a toad have more noble characters than humans?

What the hell!

Using China's standard, all these people are 'fools'!

Retarded, kind-hearted dumbass...

Yue Yang felt awkward.

Of course, he definitely support others to have great character and treat others earnestly and truthfully. It would be the best if everyone in Tong Tian Tower acted like a noble man, but he wouldn't do it himself.

In comparison, rather than being a good guy, Yue Yang felt that it's more comfortable being a bad guy who could have things his way.

Let the others be the good guy, I'll just be the evildoer!

That was Yue Yang's personal opinion.

Mr. Chen left delighted. He was preparing to bring wine, beasts and armours from his hometown to the Thunder Fortress. For Qi Lan continent to be able to collaborate with strong Innates like the Titan brothers, they considered themselves very lucky.

Before he left, he gave Yue Yang a piece of parchment with a map drawn on it. A location was marked out on the map.

Yue Yang was palpitating with excitement.

The mark on the map was labelled as ‘Evil Dragon Cave’.

“This was found by a robber who was very skilled in hiding, he spent a year to find this. He almost died. According to him, there were one Black Dragon, two Scarlet Dragon and around a hundred Crimson Flame Dragon. If you need more information, you can find a man named Dark Blade in Silver Horn Tavern. He is a friend I respect the most. Good luck! “ Mr. Chen had to pay ten thousand gold coins for this information, yet he gave it to Yue Yang without hesitation. This was because he felt that compared to him, this young man was more suited and more capable of handling this adventure at the dragon cave.

“If I succeed, I’ll repay you with a bottle of Dragon Blood.” Yue Yang obviously understood how dangerous and challenging it was to search for the Evil Dragon Cave. Same goes to how priceless this information was. Mr. Chen was also an Innate Ranker, if he was willing to let him have this opportunity to slay dragons, this showed his sincerity in collaborating with him.

Even in the Jadeite Forest, where Giant Dragons passed by, there were Dragon Hunters; let alone Evil Dragon Cave.

Based on this, it was clear how difficult it was to find Giant Dragons.

Besides, Giant Dragons weren’t vegetarians, they weren’t like

wyverns. They were invincible beings in battle that would send all organisms running at mere sight.

Yue Yang returned to the sixth floor of Tong Tian Tower. Pretending that he didn't know Fatty Hai and the others, he found the teleportation staff and teleported himself to a continent thousands of miles away. Once again, he teleported from that continent to another continent thousands of miles apart, this continued for three times before Yue Yang reached a large town called Pagoda Gu. He hired a blue-winged and white-backed gull. It was just like taking a taxi, and it flew him to Silver Horn Tavern.

There was a medium sized tavern.

A gigantic silver horn acted as the tavern's logo, it looked like the base of Silver Horn Guild. There were many like this on the sixth floor of Tong Tian Tower.

Yue Yang pushed opened the door and entered.

Those who saw Yue Yang were a little surprised. Many sized him up and stared at his Gemini Mask as well as the Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear that was wrapped up and strapped to his back. A weak Level 6 Elder wearing a Gold rank mask? The eyes of those who were drinking twinkled, but for some reason they did not reach out to snatch it. Compared to Tong Tian Tower the security here was a lot better.

It seemed that the mercenary at Silver Horn had tricks up his sleeves, at least he managed to keep the customers under control.

Yue Yang ignored the greedy stares, walked straight up to the liquor cabinet and dropped a handful of gold coins. “I’m looking for Dark Blade.”

Chapter 408 – The Real Dark Blade

“There isn’t anyone called Dark Blade here.” The beauty standing behind the bar counter smiled politely. “But there is a wine called Dark Night’s Temptation. Would you like a cup? “

“Get him to come out, now!” Yue Yang dropped another handful of gold coins on the table.

“Although I really want to earn these gold coins... There is really no such person here, I’m sorry.” The beauty bowed slightly.

“My patience is limited.” Yue Yang gave her a was grave look.

“Customer, please allow me to help you.” The half-bald old man standing on the other side reached out to pat the beauty’s shoulder, signalling her to quickly leave. Then, he took over her position and spoke to Yue Yang in all smiles, “Dear customer, she is a newcomer, she doesn’t know anything. If you want to get information on Dark Blade, I’ll tell you an unfortunate news. Dark Blade is dead.”

“How did he die?” Yue Yang asked.

“A month ago, Dark Blade obtained information about a secret treasure. He told his best friend about it. Unexpectedly, his best friend actually sold him out and leaked the information. A formidable adventurer guild found Dark Blade and forced him to go to the place where the secret treasure was hidden. Halfway there they met with more adventurers. As it turned out, that

greedy friend sold the information to quite a few adventurer guilds. In the end, the adventurer guilds started fighting among themselves before they even found the treasure. This eventually drew out the powerful Dragon Hunters. The Dragon Hunters took advantage of the damage both sides suffered and eliminated them all at once. Everyone, including Dark Blade and his friend, was completely wiped out. As for the information about the treasure, because Dark Blade died, no one knows about it anymore..." The half-bald old man sighed. "A lot of people thought that the Dragon Hunters plotted this on purpose. They deceived Dark Blade, let him take the information back and caused a war between the adventurer guilds so that they could benefit from it."

"Is that true?" Yue Yang smiled faintly.

"The whole Pagoda Gu knows about this. At that time, we the Silver Horns Guild also had a meeting because of this, but our leader thought that there was something fishy and gave up. This proved that it was indeed true." The half-bald old man was very persuasive, the story did not contradict itself it was almost perfect, but Yue Yang didn't believe a word he said.

The more genuine the description is, the more artificial it sounded to him.

You don't even need to read detective novels to know this. You could just switch on the television to know that those who looked like good guys on the surface are definitely the bad guys.

Of course, the main reason why Yue Yang felt that the half-bald old man was lying to him was thanks to his Sixth Sense. How

sensitive were the senses of a great Innate Ranker? Yue Yang almost knew even before this old chap opened his mouth. Yue Yang knew that this guy would start lying non-stop, just like unceasing torrents.

In contrast, that beauty didn't dare to start talking so easily, because she was not used to lying and was afraid that Yue Yang would expose her lie immediately.

Her clumsiness and the old man's slyness formed a unusually clear contrast.

If Dark Blade really died, this old man won't be sighing. Instead he would be very happy. He was the kind to rejoice when others suffer misfortunes. Then, he would brag about it and let this topic become the tavern's gossip.

That's why the more ordinary the old man behaved, the more abnormal things would look to Yue Yang.

"Did Dark Blade really die?" Yue Yang asked again for the last time.

"The one that took care of his body was my nephew. Although Dark Blade was not my friend, he never owed me any beer money. In fact, he could be regarded as a nice customer." The half-bald old man tried to act compassionate. He didn't know that in a place called China, there was a fictional character called [Yue Bu Qun](#). This character told readers from different places not to believe others so easily, especially the type who were called 'upright

gentlemen’.

“Revive him and make him appear in front of me as quickly as possible.” Yue Yang once again dropped a handful of gold coins in front of the half-bald old man.

“But he really died.....” The half-bald old man’s gaze hardened slightly. After talking for all this while, he didn’t expect the other party to remain unmoved and still stubbornly believe that Dark Blade was still alive.

“If he doesn’t appear within ten minutes, I’ll burn the tavern down. “ Yue Yang acted as if he was talking about something as a matter of fact.

“Brat, do you have a death wish?”

Behind Yue Yang, there stood a burly and sturdy man. He clapped his hairy hand on Yue Yang’s shoulder and shouted. “Get lost now and never appear in Pagoda Gu again. Or else, I’ll beat you up! Do you think this is the place where you can act so wildly? Even if Party Leader Taurus isn’t here, as his friend, I won’t let others act like this here!”

The customers in the tavern joined in with the sturdy man to condemn Yue Yang.

They got up one after another and cursed loudly.

Some even rolled up their sleeves and were preparing to pounce and gang up on Yue Yang.

The half-bald old man pretended to be nice. “Everyone, we must not get so worked up. It’s just a misunderstanding! Thank you for regarding Silver Horn Tavern so highly. However, we are doing businesses and don’t want to cause trouble, as we want to earn a living. Everyone, please calm down. Come, come, serve some wine to the customers. I’ll pay for this round.” He turned his head towards Yue Yang and smiled. “Honoured customer, please don’t be angry. We understand you want to find Dark Blade urgently. However, he is already dead. If you don’t believe me I’ll get someone to show you his grave. All those that sit here can proof that Dark Blade was dead for half a month. Even his corpse have already began to rot!”

The customers burst out laughing. “Idiot! You only come for the treasure now. If there really are treasures, who will wait for you, fool?”

Another adventurer also mocked Yue Yang. “He’s lucky that he came late. Otherwise, he would have met the Dragon Hunters and would have probably peed in his pants..... Shameless guy, how could a mere Level 6 Elder dare to wreck havoc here? Don’t make me laugh!”

The tall and sturdy bear-tribe man with a loud voice stood behind Yue Yang and roared with laughter. “Did you all hear that? When he said that he will burn down Silver Horn Tavern, I was so shocked! This joker must have been half asleep. He wouldn’t have dreamt that this Silver Horn Tavern was actually opened by the

bull-clan warriors that was the strongest among the Innate Rankers. Lad, you wanna wreck havoc in an Innate's territory? Can you even entertain an Innate? What, did you soil your pants? Touch the crotch of your trousers, don't tell me your penis shrank, is it still there? Ahahaha!"

"Fools."

Yue Yang shook his head.

He swung a careless fist backwards, casually.

As if he was an extremely bored waiter in a deserted restaurant and was trying to casually drive a fly away.

Although the sturdy bear-tribe man was laughing his head off, he was already prepared and reacted in an instant. A giant fist hit back with explosive force and attacked Yue Yang's back. He knew that this fight was coming. He was simply arrogant and laughing wildly on the surface, but he was actually on his guard. Once things went as he expected, he struck back immediately.

Not only him, other customers also thought that the masked brat could not stand being teased in such a way, no matter how good tempered he was. The other customers held their glasses and enjoyed the scene.

Some were even preparing to beat the masked kid to vent out their frustrations after the bear-tribe man knocked him down.

When everyone was prepared to see Yue Yang in trouble, the situation twisted. What happened was something they had never anticipated.

The split second when the huge fist landed on Yue Yang's vest, Yue Yang's hand has already struck the bear-tribe man on his chin a tenth second ago.

The entire Silver Horn Tavern building shook, the glass windows were broken into shards, the lime plaster started shedding.

The customers who sat on the long bench to watch the fight all froze, they were just like clay figurines. Many of them spilt the wine on their chest or trousers but were unaware of that.

Everyone's eyes were wide open, as if their eyeballs were going to pop out. They looked like squashed toads... Although the reality was in front of their eyes, they were unable to believe what has happened. A Level 7 Overlord was sent flying in the air by a Level 6 Elder's single punch. The Overlord even suffered huge damage and fainted on the spot. Was this even possible? Even if it was the opposite, it was highly unlikely.

The half-bald old man was so scared he was shaking. He quietly hide behind the bar counter and was preparing to flee secretly.

"Get out and lead the way. If I still can't meet Dark Blade in 10 minutes, I promise you this Silver Horn Tavern as well as everyone inside would evaporate from the Tong Tian Tower's sixth level."

Yue Yang knocked the counter. The half-bald man was so frightened, he quickly showed his face.

“Bang!” Because the half-bald old man was too flustered, his head accidentally bumped against the edge of the counter. He did not even dare to cry out in pain and quickly lead the way in front.

After five minutes, Yue Yang finally met Dark Blade.

He was a skinny, emaciated thief. His appearance was extremely ordinary, with no unique feature. If one were to throw him into the crowd, it would be just like placing a granule of sand in the beach, he will be lost in the crowd. Of course, if he were to be an idol, his looks won't do. However, as a thief, his looks would be an advantage. For thieves and assassins, being handsome was not required. The more ordinary, the greater the potential, capability and chances of survival.

There were a few more people standing with Dark Blade. There were three man from a different tribes, two dwarfs and a Ox-Head warrior who was topless with a golden belt. There was also a thin and old aged scholar.

The half-bald old man introduced these people. They were the Taurus Party Leader, Taurus; the strategist Elder Ba Gu as well as five core members from an elite team.

As for the Party Leader Taurus, Yue Yang merely took a quick look.

This guy possessed the skills of a Lesser Innate, but Yue Yang was not interested in him. As for the strategist Elder Ba Gu, Yue Yang took his time to size him up. The old guy was a Lesser Innate as well, but the structure of his brain was different from the Taurus leader. It was worth Yue Yang the time to take another second to size him up. There were two dwarves that were Level 7 Overlords. They were probably physically very powerful. The short shaft axe held in their hands were in fact made from Metal Crow Obsidian ore. Of course, Yue Yang was only curious because he had never seen dwarves before.

The three other party members were beings from another race. They were all muscular wolf-tribe warriors, and they were extremely tall. They did not wear shoes and their razor sharp claws were visible. They looked like nimble warriors who were extremely capable of sprinting.

“This person is Dark Blade..... “ The half-bald old man first introduced Yue Yang the thief and apologized to the Taurus Party Leader with a bow, ”My apologies, Party Leader, I couldn’t stop this customer.”

“It’s okay, another person joining the treasure hunt is fine.” The Party Leader Taurus signalled the skinny thief to walk out, “You should let this friend know what happened. Perhaps we can cooperate together. The Evil Dragon Lair is not something us Taurus Party can conquer easily. We need more helpers, but they must be allies who are truly interested in treasure hunting.”

“So this is how you guys treat an ally who is truly interested in treasure hunting?” Yue Yang did not look at the thief. Instead, he

walked in front of one of the Wolf-clan warriors, "You are the real Dark Blade, right?"

Once Yue Yang made this comment, everyone was astonished.

Including the calm and collected Elder Ba Gu, everyone was stunned by Yue Yang. They all stared at him, as if trying to study him once again.

Chapter 409 – The Most Incredible Newcomer

Commoners wouldn't be able to tell Dark Blade's identity.

Normally, if people assume he was a thief, he should look like one. He probably had an ordinary appearance and could easily cover up his traces. However, the best mask was not appearance but identity. No one would have guessed that a thief would disguise himself as a warrior, especially amongst one of the three warriors. This was a seamless trick.

Thus, this thief's real identity, who had never been found out before, was recognised for the first time, by Yue Yang.

Everyone was shocked.

Having the Heaven Eyes Divine Vision, Yue Yang chose not to explain.

Even without the Heaven Eyes Divine Vision, Yue Yang wouldn't be bluffed because smart people usually tended to be skeptical. Only the one-track minded would easily trust others.

“Yes, I am the real Dark Blade. ” The qi of this wolf-tribe warrior improved in a flash, from originally Level 7 Overlord to a Lesser Innate. Waving his two claws as fast as lightning, he put on an all-black suit in the blink of an eye, becoming a fox-tribe thief. He hid his identity on the surface as a warrior. Even his wolf-tribe

identity was fake.

Yue Yang thought “pretending a big tail wolf” (means pretending to be an honourable gentleman in Chinese) was just perfect to describe him.

However, this was indeed the best way to cover up.

Mr. Chen’s words about Dark Blade being an expert in disguise were completely true... Yue Yang observed Dark Blade’s waist and noticed that there was a silver knife. It was greenish black in color with hollowed-out textures. The Heaven Rune Seal Engraving on it distinguished that it was at least a Gold-ranked Dagger. However, it was wrapped in rough leather to make it look like a bronze-ranked knife. This was truly a genius idea.

“Give me your information. I will pay you if they are useful. ” Yue Yang acted like he was buying information for the Thief Guild.

“Don’t tell him ! This brat doesn’t look like a good guy.” The two dwarves protested together.

“I’ll share first. The Evil Dragon Lair does exist, but it is currently the Dragon Hunters’ base and is the hunting ground for more than two groups of Dragon Hunters. They cooperate with the evil giant dragons inside: The dragons take charge of tracking other innocent dragons while the Dragon Hunters are responsible for killing them then they share the wealth equally. Right now, our powers are not even enough to take down the Dragons Hunters as they have at least two leaders, who are Innate Rankers and are not

under the Innate Alliance yet. Forget about killing the evil giant dragons.” The Ox-head Party leader Taurus who was half-naked with six-packs stomach looked at Yue Yang and said, ”May I know if your party has any support from Innate Rankers? If you have at least one, maybe we can try to cooperate. On our side we also have one Innate Ranker, the proud of our tribe — Silver Horn!”

“We do have Innate Rankers, but we are not going to cooperate. Let’s hunt separately and take whatever you find.” Yue Yang refused.

“Don’t rush, make the decision after getting more detailed information.” That wise Elder Ba Gu hurriedly added on. After knowing that Yue Yang had support from Innate Rankers, his eyes immediately lighted up as he knew that with or without support from Innate Rankers would definitely make a difference.

“Hum...” The two dwarves were no longer opposed to sharing of information with Yue Yang too.

“The entrance of the Evil Dragon Lair is different from that of a normal dragon lair’s. It is not located on top of a high cliff that is usually the case with normal dragon lairs, but hidden within the depths of the Rock Forest. The Rock Forest was filled with extremely hazardous terrain and cliffs, so dangerous that it is impossible for normal warriors to get near. This dangerous terrain spanned tens of kilometres long, and in the middle of the this terrible terrain, there is a tall, steep cliff. The entrance to the Evil Dragon Lair is right in the middle of this tall, steep cliff. Below the entrance are covered with slippery cliffs, hence there are no other ways to go through except for flight. Almost all the adventurers

died under attacks from a huge swarm of evil dragons which live around the entrance. These dragons are troublesome as some are Bronze-ranked Level 9 while others reached Silver-ranked Level 8. Fortunately, unless it's a King-ranked Evil Dragon, there are very few Gold-ranked Level 7." Dark Blade glanced at Yue Yang while slowly telling him about these information, "Currently, as far as I know, there is one Black Dragon and two Scarlet Dragons. The Black Dragon is not yet a Hell Dragon or a Holy Beast, but it is still remarkably powerful. Although all three are Gold-ranked Level 10, the Black Dragon's power exceeds the other two by several times. By my estimation, Innate Rankers below Level 5 wouldn't be able to do anything to this dragon at all... Additionally, we need at least Level 3 Innate Rankers to fight against the Scarlet Dragons. Furthermore, I can not guarantee that there are no more Evil Dragons inside the Dragon Lair. Maybe there are, and maybe they are much stronger existences than the three dragons outside."

"Innate Rankers would have to join forces and cooperate seamlessly in order to obtain victory." The wise Elder Ba Gu suggested to Yueyang, "We can distribute the spoils of war according to their powers and achievements."

"The great Lord Silver Horn from our tribe is a Level 5 Innate Ranker. May I know what level is the Innate Ranker on your side at?" The Ox-head Party leader Taurus clearly indicated his bargaining attitude: If your party is weaker than mine, sorry, you will have to take my commands then.

"Level 6." The moment Yue Yang said this, Dark Blade and his party members showed various expressions.

Delight, distress, emotional, excited and worried.

On the surface, a superior ally is definitely a good news. A strong alliance would imply a conquered mission.

However, a strong alliance also meant that more treasures have to be shared with others. A Level 6 Innate Ranker would definitely want to take the rare, more valuable treasures. He wouldn't be interested in normal ones.

The Ox-head Party leader Taurus traded gazes with the wise Elder Ba Gu tacitly and said, "I don't mean any disrespect, but may I know the name of this Innate Ranker? This way, I can also report to Lord Silver Horn."

Yue Yang looked at him with tranquil and said: "Titan."

Everyone was stunned again.

Because it was a name they never heard of.

A Level 6 Innate Ranker was supposed be well known by everyone in the Sixth Floor of the Tong Tian Tower. Unexpectedly, this masked man had actually mentioned an unfamiliar name.

"Lies!" The two dwarves with worst temper immediately refuted: "We've never heard of any 'Titan' before!"

“May I know if there are any remarkable achievements by this Titan which we can pay respect to?” The Ox-head Party leader Taurus’s first thought was also that this man was telling a lie. It is risky enough to pretend to be an Innate Ranker, but this man actually lied about a Level 6 Innate Ranker, which could be exposed extremely easily. The masked man should have known this truth as well, then why did he choose to lie? Taurus knew that he should never offend a Level 6 Innate Ranker, so he was especially prudent before he could confirm that the information was fabricated.

“He has killed Nightmare and Tiger Nian from the Bloody Villain List recently, plus Demon Eye, the strongest of the three leaders of the Thunder Fortress. About this, you can solve your inquiries at the Warrior Guild.” Yue Yang left before leaving his last sentence for them, “I will set off in three hours, no matter whether you guys are joining me or not.”

“How about that honorable Master Titan?” The wise elder Ba Gu asked in a hurry.

“He will appear when necessary.” Yue Yang disappeared.

“...” Everyone looked at each other in dismay, unsure whether they should believe him or not.

This guy was far too arrogant. If he didn’t have a certain confidence, he definitely wouldn’t come to Evil Dragon Lair just to throw away his life. Without the protection of Innate Rankers, someone at his level would certainly become a meal for the dragons. But this name, Titan, they really had never heard of him

before. Normally, the name of a Level 6 Innate Ranker should be known far and wide for at least hundreds of years. How could they never heard of him before?

Even if it was for the purpose of hiding his true power, it was still highly impossible that the name still sounded so unfamiliar.

They glanced towards each other and rushed to the Warrior Guild in Pagoda Gu in the next moment, aiming to unmask the truth.

However, the answer for the Warrior Guild shocked them entirely, making them want to weep and laugh at the same time. After the Records Officer was paid with 100 gold coins of consultation fee, he went into the inner office to look for the records and came back to tell them, “Titan. This person does exist. He is a newcomer from the Soaring Dragon Continent that entered the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower not long ago...”

The two dwarves were so speechless that they fell to the ground. How dare a newcomer bragged himself as a Level 6 Innate Ranker?

Both Dark Blade and Taurus lost hope. If there was really a powerful Level 6 Innate Ranker offering help, they might have the chance to overthrow the Evil Dragon Lair. But there was only a liar.

The wise Elder Ba Gu didn't show any expressions, no one knew what he was thinking about.

Just as they were about to leave, that Records Officer turned to another page, “A few days ago, the newcomer Titan slayed Nightmare and Tiger Nian at the Thunder Fortress. Oh my god, he killed Nightmare and Tiger Nian? Did I misread? Someone must have wrongly recorded down the achievements of other Innate Rankers under his name. But how could they make this kind of mistakes? Look at the next lines, Titan exchanged rewards at Warrior Guild No.1 at the Plaza of the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower... My god, is there anything wrong with this record? I am so confused now... I must be freaking dreaming... And here is another page, Titan claimed that he killed Demon Eye who was one of the three leaders of the Thunder Fortress and requested to redeem Immortal Spring as his reward... This news has already been confirmed. Demon Eye, one of the three commanders of Thunder Fortress had been killed on the spot by the younger brother of the Titan Brothers, Mr. Titan Jr.. Sky Dragon, one of the great Ten Sky Demons was also present at the scene. However, he was defeated at the same time by Mr. Titan Jr. After that, he ran away and escaped the Thunder Fortress, leaving no traces left. Just like that, every shop and people who was related to Titan immediately changed their names to show their respect to this super hero after that war... Goodness, how can he be a newcomer? Please forgive my mistakes and dirty mouth. I swear I don’t mean any disrespect for Innates. NEVER!”

That Records Officer frantically put down his records and bowed respectfully. He was afraid that his rude words would offend some Innate Rankers.

Even if Innate Rankers didn’t look for him, the Warrior Guild would probably fire him soon.

The most astonished ones were Taurus, Elder Ba Gu and the rest.

They all covered their mouths as they tried to recall to the best of their abilities, had they expressed any rudeness towards this 'Titan' newcomer who had slaughtered three Innates? They had better not, or they would really suffer a tragic fate.

The two dwarves also broke out in a cold sweat. Luckily they didn't yell that Titan was a newcomer at the Warrior Guild, or argue that Titan was a trash who told lies.

Nightmare and Tiger Nian were homicidal maniacs whose names could even stop babies from crying.

They not only had Level 3 Innate Rankers' power, but were also eccentric beasts. Even other higher-levelled Innate Rankers avoided provoking them. As for Demon Eye, one of the three leaders of the Thunder Fortress, he was also a killer maniac with hands soaked in blood, killing people like killing ants. Having the power of Level 5 Innate made him fearless in the Sixth Floor of the Tong Tian Tower. It was unbelievable that he was also defeated by Titan.

The most ridiculous thing is that Sky Dragon, one of the Ten Great Sky Demons had also become the newcomer Titan's punching bag.

Sky Dragon's fame had surged up for three hundred years in the Sixth Floor of the Tong Tian Tower.

Although he was ranked at no. 10, who were the Top Ten Sky Demons? Even the weakest was Level 6 Innate Ranker. Their No. 1, Sky Execution was a legend who could shake the whole Tong Tian Tower with a single step.

Even the most arrogant Great Demon King from the Demon Abyss would show respect towards Sky Execution.

However, Sky Dragon, who could share the same title with Sky Execution, had actually lost to a newcomer!

Who would dare to believe that?

Just that sentence about Sky Dragon being slayed by this newcomer was as shocking as if a tiny ant had turned a gigantic Gold Mammoth over.

It was also more horrifying than a tiny shrimp ate a shark...

Now, Taurus and the rest totally understood.

Why was that masked man so arrogant? The reason was he had enough power to back himself up.

Behind him, there was Titan, a super Innate Ranker who killed Demon Eye, Nightmare and Tiger Nian and defeated Sky Dragon in front of public right after he came to Sixth Floor of the Tong Tian Tower.

“Dear me, we almost died from shock.” The two dwarves wiped the cold sweat on their foreheads, and cheered for the fluke that they didn’t turn their lives upside down because of their words.

“Woo!” That half-bald elder also took a breath and relaxed. Luckily no one offended the Innate.

“Now we do have hope!” Dark Blade suddenly had the thought that Yue Yang’s arrogance was helpful and reasonable. Powerful warriors should have this attitude because if they were modest, how can the weaker ones behave?

“I will report to Lord Silver Horn immediately. With this strong ally, we can probably take down Evil Dragon Lair in one battle. ” Taurus animatedly waved his tremendous fist. Was a bit worried though, not because of suspicions about others’ power, but fears that others would be ashamed of his power. Moreover, in order to attract more challengers who were willing to sacrifice themselves, Silver Horn Guild had spread out the message. Now there were at least two hundred people leaving for Evil Dragon Lair. If he made any mistakes, there might be some unavoidable conflicts.

After three hours.

When Yue Yang walked to the teleportation destination and prepared to be teleported to Bo Nan Town where was nearest to Evil Dragon Lair, Taurus , ,Dark Blade and the rest all came with a grin from ear to ear, acting if they and Yue Yang were pretty close, and crowd around him, “Master Silver Horn replied and sincerely

invited Titan to cooperate. The distribution proportion will be 4:6. We will take 4 while you can have 6. We don't know if Titian will agree on this distribution scale?"

"No one can tell what's going to happen in the future, so we'd better distribute all the gains according to contributions. If both parties have tried their best, 4:6 is acceptable." Yue Yang played the role of spokesperson. Taurus rejoiced as he could tell that this masked man must be a representative of people who gained most trust from Titan. He may be his brother, child or nephew, the closest relative anyway. Taurus was excited by the fact that if he could build up a good relationship with this man, this means that he will have the ladder to another Innate while that Titian was an excellent one.

"..." Dark Blade also intended to smarm up to Yue Yang, but a Level 6 magic crystal in his hand seemed to be a bit shabby.

He could tell from the Gold-ranked mask Yue Yang was wearing that he could never be pleased by just a Level 6 magic crystal. What's more, he with his nimble sense, felt an indistinct fluctuating power from the backpack Yue Yang was carrying. That definitely belonged to another Gold-ranked artefact.

A Level Six Elder, to their surprise, had two Gold-ranked artefacts.

If without an extraordinary Innate Ranker supporting him at the back, this young man would be robbed whenever he goes out. For him, a Level 6 magic crystal was useless. Dark Blade clenched his teeth, thinking that if he can go for broke and find a chance to give

“that treasure” to this young man and ask him to pass to Titian, he might also gain the protection from this Innate and a bright future ahead.

Of course, in front of all the teammates, he would never express goodwill to Titian, especially in front of Taurus, otherwise Silver Horn will hate him.

The Reaper Mantis flew down from the sky.

Its showing up immediately scared the blue-winged and white-backed terns around to flee in disarray.

Beasts on the ground were shivering and sobbing.

All the beasts at wherever it passed would bend their heads to this Level Four Platinum-ranked Reaper Mantis.

After it closed its wings and gently landed behind Yue Yang, Taurus swallowed his saliva asked with pretended calm, “Is this your beast?”

Chapter 410 – A Strong Enemy Appeared!

Invading the Evil Dragon Lair went off without a hitch.

This, however, gave Yue Yang an ominous feeling. It was too easy, this must be a trap!

On the surface, there was no problem entering the Evil Dragon Lair as two hundred adventurers ventured together. Before they entered the Evil Dragon Lair, tens of Red Flame Flying Dragons attacked. However, everyone worked for the same purpose and quickly defeated the dragons, a huge portion ran away and a few were killed on the spot. The main reason they won was that two Innates appeared within them. One was invited by the Sword and Shield adventurer Group, the Innate Level 3 ‘Eruption’. The other was Flame Breath’s close friend, the Innate Level 2 ‘Hurricane’.

With these two people, victory was very easy.

So much that, Yue Yang had recalled the Reaper Mantis. Moreover, he had quietly concealed himself among the adventurers and did not come out to kill the Red Flame Flying Dragons.

Party Leader Taurus and the others repeatedly looked at the skies in the distance.

Silver Horn did not appear.

The other Innate Ranker ‘Titan’ also did not appear. This made Party Leader Taurus a bit worried.

After the Red Flame Flying Dragons were defeated and escaped without a trace, other than a few injured mercenaries, who brought back the Flying Dragon’s corpse back to Bo Nan Town, everyone else had resolved to brave through the Evil Dragon Lair. Under the lead of four Innates, let alone the Evil Dragon Lair, they could even go anywhere on the Sixth Floor of the Tong Tian Tower.

As everyone got close to the opening of the Evil Dragon Lair, a bright light came down like a shooting star from afar.

Party Leader Taurus let out a cheer...

That was Silver Horn, an Innate who had reached Rank 5.

Everyone quickly paid their respects. Even ‘Eruption’ and ‘Hurricane’ these two innates were no exception... Dialogues between Innates need not be known to bystanders so the adventurers consciously retreated. The three innates exchanged a few words and quickly entered the Evil Dragon Lair. Afterwards the adventurers strived to be first and entered the Evil Dragon Lair, with the biggest group, Sword and Shield adventurer Group, in front.

Yue Yang’s brown wrinkled.

He felt an extremely strong unease. He only felt this kind of feeling when he intruded upon the Demon Palace and the Prison Emperor's Divine Palace.

Could it be, the Evil Dragon Lair was another Demon Palace?

Or is it another Prison Emperor's Divine Palace?

"..." Yue Yang wanted to turn around and leave the place. He felt that charging into unfavorable situations was unwise. However, if he left, then he might miss on something. When training, the hardest thing to find was an opponent that could help him improve. Every adventure, every battle, are all opportunities to level up. Men must face hardships. If he was afraid of any region in the Sixth Floor of the Tong Tian Tower, then he should not hope to go to Heaven Realm.

No matter what kind of place the Evil Dragon Lair was, even if it was hell, Yue Yang had decided to enter until the furthest he can go.

He tightly clenched his fists.

Dark Blade looked at Yue Yang who had stopped in his tracks and suddenly whispered: "Will Lord Titan really come?"

"He will." Yue Yang turned around and looked at the mysterious thief.

“Since he will come, then I will go in. If he doesn’t come, I feel that the two of us should leave. Coming here once again gave me a more terrifying feeling. Something must have happened inside. I feel a chill as if I have entered an ice house.” Dark Blade had goose bumps all over his skin. He did not have an innate’s sensitivity, but he was still an excellent thief, hence his sensitivity was not weak. Although he could not specify the strange feeling, he instinctively felt that the situation was very bad. If it wasn’t because of Yue Yang’s response, he would absolutely not enter the Evil Dragon Lair.

“Those who left could have already...” Yue Yang looked at the distant horizon. The presence of those adventurers who left have disappeared in a flash.

“What?” Sweat poured out from Dark Blade’s body.

“Go in, this place could be fun.” Yue Yang jumped down from the cliff and flew among the adventurer groups.

“No, this place is not one bit fun.” Dark Blade wiped his cold sweat and immediately chased behind Yue Yang. He now felt that the only safe place in the Evil Dragon Lair was besides this masked boy. If he got lost, then it might be equal to losing his life.

The Evil Dragon Lair was hot inside with a sulfuric smell.

The deeper they went, the hotter it got.

It could be confirmed that this was not a volcano nor a lava cave. The sole reason was because living creature that emit heat were living here.

Yue Yang was careful in every step. He had never tried being this cautious before.

Even when he had independently charged through the Aries' Palace for the first time, he was not this tense. Every step he took felt like marching towards death. It felt like being strangled by the throat, close to suffocation and extremely painful. If Yue Yang immediately left the Evil Dragon Lair, no one could stop him. However, Yue Yang clenched his fists and did not do such a thing. He believed that this extremely difficult adventure was also an unexpected battle. If he could break through the lair, then it would be extremely beneficial to his cultivation... On the contrary, if he left, then a regret would be left in his heart, just like those warriors who could not pass the Gemini Palace and the Virgo Palace. They could only run away from their heart's weakness and never face them eternally.

The Ancient Runes in his body trembled and faintly resonated.

Most likely, this place also has an Ancient Rune Circle.

The previous one that Yue Yang had encountered was the one on a cliff in the Cloud Peak Lake. That place was a zone where flying was forbidden. What could be prohibited here?

On the cliff in Cloud Peak Lake, Yue Yang had understood the

rune's power and the gains were huge. Could he still reap great profits today as well?

“My beast...” The adventurers suddenly became frantic.

“Oh my god!”

“No, how could it be like this!”

Yue Yang's sight became cold. He now understood what the Evil Dragon Lair prohibited. This place completely prohibited beasts. It was the opposite of the Five Elements Palace. Countless beasts roll about in pain and suffering. In the end they turned into shards of colourful lights before their owners could call them back and disappeared. Even strengthening beasts separated from their owners and quickly disappeared.

The Evil Dragon Lair was very deep and filled with a power that prohibits summoning.

No beasts, only the owners... Yue Yang's heart became cold. Could it be that the reason he felt danger was because he could not rely on his beasts? It would decrease his strength greatly.

Compared to Yue Yang, the adventurers had suffered a greater loss in terms of their combat power without their beast.

In any case, Yue Yang was still an Innate that was an expert in using battle skills. Even without Xiao Wen Li's and the Giant

Shadow's help, he was still able to battle. However those adventurers who relied on strengthening beasts and elemental beasts were hopeless. Losing their beasts was equal to losing all fighting power. In the midst of the uproar, thirty people had no choice but to leave because they lost all fighting power and could not explore further.

After five minutes, Yue Yang felt the thirty people's death. Their presence disappeared as if cut down by a sword.

The adventurer group who knew nothing continued to move forward.

Yue Yang stood among them and hid his presence and secretly observed.

The inside of the cave had flame red ores. Their light was not bright enough but they were enough to illuminate the way. The thing that made everyone felt dry was a weird smell from the burning hot air. This made the races who had a strong sense of smell frightened... that smell was from a huge dragon.

If this place did not forbid summoning, just the smell of the huge dragon was enough to make the beast feel fear and run away.

"Will Lord Titan really come?" Dark Blade walked besides Yue Yang and quietly asked.

"Yes." Yue Yang did not pay attention to him. He picked up a

stone and observed it.

This was a very ordinary rock, but it was mysteriously filled with the power of the ancient code. In the past, Yue Yang had seen this situation before on Cloud Peak Lake. It seems that it had no relationship with the ores here and the true mechanism was the Ancient Rune Circle.

In Yue Yang's heart, he couldn't help but let his expectation rise.

If he could absorb the second Ancient Rune Circle's power and obtain a lot of Ancient Runes, he believes that this would help level up the World Exterminating Wheel and his other runes... The more Yue Yang walked, the more he felt the power of the ancient code. After walking a few kilometers inside the Evil Dragon Lair, he discovered that there was a huge space in front. It was about the size of ten football fields. The entire space was blood red with genuine Star Fire Ores... high up the dome, a layer of red sand, blood cloud and red mercury swirled around like a whirlpool.

Dark Blade despairingly shook his head: "No, I had came here before and there was no Red Sand Blood Cloud Whirlpool."

Red Sand Blood Cloud Whirlpool. It was said that it could increase the power of any flame attribute. Even more so, it could increase the power of evil flame attributes by much more. However, every user must offer a huge amount of blood as a sacrifice.

This thing could be specifically found in Demonic Pools.

Unexpectedly there was also another one here.

What made Yue Yang take note of was not the Red Sand Blood Cloud Whirlpool above but the floor, which emanated the power of the Ancient Code. This proves that the Ancient Rune Circle was hidden underground. On the opposite side of the adventurer groups, in front of the huge wall, the three innates, 'Silver Horn', 'Eruption', and 'Hurricane' stood there. They looked at the Ancient Rune Circle above... Other than Yue Yang, nobody else could tell the Ancient Rune Circle was fake. Although it had the power of existence, it did not resonate with Yue Yang's Ancient Rune.

That was definitely a fake.

Unfortunately, even Silver Horn was easily deceived by the Ancient Rune Circle.

"Welcome everyone. It seems that we have many visitors." A huge black dragon came from the east wall, extending his sinister head and spoke in human language: "Unfortunately, we will never share this Ancient Rune Circle with you. Of course, we will not object using your blood to wake up. When the sacrifice is finished, we will definitely tell you the secrets of the Ancient Rune Circle our senior left us.

"The number of humans is a bit few. How good would it be if a thousand of them came." Another huge red dragon came out from the west wall and extended its head. It also spoke in human language, but it was a bit unclear and was far from the black dragon.

“Roar!” Another red dragon, whose body was smaller than the two flew out from nowhere. It spiraled around and hanged on the stalactite protruding from the Whirlpool. It looked down and let out an ear-splitting roar towards the adventurer group. Its voice echoed in the entire space as if a thunder clap. Those weaker adventurers already had bleeding ears and fell on the floor.

Just a roar from a read dragon that did not know how to speak carried frightening might.

Most of the mercenaries’ heart sank and lost the courage from before.

Outside the cave, two groups of dragon hunters with at least twenty people each quietly arrived. Their faces were covered with madness and blood-thirst. They coldly laughed as if the adventurers were already their sacrificial offerings, like a pig on the table.

Yue Yang swept outside a glance and his pupils slightly squinted.

He saw someone unexpected... it was simply impossible for this person to appear. However, her really appeared.

Did this person really appear just to deal with two hundred mercenaries.

Could it be a plot against him?

This was a plot?

However, this person appeared without any tricks, could it be that he was not afraid of alerting the enemy?

If this person did not come for Yue Yang, then what did this person come to the Evil Dragon Lair for? What could have attracted him to come here?

“Shun Tian, the Emperor of Zi Wei...” The three innates were frightened. The Emperor of Zi Wei that had already disappeared from the Sixth Floor of the Tong Tian Tower for hundreds of years actually appeared inside the Evil Dragon Lair. Even an idiot would not think that he came here to kill the huge dragons for the common people.

“I am not this place’s owner. I am a guest. The one who invited me was the Black Prince.” Once Shun Tian said this, everyone felt that the situation was already dire and only death awaits. Their hearts were filled with despair.

Chapter 411 – Scarlet Emperor

“This is a misunderstanding. I have no intention of offending an Innate. We are willing to apologise and compensate you with the best treasures.” Silver Horn hoped that Shun Tian would spare him. They definitely could not fight. He believed that Shun Tian could defeat everyone here with a single finger.

He realised that he had broken into a place he should not have. The only hope was to get out of there before the secret was revealed.

Or else, the other party would kill him in a few seconds without hesitation.

Only death could really conceal secrets eternally.

While he was speaking, Silver Horn skillfully used the word ‘we’. Even until the very last juncture, he didn’t forget about allying with his companions. Although Eruption and Hurricane were only Innate level 3 and 2, in Silver Horn’s eyes that was some force to utilize. He knew that if he confronted Shun Tian on his own, even if he was ten times stronger he would be easily killed in an instant.

Eruption grasped his best teleportation crystal in his palm.

All he need to do was to crush that crystal to get out of there.

But he didn’t dare to gamble.

If he crushed the teleportation crystal and it didn't work, he would certainly die.

Or perhaps, the teleportation worked but teleporting away would need a second. For Shun Tian, the Great Emperor of Zi Wei, a second was enough for him to kill any warrior under Innate level 5.

"I'm not the host, same as you, I'm a guest." Shun Tian laughed out loud, but he didn't accept Silver Horn's apology.

This meant he didn't want to them get away.

For now, regardless whether this intrusion was intentional.

Once anyone entered and discovered the secret about the Ancient Rune Circle. Shun Tian only believed in one kind of man who could keep secrets, which is a dead man.

"As the host, when there are visitors how could I not entertain the guests? If this gets out, others would tease me for not knowing my etiquettes. Relax everyone. Once you finish enjoying the pleasure of knowing the Ancient Rune Circle's secret. I'll treat you all with hospitality and send you off myself." The Black Prince's eerie, terrifying voice rang. No one can tell where he really was, it seemed to come from afar, yet it sounded like he was right behind their back, it was indiscernible. The Black Prince's words made everyone's heart stopped for three second ... What he had in mind was clear, apparently he didn't plan to let them go off so easily.

“Let me leave. I can give up an arm and a leg, as well as the best treasure. In addition, I will offer you a million gold coins every year.” Silver Horn made the greatest sacrifice.

“You don’t need to do that. You people just need to watch silently.” The Black Prince declined flatly.

Pop!

Eruption crushed the teleportation crystal, using the fastest speed he ever did in his life.

A light beam flashed, but did not rise towards the sky. Instead, it strangely merged with the ground and vanished without a trace.

The teleportation failed!

Although this place did not prohibit teleportation, even the blind could tell that teleportation wouldn’t work here.

Eruption’s last struggle was futile. This filled him with despair, like a gambler who had lost everything. With scarlet eyes, he laughed maniacally.

“ Ahahahahahaha.....ahaha ...”

The broad, empty space echoed with Eruption’s laughter, which

was full of despair.

A lot of people broke out in cold sweat, including Silver Horn. Now that Eruption had been driven crazy, who knows whether the next one would be them.

Yue Yang watched all this calmly.

The disordered aura of fear and grief given off by the surrounding adventurers was the best cover for him.

Hiding among the crowd, Shun Tian didn't even look at the large group of adventurers, let alone notice his presence. Shun Tian's gaze didn't even land on Eruption who was driven crazy, instead it landed on Silver Horn and Hurricane.

If this was not a plot set up to ambush him, then it should be an earth-shattering secret.

Yue Yang thought. An Ancient Rune Circle that cannot be revealed to the public but hidden deep underground. An Ancient Rune Circle that seemed to only gained power recently. What does that mean? Ancient Rune Circles have many different uses, but there were usually two main uses. One was to pass on knowledge, like the 'World Exterminating Wheel' that was passed on to Yue Yang. It was the best proof. Another one was sealing, like the Dark Golden Sceptre sealed in the White Jade Beetle's body and the Golden Specter sealed in the Gold Palace's box. They were all considered small scale sealing. The large scale ones, for example, would be the ones in the Seven Star Pillars in Prison Emperor's

Divine Palace. There was the Prison Emperor Divine Sword that sealed Ming Yue Guang, the Prison Emperor Divine Staff that sealed Xu Kong, and the Prison Emperor Divine Seal sealed Jiu Xiao.

Could it be that this place also sealed a super frightening monster?

At this thought, Yue Yang's heart couldn't help but shiver.

“ Ahahahahaha ...” Eruption was still laughing maniacally.

“Why don't I think that was funny?” The Black Dragon with his enormous head and numerous, sinister-looking teeth shook his head and snorted. “We didn't even thought about disturbing anyone. We only wanted to reveal this Ancient Rune Circle's secret quietly. But you all, just had to come looking for your own death. Such irony! Did you think that you can slaughter a dragon relying on three low level Innates and these shrimps? Are you joking? I'm not made of tofu! With another evolution, I would become the Black Hell Dragon. Even now I am a Hellflame Black Dragon. A Level 10 Platinum Hellflame Black Dragon. You shrimps wish to slay me?”

“Forget about you, boss, even I, Flame Eyes and my brother, Flame Tongues are not what they could even think of taking on.” The Scarlet Dragon who could speak mocked arrogantly. “Those below Innate Level 6, we'll kill whoever that comes our way. How foolish are these humans, what do they think Giant Dragons are?”

“Innate Level 6?” Dark Blade heart skipped a beat. They had an Innate Level 6 in their party, Titan. Although he was below Shun Tian’s level, they might know each other.

“Use fresh blood as sacrifice... Everyone, the show is about to start.” The Black Prince’s eerie, sinister voice rang out.

Silver Horn and the others looked grim.

Although the Black Prince wasn’t anxious to kill the adventurers that broke in, it didn’t mean that he would let them go.

Maybe this super Innate was thinking of keeping them, two hundred adventurers, in order to prevent any accidents from happening and to avoid the unexpected. Once the situation takes a turn for the worse, the two hundred adventurers and three Innates could be the scapegoats and sacrificial lambs. Although the Black Prince and Shun Tian had so much power, they were still so cautious. This was truly admirable.

Yue Yang was slightly surprised.

Because he realised that whether it was the Black Prince or Shun Tian, They both didn’t realise that the Ancient Rune Circle on the walls were fake. The real Ancient Rune Circle was under their feet, yet they didn’t seem to sense it ... In front of the wall, around twenty Dragon Hunters supporting pots, poured and sprinkled a large amount of fresh blood on the Ancient Rune Circle. Then they killed hundreds and thousands of Dwarf slaves in front of the wall.

An old hierophant chanted crazily, waving his bone staff.

(Shiro: Hierophant – a person, especially a priest, who interprets sacred mysteries or esoteric principles.)

Actually, before this old man started chanting, the Ancient Rune Circle had already begun to flash with a demonic red glow.

Gold, black, white, and sliver. The Runes peeled themselves off from the Ancient Rune Circle one after another. While every single rune peeled off from the rune circle, the room made of stone shook. Maybe even the entire mountain peak was shaking. Everyone paled, no one would have thought that undoing an Ancient Rune Circle could actually result in an earthquake. Now, even before the Ancient Rune Circle was undone, this place was about to collapse. What should they do? The adventurers who broke in were not the only ones astonished, even the Dragon Hunters had the word ‘shock’ written all over their faces. However, nobody dared to move, not even a single step without Shun Tian nor the Black Prince’s order.

Yue Yang’s pupils contracted slightly.

Only him, with the Heaven Eye Divine Vision could see— inside the fake Ancient Rune Circle, there hid a terrifying Innate... It was definitely not a seal, instead, it was camouflage.

The terrifying Innate was concealed within the Ancient Rune Circle, lurking, waiting for some kind of opportunity.

Now, this Innate, who lurked within the Ancient Rune Circle for

unknown years has finally awoken.

On the stone wall, crimson demonic light glowed brightly.

The crimson light in the entire area was so thick that it seemed as if even the air itself turned into blood. Even the legendary Blood Pond Hell was no match when compared to this.

When the last giant rune broke off from the Ancient Rune Circle on the wall, the entire ground shook, and rubbles fell from the sky ceaselessly. Even the rock mass surrounding them have developed huge web-like cracks. Right now, everyone was focused on the wall that was about to crumble. No one paid attention to the comparatively intact floor, except Yue Yang. He discovered a kind of even more well concealed and sinister power deep down, under their feet, restless and stirring. It's just that this guy was cunning, he used the wall as his ally to hide himself. He was hardly noticeable.

The walls, now free of runes, exploded with a boom.

A flash of crimson light which was hundred times brighter than the sun's rays shot out vigorously, and did not cease.

Even the powerful Great Emperor of Zi Wei Shun Tian couldn't help but to furrow his brows slightly and observe attentively, fully focused, seeking for the secret of the Ancient Rune Circle wholeheartedly.

“Boom!”

A small, delicate hand reached out from within the rock wall. Her movements were soft and gentle, yet the power it brought was devastating, just like thunderbolt.

A rubble as large as the millstone flew through the air.

Before the person in the stone wall could struggle free, the entire mountain was shaking crazily, as if the sky was about to fall and the earth was about to crack open ... Yue Yang sensed, at the same moment, that an even more terrifying power from underground was struggling within the real Ancient Rune Circle, as if it was trying to escape from the seal.

Rocks as large as houses jolted off from the rock wall. The adventurers who were unable to dodge were all pounded into meat paste.

When the ‘person in the wall’ broke through the wall, the rocks that flew out was nothing less compared to an Innate Ranker’s attack. Even the most powerful Ox-head Party leader Jin Niu dodged rapidly and didn’t dared to block it with his arm, not to mention about the ordinary adventurers. Dark Blade was alarmed, he was standing behind Yue Yang all this time and didn’t even leave for one second. He had a feeling that his only way out of this was to stay close to this masked man, once he left he would die immediately.

What had burst out from the wall was a naked, bewitching and

gorgeous beauty with a delicately shaped body that would make people drool. Her flame like hair danced in the breezeless air. The two small horns at her temples made her look wild and sexy. With stunning eyes and charming lips, anyone who caught a glimpse of her flirtatious appearance would have their beast blood boiling immediately. Their desire to push her down would come surging forward like a huge wave. Her soft bosom was like as delicate as snow. Her slender waist, and her deadly and tempting tail behind her sexy hips seemed like a queen's seductive whip.

This beautiful woman, a femme fatale, didn't mind other people's gaze.

Once out of the wall, she ignored the fact that her naked body was exposed and winked at the crowd flirtatiously.

Once she used her seductive eyes to "electrocute" them, all the adventurers turned immediately into mad beasts. Those who lacked willpower have already started tearing their own clothes apart, with their saliva overflowing, as if they want to sleep with the lamia immediately.

Even those with strong willpower couldn't help but get carried away by her bewitching gaze and ended up revealing their hog like appearance.

Shun Tian swallowed his saliva and acted in a refined and courteous manner. He first tossed out a golden coat at the beauty for her to cover herself. At the same time, he paid respect with the rites of an Innate. "Greetings, I'm Junior Shun Tian. I don't know why senior was sealed here, but since fate had let me meet your

beauty, please grant us your name, so that us juniors could pay respect.”

(Shiro: Shun Tian didn't know the beauty, junior/senior is just the way he speak to respect the beauty)

The woman who was just like a femme fatale caught Shun Tian's coat with a swift movement of her fingers.

Her skills were so brilliantly executed that even Shun Tian was moved.

She slowly put on the golden coat. It was unknown whether it was deliberate or simply in her nature, but even when she was wearing her clothes, she didn't forget to tempt them. A lot of adventurers couldn't bear their desire at the bottom of their heart and naked with their eyes bright red, they charged fanatically at the femme fatale. Shun Tian obviously won't miss this chance to ingratiate himself with her. He reached out his finger tapped continuously, the empty strength of his finger like electricity dashed out towards the mad adventurers who was prepared to violate the woman and they all died with an exploded head.

“This coat is really pretty, I like it!” The femme fatale looked at Shun Tian with her sexy eyes. Although she was looking at Shun Tian, everyone present felt that she was looking at themselves and talking to them. The femme fatale giggled before she started talking with her alluring voice. “Since this handsome Shun Tian has asked, I'll tell you, I'm called Scarlet Concubine (Scarlet Concubine)... Oh, a thousand years had passed, I'm afraid you all already forgot about me.”

“Scarlet Concubine?” For a moment, Shun Tian really didn’t thought that there was such a beauty in the past.

“.....” Yue Yang, on the other hand, was shocked.

Now he could completely understand. The terrifying Innate sealed under their feet, was actually him! The one that was defeated by Prison Emperor and as famous as him, the Scarlet Emperor. This Scarlet Concubine, was the imperial concubine the Scarlet Emperor doted on the most!

If he let the Scarlet Emperor escape from the seal again, it would be no less than Heaven Realm’s Three Great Leaders escaping from the Prison Emperor’s Divine Palace.

The Heaven Realm’s Three Great Leaders would return to Heaven Realm, whether it would be Xu Kong, Jiu Xiao, or Ming Yue Guang, none of them would remain in the human world. However, the Scarlet Emperor was different, if this guy broke out of the seal, not just Soaring Dragon Continent, the whole Tong Tian Tower will never have a day of peace.

Prison Emperor had already died.

After six thousand years, the Innates have weakened, who would be the Scarlet Emperor’s opponent?

Forget about the Scarlet Emperor who was as famous as the Prison Emperor, even Scarlet Concubine who just broke out of the

wall was a Level 9 Innate, not to mention this was in her weakened state.

If she were to return to her pinnacle, she would probably be minimally a Level 10 Innate.

Yue Yang couldn't help but clench his fist, under the condition of not summoning his beasts, would he be able to stop the Scarlet Emperor's revival? One Scarlet Concubine was already a headache, adding in Shun Tian and the Black Prince, this fight would be extremely treacherous. However, whatever the level of difficulty, he definitely could not allow the Scarlet Emperor to see daylight again. Once this guy burst out of his seal, all hope would be lost!

Chapter 412 – The Power Of [Counterfeit] Inherent Skill!

“As expected, although it’s only been a mere six thousand years, the public has already forgotten me. That’s so heartbreaking!” The femme fatale chuckled, her tone didn’t show a trace of inferiority. Instead, she sounded like it was the people’s loss for forgetting her existence, it was the most foolish and pitiful mistake.

“Please tell us about your glorious name...” Shun Tian was astonished and delighted when he discovered that this woman possessed strength equal to himself, even though she was in a weakened state after the seal was lifted. If he could win over this woman to his side and acquired the experience and knowledge of a super Innate from thousands of years ago, in the future, even the famous, almighty Zhi Zun wouldn’t be a problem to him.

Nobody knew what the Black Prince, who hid in the dark, was thinking.

However, one thing was clear. The Black Prince would never make an enemy with an ancient Innate like Scarlet Concubine.

The femme fatale named Scarlet Concubine giggled, “It’s not a big deal that the people has forgotten about me... Handsome lad, you are called Shun Tian right? Nice name, you have potential too. With some guidance, perhaps you could even go to the Heaven Realm.”

“Heaven Realm? Have you been to the Heaven Realm before?”

Shun Tian's face was unmoved, however his heart was in ecstasy.

The Heaven Realm had already become a legend.

Even the formidable Supreme Elder Zhi Zun could not enter the Heaven Realm. Could it be that this woman have visited the Heaven Realm in the past?

Even the adventurers who were in danger of losing their lives strained their ears to listen, let alone Shun Tian. Thousands of years have passed, and this was the first time warriors from Tong Tian Tower caught the chance of listening to information about the Heaven Realm. How could it not be tempting? Everyone other than Yue Yang was straining their ears. Yue Yang knew that six thousand years ago, warriors could come and go as they wished. It was as easy as going up from the first floor to the second floor and from the second floor to the third floor in the Tong Tian Tower. It was only after Prison Emperor's fight to the death with the Three Great Leaders of Heaven Realm, the gates to the Heaven Realm was closed by the Heaven Realm warriors. Although in the legends the gate to the Heaven Realm opens once a hundred years, in reality, no one has ever entered the Heaven Realm... Of course, maybe there was, but no one knew of it.

Yue Yang suspected that the reason why the pitiful guy's mother disappeared was because she went to the Heaven Realm.

It's not easy entering from the Heaven Realm gates, or perhaps there were other ways.

Like the ‘Heaven Stairway’!

“Oh, the Heaven Realm is an interesting place. There were formidable creatures of all kinds, but seldom did they own Grimoires. If an Innate in Heaven Realm was contracted to a Grimoire, they would be sent to the sect and trained exclusively. A handsome lad like you, Shun Tian, I believe would be a popular candidate. Not to mention you have the power of a Level 9 Innate. Even if you don’t, you’re still an Innate, you would still be well received. According to what they say, even if a living organism possessed an Innate’s strength, but without a Grimoire, they were considered fake Innates... Of course, the Heaven Realm does not address them like that, they were called ‘Earth-rank Warriors’, different from the ‘Sky-rank Innates’ Scarlet Concubine started introducing all kinds of things in Heaven Realm.

“Earth-rank Warrior? Sky-rank Warrior? ” Shun Tian was surprised, but after thinking about it he felt that it was not unusual. Of course the Heaven Realm had their own way of addressing them. There’s nothing strange about that.

“Yes, the Heaven Realm usually addressed warriors with the strength of a Level 1 Innate as ‘Earth-rank Level 1’. The level of power is more or less the same, but Earth-rank Warriors did not own Grimoires. In Heaven Realm, many creatures were already very strong since the moment they were born. If they came to the human world, even an ugly insect could be a very terrifying and powerful existence. However,

those guys are idiots and have no brains, hence they cannot be compared with true Innates. Thus, even if Earth-rank Warriors reached Level 10 and had overwhelming strength, if they did not have a grimoire, they would still be looked down upon. The

Grimoires acted as the differentiator in the Heaven Realm. If you have it, the Heaven Realm would welcome you at any time. When warriors with Grimoire from the mortal world enters the Heaven Realm, they would be immediately recruited into a certain sect and provided with full training. It was almost to the point of forcing the Grimoire contractor to train and become a Sky-rank Warrior!" Scarlet Concubine's words successfully tempted Shun Tian's heart. As expected, the Heaven Realm was more magnificent than the legend was. If he could go up there, there would be boundless prospects waiting for him.

"What kind of existence would a Sky-rank Innates be?"

"Well, if you are not afraid of receiving , I can tell you honestly. You, the handsome lad named Shun Tian do not possess the strength of a Sky-rank Innate. Although you are near, you are still confined to Earth-rank. In addition, you have a big obstacle, if you cannot overcome it, then you will be confined to Earth-rank for your lifetime. As for the question on Sky-rank Innates, at the pinnacle of my life, I was a Sky-rank. In those days I was a Level 2 Sky-rank Innate, now I'm weakened and dropped back to Earth-rank Level 9... Oh right, Sky-rank Innates are also called Innate Elders in the human world... After a few thousand years do you still have Innate Elders? If there is, then an Innate Elder would be a Sky-rank Innate!" Scarlet Concubine looked at Shun Tian with a skeptical gaze. He didn't even know about these things, it seemed that after a few thousand years, the warriors have deteriorated tremendously.

"Innate Elder?" Shun Tian was astonished, he didn't realise that there was such a huge gap between himself and Zhi Zun. No wonder Zhi Zun could ignore all the Innates. Turned out that she

had already surpassed the warriors in the human world by so much. In face of Scarlet Concubine's skepticism, Shun Tian's gaze flashed slightly and answered. "There is, but only one."

"What's his name? Was he called 'Prison Emperor'?" When Scarlet Concubine mentioned the Prison Emperor's name her small hands trembled slightly.

An average person wouldn't have noticed, but to Yue Yang it was as plain as day.

Looks like six thousand years ago Prison Emperor was indeed an awesome guy.

He have been dead for six thousand years, even now, at the present, Scarlet Concubine was still so frightened of him. One could imagine how ferocious he was in those days.

When Shun Tian replied that Zhi Zun was a female, Yue Yang noticed that Scarlet Concubine breathed out a sigh of relief secretly... She giggled to cover it up, "Oh my. A girl took up the position of Innate Elder while tens and thousands of man could only watch. This is truly remarkable. However, six thousand years ago, although there weren't many Sky-rank Innate in the mortal world, there were at least a dozen. Who would have thought that things would dwindle to this state. This is indeed sad..."

"A dozen?" Shun Tian was speechless after hearing it.

He could not imagine how the situation was like six thousand years ago when the Innate Alliance had a dozen Innate Elders.

What kind of world was that?

Can Tong Tian Tower really fit a dozen of Innate Elders?

Now, don't even think about Innate Elders, there were probably only 30 people who achieved Innate Level 8. Level 9 Innates were even more scarce and Level 10 Innates were practically like phoenix feathers and unicorn horns... Looks like the present really could not be compared to the ancient times.

Upon hearing the name 'Prison Emperor', The Black Prince suddenly asked, "Senior Scarlet Concubine, have you heard about the Prison Emperor Divine General before?"

Scarlet Concubine covered her mouth and chuckled, "Of course I know the Prison Emperor Divine General you are talking about. However, he only dared to be unbridled and call himself the Prison Emperor Divine General in front of you guys. Hehe, if he met me, that lowly servant Hei Yu (Dark Prison) would have to greet me respectfully and call me your highness."

"What?" Shun Tian and the Black Prince were completely shocked.

The Prison Emperor Divine General was called the Dark Prison King ever since he had awakened.

He was always running amuck in the Tong Tian Tower, arrogant and unbridled. Except for Zhi Zun, even those as powerful as Sky Execution and Great Demon King Baruth were nothing in his eyes. Someone who claimed that he could soar to the Heaven Realm once he regained his original strength was considered a slave in front of this Scarlet Concubine?

Scarlet Concubine's gaze shone with a devilish glow. "Dark Prison is still alive? I didn't expect that! But I couldn't be bothered with that, there are more important issues to take care of. Handsome lad named Shun Tian and that lad who likes to swim around like mud fish, do you want to cooperate with me? Although I have not regained my strength, there will be no problems to bring you guys up to the Heaven Realm. Of course, your cultivation bottleneck are considered a piece of cake for me. If you cooperate sincerely, then I will guarantee you both a bright future!"

Shun Tian and Black Prince were both immersed in their own thoughts and did not reply immediately.

If they said that they were not tempted they would be lying.

However, they did not know what they need to do after agreeing to cooperate with this Scarlet Concubine.

If Scarlet Concubine wanted to challenge Zhi Zun and seize the position of Innate Elder, Shun Tian and the Black Prince would never agree. They would not fight a battle that they were uncertain of.

Scarlet Concubine is powerful, but Zhi Zun was not someone to be taken down easily.

If Scarlet Concubine lost the challenge, Shun Tian and the Black Prince believed that Zhi Zun would kill them without hesitation. She was definitely a person who would keep to her words. Those who dared to provoke her never lived to tell the tale. Never.

“What would senior need us to do?” Shun Tian bowed, “If it is a trivial matter please just tell us directly. I would be happy to help.”

“It is trivial yet not so.” Scarlet Concubine’s expression turned grave. “My husband is the Scarlet Emperor who was as famous as the Prison Emperor. Six thousand years ago, he defeated countless Innates. He was invincible, but he was misled into entering this forbidden Ancient Rune Circle and sealed by an anonymous person; If not for this, the mortal world would have been conquered by my husband Scarlet Emperor already! You just need to defend my husband as he breaks out of the seal. The road to Heaven Realm, breaching your cultivation bottleneck, rising to Heaven Realm, we can meet all these needs when... Nevermind all these, we can even give you the mortal world. Rest assured, we are only aiming for the Heaven Realm...”

“The Scarlet Emperor?” Shun Tian hesitated for a second, releasing such a ferocious guy was unwise.

However, breaching his cultivation bottleneck, being promoted

to Sky-rank, as well as entering the Heaven Realm were the most enticing temptation.

In any case, he would still be under one and above millions. Even if there was no Scarlet Emperor, he would still have to serve under Zhi Zun. If the Scarlet Emperor appeared, he certainly would have to fight Zhi Zun. Perhaps he could benefit from it.

Most importantly, even if he doesn't help Scarlet Concubine himself, or even oppose it, he probably wouldn't be able to stop the Scarlet Emperor's awakening.

To become enemies with the Scarlet Emperor who was about to be awakened?

Or to become an ally?

Even fools would choose the latter.

The Black Prince signalled to Shun Tian secretly, indicating that he was willing to accept this agreement. However, he let Shun Tian do the talking while he remained hidden behind his back.

“It's a blessing to be able to help you senior. How would we dare to have much demands?” Shun Tian was never a guy who was satisfied with being an underling, but he was smart. Whatever he felt in his heart, on the surface he would always be courteous, like a gentleman.

“What can we do for you, senior?” The Black Prince asked.

“Just guard here, you guys don’t have to do anything later. If anyone were to disrupt my summoning ceremony, then you guys would put a stop to it.” Scarlet Concubine smiled faintly, she already knew the answer. Breaching their cultivation bottleneck, rising to Sky-rank and the road to Heaven Realm. These three temptations were irresistible for any warrior. Although the other party may have other thoughts, agreeing to alliance was bound to happen.

“So easy?” Shun Tian and the Black Prince were stunned. Nobody knew about this place, who would come?

“It’s easy but also not easy.” Scarlet Concubine face darkened. “I have a very bad feeling. Although there are no strong opponent around, I feel a bad vibe... Hopefully, it is just my imagination. After my summoning ceremony starts, you would have to keep an eye out for people, don’t let anyone disrupt my ceremony...”

Scarlet Concubine’s gaze, swept towards Silver Horn, Eruption and Hurricane.

Among those at the scene only those three have the strength to disrupt the ceremony.

As for the adventurers, Scarlet Concubine completely ignored them. She could kill a whole group of them whenever she wanted to. An existence like the ants could never be a threat to the ceremony.

Even so, Scarlet Concubine still giggled and made eye contact with them. “ All the handsome chaps there, I’m about to start the summoning ceremony. You all must be well behaved, when my husband wakes up, everyone would be granted a gold-ranked treasure or beast. Everybody would get one, I won’t go back on my words. Don’t worry, I don’t need fresh blood for the ceremony nor do I need the offering human lives. I just have to call from the bottom of my heart and my husband would wake up and burst through the seal underground... Those who want to follow us and advance to the Heaven Realm, now is the chance to show your loyalty. Don’t let me down! “

Shun Tian found it weird that Scarlet Concubine had not killed the adventurers yet. However, watching her burn the bloodstain on the floor away carefully and dispersing the smell of blood in the air, he faintly understood that this Ancient Sealing Circle would become stronger and more secure with fresh blood. At this moment, they cannot kill, or else their plan of breaking the Scarlet Emperor’s seal would go down the drain.

As for the reason not to chase away the adventurers, there was a possibility that they would leak the information about Scarlet Emperor’s revival and get them into trouble.

That’s why Scarlet Concubine opted to coax the adventurers first... Of course, this was also to convince Innate Rankers like Shun Tian and Black Prince that she was not a selfish person who would burn the bridge after crossing it.

Yue Yang had been waiting quietly.

Waiting for the instant when the Scarlet Emperor was breaking out of the seal.

To initiate an attack on Scarlet Concubine now was the most foolish choice to make. There were Scarlet Concubine, Shun Tian and the Black Prince, three powerhouses. Even if he managed to stop them, it would only be temporary. The best solution, as well as the last resort was to land a critical and fatal attack on the Scarlet Emperor the moment he breaks through the seal. It was the moment he would be weakest. Even if he could not be killed instantly, it would deal a massive amount of damage... .. He would critically wound the Scarlet Emperor, then he had to escape and search for Zhi Zun, Night Empress, and Phoenix Fairy Beauty. He would perhaps even persuade Elder Nan Gong to employ Innates to corner and kill the Scarlet Emperor once again.

For people like the Scarlet Emperor, if he were to revive without mishap back to this world, it would signify the beginning of Tong Tian Tower's collapse.

The Prison Emperor was already dead. Yue Yang had also decided that he himself would become the new generation of Prison Emperor.

No matter what, the Scarlet Emperor must be suppressed.

“I will succeed...” It would be a lie to say that he was not nervous. Yue Yang did his best to restrain the nervousness deep down in his heart and waited quietly. His Qi was restrained within his body,

with nothing leaking out. He appeared to be as ordinary as a Level Six Elder. At this very moment, Yue Yang's [Counterfeit] Inherent Skill was used to its maximum, perhaps even exceeding its limit.

The sensitive Scarlet Concubine, cautious and prudent Shun Tian as well as the sly and paranoid Black Prince were all unbelievably tricked by such a [Counterfeit] Inherent Skill.

Yue Yang had never thought that the most useless [Counterfeit] Inherent Skill would actually become the key to his future success.

There are no useless talents, only useless people. How true is that saying!

Chapter 413 – Mutual Destruction?

The Scarlet Concubine began to summon the Scarlet Emperor that was sealed in the ground.

The ritual was simple, just her alone would suffice.

Silence descended the entire place.

A blaze of the ‘Scarlet Lotus Fire’ rose gradually in the Scarlet Concubine’s hands. It did not seem like fire, but rather, it looked like gorgeous scarlet lotus.

The Black Prince shuddered secretly when he saw it.

He was also one who could control fire, and his skills was of considerable virtuosity. His Fire Ability was the ‘Green Phosphorous Ghost Fire’. It was a type of poisonous ghost fire that would stick to one and cause great agony to the victim. His condition would also not be curable. As the Green Phosphorous Ghost Fire was the Black Prince’s trump card, he had never told anyone about it. Apart from his few allies like Shun Tian who knew about it, normal warriors would think that the Black Prince’s greatest skills were the ‘Nine Hidden Devil’s Claw’ and the ‘Sky Devil’s Finger’.

The Black Prince was confident about controlling fire.

Even when facing the Great Demon King Baruth who’s renowned

throughout the Tong Tian Tower for his Hellfire that was regarded to be the best Fire Ability, and the Hell Black Dragon King Huo Wen that was born to be the king of the fire, the Black Prince had sufficient confidence that he wasn't weaker than anyone of these people.

But after seeing the Scarlet Lotus Fire of the Scarlet Concubine, the Black Prince was shocked. The Scarlet Lotus Fire was superior to the Green Phosphorus Ghost Fire be it in terms of Fire Ability or its ability to be controlled.

It took the form of fire completely.

Only the Black Prince would know how scary the power of this type of Fire Ability was...

The Scarlet Concubine raised her hands up high as fire emerged from around her like petals of lotus and then scattered around the sky.

Anything that touched the lotus petal-like flame would dissipate into nothingness.

Under the all out effort by the Scarlet Concubine, the energy light pillar gradually rose up from the ground and into the sky. Her hands kept rotating, causing petals of the Scarlet Lotus Fire to gather in her hands, forming two enormous scarlet lotus.

Even when she was still recuperating from injuries without the

support of any Beast, the Scarlet Concubine's power could be unleashed to such a state.

If she was fully recuperated, Yue Yang thought that he wouldn't even stand a chance to successfully complete his assassination.

“Wake up, wake up, my love! “

The Scarlet Concubine pressed down the two Scarlet Lotus Fire hard onto the ground, causing the rock on the ground to give off a sizzling sound.

Within three seconds, a huge pit that was ten metres tall and wide was formed as a form of the rock melting. The rock and soil that was previously in it were all gone. This was the power of the Scarlet Lotus Fire, if one were to get hit by it, even for a powerful Innate like the Silver Horn, he would be killed on the spot.

Seeing this scene, all the adventurers were so scared that their eyeballs almost fell onto the ground...

But the Scarlet Concubine wasn't the one who made the greatest noise and impact, it was the Scarlet Emperor who was preparing to break out of the sealing circle!

Everyone heard it.

A deafening shout, as if a giant monster that was deeply asleep underground was awoken.

That groan was those that would make everyone's head go buzzing as if hit by a thunder hammer.

Even a powerful Innate like Shun Tian frowned his brows slightly. Silver Horn and the other two's expressions ashened. Those adventurers who did not possess the power of an Innate and those with low levels had already collapsed onto the ground and were bleeding from all seven apertures of their head. Even the Lesser Innates like the Taurus Party Leader, Dark Blade and the Wise Elder Ba Gu covered their heads in agony.

If this went on, everyone would die from the vibration caused by the noise even before the fight began.

The ground started to shake as if there was a violent earthquake.

It then broken into pieces like that of a cobweb.

When the Taurus commander, Dark Blade and the rest were using all their powers to suppress the extreme force that was coming out from underground, Yue Yang slowly crouched himself and tried to hide in the crowd. When Shun Tian and the Black Prince was concentrated on what was happening on the ground, starlights were shimmering on Yue Yang's hands and they became bigger and denser, shining as if they were the entire galaxy.

His Divine Vision skill slowly levelled up from his counterfeit skill and also under the camouflage of the surrounding.

Yue Yang waited for his final chance.

The moment when the Scarlet Emperor rush out from the ancient sealing circle, he would assassinate him... There wasn't many opportunities, this would be the only one!

If he weren't successful, he would die.

A tremendous stress that was never experienced before descended on Yue Yang, causing him to shake a little. Not from fear, but from uncontrollable excitement and nervousness.

Boom, boom, boom, boom, boom...

A series of horrendous booming resonated from underground.

Before they could even dodge, more than ten energy light pillars emerged out from underground like a fountain, breaking anything that obstructed their ways. The first few just broke the ground, but the later ones grew to be more powerful as the silver light pillars reached the roof. The last three incredibly broke through the roof and the summit of the mountain that was over a hundred metres wide.

The lot looked at the three holes in their roof and stoned.

What kind of power was that?

It was therefore no wonder that the Scarlet Concubine said that the Scarlet Emperor could do whatever he wanted in the Heaven Realms. With such a power, he could overturn the rivers and seas and also raze all the hills and mountains to the ground.

Despite being sealed in the ancient sealing circle for thousands of years and being in a weak state, the Scarlet Emperor could still unleash such strong powers!

Shun Tian's face darkened, he felt that releasing the Scarlet Emperor out of the ancient sealing circle might not have been a wise decision.

But what's done cannot be undone.

But he couldn't regret now.

The whole of Evil Dragon Lair shook. The black and brick-red dragons that were previously hiding in it ran out from shock, fearing that they might be covered by the stones that collapsed. The rocks on the ground were entirely broken and many were hurled into mid air from the vibrations. When the Scarlet Concubine broke through the wall just now, people felt that the mountain was crumbling. Now it wasn't just a feeling as the Evil Dragon Lair would really collapse anytime, maybe just in the next very second... A second deafening groan resounded through the atmosphere, a giant golden hand reached out from below the ground slowly, through the gap between the cracked ground and towards the hands of the Scarlet Concubine who was weeping tears

of joy.

“Clack clack clack.” Yue Yang kept cracking his knuckles. He tried to control himself and prevent himself from doing anything reckless in an important moment like this.

He tried to crouch low and hide among the crowd.

The Star Explosion gathered on both of his hands had already spreaded over a one metres diameter. It kept rotating, forming an amazingly beautiful Milky Way.

If the Black Prince and Shun Tian looked into his direction now, they would immediately discover that something wasn't right.

‘Counterfeit’ could no longer support an energy sparkle occurring on such a vast scale anymore. But Yue Yang still hadn't launched his assassination because he felt that it wasn't the best time yet. He mustn't make his past efforts go down into the drain, endure, endure!

Yue Yang gritted his teeth as he beared with the huge emotional burden silently.

An ancient runic circle flashed.

A golden light flashed onto the ground, crossing each other's path to form tens of thousands of amazing lines, and then interweaving to form individual ancient runic circles that

correlated with each other, especially the ancient rune that represented 'Confinement' in the middle, it was particularly bright, giving off tens of thousands of platinum lines that formed a huge web, pulling the Scarlet Emperor's giant golden hand back into the sealing circle.

The Scarlet Concubine did not dare to go near the golden ancient sealing circle. She reached out her hands, seemingly wanting to pull him up.

Who would have known that the Scarlet Emperor's hand would be pulled back into the sealing circle.

The gorgeous Scarlet Concubine yelled sorrowfully, but could not do anything.

Just when Shun Tai was at ease and felt that it was a good thing that the Scarlet Emperor wasn't able to break through the sealing, he saw that suddenly, inside the ancient runic circle, eighteen consecutive energy fountain burst out, each one had a diameter that was more than one metre.

If the energy light pillars were to hit the broken stones that had fallen due to the earthquake , or the adventurers that were hurled into the air, they would dissipate into nothingness.

Ten more holes emerged in the roof, as if shot by a machine gun.

Even Shun Tian was becoming speechless.

With his power, it wasn't difficult to produce the energy light pillar. It would still be easy for him to produce three consecutive shots of the energy light pillars... But he really would not be able to produce eighteen energy light pillars at the same time. The more difficult thing was that the Scarlet Emperor had previously launched eighteen consecutive attacks in an attempt to break the sealing. Through this alone, it could be concluded that he wasn't on the same level as the Scarlet Emperor.

“Boom!”

With a deafening noise, a giant golden hand reached out from the ancient sealing circle again.

The strength of the sealing circle was lessened tremendously after the eighteen consecutive shots of energy light pillars. Its golden light dulled, only the ancient rune, 'Confinement', was able to maintain its power as it continued to block the Scarlet Emperor's hand with its web-like light.

The Scarlet Emperor took advantage of the situation that the strength of the sealing circle being halved and stretched out his second hand.

The Scarlet Concubine pulled his giant golden hand euphorically, weeping...

Yue Yang was extremely nervous, the Star Explosion gathered in his hands had already exploded uncontrollably. All of the starlight

underwent compression by a hundred times and had reached a stage that Yue Yang could no longer endure.

Shun Tian, the Black Prince and the Scarlet Concubine would have noticed the danger just by sweeping a gaze at him, but luckily everyone was captivated by the Scarlet Emperor's attempt to break through the sealing such that no one discovered Yue Yang's abnormality.

“Come out, my lover, my emperor!” The Scarlet Concubine was shouting. Excitement and euphoria had taken over her rationality. She could finally see her lover after six thousand years, why wouldn't she be overjoyed? But Shun Tian and the Black Prince was thinking hard as both had noticed that the situation doesn't look favourable for them. The Scarlet Emperor was too powerful, helping him now seemed like they were inviting rivalry for themselves... Compared to Zhi Zun who just minded her own business, the Scarlet Emperor might pose a bigger threat to them.

Regrettably, the Scarlet Emperor was already breaking through the sealing now. It was too late for them to wish to turn back time.

A bewitchingly handsome man with black hair and golden eyes appeared in front of the lot. Although only his upper body could be seen, his flawless body, his one and only vast energy and his unique haughtiness were sufficient to indicate his identity.

He was a supreme Ranker for six thousand years.

The Scarlet Emperor!

“My dear, don’t cry, give me some room to come out!” The Scarlet Emperor caressed the Scarlet Concubine’s fiery hair lightly, his hands trying hard to push at the ancient runic circle, attempting to make his final fight to get out from the ancient runic circle.

The platinum glow given off from the ‘Confinement’ ancient runes dragged the Scarlet Emperor back forcefully with its web-like rays.

At the same time, the entire sealing circle unleashed its power and sealed the Scarlet Emperor again.

The Scarlet Emperor gave his all to resist, his shoutings shook the entire place.

The Evil Dragon Lair was almost crushed under these two types of energy. Forget about normal adventurers, even Innates like the Silver Horn, Fire Breath and Hurricane experienced a suffocating dizziness. Normal adventurers that were below the rank of Level Seven Overlord already fainted, some even bled through the seven apertures of their head and were on the verge of dying.

Yue Yang crouched and bend forwards on the ground like a ferocious tiger preparing to make its way down the mountain, preparing for its final fight.

The Star Explosion gathered on his hands had already expanded to a diameter of three metres and beyond, and was on the verge of

exploding. But Yue Yang felt that it wasn't enough and was still crazily trying to accumulate more...

While Dark Blade was struggling in his suffocating defense, he noticed Yue Yang's abnormality.

His pupils expanded.

Shock!

As a outstanding thief with sharp senses, he almost immediately 'smelt' the huge murderous vibe that was deeply hidden in Yue Yang. Once unleashed, it would shake the place like a volcanic eruption. Dark Blade turned pale with fright, this weird man wearing a mask was actually preparing to assassinate someone. Is it Shun Tian? Or the Black Prince? Or the Silver Horn? Surely his real target wouldn't be the Scarlet Emperor right? The thought of it made Dark Blade stunned. He almost did not collapse to the ground, and tried hard not to scream with all his might.

"Someone is trying cause trouble here!" Just with one sentence, he could make Yue Yang's assassination plan fail completely. Dark Blade knew that he had enough energy to escape after throwing out this warning, and that the Scarlet Concubine would definitely give him a handsome reward afterwards.

He did not know why, but he actually did not give in to such tempting rewards.

Maybe it was because of the terrifying power the Scarlet Emperor possessed, or maybe it was that he was curious about how this guy behind the golden mask would perform.

Of course more of it was that Dark Blade might have become insane.

Because he discovered that not only did he not give out any warning, he stood in front of Yue Yang, replacing a member who collapsed to the ground, blocking Yue Yang's body and the light given off by the Star Explosion.

Dark Blade was shuddering from fear.

He knew that he was asking to die by doing so. If Shun Tian, the Black Prince and their company were to find out about it, he would definitely die a miserable death.

But the more eerie thing was that not only did he not back off from Yue Yang, he used his greatest energy as a Lesser Innate to help shield Yue Yang's energy accumulation... I'm a goner, I must be crazy! Dark Blade felt that he must be out of his mind, he did not understand why he would help Yue Yang in an important moment like this, wasn't he asking to die?

Dark Blade couldn't find the answer to his question at all.

Just when Dark Blade thought that he would die from shock and turn into a lunatic, Yue Yang moved.

Faster than the lightning by a hundred times, he raised the ball of Milky Way-like Star Explosion in his hand highly and then smashed it down on the Scarlet Emperor who was still battling with the ancient sealing circle...

This change shocked everyone.

Only one person collapsed from exhaustion. That was Dark Blade who covered up for Yue Yang for more than ten seconds!

To Dark Blade, every second was like being tortured in hell!

In the same moment when Yue Yang hurled the ball of Star Explosion onto the Scarlet Emperor, the Scarlet Concubine pounced on him crazily, hitting Yue Yang's hindbrain with her Scarlet Lotus Fire; on the other hand, Shun Tian and the Black Prince arrived at the same time, Shun Tian who possessed the 'Five Transformations Power' unleashed his powers angrily, aiming to pierce through Yue Yang's heart from his back... And the shadow-like Black Prince with Green Phosphorous Ghost Fire burning in his hands prepared to tear at Yue Yang's ribs.

Any warrior that was below Innate Level Six would die instantly from any one of these blows.

"Die!" Yue Yang shouted crazily.

He didn't defend himself at all, but used all his strength to attack

the Scarlet Emperor

The moment when the Scarlet Lotus Fire, Five Transformations Boxing and the Green Phosphorous Ghost Fire hit Yue Yang, he released all the Star Explosion in his hands. With the World Exterminating Wheel in his left hand and a Fire Blade formed from the Nirvana's Flame on his right hand, Yue Yang continued to slash the Scarlet Emperor who was hit by his previous attack, ignoring what's happening back his back. He fought as if he wanted to perish together with the Scarlet Emperor!

Chapter 414 – Ambush, Blood-Soaked, Tough Fight

Even in his weakened state, the Scarlet Emperor was at least Innate Level 10.

If not for the ancient seal that trapped the lower half of his body and was constantly pulling him back inside the sealed space, the Scarlet Emperor wouldn't need to spend most of his strength resisting the seal. If this wasn't the case, Yue Yang wouldn't have succeeded in ambushing the Scarlet Emperor. Even if Yue Yang managed to ambush him, the Scarlet Emperor wouldn't be injured at all. Even the Scarlet Emperor's remaining strength was many times more powerful than Yue Yang.

If it were another person, the Scarlet Emperor would probably be able to completely disregard him. With just a simple swat from his hands, the ambusher would be immediately sent flying away and would then die from grave injuries.

The problem was Yue Yang was an abnormal expert at ambush attacks.

Strong at attack but weak at defense would be more apt in describing Yue Yang.

However, that did not mean that Yue Yang was not an expert in defense. Mysterious Three Styles, Crystal Shield, Nirvana Flame Shield, Camouflage, Teleportation and Binding Chains – combining these skills together, regardless of whether it was

defense or buffing skills, Yue Yang was way ahead other same-levelled warriors.

However, compared to his attacking skills, Yue Yang's defensive skills were undoubtedly a whole lot weaker.

His combat power was simply too abnormal...

Nirvana Flame and World Exterminating Wheel, both of them

Yue Yang's defense would only be considered weak when compared to his active skills.

It was also because Yue Yang possessed so many attacking skills that he had enough confidence to injure the Scarlet Emperor critically.

The moment the Scarlet Emperor was injured critically, the Ancient Seal would definitely drag him back inside the Sealed Space. He didn't wish for much, he only wanted to seal the Scarlet Emperor for another 10, 20 years. By that time, Yue Yang would definitely possess a strength like the Prison Emperor thousands of years ago, a power strong enough to completely dominate over the Scarlet Emperor, a power strong enough to eat this arrogant fellow alive.

Of course, all of these were only in theory.

In reality, things would never go as one had planned.

The Scarlet Emperor who was bending his waist and lowering his head as he struggled to resist the Ancient Seal just now, had immediately attacked back the moment Yue Yang's Star Explosion hit him.

His speed was extremely quick. In comparison, the Scarlet Concubine, Shun Tian and Black King's movement were like slow motion. On the other hand, Silver Cow Horn, Fireburst and Hurricane's reaction was like slow snails in comparison. Almost at the same time, his hands pressed against Yue Yang's chest. "Boom!" A silver ray of light burst forth like a silver coil, which then extended to an enormous pillar of light filled with energy with a diameter of more than a meter wide.

At this time, Yue Yang's World Exterminating Wheel and Nirvana Flame had only been unleashed.

If the Scarlet Emperor could move, even if he could only move 3 metres, Yue Yang would definitely die.

The Ancient Seal became Yue Yang's greatest helper. It had completely trapped and locked the Scarlet Emperor, preventing him from moving by even an inch. Scarlet Emperor drew a long silver dome with his other hand

What was reflected into the golden eyes of Scarlet Emperor was the World Exterminating Wheel directly slashing the energy light pillar and coming towards him, another Nirvana Fire Blade formed a silver light arch in the air and went for the Scarlet Emperor's

heart.

“Eh?” The Scarlet Emperor’s golden pupil widened as he reeled in shock.

Never did he think that there would be such a sicko in this world as to own both the World Exterminating Wheel and the Nirvana Flame.

He was blinded by the Milky Way-like Star Explosion just now. Moreover, all this occurred in one hundredth of a second, it was too fast for his eyes to see and react accordingly.

“Boom...”

Yue Yang resisted the shot coming from the energy light pillar resolutely as the Crystal Shield worn before his chest broke into pieces and his Wyvern Armour dissipated into nothingness. When the Scarlet Emperor loosened his grip, the World Exterminating Wheel slashed his arms, causing a long trail of blood. It then slashed his naked chest where no armour was worn for protection. However the Scarlet Emperor was fast to react as he turned around to dodge the deadly attack from the World Exterminating Wheel. But the Fire Blade was even swifter than the World Exterminating Wheel as it had already broken the silver light arch and penetrated into the Scarlet Emperor’s abdomen through his left rib, so if the Scarlet Emperor were to turn, he would be slashed into two immediately.

The Scarlet Emperor’s body suddenly became as flexible as

noodles as he bent backwards.

Fast yet agile.

Although the World Exterminating Wheel had already penetrated his chest, with him bending backwards, the World Exterminating Wheel would lose its target to attack. So the Scarlet Emperor would only be hurt and not killed. On the other hand, the Nirvana Fire Blade tore a deep bloodied wound on the Scarlet Emperor's chest similarly, but could no longer go deeper to pierce his heart.

“Die!” Yue Yang stepped on the Scarlet Emperor's waist forcefully before he was sent flying into the air by the energy light pillar.

He unleashed his Innate Invisible Sword Qi!

The killing power of this Sword Qi wasn't any weaker than the World Exterminating Wheel and the Nirvana Fire Blade. In additions, it was even more subtle and fast, and was more effective.

With a ripping sound, the Sword Qi had already entered the Scarlet Emperor's abdomen through Yue Yang's toes that touched the Scarlet Emperor just now. It then went straight for the Scarlet Emperor's heart... The Scarlet Emperor only had time to use his special power to shift the location of his heart forcefully, but couldn't stop the Sword Qi from spreading throughout his body... Simultaneously, the Scarlet Emperor's bronchioles and spine was

penetrated by the the Sword Qi.

It was only until now did the Scarlet Concubine, Shun Tian and the Black Prince's attacks arrived.

The Scarlet Lotus Fire hit Yue Yang's hindbrain ruthlessly.

Because of the energy outburst of Scarlet Emperor's energy light pillar previously that sent Yue Yang flying into the air, Yue Yang's body was a little slanted, so not only did the Scarlet Lotus Fire not hit his head, he also started to rotate. After the Crystal Shield broke, Yue Yang was still left with the Elegant Sword Dance of the Three Mysterious Styles to safeguard his life. With it, he could dodge and resist most of the attacks. The Black Prince's Green Phosphorus Ghost Fire scratched Yue Yang's back ruthlessly, resulting in five wounds that unfurled his skin and flesh. The Ghost Fire burned with raging flame. It was as scary as a parasite that sticks permanently to one's body because it would never burn out as long as there's energy available.

But the one causing Yue Yang the most suffering was Shun Tian's Five Transformation Power.

In the air, a golden giant dragon and golden mammoth's image was flickering behind Shun Tian. It was one of the Five Transformation Power, 'Force of the Dragon and Mammoth'.

Just with one attack using the Force of the Dragon and Mammoth, the joint powers of the Dragon and the Mammoth was showed!

The Scarlet Emperor's golden fist hit Yue Yang's back accurately and impactfully on where his heart was located. Although Yue Yang had strong defense, he still had a feeling that his heartbeat stopped and experienced the illusion of his entire body bursting...

“Pu! “

Yue Yang fell forward as blood spurted out from his mouth.

The Scarlet Emperor who was stabbed by Yue Yang straightened his body in the speed of lightning.

As he was hit in the head hard by the Star Explosion, his handsome face was twisted with agony. There's a deep crossed wound on his chest and a bloodied hole that was entirely penetrated. This was the impact of the World Exterminating Wheel, Nirvana Fire Blade and the Innate Invisible Sword Qi. If it were to be another Ranker, he would have collapsed long ago... But for the Scarlet Emperor, he could still retaliate.

“Damn! “ The silver fists of the Scarlet Emperor morphed into thousands of meteorites in an instant and he rained blows on Yue Yang's body.

“Boom boom boom boom boom... “

All of the blows hit Yue Yang with none missed.

Yue Yang suffered at least three broken ribs and his chest had turned into a bloodied mess from the Scarlet Emperor's punches and shots from the energy light pillar.

A Nirvana Fire Gun was thrown out from Yue Yang's hand and penetrated the Scarlet Emperor's shoulders. Luckily the Scarlet Emperor was fast to react, or else it would have pierced his heart.

The Scarlet Emperor had never seen such a sick yet stubborn young man. Why does he want to kill him so much?

For a young man like Yue Yang, he has a bright future ahead of him, why does he want to attack him even if it may cost him his life?

Pertaining to all this, the Scarlet Emperor couldn't come to a conclusion at all!

But he wouldn't let his guards down!

He withdrew his hands quickly, and formed ten Heaven Runes Rune Circles, one on each of his fingers. And then, he pointed it towards the centre of Yue Yang's eyebrows... Being in mid air, Yue Yang would definitely die from this attack because he had nowhere to dodge. The Scarlet Emperor wouldn't deny that he was curious about this young man who was attacking him, but he wouldn't mind killing him. The outcome of anyone being the rival of the Scarlet Emperor's would be death! If there was any exceptions, then it would be the Prison Emperor, because he was more powerful and ferocious than the Scarlet Emperor. Although he

hated the Prison Emperor a lot, he couldn't do anything about him.

The fresh blood that Yue Yang spurted splashed onto the ancient sealing circle.

The ancient rune, 'Confinement', seemed to have gotten a lot of energy support from a golden ray that shone as brightly as the sun.

With a quick rotation, the web-like ray dragged the Scarlet Emperor's body forcefully, causing him to sink into the sealing circle. In the blink of an eye, only his abdomen could be seen as his waist sunk into the sealing circle.

Due to his sinking body, the Scarlet Emperor's lethal attack went past Yue Yang's cheek, scratching his sturdy Gemini Mask.

If Yue Yang's head were to be any closer, it would have been a head shot.

The Scarlet Emperor's golden pupil expanded quickly as he glared at Yue Yang angrily.

The reason why the Scarlet Emperor was angry wasn't because Yue Yang managed to dodge his deadly attack. It was due to the fresh blood Yue Yang spurted out. It became apparent that Yue Yang planned all this. Using the fresh blood to start the ancient sealing circle such that it would unleash its energy to drag the Scarlet Emperor down, and thus rendering his attack useless... The Scarlet Emperor felt a sense of shame that he was being fooled by

Yue Yang.

If he could move freely, he would have went after Yue Yang who was as cunning as a fox. He would have killed him regardless of what price he had to pay.

But now, the Scarlet Emperor could only be furious but had to allocate half of his power to lift the ancient sealing circle.

His other hand pointed towards Yue Yang's direction.

Once again, the energy light pillar burst like a fountain.

Behind Yue Yang's back, the Scarlet Concubine, Shun Tian and the Black Prince launched their joint attack again.

This time, the trio, who had more time to react and gather their energy, launched an attack again. It would be nothing like before as its impact would be many times greater. Being severely injured, Yue Yang might not be able to take the next blow.

If it were to be anyone else, they would have fled carrying such heavy injuries.

The Black Prince and Shun Tian wanted to let Yue Yang off so that he would become the Scarlet Emperor's opponent in the future. It was so that the Scarlet Emperor wouldn't burn bridges in the future and would remain wary, which would be beneficial to them. Moreover, the Scarlet Concubine also wanted to end the

fight. Even though she hated Yue Yang, she didn't hope that Yue Yang would die. She just wanted the Scarlet Emperor to escape from the seal, so long as her lover could get out, nothing would be a problem... Attacker? She could kill him later, she mustn't let him die together with her lover now!

Even the Scarlet Emperor thought that the fight had ended.

This cunning young man would definitely seize the opportunity to flee.

But everyone thought wrong.

Not only did Yue Yang stay put, he even charged towards the Scarlet Emperor, like a crazed barbarian cow that was blinded by his murdering desire as he dashed towards him like a bolt of lightning.

He charged out from the energy light pillar forcefully, and in the moment where his fist was being caught by the Scarlet Emperor, he leaned forwards, knocking the Scarlet Emperor's forehead.

Boom!

Two terrifying Innate power collided.

The Scarlet Emperor howled in pain.

When the Scarlet Concubine, Black Prince and Shun Tian arrived behind the back of Yue Yang to launch their joint attack, Yue Yang whose Gemini Mask was almost shattered from the impact smiled suddenly.

He who was covered in bloodied wounds smiled eerily.

His other hand was raising the Prison Emperor's Seal. Completely ignoring the joint attack of the trio, he smashed it onto the Scarlet Emperor's head as if he was prepared to die together with the Scarlet Emperor... Shun Tian and the Black Prince's gasp, the Scarlet Concubine's cry and the Scarlet Emperor's howl burst out at the very same moment... Only Yue Yang was smiling silently. His unique sarcastic smile was expressed from the deepest point of his eyes, and he looked brightly brilliant!

Chapter 415 – Deep Grudge, I Would Kill Everyone Related To You!

The Prison Emperor Divine Seal was used in the past to seal Jiu Xiao, and was one of the three Divine Tools that inherited the Prison Emperor's willpower.

Once it was flashed, the Scarlet Emperor's face ashened.

His entire body trembled.

He raised his right hand that was pushing against the ancient sealing circle higher even more furiously. He used all his might to lift it upwards, exhausting all his power to remove the Prison Emperor Divine Seal smashed onto his head. Although the Prison Emperor Divine Seal looked small, its weight was as heavy as a mountain, causing the Scarlet Emperor's hands and spine to clack under the heavy weight. The scarier thing was that the Prison Emperor's image, made purely out of energy and willpower, was formed in the sky and it waved its sun-like golden fist onto the Scarlet Emperor, suppressing him even more... Even if there was no ancient sealing circle, this alone would be sufficient to teach the Scarlet Emperor a lesson.

When the Scarlet Emperor was weakest, Yue Yang attacked him forcefully, acting as if he was undaunted by anything. Finally, Yue Yang was able to turn the tide and make the situation favourable to him.

His greatest wish was to seal the Scarlet Emperor again!

“Ahhh...” The Scarlet Concubine left immediately after attacking Yue Yang with the Scarlet Lotus Fire. Compared to killing her opponent, she had a more important thing to do. That was, to rescue her lover. When the Prison Emperor Divine Seal was used, she knew that it would be the greatest obstruction of her lover. If she didn’t help him, he would be in a extremely dangerous state.

The Scarlet Concubine started to cry sorrowfully.

She threw herself at the Prison Emperor Divine Seal selflessly.

Even if she had to sacrifice herself, she had to help her lover remove this suppressing divine tool.

The Green Phosphorus Ghost Fire and the Force of the Dragon and Mammoth landed heavily onto Yue Yang’s back. If it wasn’t that the duo were afraid that the Prison Emperor Divine Seal would harm them, and reserved half of their power secretly to defend themselves, Yue Yang would have collapsed from the severe injuries.

The Green Phosphorus Ghost Fire was burning on Yue Yang’s back.

His skin and flesh made a sizzling sound from the burning.

Shun Tian’s punch, Force of the Dragon and Mammoth, almost crushed Yue Yang’s heart, causing the bones of his shoulders to

crack from the impact, and the ribs on the place where he was hit became twisted and deformed.

The Scarlet Lotus Fire that could even melt rocks was useless towards the Prison Emperor Divine Seal. Its power, that could cause great havoc and calamity had no effect on the Prison Emperor Divine Seal. Using the impact of the Force of the Dragon and Mammoth, Yue Yang threw himself towards the Prison Emperor Divine Seal simultaneously with the Scarlet Concubine. Like killing two birds with one stone, Yue Yang transferred the impact from Shun Tian's Five Transformations Power and Black Prince's Green Phosphorus Ghost Fire onto the Scarlet Emperor. He even attacked the Scarlet Emperor further, in hopes of being the one making the final attack to defeat the Scarlet Emperor.

“Ah!” The Scarlet Emperor groaned loudly. His body shook as silver rays of light shot out from his body like a fountain, causing Yue Yang to be sent flying into the air from the impact.

This time, Shun Tian and the Black Prince did not attack Yue Yang.

They just merely watched as Yue Yang fell and smashed into the stone wall.

They were unsure if the Scarlet Emperor could withstand the blow. If the Scarlet Emperor were to be defeated, then there was no need for them to abide by the contract of their alliance anymore.

The Scarlet Concubine realised that it would be useless for her to do anything. In a moment of desperation, she raised her hand and prepared to take the blows for the Scarlet Emperor. Even if she were to fall into the ancient sealing circle from it, she wouldn't regret.

“My dear, leave!” The Scarlet Emperor did not allow her to do so, because she wouldn't be able to take the blow from the Prison Emperor Divine Seal.

“Let me help you, let me help you, I'm alright...” The Scarlet Concubine said with a tear-streaked face. She reached out her hands as she prepared to take down the Prison Emperor Divine Seal for the Scarlet Emperor, even if it was just for a second. Under attacks from both the Prison Emperor Divine Seal and the ancient sealing circle, the Scarlet Emperor wouldn't be able to unleash his power even if he possessed enormous strength. His body sunk slowly, first covering his belly, then his chest. In the end, only his head and arms could be seen.

The Scarlet Concubine bended over, wanting to lift the Prison Emperor Divine Seal so that her lover could escape.

Yue Yang flew out from the broken stones. Keeping the World Exterminating Wheel, he dived forward, ignoring his severe injuries.

Shun Tian was hesitant for a second...

Right now, two choices lay before him. First, he could stop Yue

Yang, or second, he could stay silent and not do anything. With his and the Black Prince's power, it would actually be easy for them to stop the current Yue Yang. However, Shun Tian didn't really want the Scarlet Emperor to escape from the Ancient Seal. Since he disliked Yue Yang, the young, budding threat, and also disliked the Scarlet Emperor, an extremely powerful senior from six thousand years ago, he only wished for the two parties to fight to their deaths.

Watching from the sidelines would be the better option. But not only would Yue Yang not thank him, he would make the Scarlet Emperor angry by doing so. It would be perfect if the Scarlet Emperor gets sealed again, if not, the Scarlet Emperor would surely find trouble with him in the future.

Another way was to help Yue Yang get rid of the Scarlet Emperor.

Shun Tian wasn't sure if the Black Prince would work hand in hand together with him like he would normally and get rid of the Scarlet Emperor and then the Scarlet Concubine. Shun Tian revoked this option in this important decision of his life.

"Wind and thunder!" Shun Tian decided to stop Yue Yang on the surface and then help him in the dark later. He only hope for Yue Yang to fight harder to get rid of the Scarlet Emperor.

"Sky Devil's Finger!" The Black Prince attacked coordinately with Shun Tian as he prepared to launch his strong attacks.

Yue Yang dodged all their attacks.

Ignoring the attack from the duo completely, he waved his World Exterminating Wheel as he prepared to slice off the head of the Scarlet Concubine.

Shun Tian's waved his thunderous punch and proceeded to hit Yue Yang's hindbrain. He realised a change in the Scarlet Emperor's body that made him pessimistic about his decision. He changed his plans and decided to attack Yue Yang with all his might. The Black Prince was even faster in doing so as a pitch black energy light pillar shot out from his fingers and went directly for Yue Yang's heart. But Yue Yang was like a swimming fish as he quickly moved to the back of the Scarlet Concubine and past the Scarlet Emperor who was raising the Prison Emperor Divine Seal. He then moved his hand to take down the attacks as his Innate Invisible Sword Qi shot out from both of his forefingers in a crossed fashion.

The Scarlet Emperor grabbed the calf of the Scarlet Concubine, pulling her to the ground directly, successfully helping her to escape from the deadly attack of the World Exterminating Wheel.

The other one of his hand stretched beyond the Innate Invisible Sword Qi and pressed onto Yue Yang.

Just after Yue Yang shot out his Innate Invisible Sword Qi, he realised that there was an unresistable energy that was strangling him, hurling his entire body into air, causing him to face the double attacks from Shun Tian and the Black Prince.

The Scarlet Emperor loosened his grip on the Prison Emperor Divine Seal and it went crashing onto his forehead with a loud thud.

Fresh blood splattered everywhere.

His skulls shattered into a million pieces.

The Scarlet Emperor who was bleeding from all seven apertures of his head glared at Yue Yang angrily, his gold eyes accumulating energy quickly and shone as though they were two gold stars.

Two golden ray of light shot out from his pupil.

Yue Yang was startled and quickly adjusted his body in mid air. But the speed of the golden light was still too fast as they shot through his arms and right leg... If not for the adjustment, the two golden rays would have pierced through his heart and head!

It was after the golden rays that the thunderous punches of Shun Tian and the Sky Devil's Finger of the Black Prince arrived.

With these joint attacks, Yue Yang would definitely die.

“Binding Chains!” Behind Yue Yang, a little lamia loli appeared.

She opened her eyes widely, so widely that even the previously unseen blue veins at the corner of her eye was bulging.

Shun Tian and the Black Prince were frozen in mid air together.

As the thunderous punches and the Sky Devil's Finger weren't controlled by their masters anymore, they all landed on the little loli. Among the six arms that was ready to take the deadly blows from the attacks, three were broken by Shun Tian's thunderous punches, and one was pierced through from the palm to the shoulders by the Sky Devil's Finger. She placed one arm behind her back to take the remaining blows. No one would be able to kill Yue Yang with her around, because she was the Guardian Beast of Yue Yang and their lives were tied together. She wasn't his daughter, but far beyond the role of a daughter.

She was none other than Xiao Wen Li!

Curling Yue Yang with her tails, Xiao Wen Li brought Yue Yang out of the place quickly.

If the fight were to persist, the outcome of the Scarlet Emperor would be unknown, but Yue Yang would definitely die... Shun Tian was slightly taken aback, wasn't it prohibited to summon Beast in this forbidden ground? How could the Guardian Beast of Yue Yang come out?

He hadn't thought of the possibility that Xiao Wen Li seldom stays in the Grimoire World and that she stays dormant within Yue Yang's body.

Had it not been Yue Yang's order for her to stay out of the fight,

she would have came out long ago.

“You want to leave?” The Scarlet Emperor, with only his head and arms seen, pointed several times with his hand, with the other hand continually pushing the Prison Emperor Divine Seal forcefully.

“Boom boom boom boom...”

Numerous energy light pillars burst out like a fountain from below and around Xiao Wen Li, completely obstructing her's and Yue Yang's way. But Xiao Wen Li swung her tails like she predicted it, flinging Yue Yang back to the head of the Scarlet Emperor. Yue Yang reached out his right hand as he unleashed his Innate Invisible Sword Qi to form the most powerful sword. He then stabbed it into the skull of the Scarlet Emperor that was already shattered by the Prison Emperor Divine Seal.

The Scarlet Emperor howled pitifully as he sunk entirely into the sealing circle apart from his arms that could still be seen.

The Scarlet Concubine scratched Yue Yang like a lunatic.

Yue Yang was already covered in scars with his flesh blurred with blood so he did not mind having more scratches. He slashed the Scarlet Emperor's arms when the World Exterminating Wheel rotated while he was keeping it.

Although the Scarlet Emperor was quick enough to withdraw his

left hand into the ancient sealing circle, his right hand that was resisting the Prison Emperor Divine Seal wasn't able to dodge.

The World Exterminating Wheel slashed the Scarlet Emperor's right arm, causing a blinding shine... The Immemorial Rune in the middle of the World Exterminating Wheel unleashed its power, causing the right arms of the Scarlet Emperor to break from the revolving slashing even though he had very strong defence. The Silver Shining Armour that was on par to the Crystal Shield was rendered useless under the revolving slashing of the World Exterminating Wheel... Seeing that the Scarlet Emperor had fallen back into the ancient sealing circle once again, Yue Yang quickly kept the broken arm of his and the Prison Emperor Divine Seal. When faced with the attack from the Scarlet Concubine, he splashed a mouthful of fresh blood onto the ancient runes, 'confinement', of the ancient sealing circle.

Enduring all the pain, Yue Yang picked himself up.

He gambled with his life as he shot out the Innate Invisible Sword Qi, one directed towards the Black Prince and the other one towards Shun Tian.

The Black Prince and Shun Tian knew that they wouldn't be able to withstand such Sword Qi as they were tormented greatly by it the previous time. Under the current situation, they wouldn't fight back.

Moreover, the Scarlet Emperor had already been sealed into the ancient sealing circle again by Yue Yang. It would remain unclear if he would be able to escape as of now, so this wasn't the time for

them to retaliate with all their might.

Both of them moved, easily dodging the two Innate Invisible Sword Qi.

The Scarlet Concubine pounced on Yue Yang crazily. It was her who wished to fight with Yue Yang using all her might now. She made an enormous 'Scarlet Lotus' in desperation as she urgently wanted to kill Yue Yang and herself in the process.

“Get lost!”

Yue Yang kicked the Scarlet Concubine and sent her flying into the air when Xiao Wen Li managed to freeze her again.

When Yue Yang prepared to embrace Xiao Wen Li, who had blood tears streaming down her face, to get out of the Evil Dragon Lair, Silver Horn, Fire Breath and Hurricane came into action. Silver Horn fled immediately. In this battle, no matter who won, Silver Horn felt that he wouldn't be at an advantage. In order not to be killed, Silver Horn decided to abandon his comrades and fled.

But Fire Breath felt that this was an opportunity. One that would allow him to express goodwill towards the Black Prince and Shun Tian.

As long as he could stop this severely injured man behind a mask, then his future would definitely be very bright.

To Fire Breath, Yue Yang looked so heavily injured that he was already on the brink of death. Forget about he himself, Yue Yang might even collapse if an infant punched on him.

“Boom!”

Just when Fire Breath was confident that he could defeat Yue Yang and attain a huge achievement, Hurricane suddenly appeared behind his back and waved a punch on him, hitting his back and sending him smashing into the stone wall. Hurricane, who was just a Level Two Innate, shouted to Yue Yang. “Quickly leave, I’ll help you block off your opponents, even if I could only do it for just a second... Although I don’t understand why you want to do this, I believe you have your reasons for doing so and the Tong Tian Tower needs a young man like you! “

Fire Breath shot back with a speed faster than how he was smashed into the stone wall, as he waved a heavy punch onto Hurricane’s abdomen. He groaned with a twisted face. “Damn it, don’t think that you are the saviour of the world. You fool who can’t even defeat me!”

Hurricane vomited blood, but he still held onto Fire Breath tightly as he shouted to Yue Yang. “Go, I’m old already, let me sacrifice myself honourably for a young man...”

“I’d grant your wish! “ His used-to-be good friend became an evil devil as Fire Breath rained blows on him, causing him to spurt out fresh blood continuously.

The Scarlet Concubine, Shun Tian and the Black Prince ignored what was happening between the two.

They locked their gaze on Yue Yang and Xiao Li Wen who looked as pale as a ghost. They couldn't understand why this guy decided to give up the chance to escape just now. Could it be that he softened up due to Hurricane's sacrifice? Or could it be due to other motives? Although all three hated Yue Yang to the maximum, nobody dared to let their guards down because Yue Yang possessed a divine tool after all, they wouldn't be able to kill him without paying a price.

The trio hoped that they could kill this guy at the lowest price, especially Shun Tian and the Black Prince, who didn't wish to become the next person to be sacrificed after the Scarlet Emperor.

"Shun Tian, Black Prince, I will definitely take revenge for myself for today." Yue Yang opened up his palms, and the Nirvana Flame morphed into a fire bow and the ice and purple lightning became the arrow.

One bow with three arrows.

The bow was round and the arrows pointed to the sky.

Shun Tian, the Scarlet Concubine, and the Black Prince immediately had a feeling that they were being targeted, and that no matter which direction they flee to, they wouldn't be able to escape the fate of having the arrow being pierced through their heart.

Shun Tian's face darkened as he hmph-ed. He unleashed his Five Transformations Power and the vibe that he was radiating caused the entire Evil Dragon Lair to shake. The Black Prince disappeared as if he became invisible. Although the Scarlet Concubine was sorrowful and angry, she didn't lose her rationality. Her feet started to dance around as if she was dancing on a lotus.

Woosh woosh woosh!

Yue Yang loosened his hands and released three consecutive shots that pierced through the atmosphere and appeared in front of them in the blink of an eye.

“Break!” Shun Tian broke the arrow with his fist, while the Black Prince and the Scarlet Concubine had a narrow escape as they managed to dodge it.

“Back! “ Yue Yang waved his hands, causing the three purple lightning arrow to turn back, this time, Shun Tian and the lot were able to dodge more easily without much efforts. The three arrows separated in the air, one was shot onto the wing of the brick red dragon who knew how to speak, causing it to freeze immediately as frost appeared on it's body, especially its wing that was being hit as it appeared like an ice wall.

The other arrow hit the brick red dragon that didn't know how to speak, causing it to die immediately as it wasn't fast enough to dodge.

The corpse of the brick red dragon fell to the ground and becoming frozen like it was a brick red dragon ice sculpture.

The third arrow pierced through the air and punctured Fire Breath's brain accurately, causing it's head to burst and be sliced away... Hurricane who fell to the ground rolled off quickly, the fresh blood that oozed out from Fire Breath's neck splattered onto the ground and became ice, and the entire ground appeared as if it was frozen. The Evil Dragon Lair became a chilly hell and this was only the power of Yue Yang's three arrows!

After the third arrow was shot, Yue Yang glanced at Shun Tian and the Black Prince. He then moved towards the exit of the cave in the speed of a lightning with Xiao Wen Li in his arms.

The Scarlet Concubine, Shun Tian and the Black Prince who chased after him were even faster.

But on seeing the treasure on Yue Yang's hand, they backed off immediately. It wasn't the Prison Emperor Divine Seal, because with his injuries and remnants of Innate Qi, he wouldn't be able to start the Prison Emperor Divine Seal again. But he possessed an even more shocking treasure...the Demon Suppressing Pagoda!

It was a treasure locked within the treasury of the Da Xia Kingdom and it's sealing power was not any weaker than the Prison Emperor Divine Seal.

In the Demon Suppressing Pagoda, even Rankers as strong as Demon Kings weren't able to escape it's sealing confinement.

Although the trio were incredulous about Yue Yang's ability to use it, no one was willing to take the risk. Especially with the Little Lamia Loli in Yue Yang's arms. The power of this combination was definitely not as simple as one plus one.

"I'll be back..." The Scarlet Concubine gritted her teeth in anger. It was a pity that she could not kill her rival now as she secretly knew that she was injured by the Prison Emperor Divine Seal and had exhausted all her internal energy. She went after Yue Yang out of no choice as she had to deceive Shun Tian and the Black Prince. If they were to see that she was weak, they might harm her!

Yue Yang similarly exhausted all his Innate Qi. He looked relaxed on the surface, but actually he was on the brink of death.

If the trio were to go after him, he would definitely die!

Shun Tian and the Black Prince exchanged glances and then their eyes glimmered. Both weren't willing to take the risk, and they gave up the last chance to kill Yue Yang and the Scarlet Concubine. If both of them were to work together, Yue Yang and the Scarlet Concubine would definitely die. But they had different ulterior motives, so they missed this great opportunity.

Not even one minute after Yue Yang left, the ancient sealing circle started to vibrate again.

Lightly, then violently.

And finally shaking the mountains.

A silver hand reached out from the sealing circle, and then, under the stunned gaze of the lot, the Scarlet Emperor, who was severely injured but was still charming, came out of the sealing circle.

He was covered with injuries, and his right arms was broken. Fresh blood that oozed out made him, in his birthday suit, look like a bloodied man.

With tears streaming down her face, the Scarlet Concubine threw herself at him as she held onto him tightly and cried loudly.

“Don’t cry, my dear, don’t cry. “ the Scarlet Emperor used his remaining left hand to caress the fiery hair of the Scarlet Concubine lightly. His golden eyes looked at Shun Tian and the Black Prince. “Thank for your help, if the Prison Emperor Divine Seal were to continue it’s suppression for a minute more, it would have been a different outcome! I would definitely repay both of you in the future. If you all wish to go to the Heaven Realm, I can be your introducer...”

Shun Tian and the Black Prince were very regretful. If they had known that it would be like this, they would have helped Yue Yang gotten rid of the Scarlet Emperor.

If they didn’t attack Yue Yang but the Scarlet Concubine, the Scarlet Emperor and the Scarlet Concubine would have died a

miserable death.

But too bad they had already missed the best opportunity to kill the Scarlet Emperor.

After he recuperate and return to his peak, it would be even more difficult to kill this Scarlet Emperor from six thousand years ago... Of course Shun Tian and the Black Prince didn't show it on the surface as they both bowed and showed their respect to the Scarlet Emperor. At least they could get a trip to the Heaven Realm, which was better than nothing. Although Shun Tian and the Black Prince couldn't trust the Scarlet Emperor completely now, they were sure that they are safe currently.

Because they could see that the Scarlet Emperor had reached his limits now and he had no more energy to fight.

“You all go now, our affairs are none of your business, bring your comrades and leave!” The Scarlet Emperor suddenly let the adventurers off and spoke to them haughtily. “Maybe among you all some may know who that young man is. Please help me relay this. I admire him because no one was able to fight me and land me into such a sorry state. If he is willing to be my disciple, I can even let him take charge of the Human Realm... If he doesn't wish to do so, then please help me tell him that I would kill everyone related to him and I will not let anyone off!”

Chapter 416 – Taking Advantage While The Enemy Is Down!

Once Yue Yang came out of the Evil Dragon Lair and the restrictions of the laws were lifted, he immediately returned inside the Grimoire World.

Originally, he wanted to call out the Qilin Girl and scold her. He was already beaten close to death, yet this girl only watched from the side without any spirit of loyalty. Let alone such a small restrictive law, majestic Holy Beasts like her could even rampage in Heaven Realm! Moreover, if she could not come out, the least she could do was say something!

However, when he arrived, he saw that the Qilin Girl stood in front of him like a small white flower.

Her lively appearance was simply unfair.

“Girl, when I’m mad, the consequences are very severe!” Yue Yang said towards the Qilin Girl, who was trying to win Yue Yang’s favour by helping to support him to walk.

“I originally wanted to help you. However the Phoenix Sisters did not allow me to. Perhaps they felt that this was a good opportunity to train you. Moreover, aren’t you fine, so what if your skin was almost shaved off! Don’t be angry, I am also worried about you. I also feel pained seeing you injured! Come, let me see!” Qilin Girl’s soft small hands pressed on Xiao Wen Li’s forehead. A colorful light beam erupted like a beautiful rainbow... Xiao Wen Li who had

received arm injuries was bathed under the rainbow. Her injuries healed in the blink of an eye. Her pale face after overexerting also became rosy again.

“Hehe!” Once Xiao Wen Li’s injuries were healed, her happy eyes became two bright moons.

Her life was mutually connected to Yue Yang. They completely shared everything together.

Once Yue Yang received an injury, she would also feel the pain.

For the same reason, when Qilin Girl had healed Xiao Wen Li, Yue Yang also felt that the pain in his body was slightly alleviated.

On his back, although the Green Phosphorus Ghost Fire was burning more slowly than before, it still obstinately remained on Yue Yang’s back. He could only leave it aside as he was temporarily powerless to disperse it. Yue Yang’s Innate Qi was dried up and he had to use Nirvana Flames to purify severe internal injuries.

The Scarlet Concubine’s Scarlet Lotus Fire was also the same. If Yue Yang’s body had not been refined by Nirvana Flames a lot of time, he would have already been burned to ashes.

The Scarlet Lotus Fire behind his neck was like an additional 50 kilograms as he endured the severe pain.

If Yue Yang couldn’t endure it how could he have escaped?

The strongest attack that injured Yue Yang the most was Shun Tian's Five Transformation's Power. Shun Tian's attack even surpassed the injury made by Scarlet Emperor's attack. But then again, the Scarlet Emperor was distracted by the Ancient Seal and the Prison Emperor's Divine Seal!

Yue Yang was heavily injured...

However, in front of Qilin Girl, those injuries were too simple.

"The Scarlet Lotus Fire is not bad. As for this disgusting Ghost Flame, do you still want it? If you don't then I'll extinguish it." Qilin Girl's soft white hands grabbed behind Yue Yang's neck, as if a mischievous little girl that had caught a red dragonfly. The Scarlet Lotus Fire that frightened people with its temperature, had been turned into a tender and beautiful 'Scarlet Lotus' in her hands.

In an instant, the Scarlet Lotus Fire had been refined by her into its essential form.

It was so vivid and lifelike.

It was different from a real lotus. It was made of fire and it had spiritual essence!

Qilin Girl opened her hand and the 'Scarlet Lotus' floated in midair. It followed the rainbow light from her body and slowly

rotated. There was nothing in the world more beautiful than this, nobody could have imagined that this came from a frightening flame that could kill people! As for the Green Phosphorus Ghost Fire, Yue Yang hurriedly told her to leave it. What a joke, this thing was the best thing to use in replenishing Hui Jin's energy, where else would he be able to find it? If it were not because Yue Yang wanted to refine the Green Phosphorus Ghost Flame, he could have purified it with Nirvana Flame earlier.

Yue Yang had overexerted himself and seemed he could not endure the Green Phosphorus Ghost Fire. But it was ineffective towards the Qilin Girl.

She lightly grabbed it in her hands and blew it.

A bright light of energy flashed.

In her small hands the colorful light beams appeared and its fragrance spread throughout. Yue Yang had lost a lot of blood and sustained severe injuries, but under this light, his mind cleared up and his body relaxed.

The Green Phosphorus Ghost Fire had been refined by the Qilin Girl. It turned into a small skeleton with burning eyes. Its size was probably the size of a baby's fist. Seeing this, Yue Yang immediately snatched it and quickly stored it in his Platinum Storage. This thing was too important in leveling the Hui Jin Magic Blade. Naturally he could not use it now, but when it assimilates with Hui Jin someday, Hui Jin's power would definitely double.

Qilin Girl pouted and rolled her eyes, meaning to say ‘who would fight over it with you’?

Bloody Queen, Golden Thorny Flower Queen, Barbarian Cow Shadow were watching from the sides and did not dare go in front. They were afraid of disturbing Qilin Girl from healing their master.

Let alone them, even the Sickly Beauty, who had used sleeping flower to put Yue Shuang to sleep, could only wait anxiously.

If Yue Yu was here, then she could’ve helped.

However, since the Qilin Girl was here, she believed that Yue Yang would definitely have no problems. Seeing Yue Yang’s body riddled with injuries, she was very pained.

“Fortunately, you did not break any arms and legs, if not I would have to waste so much energy just to help you recover!” Other than healing Yue Yang’s injuries, Qilin Girl also softly comforted the others. As she said this, she placed her hands on Yue Yang’s body. A pure energy steadily flowed into Yue Yang’s body and once again filling up the dried up Innate Qi in his solar plexus.

“...” Seeing Yue Yang forcing himself to smile, pretending to be okay, Sickly Beauty’s eyes reddened and her tear almost dropped but she quickly wiped it away. She strongly nodded telling Yue Yang that she wasn’t worried. Instead, she hoped that his heart did not have any burdens.

The light in Qilin Girl's hands grew bigger until it enveloped Yue Yang entirely.

It can be seen by the naked eye that Yue Yang's injuries were quickly healing.

The various injuries on Yue Yang's body such as his heart, chest, hands, legs and other parts were quickly recovering

Especially his heart that had been hit by two moves from Shun Tian's Five Transformations. One was 'Dragon and Mammoth' and the other was 'Thunderstorm'. Fortunately Yue Yang had an almost unkillable body. His body had been refined by Nirvana Flames a lot of times and additionally his life was shared with Xiao Wen Li. Yue Yang was not worried about being insta-killed by Shun Tian but it was difficult to avoid receiving injuries. No matter how heavy his injuries were, if Qilin Girl was not here, Yue Yang would have had to use Innate Qi to recover, and it would probably need ten days to have any improvements.

In order to recover a hundred percent of his battle strength, ten days would probably be not enough.

However, Qilin Girl was an Expert Heaven Doctor. Her medical treatment did not even require ten minutes. Yue Yang's heavy injuries had mostly eighty percent healed.

His outside injuries had healed faster.

However, the internal injuries were slower, and would probably need Yue Yang's Innate Qi to continue recovering.

Seeing the Qilin Girl's miraculous hands, the Sickly beauty was so moved that she cried.

Her small hands covered her mouth and bit her own lips, preventing sobs from coming out. Once the injuries had healed, she immediately charged over and tightly hugged Yue Yang. Even Red, Duo Duo and Ah Man had emotionally kissed Yue Yang's cheeks. When Yue Yang had hugged them back and kissed them they also happily kissed back.

The Earth Fire Spirit looked from afar. With her elemental body, she was unable to comprehend the idea of being injured.

Qilin Girl had confidently raised her arms and spread her hands towards Xiao Wen Li.

Showing that these were minor injuries and could casually be healed by her.

Xiao Wen Li became happy.

She had jumped onto Qilin Girl's embrace from Yue Yang's body. She kissed Qilin Girl just like how he kissed Yue Yang just now.

“I don’t like children...whatever!” although Qilin Girl pretended to not care, it could clearly be seen that she liked Xiao Wen Li’s intimacy.

After being healed, Yue Yang had recovered most of his battle strength.

With the Qilin Girl here, his life would not be threatened. The previous battle could only be counted as suffering a beating.

However, Yue Yang’s experience from his suicidal attack, breaking his endurance limit, bursting with matchless bravery and forging his will power through pain, were experiences that would help him grow limitlessly. After experiencing this life and death battle with the Scarlet Emperor, Yue Yang already established enough self-confidence. In one battle, he had taken one step on the foundation towards becoming a supreme ranker. Facing three rankers who were much more powerful than him and facing the six thousand year old frightening Innate, Yue Yang did not have any fears. He took advantage of every situation, every knowledge and attack to heavily injure his opponent.

Although he had escaped due to his injuries but in reality he was the victor today.

Yue Yang’s reward from this victory was not a treasure nor was it the Scarlet Emperor’s bloody arm, but it was confidence, bravery and willpower!

There was still the future!

“Please don’t begin flirting yet, the Scarlet Emperor was not successfully sealed.” Qilin Girl exposed the secret.

“What? Impossible!” Yue Yang perspired greatly.

He had personally seen the Scarlet Emperor’s heavy injury and had been dragged back by the Ancient Rune into the sealed space. He originally thought that this would at least seal him for a few years and never imagined that his strong attacks actually failed.

Could it be that Sun Tian and the Black Prince had some kind of treasure to save the Scarlet Emperor?

Or was it that Scarlet Concubine’s Spirit Call really that amazing and once again able to call back the Scarlet Emperor? It was certain that the Scarlet Emperor had suffered critical injuries. After going through World Exterminating Wheel, Nirvana Flame and Innate Invisible Sword Qi, then suffered the sealing power of Prison Emperor Divine Seal which even made his skull burst open and one arm broken, how could he still escape from the Ancient Seal after being sealed again?

Evil Dragon Lair.

Most of the adventurers had left.

Shun Tian, Black Prince and his subordinate, the Purgatory Flame Black Dragon as well as two troops of Dragon Hunters had

already left.

Hurricane had saluted towards his former friend Fire Breath's corpse. Seeing that the Scarlet Emperor and the Scarlet Concubine were still hugging and kissing without any intent to kill him, he also quickly left.

Inside the crumbling Evil Dragon Lair only the Scarlet Emperor, who had lost his right arm, and the Scarlet Concubine remained.

Staying far away from everyone, the Scarlet Emperor suddenly fell on the floor with a boom.

Fresh blood continuously flowed from his mouth.

He was also quite spent. If it was not in order to dispel Shun Tian and the Black Prince's wariness and force himself to stand up, he would already have fallen down. After Yue Yang's three attacks, the Scarlet Emperor felt incomparably tired. If that youth was even slightly stronger then it would truly be dangerous... Fortunately, Shun Tian and the Black Prince did not have the courage to join hands and attack the Scarlet Concubine. It was not because their strength was lacking, but because of paranoia. In the end, they had virtually helped the Scarlet Emperor escape from the trap.

"Let us quickly leave this place and find another place to recuperate. If an Innate Elder ranker appeared, we would really need to be vigilant." The Scarlet Emperor slightly coughed. Under the support of the Scarlet Concubine, he painfully stood up.

“Your hand...” The Scarlet Concubine cried.

“No problem, after using a secret technique and heaven crystals, it will grow back.” The Scarlet Emperor had received heavy injuries but his pride as an emperor still remained. “This is a lesson, and also a warning to me conquering the lower mortal world. It reminded me to never be negligent. My beloved, don’t worry, I will never let another Prison Emperor emerge. That youth was not bad but this time I will absolutely not let him grow just like the Prison Emperor and become my nemesis!”

“As for how strong the Prison Emperor was, I am not too clear about it. However, I want to tell you that I am different from him!” Yue Yang suddenly appeared in a blink of an eye. His eyes still contained an unrivalled sneering light.

“Your injuries have actually healed?” When the Scarlet Emperor saw this he was shocked!

“There’s a phrase called ‘Taking advantage while the enemy is down!’. If it was the Prison Emperor, he would probably not attack anyone who is heavily injured, after all he is an honorable and prideful Emperor. However, I am different from him. I am a scoundrel. Despicable is my nickname and shameless is my real name. So, I am sorry senior who had lived for six thousand years, let me send you to your grave!”

His murderous intent exploded

His second attack begins now.

Chapter 417 – The Guardian Divine Shield And The Spirit Absorbing Bell

This time, the prime target of Yue Yang's attack was no longer the Scarlet Emperor but the Scarlet Concubine.

For the Scarlet Emperor who had gotten himself out of the ancient sealing circle, even if he was severely injured, what determine if he could survive was his speed. Previously when he was trapped in the ancient sealing circle, his power wasn't any weaker than Yue Yang. On the other hand, if Yue Yang didn't have so many skills and high-ranked artifacts, the Scarlet Emperor wouldn't have been so badly injured. It could even be said that without the Prison Emperor Divine Seal, Yue Yang wouldn't be able to do anything to the Scarlet Emperor.

Yue Yang didn't know how effective his attacks would be on the Scarlet Emperor, so he decided to get rid of the Scarlet Concubine first.

Getting rid of her would definitely pose as a huge blow to the Scarlet Emperor.

“Scarlet Lotus! “

The Scarlet Concubine knew very well that this was the most dangerous moment of her life, so she didn't conserve any power and used all her might to fight with Yue Yang this time.

Her own life was never her priority. The most important thing was to fight for some time so that her lover could recuperate for a while more.

She believed deeply that her lover would not be defeated from the blow.

The giant Scarlet Lotus Fire rotated in the air as thousands of lotus petals shot towards Yue Yang.

The World Exterminating Wheel was rotating similarly.

Being trapped in raging flame, the World Exterminating Wheel opened a small tunnel amazingly, blocking away all the Scarlet Lotus Petals that were coming his way. Yue Yang quickly slid through the extremely small space agilely.

The tunnel that the World Exterminating Wheel opened had pressure swirl in it which helped him slide forward more swiftly. It was as if someone was pushing him forward. The Fire Spear made from the Nirvana Flame targeted those scarlet lotus petals that were in front. Every time the two touched marked the start of every refinement of the scarlet lotus fire. Although the refinement process wouldn't be completed within a second, the Scarlet Lotus Fire was definitely not on the same level as the Nirvana Flame.

Yue Yang was dead sure about this.

If he were to give example, normal fire would be level one. They

are the worst in terms of quality and the least powerful one. The 'Burning Fire Sky' and the 'Meteorite Fire Rain' that were insanely powerful would be Bronze-ranked. They were better than the normal fire and the easiest to control for normal warriors. 'Hellfire' and 'Dragon's Breath' were at least silver-ranked. As for Gold-ranked ones, it differed from people to people. For example the Hellfire controlled by Baruth was not the same rank as the Hellfire controlled by normal warriors. The Green Phosphorus Ghost Fire controlled by the Black Prince was at least Gold-ranked. Being under the Ghost Fire Category, although it's temperature wasn't the highest, it's extremely toxic.

The Scarlet Concubine's Scarlet Lotus Fire was the best among all the fires, and even the Green Phosphorus Ghost Fire wasn't on par to it.

It surpassed all other normal fires in the world, as it was a demonic fire that could take on tangible forms.

Although there wasn't really a real ranking system to differentiate them, but just for example's sake, it could be Platinum-ranked.

Even higher than it, a Diamond-ranked fire would be the 'Silent Exterminating Fire' that only Innate Elder-ranked Rankers could use, it was a form of Holy-ranked Fire that could destroy the souls of all creatures. This super high level Holy-ranked Fire couldn't even be reached with training but would only be developed from particular Divine Equipments... Yue Yang hadn't seen it before but he knew of it's existence from the knowledge of the tragic guy's mother.

As for the Nirvana Flame, it was a unique, one-of-a-kind Divine-ranked Fire.

Not only did it possess the power to destroy the world, it had the function of purifying all things in the world, and even the ability for one to undergo rebirth.

Under his current state, Yue Yang wouldn't be able to unleash the potential of the Nirvana Flame fully. If it were to be the Phoenix Sisters, the Nirvana Flame could even surpass the rank of a 'Divine Fire' and go even higher...

"Shoo! " Yue Yang's Nirvana Fire Spear blocked off the Scarlet Lotuses. Penetrating everything, it went straight for the Scarlet Concubine's throat.

"Stop! "

A silver disk shoot across the air with a silvery light.

It blocked in front of the Scarlet Concubine, blocking off the attack of the Nirvana Fire Spear that prepared to pierce through the Scarlet Concubine's throat.

The Nirvana Flame that could destroy everything actually couldn't penetrate the bizarre looking silver disc embedded with ancient runes. It could only melt the silvery light. As if alive, the silver disc suddenly rotated at a high speed, returning back to the

only remaining hand of the Scarlet Emperor. It kept vibrating as if in agony due to the pricking of the Nirvana Fire Spear. Even without using the Heaven Eyes Divine Vision, Yue Yang could tell that it was a Divine Equipment.

Even though it mightn't be on par to the Prison Emperor Divine Seal, it would be somewhere near.

With this Divine Equipment, getting rid of the Scarlet Emperor might be very difficult...

Yue Yang had expected that the Scarlet Emperor wouldn't be an empty vessel and that he definitely had some powerful skills, but Yue Yang didn't expect him to own a Divine Equipment!

Guardian Divine Shield [Silver] : A four stars Divine Equipment. Possess consciousness. Activated with it's owner's fresh blood. It's guardian power will be boosted ten times when the owner is on the verge of death. It wouldn't be damage by energy that's weaker than the divine equipment. Takes on different shapes under specific environment. It will be able to get unlimited source of divine energy under the stars. Special skill 'Streaming Light'.

"Damn it! " After Yue Yang saw the silver disc's information with his Heaven Eyes Divine Vision, he swore uncontrollably.

If he had to point out a weakness of the Guardian Divine Shield, it would be that it couldn't launch attack at all. It could only be served as a Divine Equipment used for defense.

However, even so, it was powerful enough.

Especially for now, this type of divine equipment used purely for defense was more useful than those used purely to attack.

What comforted Yue Yang a little was that he could see the information of the Guardian Divine Shield with his Heaven Eyes Divine Vision, but he couldn't do so for the Prison Emperor Divine Seal. This meant that the Prison Emperor Divine Seal was of a higher rank and more powerful than the Guardian Divine Shield. Of course, the Prison Emperor Divine Seal hadn't acknowledged Yue Yang as its owner yet, so he could only use it to smash it on others but couldn't truly make use of it. It was just like how a child who got himself a dragon slaying knife. Although it's a powerful treasure, the child wouldn't be able to utilise it.

“Our fight is meaningless, you drove me to a corner but you can't kill me yet! Even without the protection of a Divine Equipment, I still have many other skills and ways to leave here. I admit that your appearance changed my usual perspection, you are an opponent who is good at planning and creating, your perseverance and courage is not bad too, but I have to point out that you are still too young... I'm better than you in terms of my experiences in which you have yet to acquire. All kinds of battling experiences and tricks to execute skills, and even ways on how to use treasures. If I could summon my Beasts, I can even make you run away in fright, and it wouldn't have been you landing me into such an embarrassing state. Young man, it would be meaningless to continue this fight, we are going back now, let's meet again in the Heaven Realm...” The Scarlet Emperor waved his hands, pulling the Scarlet Concubine back into his arms as he prepared to leave.

Under the defense of the the Guardian Divine Shield, how should he continue the fight?

Now that the Scarlet Emperor had gotten out, with a speed like his, he could run and flee as and when he liked, if he doesn't wish to continue the fight, the situation could become a little tricky.

But if they don't continue the fight, then Yue Yang wouldn't feel contented with that.

Thinking of it caused Yue Yang much headache.

Eh? Wait, why didn't he take out the Guardian Divine Shield just now?

Yue Yang saw that the ancient runes was getting redder on the Guardian Divine Shield, as the silver starry energy emitted became more intense, he had a sudden realisation.

In order for this shield to continue working, it might have to absorb the fresh blood of it's owner continually or it could be that the Scarlet Emperor didn't have enough energy to activate the Guardian Divine Shield now. He was burning his life to sacrifice blood to the shield in order to take it out.

Now that he thought of this, Yue Yang was pleasantly pleased.

No matter what, the best way now was to pester the Scarlet Emperor until he collapse!

“You think you are powerful with your divine equipment? I want to beat up an upstart like you precisely!” Yue Yang charged forward shamelessly, as his Nirvana Fire Spear morphed into halberd and started waving it around differently... All of the strikes went towards the Scarlet Emperor and the Scarlet Concubine. Although the Guardian Divine Shield was rotating quickly in mid air, blocking off all of Yue Yang’s attack, the silver starry light of the Guardian Divine Shield dulled every time Yue Yang’s Nirvana Fire Halberd hit it. The Scarlet Emperor’s body started to shake as he wasn’t able to endure it anymore. In the end, his body wavered slightly, looking as if he was about to collapse from his blood being drained.

“Goddamn brat!” The Scarlet Concubine glared at Yue Yang angrily, so widely as if fire was going to shoot out from her pupil.

She used all her might to gather almost a thousand of Scarlet Lotus.

Using both of her hands, she directed them towards Yue Yang.

Even if the Scarlet Lotus Fire couldn’t do anything to Yue Yang who was protected by the Nirvana Flame, she wouldn’t just watched as this shameless brat go around being so haughty. She swore to fight with him with all her might.

Facing the hovering Scarlet Lotuses, Yue Yang didn’t dare to let his guards down too.

He wasn't afraid of the fire, but the Scarlet Concubine who was in a weakened state still possessed the power of a Level Nine Innate.

She controlled thousands of scarlet lotuses with her hands. Forget about the high temperature of the fire, just with the power of being a Level Nine Innate would be sufficient to kill him if he were to be hit.

Yue Yang quickly defended himself, turning the Nirvana Fire Halberd into a Nirvana Fire Amour and placed them around himself. He then quickly rose a Nirvana Fire Pillar, engulfing all the scarlet lotuses that were going towards him... He was a little proud of himself because combining his Yang Ability with the engulfed scarlet lotuses might create a whole new Fire Ability. Although it wouldn't be as good as the Nirvana Flame, it wouldn't be weaker than the Green Phosphorus Ghost Fire.

With more Fire Abilities, he would be able to control fire better and raise his combat power even higher!

The more important thing was that the better he was at controlling his Yang Ability, the more beneficial it would be when he wants to combine his Yin and Yang Abilities to reach a whole new level.

The Scarlet Concubine felt that the Scarlet Lotus Fire she released had all been blocked and engulfed by her opponent as all of them lost contact with her. All these added on to her mental, physical and energy exhaustion, she cried grimly as she shot a blood arrow towards Yue Yang with her last breath of wrath, even

disregarding the price she had to pay with her health.

Once the blood arrow was shot out, the Scarlet Concubine immediately fainted into the arms of the Scarlet Emperor.

She had reached her extreme long ago!

The blood arrow was made from her heart's blood, wrath and special energy, the impact that it would make wouldn't be any weaker than that of a Divine Equipment.

Yue Yang reeled in shock as he realised that this bitch was fighting with him with all her might.

He couldn't let down his guard so he quickly placed a Nirvana Fire Armour in front of him for protection...

"Spirit absorption!" A golden light glimmered in his eyes as a giant golden bell-like treasure appeared in mid air. When the Scarlet Emperor hit the bell with the energy shot out from his pupil, the whole Evil Dragon Lair shook violently, as if rocked by a major disaster. The stone wall broke and shattered with a rumbling noise as giant rocks rained down from the roof.

Yue Yang felt that his brain was buzzing as an evil energy entered his body. He felt the illusion of his soul being sucked out forcefully out of his body.

Luckily the Innate Qi in his Dan Tian warmed up, activating the

Nirvana Flame as it moved through his body, repelling the negative energy that sucked his soul out forcefully from his body.

But Yue Yang's dizziness did not go away for a long time.

On the ground, more than ten energy fountain burst as they prepared to attack Yue Yang who was still in a daze. The Nirvana Fire Armour kept rotating around him. It was automatically guarding its owner as it kept purifying the energy fountain... Just when the energy fountain was hindered by the Nirvana Fire Armour and both sides were wrestling for control of the situation, the blood arrow took advantage of the situation and shot towards Yue Yang's chest.

Although it was slow, its impact was very huge!

When the Fire Armour finally went back to guard its owner, the Guardian Divine Shield suddenly coiled into a round tube. Not only did it manage to block the second attack of the Nirvana Fire Armour, the space in between it allowed the blood arrow to go straight for Yue Yang's heart...

Chapter 418 – Outburst, The Birth Of The Purple-Golden Fire

The coordination between the Scarlet Concubine and the Scarlet Emperor was perfect.

If they weren't in a weakened state and heavily injured, Yue Yang would have been beaten to a pulp.

Using the blood arrow would only make both sides suffer.

If they weren't at their wit's end, they wouldn't have to attack like this.

“Oh my!”

A shadow flashed past as Bloody Queen Red flew into the Evil Dragon Lair with Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man and Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen Duo Duo following behind. They had already came out from the Grimoire World just now, but as they were afraid that the Scarlet Emperor would sense them, they remained outside until Yue Yang officially asked for their help. Bloody Queen Red's speed was the fastest, so she was the first to reach. She did not expect to see Yue Yang being in a dangerous situation on stepping in. Bloody Queen Red dived forward in an instant, and used her wings to sweep Yue Yang away. Spreading her arms, she used her body to shield Yue Yang from the deadly blood arrow shot.

It went through her heart.

The impact was so great that she was sent flying into the air and then smashed into the stone wall.

Although Yue Yang knew that she was his Guardian Beast and wouldn't die, on seeing that she had been shot through the heart to save him and subsequently smashing into the stone wall, it made him incensed.

He hasn't had an outburst in a long while, until now...

“Damn it, annoying trash!”

A loud howl burst out from Yue Yang's throat, the vibe that he was emitting was as scary as that of a volcanic eruption. The shockwave shook the entire Evil Dragon Lair, making the already crumbling lair even more shaky as numerous broken stones poured down.

The ground tore apart as cobweb-like cracks became bigger with the quake becoming more violent.

Yue Yang's eyes were red and his mind went blank.

Now, he was controlled entirely by his anger and his rationality ceased to exist.

He stretched out his hand to gather all the unrefined Scarlet Lotus Fire, the remaining energy from the energy fountains, the divine power of the Guardian Divine Shield and the remaining fluid of the blood arrow in the air. He gathered all these power into a ball of energy. Following the outburst of his Yang Ability, Yue Yang squeezed the ball of energy as if he was trying to strangle his opponent dead. Yue Yang's intention might be to break the ball of energy or it could be that he was venting his anger, it could be anything but out of rationality. It was driven by an immense form of anger.

But an eerie thing happened.

All the energy that were forced to mix with Yue Yang's Yang Ability under Yue Yang's wrath started to assemble uncannily, forming a brand new, weird purple-golden fire.

"Impossible..."

The Scarlet Emperor's pupils widened as he watched, but the corner of his eyes were twitching.

No matter who it was, a newly refined power could never be formed from an opponent's power because not only would it repel the owner's original energy. It would carry the consciousness of the opponent, so the fusion wouldn't occur easily. Its like a Ranker having two sharp equipments but wouldn't be able to cast them into one to make an even sharper equipment.

However, the events that was unfolding in front of him screamed

out that it was all reality.

He saw it with his eyes, so the Scarlet Emperor could only accept it.

After mixing and fusing, the purple-golden fire became similar to the Scarlet Lotus Fire but it definitely was a new form of fire.

Needless to say, its power was stronger than the Scarlet Lotus Fire.

The Scarlet Emperor sensed that this new fire carried with it a sense of wrath that shocked even the Scarlet Emperor...

This wrath was both foreign yet familiar to him!

In the past, the wrath that the Prison Emperor emitted when he was incensed was very similar to this new fire. Although they might not be identical, it was similarly dominating and intimidating, causing all creatures to feel a sense of uncontrollable fear!

Could it be that this fire had already reached the state where only Innate Elder Rankers could use?

But this brat did not have the strength of an Innate Elder.

Moreover, how could Yue Yang create it right in front of him?

What exactly is this guy's Inherent Skill?

The Scarlet Emperor experienced a throbbing headache instantly!

“Go and die!” Maybe it was because he couldn't destroy his opponent's power and created a new fire instead, Yue Yang who had lost his rationality became even more crazed and furious. He kept squeezing the ball of purple-golden fire, as if he wanted to destroy it. Unexpectedly, he managed to compress it ten times smaller instead. In the end, the red-eyed Yue Yang was so furious that he roared angrily in a deafening, earth-shaking voice as he raised his right hand holding the ball of purple-golden fire and threw it forcefully towards the Scarlet Emperor and the Scarlet Concubine.

“Metal Fort...” The Scarlet Emperor was secretly alarmed. He stomped his foot, and an artifact immediately appeared.

A tiny white pearl flew out. Within the pearl, there was an image of a black castle.

Instantly, the pearl broke and the image turned from an illusory one into a tangible presence. It expanded quickly, forming a castle gate formed out of impregnable metal. It was gigantic with a height of 20 metres, breadth of 10 metres and length of 3 metres. It stood tall before the Scarlet Emperor, blocking in front of him.

With it, the Scarlet Emperor could defend himself against

anything.

The Scarlet Emperor had already tested the Metal Fort last time. Even the Holy Sword that was said to be able to slash anything in the world wasn't able to penetrate it.

What would happen when the Metal Fort, whose defense ability was the highest among all artifacts, go against this small ball of purple-golden fire?

Boom!

A violent explosion broke out again.

The cliff wall on the west that was destructed the most collapsed completely, revealing a huge crack. The huge crack was over a hundred metres in tall, and it continued down to the valley. Broken stones flew across and covered the entire sky as the energy level rose to a shocking level.

The shockwave in the Evil Dragon Lair was world-shaking. Even the Barbarian Cow Shadow stepped back a few metres from the impact.

The Scarlet Emperor's pupil expanded again.

Because he saw the Metal Fort crumbling from the shock.

At the very moment when they touched, the Metal Fort was fragmented into a million pieces by the purple-golden fire and was destroyed completely.

It was as if he hadn't summon the Metal Fort, but a sandcastle that a child had built instead, because it collapsed at the first blow!

Only the Scarlet Emperor knew the defense ability of his treasure!

Oh boy!

The Scarlet Emperor leapt high up into the air immediately. Before the Guardian Divine Shield could come back to defend him, he wasn't confident of fighting against this ball of purple-golden fire. Yue Yang on the other hand wanted to charge forward but was hindered by the Guardian Divine Shield. He was incensed by the Guardian Divine Shield as well. He grabbed onto it and smashed it on the ground crazily like a maniac who had lost all his rationality. The rock on the ground was smashed into pieces by Yue Yang, causing million sparks of fire as the ground boomed and thudded loudly.

Watching what Yue Yang was doing, the Scarlet Emperor reeled in shock.

This brat's crazed state wasn't any weaker than the Prison Emperor when he was angry!

The Guardian Divine Shield couldn't be destroyed, but the silvery star light on it became dull and kept giving off a buzzing sound like a pitiful human who was being beaten up!

“Lunatic!” The Scarlet Emperor decided that he should quickly leave.

He would be in an even more disadvantaged situation if he continues to fight. Yue Yang would just become crazier and stronger. Yue Yang has great potential, and when he lost his rationality, he was even scarier than his usual cunning self, because this was when he truly unleash his potential!

The Scarlet Emperor didn't even want the treasures he had underground anymore, including the golden Spirit Absorbing Bell. He just want to leave.

Embracing the Scarlet Concubine, he did not choose to escape from the opening in the stone wall in the west direction, but instead, he knocked down a huge part of the stone wall in the east.

“Uohh, die die die!” On realising that the Guardian Divine Shield in his hand had become a ray of fleeting light and returned back to the side of the Scarlet Emperor, Yue Yang chased after the Scarlet Emperor at a breakneck speed. Now, Yue Yang was even faster than the Scarlet Emperor in terms of speed. Raising his fist burning with the Nirvana Flame, he waved it towards the Scarlet Emperor.

His punch rained towards the Scarlet Emperor and the impact

weighed as heavy as thunder!

What made the Scarlet Emperor shocked was that among all the ten punches, two were so fast that even the Guardian Divine Shield wasn't able to react fast enough. As a result, it landed on the Scarlet Emperor's lower back.

Had it not been the Guardian Divine Shield that helped to block most of the punches, he wouldn't dare to say that he could escape under the crazed fighting maniac's angry attacks.

A sliver light burst out from the Scarlet Emperor's body.

His eyes were so worn out that two streaks of blood tears streamed down his face, causing him great agony.

The Energy Fountain burst out under the Scarlet Emperor's feet, sending Yue Yang flying into the air when he was busily attacking and forgot to defend himself.

With the impact from Yue Yang's two punches, the Scarlet Emperor was even faster in breaking out of the stone wall.

He stepped onto the Guardian Divine Shield again so that it could carry him away.

Like a meteorite, he went off.

A rock fell down, covered in fresh blood... It was spurted by the Scarlet Emperor when Yue Yang punched him.

From the terrifying blood traces, it could be concluded that the Scarlet Emperor, a Ranker from six thousand years ago, was injured to the brink of death by Yue Yang. If not for his Divine Tool, he wouldn't be able to flee under Yue Yang's powerful advancements.

Although he escaped, luck played a part too. Most of the credit would go to his Divine Tool, if not the outcome would have been unpredictable.

On the other hand, Yue Yang smashed into the stone wall.

He who was in a berserk state had immensely strong defense mechanism. Although he was hit by the Energy Fountain, it did not injure him at all. Being hit just made him even angrier and agitated.

Having lost his target, Yue Yang kept smashing the stone wall with his fists. The entire Evil Dragon Lair was almost razed to the ground by him.

Bloody Queen Red broke out from the stone wall and threw herself at Yue Yang. She embraced him, ignoring the dangers.

She had blood oozing out of her mouth, and a bloodied hole could be seen through her chest. Numerous light and electricity was

sizzling around her wound, as if some sort of mutation was happening. But the Bloody Queen Red ignored all the mutations that was going on as she embraced Yue Yang who was preparing to chase after the Scarlet Emperor tightly. She yelled with a tear-streaked face. “I’m fine, come to your senses, stop acting like this!”

She was worried that Yue Yang who lost his rationality would be injured if he continued to chase after the Scarlet Emperor. As he did not know how to defend himself, this made it extremely easy for him to be attacked.

Bloody Queen Red was even more worried that Yue Yang’s body would be harmed from being too angry.

Her heart ached for him, and at the same time she was also worried for him.

Feeling such a complex emotion, she called out to her master, crying. She hoped that he could come to his senses with her voice.

The Barbarian Cow Shadow and Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen was similarly calling out to Yue Yang as they crowded around him anxiously.

At first its effect was insignificant.

But after some time, Yue Yang’s body shook slightly as he regained his consciousness.

“Eh?”

Yue Yang’s ruthless wrath started to subside. The redness in his eyes began to subside, as he started to regain his rationality.

Bloody Queen Red was so happy that she started crying and laughing.

Her tear streaked face made Yue Yang’s heart ache from watching.

When Yue Yang became sober, he looked around him in shock. The whole Evil Dragon Lair was crumbling under his attacks, but as if he had forgotten what he did, he asked the lot dazedly. “What happened just now... The Scarlet Emperor escaped? Why didn’t I go according to my plans... Ah, this place is going to collapse soon, we have to leave quickly, let’s talk about this later!”

Under them, numerous fire in form of purple-golden lotus returned quickly to float around Yue Yang.

Yue Yang was confused. What, what was happening?

Are these fires mine?

He wasn’t able to think at the moment. He stopped paying attention to the purple-golden fires when he saw that they didn’t clash with the Nirvana Flame. They only avoided the Nirvana Flame and floated by themselves. He had to get out of the Evil

Dragon Lair before they could talk about anything.

Embracing the heavily injured Bloody Queen Red, Yue Yang flew out from out the crumbling Evil Dragon Lair through the hole in the west side of the stone wall.

On the way, huge rocks kept falling down.

The roof rocked violently as the mountain peak that was a few hundred metres above ground started to crumble too. Yue Yang who was speeding up in his flying turned his head to look at the ancient sealing circle that wasn't affected by the collapsing at all. He sighed thinking that he might not be able to study the sealing circle as of now. As the Barbarian Cow Shadow and Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen tidied up the battle ground, Bloody Queen Red was enjoying her master's embrace happily. Blushing, she lay in Yue Yang's embrace as they flew out of the lair in his arms.

It wasn't that she lost her ability to fly, her action now was similar to a human girl acting coy... Bloody Queen Red did not know how this action of hers would help to promote her emotional growth, and she did not want to think of anything now. All she wanted was to enjoy her master's embrace joyfully.

She only knew that she liked this feeling.

When Yue Yang flew out of the Evil Dragon Lair, Qilin Girl and Xiao Wen Li were already waiting outside.

According to original plans, they were in charge of killing the Scarlet Emperor. Yue Yang felt that he mustn't let the Scarlet Emperor off, so he sent the girls out for back up.

Looking at Yue Yang, Qilin Girl looked at him apologetically. "The Scarlet Emperor is too cunning, he is protected by a Divine Tool so I wasn't able to kill him. I may be able to kill the Scarlet Concubine who had fainted. She isn't able to attack now so she is of no threat to lamia loli and I, but I couldn't bear to attack her... So, I, I let her off." She kicked a detached foot toward Yue Yang casually. It was obvious that it was the foot of the Scarlet Emperor. Yue Yang nodded and used his Platinum Storage Ring to keep the detached foot.

Nothing could be done about not being able to kill the Scarlet Emperor because after all, he was protected by his Divine Tool.

It was already a pleasant surprise for Yue Yang that they were able to slash off one foot of the Scarlet Emperor.

If the Qilin Girl were to kill the Scarlet Emperor, it would leave a regret in Yue Yang's heart because it would be a pity not to kill such a strong opponent with his own hands.

As long as he could injure the Scarlet Emperor badly, Yue Yang believed that with time and his own improvements, it would be possible for him to battle to see who's stronger.

Behind him, Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man carried the giant golden Spirit Absorbing Bell out. Inside the bell were many

fragments of the Metal Fort. If it wasn't that they couldn't stay any longer, she would have picked up more fragments. As for the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen, she had already eaten the dead body of Fire Breath and conveniently brought out the dead body of the brick red dragon which was killed instantly by Yue Yang.

The Evil Dragon Lair collapsed completely as the mountains around sunk and cracked into many pieces.

Two of the huge rubble pieces sent mud and broken fragments splattering into the air. They then fell into the deep valley, causing a huge sound that shook the entire place.

The echo resonated for a long time.

“It's a pity as the ancient runes sealing circle was buried below the rocks. We must return here if we have time and study it. I feel that the ancient sealing circle must be very valuable.” After the fight, Yue Yang was very exhausted and needed to rest urgently. Also, he was afraid that Shun Tian and the Black Prince will take advantage of his weariness to attack him now. So before Qilin Girl goes back to hibernate and while Xiao Wen Li and the rest were still safe, they had to return back to the Grimoire World to rest.

Once Yue Yang returned to the Grimoire World, he went to sleep exhaustedly even before he could sort out all the possessions he had acquired.

This was his safest home, Yue Yang was extremely relaxed here.

Qilin Girl smiled and disappeared with a dash of colourful light.

Xiao Wen Li who was exhausted from the battle also went back to rest in Yue Yang's body. The most important thing was that by doing so, she could also help Yue Yang recuperate faster.

When the sickly beauty saw the tears streaks left on Bloody Queen Red's face, she seemed to understand something. The sickly Beauty then nodded her head and smiled towards Bloody Queen Red. "He's covered in dirt, I'll have to fetch some water for him to wash up, come and help too!" The sickly beauty said in a soft voice.

On hearing that, Bloody Queen Red was a little startled. She then lowered her head immediately and replied 'okay' in a small voice.

Chapter 419 – Bloody Queen, Red!

Immediately upon waking up, Yue Yang teleported back to Bo Nan Town.

At the hall of the Warrior Guild, Yue Yang sent a few messengers to send a secret message to warn Zhi Zun, the Night Empress, the Phoenix Fairy Beauty, Elder Nan Gong, Ascetic Practice Saint, Jun Wu You and Elder Yue Hai respectively, that the Scarlet Emperor from 6000 years ago had escaped from the ancient sealing circle. Yue Yang stated in the messages that even though the Scarlet Emperor had sustained heavy injuries when he escaped, with his powers, he would probably recover in no time. With powers that were at least above Sky-rank Level 6, the Scarlet Emperor was an extremely scheming and crazed warrior. He would definitely destroy the existing order in the entire Tong Tian Tower if he reappeared after recovering from his injuries. Also, all the warriors who defied his wishes would be mercilessly wiped out. Everyone must, therefore, be prepared for the worst.

Yue Yang currently had no better method as to how they should fight the Scarlet Emperor and had left it to Elder Nan Gong and the rest to trouble about it.

Whatever that Yue Yang could do, he had already done it.

Right now, their only hope would be that Zhi Zun could put up a fight against the Scarlet Emperor. If she was able to reach a stand-off with him, he wouldn't be able to be too cocky!

Of course, there was difficulty to realise this wish, as Yue Yang knew that apart from the Prison Emperor, the Scarlet Emperor was a powerful person who was unrivalled 6000 years ago. He was invincible and had dominated the Heaven Realm with his strong powers. The Scarlet Emperor may not possess the same kind of terrifying powers as those of Ming Yue Guang, Xu Kong and Jiu Xiao, the Three Great Leaders of the Heaven Realm, but it was possible that he was close to that level of existence. The Scarlet Emperor had lived confidently in ease even under the all-out suppression by the Prison Emperor. This point itself, is sufficient proof of the Scarlet Emperor's formidable powers.

Although Zhi Zun was undoubtedly very strong, she was just 'too young' when compared to the Scarlet Emperor.

Furthermore, only Zhi Zun herself would know what realm her cultivation level was at.

"The Scarlet Emperor possessed at least one Divine-ranked equipment, 'Guardian Divine Shield, in addition to having the Scarlet Concubine as his able assistant. He also owned numerous other treasures."

"An expert in shooting energy light pillars at will, the Scarlet Emperor's eyes also possessed super killing powers."

"Beast, unknown."

"After the attacks, Shun Tian as well as the Black Prince and even more Innates might join the Scarlet Emperor as he knew the way

to enter into the Heaven Realm, which was an enticing offer they can't resist."

In everyone's letter, Yue Yang described in detail the Scarlet Emperor's powers, his artifacts and the current situation they faced.

The letters to Jun Wu You and Elder Yue Hai, contained the biggest warnings: "The Scarlet Emperor, being a Ranker of the Soaring Dragon Continent like the Prison Emperor, would definitely make his first comeback at the Soaring Dragon Continent. There is reason to believe that Da Xia and the Yue Clan would be the first targets of the Scarlet Emperor to be annihilated to show who's boss. I would suggest for the younger generation to step out of the public eye and to hide somewhere safe for the next three months. Only after the war with the Scarlet Emperor has been ascertained to have subsided, should they return home."

Yue Yang even sent messages to Ye Kong and Fatty Hai, asking them to return to the Soaring Dragon Continent promptly as well as to 'vanish' immediately from the Sixth Floor of the Tong Tian Tower.

Shun Tian and the Black Prince could have struck in advance and had the likes of Fatty Hai captured as hostages.

For warriors of their status, there wasn't any need for them to take action personally when at their command, countless of Fallen Warriors could have surrounded and seized Ye Kong and Fatty Hai.

At the Warrior Guild, the receptionist stared at Yue Yang stunned.

It cost 1000 gold to convey one top secret letter and this man had just sent out dozens. Such extravagant behaviour was truly extreme prodigality.

“If there isn’t anything terribly important, ordinary letters are just as safe. It’s only that top secret letters are conveyed more secretly.” Before the receptionist was finished, Yue Yang had already piled over ten thousand gold on the counter and said solemnly: “These letters are all extremely important. They concern innumerable lives and must be conveyed in top secret.”

“Understood.” The receptionist was shocked by Yue Yang’s solemn tone and nodded gravely, indicating that the letters would be conveyed in absolute secrecy as requested.

Leaving the great Hall of the Warrior Guild, Yue Yang teleported to an unfamiliar region where he’d never been to.

After he ensured that he wasn’t being shadowed, he returned to the grimoire world.

The Sickly Beauty was right in the middle of teaching Yue Shuang to study.

She was very stringent and strictly forbade her student to be distracted. In the beginning, the little girl wasn’t used to it and

acted like a spoilt child to her brother for help. However, after suffering a few punishments, the little girl smartened up and realised that some things just proved to be impossible for her brother. Knowing that her brother couldn't protect her, she had gotten used to listening attentively during lessons. Now, she would barely even blink upon seeing that Yue Yang has returned, when previously, she would have gotten up and thrown herself at him without a care in the world.

Yue Yang himself didn't expect that the Sickly Beauty could discipline the mischievous little girl to become so obedient. Still, it was a good thing.

There must be someone to be strict to the little girl. It wouldn't do if everyone simply spoilt her.

Looking around, he didn't see the Bloody Queen Red.

How was the condition of her injury?

Yue Yang remembered that her injuries were quite severe. She even had a hole through her chest..... When Yue Yang looked around and didn't find her, he reckoned that she would be resting in the Cloud Castle suspended in midair. Despite the fact that he never visited the place ordinarily, he made an exception this time and went up to take a look at her.

The Bloody Queen Red was heaving a sigh.

The reason was that her wound in the chest wasn't healing as fast as her injuries used to.

The blood arrow filled with the force of resentment was building up in her body and couldn't be expelled no matter what. Putting aside the pain, how could she present herself to people in her current state?

The Bloody Queen Red recalled the time when she peeked at her master and mistress having sex and he had especially enjoyed kissing and fondling the mistress's breast. She had figured that her master must really like women with perfect and flawless bodies. She looked at the bloody mess on her chest that wouldn't heal and thought that her master wouldn't like it. She removed her armour, looked at her wound and then at the clothes which the mistress had given her as a present. She let out another sigh..... If only she wasn't injured, she could have worn the clothes. It was rare that the mistress gifted her with such a beautiful suit of clothes.

Yue Yang entered the Cloud Castle and found that the Bloody Queen Red had decorated the place pretty nicely with many special features. Although it still couldn't compare to the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen Duo Duo's garden-like bedroom, it was still much better than the simple place of the Barbarian Cow Shadow.

Thinking that the Bloody Queen Red would be resting, he knocked carelessly to indicate that he was entering.

Upon entering, he found her half naked and clutching a clothes in her hand. Her face was bright red and she looked at him in bewilderment.

“Don’t know how to wear your new clothes?” Yue Yang was also slightly embarrassed but he reacted smoothly and walked in naturally instead of slamming the door. He then gently draped the clothes from the Sickly Beauty over the Bloody Queen Red’s shoulders, pretending to be unaffected.

“.....” The Bloody Queen Red felt shy and embarrassed.

The reason why she was shy in her master’s presence was because of the ugly wound on her chest and not because of her nakedness. She felt inferior and upset. She covered her wound hurriedly with her hands hoping that he wouldn’t notice. When Yue Yang draped the clothes over her shoulders, she dropped her head even more, afraid to look at his eyes. The Bloody Queen Red was extremely touched that he came to visit her yet secretly hated that she had allowed him to see her when she had the unsightly wound that hadn’t healed.

Yue Yang lightly embraced the Bloody Queen Red and caressed the top of her head.

Ever since she entered into a contract with him, the Bloody Queen Red’s appearance had changed every time she ranked up. Not only did she become more powerful, her body also became more and more perfect.

Most importantly, was the awakening of her intelligence, which made her more human-like.

The Bloody Queen Red may not win with her combat powers when compared to the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen and Barbarian Cow Shadow.

Yet, she surpassed them both greatly in terms of ‘humanisation’.

Sometimes, Yue Yang would even forget that she was a beast.

He would treat her like a real girl instead.

Despite being able to have independent thoughts, the Bloody Queen Red always prioritised Yue Yang whenever she acted. She had immediately dashed to save him by using herself as a human shield, without thought for her own safety, when his life had been in danger.

“Is the wound hurting a lot?” Yue Yang asked softly as his hand slipped down her hair and caressed her back.

“.....” The Bloody Queen Red shook her head vigorously, in fear of her master knowing that her wound was actually very painful.

“Release your hands and let me take a look.” Yue Yang also found it strange as to why isn’t the wound healed after being hit by the blood arrow. Guardian Beasts had very powerful healing abilities which were definitely the best out of all Beasts. The Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man used to often be injured by enemies, impaled and even had a big half of her body cut open. Within a day, she would have recovered fully and the Bloody Queen Red should also be

healed at the same rate. Physical injuries were considered to be light damage to Guardian Beasts, where only super severe internal injuries would have weakened them for a longer period of time.

“.....” the Bloody Queen Red continued to shake her head. However, under Yue Yang’s insistence, she slowly released the small hands that covered her wound.

Yue Yang tried his best to not pay much attention to her snow white and firm assets, instead, he used his Heaven Eyes Divine Vision to examine her injury.

The Bloody Queen Red’s face was burning hot.

Her body slowly heated up and stiffened unnaturally under the gaze of her master.

Even though Yue Yang breathed evenly, she could easily sense the changing heat in her master’s breathing as the skin on her chest had become extra sensitive. His breath, hot and heavy, assailed her nostrils which further stirred up strange feelings in her she couldn’t explain.

The two most sensitive little buds on her chest unexpectedly hardened up, with a tinge of pain and an unexplainable sadness.

The Bloody Queen Red suddenly had a realisation as to why the mistress liked the master to fondle her chest. It was as if her body had a natural and indescribable desire for her master’s large

hands.....

Could it be that just like her mistress's body does, her body craved for the love and favour of her master?

Thinking of this, the Bloody Queen Red's heart thumped even faster.

A feeling of shyness bubbled in her heart.

It was hard to describe the complicatedness of what felt like excitement, fondness as well as longing.

However, the Bloody Queen Red can be sure of one thing, which was that she felt a kind of sweet happiness she couldn't describe in her heart; it was as if she drank honeydew to quench her thirst in summer. The indescribable feeling was just as beautiful as the one she felt yesterday while flying in her master's embrace.

The Nirvana Flame emerged from Yue Yang's palm as he prepared to cleanse the Bloody Queen Red's body from the invading energy.

"....." the Bloody Queen Red's heartbeat immediately sped up by a hundred as her master's hand reached out to her just like how he had reached out to her mistress in their foreplay.

Of course, she knew clearly that it was only to heal her, but she simply couldn't help but let her imagination run wild.

Just before making contact with the Bloody Queen Red's skin, Yue Yang's hand stopped.

The Bloody Queen Red was nervous as hell, the desire in her heart only grew stronger as her sensitive skin felt the heat from his palm. She wanted desperately to grab his hand and press it firmly on her chest but her embarrassment made her hold herself back.

She half-closed her eyes, feeling very conflicted as she wanted to watch yet was dreadfully shy.

Her heartbeat was 200.

Yue Yang faintly mumbled to himself for quite a while before suddenly retracting the Nirvana Flame.

He sensed a new type of 'fire' in his body; the type of fire which had some kind of special connection to the blood arrow inside the Bloody Queen Red's chest. If he used the new type of fire to heal her, it might yield better results. Unarguably, the Nirvana Flame could purify everything. However, Yue Yang felt a sudden urge to just try since he could possibly attempt new techniques under certain special circumstances.

This new type of fire was created when Yue Yang had lost his mind in a wildly furious berserk mode. Yue Yang found it hard to understand that he had this sort of ability.

Against all reason, it was the truth.

As Yue Yang began to agglomerate the new fire, his palm slowly turned a shade of purplish gold.

Petal by petal, small flames emerged. Dancing in the air, they merged at contact to form a larger unit. Rather than looking like a flame, the units looked more like purple gold lotus petals.

Yue Yang then coagulated the lotus petals with his Yang Ability before they automatically took the shape of a purple gold fire lotus.

What made Yue Yang most pleasantly surprised was that the purple gold fire lotus had a deterrent force of some form of wrath.

The larger the fire lotus, the stronger the deterrent force!

When the purple gold fire lotus became a 3 level 18 petaled lotus seat, Yue Yang felt that the entire sky was filled with the power of wrath, as if a raise of his hand would shake the heaven and earth. A fire energy with powers of emotional coercion, what a truly magical flame! Yue Yang tried many different forms and found it to be endlessly marvellous, there was great value in future research, plus it could very well continue to upgrade. He had no idea how it was formed while he was in berserk mode, and no idea how many types of power it contained.

There is still one thing Yue Yang was sure of.

This type of purple gold fire lotus surely comprised of the energy of the Scarlet Concubine's Scarlet Lotus Fire. However, its quality, might and essence were all very much superior to that of the Scarlet Lotus Fire.

“Let us call this new type of fire ‘Heaven's Fury Fire Lotus!’” Yue Yang presently lacked the time to explore how he was able to create a new type of fire in his berserk mode and immediately tried to manipulate the Heaven's Fury Fire Lotus to heal the Bloody Queen Red's injury.

His hands gently pressed onto the Bloody Queen Red's proud and soft chest.

The Bloody Queen Red's whole body jolted and even her fingers trembled.

She wasn't in agony but was at ease.

Despite having seen her mistress's delighted face while being fondled before when she had peeped at her master and mistress making love, the Bloody Queen Red had absolutely no idea that the feeling was as such.....

With her eyes tightly closed, she resisted the pleasure flowing through her body and withheld the moan that almost escaped.

Countless petals of the Heaven's Fury Fire Lotus entered her wound under Yue Yang's control and the blood arrow with surging

resentment from the Scarlet Concubine was expelled in just split seconds.

The blood arrow, like a serpent, possessed a special kind of will comprising of a crazy desire to kill, resentment as well as desperate destructiveness. It was ruthlessly powerful and just happened to form an inseparable single entity. If it wasn't that the Heaven's Fury Fire Lotus had a far better willpower of coercion by wrath, the blood arrow wouldn't have been expelled that easily!

Yue Yang grabbed the blood arrow with one hand with an original intent to destroy it but right then, had a bright idea to fuse and refine it with the Heaven's Fury Fire Lotus.

He didn't know if it will work and merely wanted to try it, like a blessing to his soul.

The Heaven's Fury Fire Lotus had the fury of Yue Yang when he was in his berserk mode.

The blood arrow on the other hand, had the resentment of the Scarlet Concubine.

When the two were fused and refined, the energies would collide to release a boundless might. There wouldn't be any blast waves but the regret and envelopment of this type of wrath would be even scarier. It could totally scare someone with weak willpower to death. The Bloody Queen Red was also almost compelled to escape the wrath of both wills, however, she was reluctant to leave her master. She then bravely flung her arms open and embraced Yue

Yang tightly with her naked body.

If she hid in his embrace, she wouldn't have anything to fear, nor have to care for anything in the world!

Yue Yang was also clear that she was being affected and used a hand to shield her back and channelled his Innate Qi into her body to help her fight against the spiritual impact of the power of the wraths.

After ten minutes of the merged refinement, when they were on the verge of successfully accomplishing, Yue Yang planted a light kiss on the Bloody Queen Red's forehead and gently said: "I'm going to reward you with a treasure to commend you so go on and summon the Flame Whip out!"

The skill of the Bloody Queen Red, the Flame Whip, was a special reward when she had levelled up to Gold-ranked Level 4.

When the Bloody Queen Red had coagulated the Flame Whip as requested, Yue Yang further merged the ball of refined fire of the Heaven's Fury Fire Lotus and the blood arrow into the Flame Whip.

It was yet another bold attempt.

The possibility of failure was enormous.

However, the good news was that Yue Yang succeeded.

He had put in a lot of effort and had used up much of his Innate Qi.

After great difficulty, he had managed to fully integrate the three totally different types of fire to form a new Flame Whip.....

The power of the Flame Whip after the success not only shocked the Bloody Queen Red, it was also beyond the expectation of Yue Yang, as its power was extremely strong! The formidable power produced by the perfect combination of blending the fury of Yue Yang's berserk mode, the resentment of the Scarlet Concubine's despair and the original power of pain of the Flame Whip, was believed to be able to shock all life forms.

A hit from the new Flame Whip would definitely cause unbearable pain!

It didn't just have the power of the Heaven's Fury Fire Lotus and the Scarlet Lotus Fire. It also had the fury from the berserk mode, the resentment from despair as well as the original pain from the whip.

The Flame Whip was originally a skill shared by both the Bloody Queen Red and Yue Yang.

That relationship hadn't changed as the remodelled Flame Whip continued to be a skill shared by both.

Yue Yang was very pleased with the remodelled Flame Whip and its power. He even renamed the Flame Whip as ‘Whip of Agony’.

When the Bloody Queen Red use the Whip of Agony to flog enemies in the future, it was guaranteed to be so pleasurable that the enemies would be scared witless and scream for Her Majesty!

The Bloody Queen Red was very moved. She wanted to hug her master and fly about in the air to act out her happiness from the bottom of her heart.

But, she doesn’t dare to actually do it.

She clenched her hands into fists and repressed her emotions as Yue Yang still wasn’t done.

Yue Yang noted that the wound in the Bloody Queen Red’s chest wasn’t fully improving. He then placed his palm over the wound once again and used his Innate Qi to gently heal her wound. Only after he saw that her naked body was once again smooth and flawless was he satisfied enough to stop.

“It’s alright now.” Yue Yang directed a smile at the Bloody Queen Red. This time he was truly tired. His brows were beaded with sweat but his heart was filled with a sense of accomplishment.

“.....” Looking at the exhausted face of her master and his bright smile, the Bloody Queen Red felt her eyes burning up and tears escaped from her eyes. She couldn’t help it and tightly pressed Yue

Yang's hand onto her soft chest. She then suddenly flung her arms wide once again and pulled him into her embrace. Her cherry lips then searched clumsily in a flurry, before she kissed her master emotionally. It was as if she could only express how deeply touched she was in her heart by doing that.

Chapter 420 – Top Secret Letter!

Bloody Queen Red had a drastic change after she initiated a kiss with Yue Yang.

She no longer stays in the cloud castle suspended in the air but flew down to help the sickly beauty. She was eager to help out with anything. Even when the sickly beauty was studying the Heaven Runes, she would help to look after Yue Shuang. The sickly beauty had expected this to happen long ago. She smiled softly as she instructed Bloody Queen Red with all kinds of daily chores, making Bloody Queen Red happy and busy with all the jobs.

When Yue Yang saw it, he burst out laughing for a long while.

He went to sleep feeling at ease, as he fought the big loli in his dreams to digest the experiences he gained from fighting with the Scarlet Emperor.

The big loli could imitate the Scarlet Emperor, Scarlet Concubine, Shun Tian and the Black Prince's attack completely, and even more perfectly without any mistakes. Yue Yang was beaten up badly by her. But after a few rounds, Yue Yang realised excitedly that he could gradually get used to the terrifying fighting tempo now.

If he were to meet the Shun Tian, Black Prince and the others again, he wouldn't be so miserable as before.

Of course, he wasn't so sure if that would be the case if he meet

the Scarlet Emperor and the Scarlet Concubine again.

Because once they recover and return back to being Sky-rank Innates, no one would be able to fight with them except for Zhi Zhun.

Luckily Yue Yang's second attack injured the Scarlet Emperor and the Scarlet Concubine heavily. On top of that, Xiao Wen Li and the Qilin Girl succeeded in their ambush too, causing the Scarlet Emperor to be on the brink of death. Even though he managed to escape, he and the Scarlet Concubine would need at least a year and a half before they could return to their best state. Shun Tian, the Black Prince, Thousand Goblins Sect Leader, Prison Emperor Divine General, Demon King Ha Xin, Great Demon King Baruth, Xu Kong and Jiu Xiao who were Heaven Realm Great Leaders... Yue Yang had countless enemies.

As the saying goes, when you're covered with lice, you don't feel the itch. Yue Yang felt that it makes sense. He already had some many enemies that the Scarlet Emperor and the Scarlet Concubine would just be two new additions to the collection!

Yue Yang was training in the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower peacefully.

Ye Kong, Fatty Hai, Bao Er, Anna and Lin En were just back from their trainings as they sat down in the Warrior's Tavern.

Everyone was there.

Some were binge drinking, others were counting their gold coins, some others were teasing the waitress...

Fatty Hai and the lot led a carefree life these few days, because after coming out of the Five Elements Palace, their combined power had increased sharply. Even at the very least, their courage and guts had increased. Compared to the harsh conditions in the Five Elements Palace, the other places, even for those red warning regions, they felt that those areas weren't as challenging anymore. The consecutive successes boosted their morale tremendously.

“May I ask if the two of you are Mister Ye Kong and Mister Hai Da Fu?” A Secret Messenger from the Warrior Guild took out his tracking map and studied it repeatedly before approaching the duo.

“Yes its me, what is it? You wanna train with me?” Fatty Hai thought the man was from the Assassin Guild and wanted to find trouble with him.

Being called out for a fight, then fighting and pretending to be weak, followed by unleashing his real power and beating his opponent to a pulp.

Fatty Hai liked this lifestyle a lot.

Normally after finishing a fight, he would tell the other party arrogantly. “Do I have to tell you that I have a Level Two Bronze-ranked Iron Rhinoceros ? I’m a low profile person!”

In the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower, although his power wouldn't allow him to disregard everyone, he was still strong enough to fight off ordinary adventurers.

In reality, through Yue Yang's special guidance and under the power boost from large amount of Magic Crystals, Fatty Hai's Iron Rhinoceros was no longer a useless Beast like how it was in the past. It had evolved gradually from being Level Two Bronze-ranked to becoming a Level Four Silver-ranked Silver Rhinoceros. And then, after the super power boost by Yue Yang's Beast Spirit Pill and Demon's orb, it became a Level Five Gold-ranked Gold Rhinoceros. Not only does it have a bright future, it was of great help to its owner too! Forget about normal Beasts, even the Golden Mammoth that contracted with Fatty Hai spontaneously had to call it his boss... The only pity was that the Gold Rhinoceros couldn't personify, and with its powers being boosted, its weight would be boosted too.

Ye Kong used to make fun that even if the Gold Rhinoceros were to become a Holy Beast, it would be a 'gorgeous' beauty.

With both the Gold Rhinoceros and the Golden Mammoth, together with a smart hippo and an even smarter Wind Breath Seabird, it would be hard for Fatty Hai to remain humble!

Although he just reached the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower, he had defeated lots of foreign experts.

Forget about distant regions, Fatty Hai already gotten himself a nickname, 'Shameless Fat Devil', in the region around the Tong Tian Tower, breaking the record of the time an expert received a

nickname upon entering the Soaring Dragon Continent.

It was just that this nickname made people a little speechless.

“Mister Shui Dong Liu used a top secret method to send both of you a letter. The both of you will have to prove to me your real identity, including the pass signed by the introducer in the past, if not, I have the authority to reject giving you the letter.” The man before them who was surrounded by a weird haze around him and only had his eyes exposed. He then warned Fatty Hai sternly not to act crazy because he was drunk, if not all discussions would cease.

(Shiro: Shui Dong Liu is the old fox, in case you guys can't remember)

Fatty Hai became spiritless from hearing.

He then laughed bootlickingly. “Please pardon me, I'll get just two more shots. Shui Dong Liu is my mentor, he definitely has important matters to relay. This is my Bronze card, and damn monkey, hurry up, okay, all our cards are here, please verify, yes that's right, yes yes, I'm Hai Da Fu and he is Ye Kong...”

The thick smoke in the messenger's hand dispersed as he handed them an item.

It was a confidential article.

But the odd thing was that the confidential article was packed within a transparent box with a Rune Circle on it.

This was the protective casing for confidential articles of the Warrior Guild, it was rumoured that even Innate Rankers couldn't destroy it. Anyone who wished to destroy the protective casing would trigger a warning to the Warrior Guild and the Warrior Guild would then chase back the article at all cost. Although the fees of one thousand gold was expensive, the article would be so protected that no robbers would think of snatching it.

“Are you sure that you have sufficient ability to accept and protect this letter?” This was the first thing the messenger asked.

“Yes, I have.” Fatty Hai rest assured him immediately.

“Is the surrounding safe?” The Messenger asked next.

“Ah, I think it's safe.” Fatty Hai looked around the Warrior Tavern, apart from a few drunkard and waitress, the rest were all his friends.

“May I ask if you carry with you any Teleportation Stone or Scroll to leave this place with the article at anytime?” This was the third thing the Messenger asked.

“Yes.” Fatty Hai fished out his Teleportation Stone quickly to show him.

At last, after the messenger's repeated confirmation about Fatty Hai's abilities, he finally gave it to him and then left quickly. The

Messenger's series of serious actions made everyone baffled. What exactly was written in the letter that made Yue Yang send this confidential article?

Everyone crowded around as they wanted to take a look at it, but they still had manners and turned their heads away, although they were dead curious about it.

Only Ye Kong and Fatty Hai leaned close to each other and looked at it.

Because the letter was dedicated to both of them by Shui Dong Liu... After a few seconds, everyone realised that Fatty Hai was perspiring profusely and Ye Kong was similarly gulping his saliva as his Adam's Apple moved up and down from anxiety. Forget about the observant Lin En and Anna, even the careless Fan Lun Tie and muddle-headed Bao Er knew that something was wrong. Prince Tian Luo and Xue Tan Lang exchanged glances as they realised that something must have happened in Soaring Dragon Continent.

Fatty Hai looked at the lot as he forced out a smile that looked even worse than him crying as he waved at Xue Tan Lang.

Xue Tan Lang came over and snatched the letter away.

When he saw it, he reeled in shock.

Prince Tian Luo followed him immediately. He glanced through

it and balled up his fist instantly.

“Fatty, what happened?” The Ox Head Party Leader Li Ao rarely speaks up, but he was actually a meticulous leader that only looked careless on the outside. He asked the lot in a serious tone.

“Hahaha, nothing, it’s just that the old sow at my house was giving birth and experiencing a little difficulties, so I decided to go back to see what i can do. But it is no simple sow, it is my favourite sow.” Fatty Hai snatched the letter back and he stuffed it into his mouth and chewed it. On seeing it, Lin En and Anna were even more pessimistic about the situation. They couldn’t even let the rest take a look at the letter, it would mean that the issue must be very serious. So it was definitely not that his sow was experiencing difficult labour.

“Is this true?” Fan Tie Lun did not buy it, how could a letter citing a sow experiencing difficult labour be a top secret letter?

“Wow, I didn’t know that the status of pigs in the Soaring Dragon Continent are so high...” The four orc were very happy and said enviously. “No matter where we are, the status of pigs is always very low!”

“It must be a rare valuable pig. See, I said that there’s some kind of legendary pig beast that will bring luck to people!” Bao Er hadn’t gone out to see the world, so she was easily deceived by Fatty Hai’s act.

“Yes indeed its very rare, we decided to go back too to see what

we can help with.” Ye Kong coughed and nodded his head.

“Let’s go.” Xue Tan Lang turned and prepared to leave.

“I wonder if we can take a look at the valuable pig of the Soaring Dragon Continent too? I am a healing type warrior, so i may be of some help.” Anna tried to probe.

“Because every continents have their own rules, we can’t bring you all back without the permission of our mentors, how about we go back and seek their permission. Take care everyone, maybe it won’t be long till we meet again in the Soaring Dragon Continent.” Prince Tian Luo was more tactful as to leave the explanations to the last.

Xue Tan Lang, Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the Li Brothers all flew out at a breakneck speed, and hurried to the Teleportation of the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower.

The Ox-headed Fan Lun Tie let out a deafening roar. “Stop, all of you stop!”

Lin En who was always good natured became incensed completely too. He looked at Prince Tian Luo in the eye. “Although we just got to know each other, we’ve been through thick and thin together, our friendship is like that of Damon and Pythias already. During the battle, you all saved my life several times, so do you all think that we’ll leave y’all in lurch when you are facing difficulties? Tell us your problem, we’ll face it together...”

Anna nodded too. “I don’t know what your mentor told you all, but this definitely isn’t the way to solve a problem. We are your friends and battle companions, we have the right to know the truth, even if it’s just a sentence!”

Prince Tian Luo inhaled deeply. He glanced the lot and said what that shocked everyone. “From today onwards, we’re no longer friends!”

“What?” Ox Head Party Leader Li Ao grabbed Prince Tian Luo by the collar angrily and glared at him with his ox eyes. “What did you say just now?”

“Stop wasting time, lets go!”

Ye Kong’s shout came from a distance.

Prince Tian Luo shook his body slightly, as he shook off Li Ao’s hand and flew off.

The red-eyed ox-head Fan Lun Tie let out a thunderous roar as she broke out through the walls of the tavern directly and chased after them.

She stretched out her giant hands in an attempt to grab Ye Kong. But Ye Kong rose into mid air to dodge her advance. Fan Lun Tie was incensed and turned to grab Fatty Hai instead. “If you don’t explain clearly, don’t think about leaving!”

Fatty Hai waved a punch at Fan Lun Tie which sent her flying into the air. He then spoke aloofly. “Lunatic bitch, I don’t even know you!”

Xue Tan Lang was the fastest as he had already teleported away.

Li Brothers also rushed to the Teleportation Circle as they prepared for their teleportation...

“Y’all are really leaving like that? Believe me, you just have to say one sentence no matter what the issue is!” Lin En moved in a flash, stopping Ye Kong and Fatty Hai before they teleported away.

“Our partnership has ended, this is your share.” Ye Kong then sprinkle all the Magic Crystals and gold coins in his arms onto the ground, and then together with Ye Kong, they walked in front of Lin En, expressionless. Lin En’s pupil expanded. He balled up his fist and fought hard to stop himself from moving as he watched the duo leave.

“What a fool, why didn’t you stop them? Without them leading, we wouldn’t be able to get to the Soaring Dragon Continent!” Fan Lun Tie with blood oozing out of her mouth shouted at Lin En furiously.

“If they want to leave, we wouldn’t be able to make them stay,” Lin En sighed.

Bao Er was already in a mess from all her crying and with tears

streaking her face.

Even Anna had tears streaming down her face... Her previously friendly comrades suddenly became cold and aloof, what happened in between?

What exactly did Ye Kong and Fatty Hai's mentor, Shui Dong Liu, tell them?

Although they hadn't taken a look at the letter, they could guess a little from the abnormal reactions of Fatty Hai and the rest. The heartless departure of them wasn't because they were really cold-hearted, but because they did not want to be a burden to everyone. Something must have happened in the Soaring Dragon Continent that made them so anxious and leave so hurriedly without any explanations.

And what that happened must be dire!

"Scoundrels, I hate this kind of people the most. Cowards, bastards, scaredy cats. They actually abandoned their mates! You all think that you are being noble like that? I think all of you are fools, I hate people like you all who's so timid yet so full of yourself!" Fan Lun Tie scolded loudly. But as she continued, two big drops of tears rolled down her cheeks.

"What now?" Ox Head Party Leader Li Ao turned to look at Lin En.

Although he was the leader, during an important moment like this, he still have to see the decision made by Lin En and Anna.

Lin En and Anna looked at each other and lowered their head to ponder for a long while. Finally, they arrived at a decision. “ We’ll go to the Warrior Guild to ask about what’s happening first.”

When the lot arrived at the Warrior Guild, even before they could speak, the middle aged warrior Ou Gen shouted to them. “Amongst you all where is Ye Kong and Fatty Hai? Titan Jr. sent them a confidential article which is awaiting their acknowledgements, but the Messenger couldn’t find them...”

Anna, Lin An ams the rest were shocked. “Two confidential articles? Titan sent them one too? “

A man came out from inside. It was Chief Matthew who was sulking. “It’s three. Da Xia Kingdom’s emperor, Jun Wu You sent one too!”

Chapter 421 – Declaration Of War

Other than the addressee, no one else, not even best friends or siblings were allowed to receive the top secret message.

Lin En and the rest did not know what the content was, neither do they know the truth, so out of no choice, they chose to stay somewhere near the Warrior Guild. They hope to stop Yue Yang at the Teleportation Circle of the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower to get a sensing of what is happening in the Soaring Dragon Continent. Ox head Fan Lun Tie suggested to send Yue Yang a letter, but Anna rejected it after some considerations. Lin En and the Ox Head Party Leader Li Ao also felt that since their master, Shui Dong Liu asked Fatty Hai and Ye Kong to leave the team so that they wouldn't burden their teammates, Yue Yang would definitely do the same. They felt that it would be better to stop Yue Yang and ask him personally.

When they were still in the middle of their discussions, Ou Gen and Chief Matthew came.

They brought a shocking news to Lin En and the lot. The Black Hell King had officially declared war on Da Xia Kingdom of the Soaring Dragon Continent. All warriors and allies of Da Xia Kingdom would be included in the killing range of the Black Hell Army.

(Shiro: Previously translated as Dark Prison King, changing it to Black Hell King)

“Who is Black Hell King?” Bao Er who had just entered the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower did not know who the Black Hell King is.

“He is a fallen Innate from six thousand years ago, he was originally called ‘Prison Emperor Divine General’. He has terrifying power that is above Innate Level Ten. He has a lot of followers who are all very strong, forming his Black Hell Army completely made up of fallen warriors. There’s already four warriors that are above Level Seven Innate.” Ou Gen said with a serious face.

“Ah, then isn’t Titan that brat in a dangerous situation!” Ox-head Fan Lun Tie reeled in shock from hearing.

“Lets send a top-secret letter quickly and make brother Titan leave the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower...” Bao Er was anxious as she pulled Anna’s hand to urge her to make a decision.

“He isn’t the one who should leave, you all are. Kids, the tumultuous time has arrived, go back to where you live originally, the Sixth Floor is no longer safe. I understand about your friendship ties, but the most rational choice now will be to return back to safety, this will be best for you and for them. The Black Hell Army is very strong, without the protection of Innates, you all will be in danger.” Once Chief Matthew said it, the four orc girls jumped uncontrollably, while Li Ao and Lin En shook their head slightly.

The situation right now was exactly what Chief Matthew described.

But for them to get back to where they stayed originally now

would be impossible.

Yue Yang did not know about the Black Hell King declaring war on Da Xia Kingdom at all. When he came out of the Grimoire World, he teleported back immediately.

His plan was to get to the Third Floor of Tong Tian Tower to find out the secret of the place where the Blood Queen Red's mother roamed. Although the Scarlet Emperor was a great threat, Yue Yang estimated that he wouldn't recuperate fully before half a year...

When he returned to the Teleportation Circle in the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower, he was a little startled when he saw Anna and Lin En waiting from a distance.

What is going on?

Bao Er reacted the fastest as she had already dashed towards Yue Yang, crying.

“What are you still doing here? Go back quickly!” Ox Headed Fan Lun Tie charged forth. “We’re going too, to bash the goddamn Black Hell King!”

“Black Hell King?” Yue Yang was dumbfounded, what has this got to do with the Black Hell King?

“It’s like this... The Black Hell King has officially declared war on

Da Xia Kingdom...” Lin En’s words stunned Yue Yang. “Declaring war? Did he take the wrong medicine?”

“You, you don’t know about it?” Anna was startled, if Yue Yang did not know about what’s going on with the Black Hell King, then what for did he send Fatty Hai and Ye Kong a top-secret letter? Bao Er was afraid that Yue Yang would leave immediately, so she used her octopus-like tangling skill to grab onto his arms. “Bring us to the Soaring Dragon Continent, we want to help too, no matter how insignificant our help may be, if we work hand in hand, we can definitely fight off the intruders!”

“Don’t add on to the trouble, there’s none of your business here little kid.” Yue Yang shook his hands twice, but couldn’t get away from the pestering of the big loli Golden Elf.

“Our power may be weak, but we’re friends, and battling companions, if you think that we aren’t useless, and are people you can battle together with, then bring us to the Soaring Dragon Continent. If our Elf Forest gets intruded, you will help us fight off the intruders too, so conversely, how can we just watch from the sidelines now? Let’s go, we are ready!” Lin En stared at Yue Yang in the eye firmly. The Ox Head Party Leader Li Ao, Ox Headed Fan Lun Tie and the four orc girls wore the same expression.

“Don’t be too anxious now everyone. Wait for me to find out what is happening in the Soaring Dragon Continent first. If we really can’t fight off the opponents, we may even have to hide in the Elf Forest!” Yue Yang laughed.

“No, we’ll go together, we will face the problem together.” Forget

about Anna, even Bao Er knew that Yue Yang was a big liar that couldn't be trusted.

“Okay, then let's go!” Yue Yang's reply made everyone heave a sigh of relief, they caught up with him, fortunately.

When they were at the Teleportation Circle, Yue Yang handed over sufficient amount of teleportation fees.

Just when the lot were looking forward to get to the Soaring Dragon Continent, the teleportation officer waved his hands as the crystal pillar, among all other giant pillars, shone a blinding ray in which only Yue Yang was teleported away. Everyone was startled, what is happening? Before Lin En and the rest could argue, the teleportation officer returned them the remaining money. “He told me that the extra money will be my tip, but i feel that i should return you all the money, my apologies for not teleporting y'all, but since the warrior from the foreign continent did not choose to bring anyone along, I won't teleport you guys off, even if I try to, it will be unsuccessful.”

The lot finally knew that they were deceived by Yue Yang, he did not intend to bring everyone to the Soaring Dragon Continent to fight off the enemy.

Yue Yang left the Tong Tian Tower after being teleported.

He went to the Yue Clan Castle first.

Elder Yue Hai and Jun Wu You were all there. As for Ye Kong and Fatty Hai, they went to fetch students from the Death Class, who went around adventuring, together with Old Fox.

“黑狱王的黑狱军团打到哪了？”岳阳如此一开口，岳海老人和君无忧他们立即哈哈大笑起来。君无忧拍手大乐：“我以为这小子是个什么都变态的全才，谁不知，在军事上是个菜鸟。还好，如果连这个也懂得，那我们这些老骨头真该退隐养老了。”

“Where is the Black Hell King’s Black Hell Army invading now?” Hearing Yue Yang, Elder Yue Hai and Jun Wu You laughed out loud instantly. Jun Wu You clapped his hands in joy. “I thought you are an all rounded abnormal dude, who would have known that you are a just a newbie at military affairs. But fortunately, if you are good at this too, then geezers like us will have to retire.”

“That’s right. The Black Hell Army is preparing to invade, but you don’t have to worry, they can’t reach us so soon.” Elder Yue Hai became abnormally excited, as if a general that was about to go into battle. The desire to fight is burning in his eyes silently, as if a sword half drawn, and just about to be unsheathed.

A kind of familiar killing intent surrounded the place.

Although they knew that their enemy was the Black Hell Army, the old marshal who fought frequently with the the Demon Abyss Army was fearless.

On top of that, he felt a sense of indescribable fervour and fighting spirit.

“The Black Hell Army definitely doesn’t have men from the

Soaring Dragon Continent. If they want to enter our world, they'll have to do it through sacrificing to god in order to enter the Teleportation Door and come in through the Ancient Passage. If they want to invade my Da Xia Kingdom, they will not simply send a few Innate Rankers. A war is broken down into three processes. Innates versus Innates; Soldiers versus soldiers; another one will be through secret alliance with other kingdoms. If not for their endless sacrifices to the god, how will the Black Hell Army be able to come to the Soaring Dragon Continent? What we are worried about the most is that the Black Hell Army would conduct a killing spree on our men in the Tong Tian Tower. Because they had already declared war, the rules couldn't protect us anymore, especially you, we are most worried about you. As for the Scarlet Emperor, we have already received your letter, we don't have to worry too much about him as for now, if there's really no choice, you'll bring along Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the students to a faraway place, wait for the time when all your powers peak, then come back to make Da Xia prosper again!" Jun Wu You smiled lightly, signalling for Yue Yang to take a seat. He looked very calm with no traces of anger or anxiety, nor could nervousness or abnormality be seen, he acted as if the destructive invasion was a common occurrence.

"You really can't fight against them?" Yue Yang was not willing to resign to fate. Damn it, if worst comes to worst, he will just fight with the Black Hell King with his life.

"Its difficult." Elder Yue Hai shook his head. "Although we have Tian Luo Kingdom as our ally, the joint power of these two kingdoms is only ahead of that of Zi Jin Kingdom by a tad bit. Once war descends, many of the city masters of Da Xia and Tian Luo will definitely betray their kingdom. Horse thieves, bandits and all kind of mercenaries groups will lean towards Zi Jin Kingdom

which was supported by the Black Hell Army, and subsequently landing us in an unfavourable state. Other than the power of the Soaring Dragon Continent, the bigger opponents would be the Black Hell Army and the Demon Abyss Army. They are really great in numbers, if the Innate Rankers among us are not able to take it, we will fall completely. Now, with the Black Hell King as their mental pillar of support, and with the support of the Lion Pagoda and Demon Abyss, Zi jin Kingdom will definitely aim to destruct Da Xia at all cost... For safety purposes, we decided to only accept Tian Luo Kingdom's secret assistance, we don't wish for Tian Luo Kingdom to declare war on Zi Jin Kingdom, so even if we are defeated, the students will have somewhere to go."

"How long can they remain safe in Tian Luo?" Yue Yang did not have high hopes. How will the Black Hell Army leave any men unharmed with their invasion? Tian Luo could remain peaceful temporarily, but how long can that last?

"At least Tian Luo is able to push through till the last moment. With Night Empress around, no matter how arrogant the Black Hell King is, he wouldn't offend her easily. With no 100% certainty, he won't dare to challenge the Night Empress yet." Elder Yue Hai patted Yue Yang on the shoulder. "Even if Da Xia and Tian Luo are destroyed, there'll still be you all. Our distant ancestors also built Da Xia Kingdom out of ruins after war, so losing the Kingdom would be nothing!"

"Is there any possibility that we'll win in the end?" Yue Yang also understood that the key thing in this war wasn't determined by the number of soldiers, but rather, the fight between Innate Rankers.

If they could take down the Black Hell King, then no matter how strong the Black Hell Army is, they would be defeated.

What made Yue Yang angry was that he still hadn't got the power which would allow him to challenge the Black Hell King. It would be great if he had more time, if he had one more year to cultivate, he would be certain about challenging the Black Hell King.

Of course, it did not mean that he couldn't fight with the Black Hell King now, it's just that he wasn't 100% sure that he could emerge victorious.

After all, he was a super powerful dude from six thousand years ago.

Although not on par to the Scarlet Emperor, he wouldn't be anywhere near weak. Yue Yang estimated that he would most probably be a Sky-ranked expert.

Upon hearing what Yue Yang said, Jun Wu You and Elder Yue Hai looked at each other. Jun Wu You slowed down in his speech and looked at Yue Yang. "If you want to win this war, this is still some possibility. We'll just need one person to help."

"You mean Zhi Zhun?" Yue Yang had a sudden realisation immediately.

"Yes, if Zhi Zhun is willing to help, the Black Hell King would definitely be troubled. I believe that even the Scarlet Emperor

would be apprehensive. But the problem is, Zhi Zhun seldom interferes with what's happening here. She wants to cultivate whole heartedly, and on top of that, it is also the key moment to explore the Heaven Realms now, so she might not come back to the Soaring Dragon Continent. And because of this, the Black Hell King got the guts to declare war on us... We are guessing that Zhi Zhun might have reaped something when she was exploring the Heaven Realms, so she would be leaving for the Heaven Realms soon. That is why the Black Hell King can be so unbridled and aggressive!" Jun Wu You's analyzation made a lot of sense. Yue Yang thought so too.

If this is really the case, then not only Da Xia Kingdom in the Soaring Dragon Continent, the whole Tong Tian Tower would fall into chaos without Zhi Zhun and her intimidating supreme power.

Those who wanted to take over Zhi Zhun's position desperately, for example, super Innates like Shun Tian, the Black Prince, Thousand Globin Sect Leader and Great Demon King Baruth would definitely cause a havoc. Even the quiet ones like Sky Pearl, An Xi and the Dragon Emperor would emerge to compete too.

If Zhi Zhun was around, Yue Yang would definitely advise her to think twice before going to the Heaven Realms as Tong Tian Tower would be in shambles.

If only this mysterious girl with big boobs was as easy to talk to as Phoenix Fairy Beauty... Yue Yang sighed silently, he could still use tactics like pretty boys to persuade the Phoenix Fairy Beauty, but he could do nothing with Zhi Zhun. The most important thing is that he couldn't even use the pretty boy tactic now as Zhi Zhun

had always been secretive in her journey, nobody would know where she was!

It looks like the Black Hell King chose the right time to declare war.

This war would be unavoidable.

They could only wait for it to descend, and see what the final damage would be like.

“Go if you have other things going on, the Black Hell Army and Zi Jin Kingdom’s army will meet. I estimate that they won’t be able to take us down before half a month, the Black Hell King won’t make decision if he wasn’t 100% sure. Your grandfather will take care of this war, there’s none of your business here.” Jun Wu You advised Yue Yang to mind his own business.

“It’s true that I don’t know anything about fighting a war, I’ll prepare some equipments then!” Yue Yang felt that he could still be an apt admin leader. With Mr. Chen’s Thunder Beast and armour, and his own Puppet Beast, even if they couldn’t play a central role in the warfield, it would be better than nothing. No matter how powerful the Black Hell King is, Yue Yang swore to at least peel off a layer of his skin. Yue Yang wouldn’t allow him to have a easy life!

“Protect yourself, this is the most important thing.” Elder Yue Hai held onto Yue Yang’s shoulders for support. “You don’t have to worry about what’s going on in our family. There’s no coward

in our Yue family, even if we die, we have to die with glory, only in this way can we meet our ancestors in the underworld without being ashamed. Moreover, among the younger ones, there's you, Bing Er, Shuang Er and Feng Er, Yue family will not be destroyed, there'll definitely be people carrying on the family lineage! Grandfather is old already, to die here with fervour is a hundred times better than to struggle and wait for death to descend on my deathbed. This kind of war was what I always wished for, since I'm still fit enough to kill people now, then why not do it to my heart's content! Ha ha ha!"

"..." Yue Yang was really speechless.

He deserves to be called the old marshal that came out of a pile of dead bodies, he is really dauntless.

Yue Yang was influenced by Elder Yue Hai's heroic spirit, although he did not say it on the surface, he was burning with ardour on the inside. Even though this old man isn't an Innate, his character and fighting spirit is superb.

Yue Yang walked out silently, there's none of his business now. He had to find some business for himself, who would the most suitable candidate for him to find trouble with?

He walked out of the Yue Clan Castle.

He looked at the sky and suddenly came to a decision.

Chapter 422 – Negotiating With A Silver Tongue

Demon palace.

Great Demon King Baruth and his trusted aide Demon Marshal Duran were currently discussing about the current situation. They had already received the news of the Black Hell King declaring war against Da Xia.

Regarding the Black Hell King, most of the powers in the Demon Abyss did not have a good impression of him. It could be said that most of the Black Hell King's corrupt warriors came from the Demon Abyss. From Demon Abyss' viewpoint, this was an undisguised poaching of personnel. If these corrupt warriors came from Demon King Baruth's Blood Prison, he could also not tolerate it.

The Black Hell King's attack against da Xia this time was probably premeditated.

Zhi Zun had probably grasped the way to enter Heaven Realm and could leave at any time.

The current goal of the Black Hell King was to eradicate the hidden dangers of the Soaring Dragon Continent. At the same time it was to take the Prison Emperor's legacy. The most important point was to take control of God's Ruins.

Everybody knew that Rankers were after the secrets of God's Ruins.

Every Innate was suspicious as to why Zhi Zun was so strong. It was said that she had obtained the legendary 'Martial Spirit' from within God's Ruins.

The God's Ruins of Soaring Dragon Continent was a place which Rankers fought for. This place was also connected to the origin of every continent of the various realms.

Only after passing through the ancient passage within God's Ruins could people enter other continents.

The other way was to follow the laws of Tong Tian Tower, entering another continent guided by someone from the other continent... With this condition, nobody could invade other continents. In other words, the ancient passage was the first bridge that various powers had created.

In order to stop the powers of Demon Abyss from sending their troops, the Black Hell King had sent a secret letter to Baruth and Duran. The letter proposed that as long as Demon Abyss does not interfere, then he was willing tell them the secrets of entering Heaven Realm. The other thing that the Black Hell King proposed was that after he enters the Innate Alliance, he would help Demon Abyss recognize and legalize its territories and all rights would be returned to the Demon Kings.

In short, the Black Hell King wanted to work together.

At the very least he wanted Baruth, Duran and other Rankers of the Demon Abyss to not get involved with his invasion on the Soaring Dragon Continent. For this reason, he did not hesitate to reveal secrets about Heaven Realm.

“For this matter, I cannot give any opinions. It would be best if your majesty decides!” Demon Marshal Duran cupped his hands.

“...” Great Demon King Baruth stayed silent for a very long time.

Making a decision was very easy, one word would be enough.

However, the consequences of this matter could split the current political situation in two different directions. This was not a win-win situation, one single mistake could lead the Demon Abyss from its golden age to its decline. How to make the most benefits in this situation was Baruth’s headache.

An unusual smell suddenly appeared within the demon palace.

Enemy!

The one who came was definitely an enemy!

Great Demon King Baruth and Demon Marshal Duran immediately responded. They stood up and began storing their energy, preparing to attack against the unusual smell.

“The basic manners of the Demon Abyss is really quite bad. Is this how you greet old friends?” A figure flashed from the outside. Before the Guards even responded, it had already appeared in front of Baruth’s imperial study. A human male smiling bright like the sun ignored Baruth’s and Duran’s attack preparation. He entered in an upright and brave manner. He swaggeringly found a chair to sit on and crossed his legs. Being pleased with his position, he appeared to be more relaxed than when he came in.

“Yue Clan’s Third Young Master? What are you doing here?” Baruth was not worried about Yue Yang coming to seduce his concubine and daughter because human’s esthetics and Demon Abyss’ esthetics are different. This human child would absolutely not like a ten meter tall, flame bodied, fish scaled, quilled demon race beauty. Regarding Yue Yang’s arrival, Baruth immediately thought that this brat was definitely here as a mediator.

“You are wrong. I am not here to ask for help. I am here to save you!” Yue Yang had watched the Romance of the Three Kingdoms before. He knew that an expert mediator would speak first in order to dominate the opponent, or else the conversation would not continue.

“Save us? I did not mishear right? It seems to me that the one in danger right now is the Soaring Dragon Continent!” After hearing it, Demon Marshal Duran immediately snorted.

“Do you think that Da Xia will be annihilated?” Yue Yang was so relaxed as if he was going to eat dumplings tonight.

“It would definitely be annihilated.” Baruth dared wager with Yue Yang.

“Then, do you think that the Black Hell King can kill me?” Yue Yang asked again.

“.....” Baruth and Duran looked at each other as they were truly unsure of how to answer this question.

Although the Black Hell King was strong, this brat was even more abnormal. The most crucial point is that this brat had two unusual yet unimaginable strong fire-type beast’s protection. Even if it was a long time ago, this kind of deathly pressure still remained fresh in Baruth’s and Duran’s memory. No matter how strong the Black Hell King was, killing Yue Yang was perhaps a big joke. Let alone those two fire-type beasts, even that strange beast that could escape its seal was incomparably strong. Once it recovers its peak strength, it would probably make the Black Hell King suffer the consequences.

“For now, I admit that I am not able to defeat the Black Hell King. However, what about a year after? Or maybe ten years after? You guys should have already investigated the history of my growth and also understand the speed of my growth. Who do you think would be stronger between me and the Black Hell King ten years after? Would we be a draw? Or would one emerge victorious? If the Da Xia was annihilated, I will lead the younger generation into hiding. After ten years, I will eliminate the Black Hell King and restore Da Xia. What do you think about this? The smart Great Demon King Baruth and the loyal Demon Marshal Duran, you guys should know that Zhi Zun is my introducer. Even if she entered

Heaven Realm, she would definitely bring me with her... Furthermore, Sky Law is my close friend and the Night Empress also views me favorably. As long as Tian Luo and the Demonic Palace, these two powers, join hands with us, The Soaring Dragon Continent would not necessarily fall into enemy hands.” Yue Yang had never led the army to fight wars before, but he was definitely eligible to be a mediator.

“Demonic Palace would absolutely not join hands with you!” Baruth’s words was enough to block his path.

(Last: Note that Demonic Palace and demon palace are different. The latter is referring to the place where Baruth lives and the former is where the Sky XXXX live)

“Right. No matter how intimate you are with Sky Law, the true ruler of Demonic Palace is still Sky Execution. Moreover, the Three Great Founders of Demonic Palace would never agree to help Da Xia, because they are deserters from Da Xia and Tian Luo. Their resentment soars to the skies, their grudge deeper than the ocean, how could they possibly help you?” Demon Marshal Duran was very familiar about the history of Soaring Dragon Continent. So, he hit the weak spot in Yue Yang’s argument.

“You are all mistaken, gravely mistaken.” Yue Yang immediately counter attacked and used only a few words to refute them.

“Is that right?” Baruth felt that this brat would never admit his mistakes even if he died. He coldly smiled and said: “Compared to Demon Abyss, Demonic Palace hates you more. If they allied with you, it would be a huge joke!”

“They indeed have a grudge. However, they haven’t even settled their debt yet, even if two brothers fought, it does not mean that they are willing to see outsiders capture their homeland. Let alone blood relationships, Demonic Palace would never let others lay their hands on God’s Ruins. Are you willing to let the Black Hell King obtain the treasures and ‘Martial Spirit’ from God’s Ruins and become another Zhi Zun? The Black Hell King is not Zhi Zun. Zhi Zun has never meddled in others matters, permitting Demon Abyss’ growth, would the Black Hell King do the same? If he extended his hands over here, the first to be annihilated would be your Demon Abyss!” Yue Yang’s words alarmed Baruth and Duran.

“Your joking, how could the Black Hell King easily attack us?” Baruth was not worried about this. The demon race was not the same as the human race. They had the mentality of dying rather than submitting. They would never surrender even if they were exterminated. Moreover, comparing the Black Hell King’s forces and the Demon Abyss’ forces, it was at least one is to one million. Against such a vast number, everything else could not even compare.

“If the Black Demon King’s army attack Demon Abyss, it is the same as pouring a ladle of water over a sea of flames. They would be digging their own graves.” Demon marshal Duran was also very confident.

“Attacking Demon Abyss is indeed not easy. However, what if he came alone to attack you Demon Kings? Would you just hide in Demon Abyss forever and huddle together everyday? If you head to Tong Tian Tower, the Black Hell King would attack everywhere, how would you be able to live? If you are willing to be a turtle who hides in his shell, then I have nothing else to say.” Yue Yang spread

his hands.

“Even if the Black Hell King attacks the Soaring Dragon Continent, it does not necessarily mean that he can enter God’s Ruins, nor does it mean that his strength would level up.” Great Demon King Baruth firmly rejected.

“You’re right, I am only giving a hypothesis... Six thousand years ago, the Black Hell King was the right hand man of the Prison Emperor. In the end, he betrayed the Prison Emperor and incited Heaven Realm’s Three Great Leader. Because of this, the Prison Emperor used his life to seal the Three Great Leaders. You should already know this. However, until recently, Heaven Realm’s Three Great Leaders have awakened and left the Prison Emperor’s Divine Palace. You should probably not know this...” Yue Yang smiled and changed the topic.

“Heaven Realm’s Three Great Leaders?” Baruth and Duran looked at each other as their brows wrinkled.

“The names of the Three Great Leaders are Ming Yue Guang, Xu Kong and Jiu Xiao. With their strength, they could easily kill you with a single finger. Of course, since they have just broken through their seal, they are still very weak. Even if it was like this, they have still beaten this young master into a sorry state. It was only because I used the Divine Tools left by the Prison Emperor that I drove them away.” Yue Yang spoke as if he met his seat mate while shopping for vegetables. His expression was calm but his eyes showed that he was proud of himself. This expression made others want to beat him up. If Baruth and Duran did not have strong patience they would already have done so.

“The Prison Emperor left behind Divine Tools for you?” Duran and Baruth were both extremely envious. This brat’s luck was really incredulous, how could he easily just pick up Divine Tools randomly?

“I can actually bring it out to let you see. In any case there are three of them, I can bring out any of them for you to envy. A handsome, bold heroic youth like me will definitely not be stingy about it. However, a few days ago, I had shown it to the Scarlet Emperor and accidentally smashed his skull. The originally ugly Scarlet Emperor had become Zhu Bajie. So for the sake of your safety, I have decided to temporarily put it away until a good opportunity comes.” Yue Yang rocked his legs.

(Last: https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Zhu_Bajie)

“The Scarlet Emperor...” Baruth and Duran were shocked. They had read about the Scarlet Emperor in the Demon Abyss’ ancient records. This guy was an abnormal homicidal maniac and he was extremely evil. He had once massacred a few demon palaces of the Demon Abyss. He completely did not follow any common sense and killed to his heart’s content. He was scarier than the Strong Prison Emperor.

“He has already escaped. Also, he has that demon race concubine with her.” Yue Yang showed an astonished expression as if asking ‘you didn’t know?’.

“You injured him?” Duran probingly asked.

“Actually, he had injured me more. At that time, Shun Tian and the Black Prince were there. Those bastards attacked this young master from both sides and almost killed me. Fortunately this young master has great luck and great vitality.” Yue Yang coughed twice, showing that his own internal injuries had not yet healed.

“You were actually able to escape while under attack from the Scarlet Emperor, Shun Tian and the Black Prince?” When Baruth heard this, he was surprised.

“It’s not escape, it’s called tactical retreat!” Yue Yang dissatisfyingly protested, expressing that a Great Demon King’s choice of words were inappropriate.

“The Scarlet Emperor also came out...” Demon Marshal Duran now felt that the Tong Tian Tower was a pool of muddy water, The Black Hell King, this betrayer was already quite scary. Now, the Scarlet Emperor also came out. This guy was above the Black Hell King’s level. He was an emperor class existence that was on the same rank as the Prison Emperor. The Black Hell King was only a general, he was simply inferior to the Scarlet Emperor.

“There’s no problem, I had already cut an arm and a leg and smashed his skull. It would probably take him a year and a half to recover. You still have one year to live at ease. Slowly enjoy it. I have said all I want to say, good bye.” Yue Yang pretended to leave.

“Wait a minute, wait a minute.” Demon Marshal immediately dissuaded.

“I feel that we need to discuss the Black Hell King’s sinister invasion. This was definitely unjust!” Baruth’s righteous and noble words almost made Yue Yang faint. Aren’t you, Demon Abyss’ Great Demon King Baruth, the one who did the most unjust sinister invasion? Luckily, you still have the face to criticize others. However, since the time to be a mediator has arrived, this negotiation needs to continue. So I cannot leave yet.

“Summon Ha Xin, Gu Lun and the others. I feel that we can temporarily throw out our hatred and work together.” Yue Yang suggested.

“Work together...” Beruth and Duran were very depressed.

What’s the difference between talking about working together with this brat and asking us to act against our own interest?

The Black Hell King and the Scarlet Emperor were not to be trifled with. Especially the Scarlet Emperor, not only Demon Abyss but also the Tong Tian Tower would be in danger. However, Yue Yang, this abnormal newcomer was also not to be trifled with. While he is still young, he already has such huge achievements, disturbing the demon palace, fighting against Heaven Realm’s Three Great Leaders, putting the Scarlet Emperor in a sorry state, escaping under Shun Tian and the Black Prince’s pincer attack. It can be seen that if this brat matured, he would at least be a new Prison Emperor!

With him there, Demon Abyss would definitely not have a good time.

The question was if they did not cooperate now, this brat would definitely harbor hard feelings, then the Demon Abyss would definitely have a hard time in the future.

Unbeatable and unkillable, this brat was truly making things difficult. However, he was not resigned to work together with him. Why is it that he must bow down to Yue Yang if Yue Yang was the one asking for help...

Whether it was Baruth or Duran, they had the impulse to choke Yue Yang to death.

In the end, they endured it.

Yue Yang took advantage while the iron is hot: “Smart Demon King, the secrets of Heaven Realm are just a load of bull. If the Black Prison Emperor used this to entice you, it is just like using candy to trick a child. Even those with negative IQ know what kind of person he is, believing him is like believing that an old pig could climb trees! Heaven Realm is not much of a secret. You guys are currently too weak. If you had the strength then this young master would bring you there on a journey, eating and living there would also be free! Moreover, what’s this on your table? It’s an insignificant Heaven Rune yet you don’t recognize it, I am truly ashamed on behalf of you. I truly cannot imagine how you became a Great Demon King... Let me tell you, this is a runic diagram that will strengthen and upgrade the demon race’s body. My mood is very good today, if not I would never reveal this to ignorant people. I am very low key, could it be that I need to tell you that I have a Divine Beast?”

Great Demon King Baruth and Demon Marshal Duran perspired greatly. They thought to themselves, who would not know about your well known Hui Tai Lang?

Moreover, if you only had one Divine Beast then it was fine. But you have too many Divine Beasts so you were not even willing to waste a contract slot and only give them to Beautiful Woman Divine Beasts...

The two who continued to silently curse. In the end, they endured the impulse to beat Yue Yang up. They looked at each other and decided to notify Demon King Ha Xin, Demon King Gu Lan and the others.

Just like this, the first human and Demon Abyss alliance had begun...

Although this contract was a secret limited to Yue Yang and a few Demon Abyss Rulers, you cannot deny Yue Yang's silver tongue. The might it created was not inferior to the power a Divine Beast holds.

Chapter 423 – It's Not Right To Scare A Child!

The Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower.

Lin En, Anna, Li Ao, Fan Lun Tie and the rest were waiting before the Teleportation Circle. According to Bao Er, if Yue Yang the heartless brother doesn't come, she would cry to death here. Of course she meant it figuratively. In reality, she only cried for a short while, reason being the number of people moving around the Teleportation Circle. With so many people watching, she was too embarrassed to cry.

“He will be coming back for me, he won't be coming back, he will be coming back...”

Bao Er held a stack of tarot card special to the Ox-clan. She'll be very happy if she flipped a red card, because it indicated good luck; She'll pout her mouth if it was black, as it indicated the opposite.

She was happy for a moment and sad in the next and was completely immersed herself in fortune telling. She was so absorbed in it that she did not spare a glance at Fan Lun Tie who looked like she almost fainted on the ground.

Fan Lun Tie wasn't superstitious normally, in fact this Ox-clan Tarot Card was used as an amulet from the patriarch to his granddaughter. He insisted on her bringing it along, if not for it, Fan Lun Tie wouldn't have brought this stack of useless cards along. Fan Lun Tie saw that Bao Er was upset and took it out to

pacify her. She bluffed Bao Er that if she flipped a red card Yue Yang will return quickly, as the red cards in it was twice more than the number of black cards, and with Bao Er's luck, she would have high possibility of flipping a red card. It could still be apt enough in coaxing her.

Who would have known that it would be a black card when Bao Er flipped, so she insisted on flipping again.

This marked the start of a disaster.

When Bao Er flipped a red card, she'd be overjoyed, but she felt that it wasn't safe enough, she flipped another red card again, but still felt insecure, and on her third try, she flipped a black card, so she instantly decided to flip ten more red cards to get rid of the bad luck... In the end she just kept flipping. Fan Lun Tie had never encountered such a situation in life, and it left her speechless.

One can only flip one card in fortune telling, how would it be accurate if she were to flip so many at once?

But she flipped a black card on her first try. So could it be that Yue Yang really encountered some mishaps?

"He will come back, he will come back, he will come back... Wow, I flipped ten red cards consecutively, brother Titan will definitely return later!" Bao Er ran over to Anna and showed off to her how lucky she was.

“Yes, he will definitely be back!” Anna was both amazed by her luck and felt funny that she could believe something will really happen by flipping cards. Real fortune telling would require special Beasts with special abilities, and it took a powerful fortune telling warrior that was in the same state of mind as their Beast in order to take a look at a blurry future, how could normal people predict with tarot cards? She did not put Bao Er down, but comforted her softly. She felt upset because according to Yue Yang’s character, he wouldn’t return before the war with the Black Hell King ends.

“May I ask if you all know a warrior with the nickname of ‘Extremely Shameless Fat Devil’ with his real name being Hai Da Fu?”

Two tall men walked over, side by side.

They possessed powers as Lesser Innates.

This wasn’t the point. What made Lin En and Li Ao nervous was that there were weird crests on the chest of these two weird men.

The background colour of the crest was black, with blood red fire and silver lightning. It looked like a silver lightning was tearing up the sky and struck the ground forcefully, causing splattering lava and huge fire...

Before this, Lin En and Li Ao did not notice the crest at all.

Because the crests in Tong Tian Tower were countless, and nobody would be able to recognise them entirely, moreover, this crest was the rarer ones. But now, as Fatty Hai, Ye Kong and some of their other teammates left, Lin En and Li Ao got to know more about the Black Hell King and his army so they knew what it represented. It was the designated crest for the Black Hell Army.

In other words, the two men before them are from the Black Hell Army!

“Don’t be afraid, we are just trying to understand the situation. We respect the peace loving golden elves, brave ox warriors and joyful orc warriors wholeheartedly. We just want to ask if you all know who Hai Da Fu is, or any other warriors from the Soaring Dragon Continent, will you mind giving me some harmless information? We can pay, one thousand gold, I hope that you can tell us what are the skills Hai Da Fu is best at, his Beast and any other things you know about him.” The man on the left looked cordial on the surface looking all smiles, but Bao Er felt that he looked like a wolf in a sheep’s skin, and was afraid of this man carrying a hypocritical smile.

“You want us to betray our friend with one thousand gold? Pah!” Fan Lun Tie spat in contempt.

“Don’t be rude while we are still respectful!” The man from different race on the right exploded like a gunpowder barrel, he was even more easily agitated than the Barbarian Cow. He glared at Fan Lun Tie. “I believe that you have received the news of us declaring war on Da Xia Kingdom, you all are their allies and we can get rid of you all easily, so be smart and don’t make me angry,

if not I will kill all of you!”

“Sorry, we are stubborn ox headed people, if you think that you can persuade or threaten us, that will be a big joke! Our values goes like this, we’d rather die standing than to live kneeling!” Party Leader Li Ao stood up and glared back at them.

Even if he wasn’t as strong, he couldn’t show his weakness.

Ox head soldiers only die in the warfield and they were never scared off!

The man from different race on the right let out out a thunderous roar as he glared at Lin En, Anna, Bao Er and the four orc girls. “A stubborn and rigid ox head person made a decision like this, will the bright golden elves go along with this decision? Did it ever cross your mind that how your decision will afflict pain and sufferings on your people?”

Lin En remained aloof with her eyes sharp like a sword. “I know, if I relent, all I can bring to my people when I return will be an unerasable shame! The build of a Golden Elf isn’t specialised at fighting, unlike ox head soldier that are good at short distance combat. But on the spiritual level, Golden Elves are also warriors that aren’t afraid of death!”

The men from the Black Hell Army on the right smiled. “Rest assured, we reiterate that we don’t intend to declare war on the ox head soldiers and the elves, we are merely here to ask around.”

“We don’t have any information you need, now go, we don’t welcome you!” Anna ordered him to leave.

“What if we insist on asking?” The man from different race on the right was incensed.

“Scram!”

A thunderous sound of ‘Ahem!’ came from a distance.

Ou Gen from the Warrior Guild moved swiftly from the tunnel in huge steps. He shouted to the two men from the Black Hell Army. “This place is within the administration of the Warrior Guild, get lost you lackeys, or I’ll kill you!”

The two foreign men did not expect that these people were protected by Innates from the Warrior Guild. They stared at Ou Gen coldly. “Fine, see you soon everyone!”

Ou Gen patted Lin En on the shoulder. “Go back home. I believe Titan Jr. and the rest have received your well wishes, what they want to see most is that you all are in a safe place. As you have seen just now, the Sixth floor of Tong Tian Tower is no longer safe, the Black Hell Army had already offered a handsome reward in the Adventurer’s Guild. The bandits have already leaked your informations to them for money and treasures, and this is only the beginning. It will become more dangerous with time.”

Lin En nodded. “Understood, we’ll just wait one more day!

Afterall Titan jr. and the rest have mentioned that if the situation is still alright, they will bring us to the Soaring Dragon Continent.”

“...” Ou Gen wanted to tell him that Titan was only giving a perfunctory response.

But, thinking again.

It was just like how he was like when he was rescuing his mates. As long as there is hope, albeit very insignificant, he wouldn't be willing to give up.

Ou Gen patted Lin En's shoulders again and caressed Bao Er's head softly, indicating his support.

An Iron Blood Soldier rushed towards Ou Gen to report that there were sightings of Dragon Hunters.

On hearing the news, Ou Gen was slightly startled.

He thought for a while. “Lin En, you have two choices now. First, you can leave the Sixth Floor and go back to your own continent; the second one is to wait for Titan Jr. in the Warrior Guild. I'm suspecting that our enemies are trying to lure us away as the appearance of the Dragon Hunters is too coincidental. I am unable to refuse the orders to investigate the appearance of the Dragon Hunters, as I am on duty now and this is my job. However, I am really concerned about your safety. Quickly go now, go to the great hall of the Warrior Guild, you'll be safe there.”

Lin En and the lot glanced at each other. They weren't determine to return now.

Everyone felt that it would be better to wait for Yue Yang in the Warrior Guild.

No matter how aggressive the Black Hell Army was, they wouldn't kill people in the Warrior Guild...

Ou Gen escorted them to the plaza, and when he saw that the Warrior Guild was not faraway, he left with ease of mind. He rushed to where the Dragon Hunters appeared to carry out his duties.

Li Ao was at the front, Lin En was at the back while Anna held on to Bao Er as they walked towards the Warrior Guild briskly. Although fightings were rampant in the Plaza, the area was controlled by the Warrior Guild, so fallen warriors wouldn't dare to appear here normally. On seeing that there was no abnormal activities around them and the Warrior Guild was just ahead, Lin En heaved a sigh of relief secretly.

No matter how aggressive the Black Hell Army is, they wouldn't be so unbridled.

This was where the Warrior Guild was, a place that is was affirmed by all warriors including those from the Innate Alliance. They wouldn't dare to challenge the Warrior Guild be it how aggressive they might be, because that would equate to them

challenging the entire Innate Alliance!

But just as Anna and Bao Er were preparing to step onto the stairs of the Warrior Guild.

Two shadows flashed past.

It was the two foreign men from the Black Hell Army just now. One was smiling while the other one looked angry as they blocked the path of the two girls on both sides.

“I said that we’ll meet again.” The man who was all smiles laughed. “Don’t think that the Warrior Guild on the Six Floor of Tong Tian Tower can stop us. Moreover, you haven’t stepped onto the stairs of the Warrior Guild yet, so you are still considered out of the Warrior Guild. Strictly speaking, if we were to kill you, it wouldn’t be considered as challenging the Warrior Guild. Stop putting on a strong front, you all won’t receive any more assistance, that fool has already went to play hide and seek with the Dragon Hunters, he wouldn’t be back until 2 hours later. No one in the whole of Warrior Guild is more powerful than us! I have a good suggestion, comply and come with us, if my mate here becomes angry, the situation will become dire. Forget about the orcs, Golden Elves with tender skin like you surely wouldn’t want my mate turn beastly and shame you in public right?”

“I will put this across directly. There will be only dying warriors but not relenting cowards!” Anna looked calm and determined. She waved her hands as Ox Head Fan Lun Tie and the four orc girls unleashed their power and prepared to fight to their death.

“I’m going to be angry, the two of you deserve to die!” Bao Er took out her vine bow in anger, and aimed the arrow towards her enemies.

“What a joke, what use can this tiny bow do? A kid’s catapult is more powerful than this! Ha ha ha, ha ha ha!” The all smiles men laughed loudly, undaunted.

“Forget about the both of us, even if it was just me, I can finish all of you within a minute! I hate Ox head people the most, so i’ll tell you how you’ll die. I will break your horns and pierce it into your eyes and through your head, I want to let you see for yourself how useless your honour and horns are to me! Dirty orcs like you all make me feel that you are just wasting food with every minute you exist in this world! I don’t want your dirty meat, but slicing off your chest and heart for us to have with alcohol is still alright! Last but not least for golden elves like you two, don’t think that you can die easily! After I’m sick of you, I will sell you off as slaves, don’t act like a hero in your next life, using your tender skin to please your master is what you should do the most!” The angry man from different race opened up his mouth widely, exposing his terrifying fangs.

“Kill!” Fan Lun Tie shouted as she waved her giant axe in various ways.

“What a joke!” The angry man from different race stretched out his hands, causing Fan Lun Tie to be sent flying into the air from the shockwave, and then crashing onto the ground.

The four orc girls went to receive her immediately, but the impact from Fan Lun Tie's fall was too huge. They weren't able to take it, causing all of them to fall.

Their powers rose tremendously after they got to know Yue Yang.

But it was still a long way for their power to be on par to that of Lesser Innates.

"We'll go!" Lin En and Li Ao were silent before this. But actions speak louder than words as they moved through the lot and prepared to sacrifice themselves. They launched a suicidal attack on their opponent. In this way, the women could get into the Warrior Guild first, because no matter how arrogant the two men were, they wouldn't dare to chase into the Warrior Guild.

Even if they really do so, the Warrior Guild would protect them.

The receivers from the Warrior Guild were already at the door, as one of them waved to Anna, indicating for her to get in quickly. Although the two receivers did not have the power to fight against people from the Black Hell Army, they extended their help towards Bao Er and Anna fearlessly. As long as they are able to enter the Warrior Guild, they can protect them.

There were secret rooms in the Warrior Guild specially set up for warriors seeking refuge.

Just when Lin En and Li Ao were unleashing their power and preparing to perish together with their enemies.

A lazy voice sounded. “Are you trying to bully the minorities here? If that is the case, then you all definitely wouldn’t mind bullying me too...”

“Eh?” On hearing, the lot didn’t believe their ears.

“Sob...” Especially Bao Er who was so agitated on seeing the man wearing a Gemini Mask casually shuffling the ox cards that she ran towards him, crying. She ran into his embrace and cried pitifully.

“Rascal, I’ll kill you!” The angry man from different race flew towards Yue Yang on seeing that he was only Level Six and a scrub.

He waved punches at Yue Yang as he prepared to kill Yue Yang instantly.

In the sky, a giant black shadow dived down with a speed ten times faster than lightning.

With sharp scythe-like arms, it slashed the arm that was about to hit its master into half. Before the angry man could react, the other scythe-like arm had already locked his body as its triangular head came close and bit onto his arms, tearing the arms of the angry men directly as it chewed it in its mouth...It was none other than the Reaper Mantis!

“Leave his head, don’t kill him, let me teach him a lesson.” It was Yue Yang. Now, Yue Yang looked like a noble educator as he spoke to the moaning man whose arms were torn. “My friend, you have to know that scaring children is not right! You made a child scared and caused her to cry, it will be very hard to coax her like this. How many candies do you want me to waste? Moreover, eating candies is bad, it may result in tooth decay, look at how pretty her white teeth are. Just tell me if you deserve to die by trying to make her tooth decay!”

“...” Lin En and the rest were speechless.

“...” The man from different race who was all smiles just now looked even worse than bawling. He wasn’t able to squeeze out a smile no matter how hard he tried as beads of perspiration appeared on his forehead. He was unlucky enough to have met such a guy who was so abnormal in his mind and powers! Now, he didn’t even think of rescuing his mate, he could only think of running for his life.

He definitely wouldn’t be able to save his mate, even if he did, it would just be a waste of medical fees!

Moreover to save a man before a Level Four Platinum-ranked Reaper Mantis? Even an Innate would find it hard!

Now, thinking of how to escape safely and not be chewed into pieces by the Reaper Mantis was what he regarded as most important!

He had a few plans. First one being to attack the nearest Golden Elf as she was distracted by Yue Yang, thus making her easiest to be attacked; the second one was to flee, as everyone was distracted by Yue Yang's appearance.

He could only choose one.

If he stayed he would have a hostage, no matter how fast the Reaper Mantis was, it wouldn't attack him considering the safety of the hostage.

Fleeing seems feasible too as he was super fast. Moreover the Reaper Mantis was still masticating on his mate, so it wouldn't be able to catch up with him.

After hesitating for half a second, the man from different race who was previously all smiles and now could only smile bitterly chose the first plan. That was to attack the Golden Elf! With a hostage, he would be able to get himself a few seconds to negotiate before he breaks his Teleportation Stone. He only wished to escape, and this plan seemed safer than the second one.

Just as he thought that he could carry out his evil schemes, who would know that everyone reacted immediately.

"You are asking to die!" Lin En, Li Ao and the Ox Head Fan Lun Tie struck simultaneously. They had expected that the man wouldn't give up easily and would attack Anna. At the same time Anna summoned a Grimoire and a protective shield enclosed her, repelling the sharp claws of the man...

But all these weren't the main point.

An Iron Back Demonic Wolf appeared sleeping on the back of the man from different race since god knows when.

It was very indifferent as it waved its claws, causing the Lesser Innate man to fall onto the ground. It was as if the Iron Back Demonic Wolf was just yawning. Under the startled gaze of the bystanders, the Iron Back Demonic Wolf opened its mouth and tore the arms of its opponent. Ignoring useless struggles of his opponent and his painful cries, the Iron Back Demonic Wolf chewed on his arms, its movements were even more relaxed than the Reaper Mantis. It was as if it was a pet dog enjoying a piece of delicious beef rib.

It was Hui Tai Lang!

Yue Yang looked defeated as he sighed. "I have seen people asking to die, but never have I seen someone wanting to die like this. Maybe you were envious of your friend being chewed to death, or maybe it was because you had this special preference, no choice, I respect your preferences, I wish you a pleasant experience being eaten alive, and please enjoy the process!"

"..." When they hear this, everyone was speechless.

Chapter 424 – Yue Yang? Yes, He Was Impressive

Yue Yang brought Lin En and the rest down to the First Floor of the Tong Tian Tower.

This, was absolutely the first time in millenniums that Foreign Tribes like the Golden Elves, Ox-heads and Orcs were at the First Floor of the Tong Tian Tower where the Soaring Dragon Continent was situated. On the Sixth Floor, humans who had such comrades in teams formed at short notices were rare, since due to the differences in philosophy, nature and values between the humans and the Foreign Tribes such as Golden Elves, human warriors hardly interact with Golden Elves. Humans who could befriend Golden Elves, were one in a thousand, but the only one who could bring Golden Elves down to the First Floor, in the past millennium, was definitely only Yue Yang.

Ordinary receptionists at the Warrior Guild were all dumbfounded.

The beauty of Golden Elves, to humans, was simply just perfection!

Breathtakingly perfect!

Along the way, human adventurers who caught sight of Anna and Bao Er, all turned to look in their direction no matter where they were going, some banged into trees and others, into walls. There were even people who abandoned their Beasts and followed

them distantly, captivated by Anna and Bao Er.

It was no wonder as even on the Sixth Floor of the Tong Tian Tower, Anna and Bao Er were unrivaled beauties who could have charmed a whole street.

Moreover, it would really be a wonder if the leftover adventurers on the First Floor of the Tong Tian Tower, who had powers not more than Normal-ranked Level 2 Warriors, nor Normal-ranked Level 3 Heros, had enough willpower to resist the charm of Golden Elves!

“Welcome, distinguished guests from foreign continents, please allow myself to boldly represent all Warriors in the Soaring Dragon Continent to welcome you. Firstly, I have to express regret, in accordance to our regulations, we must still examine your Tong Tian Tower introductory passes.” The First Floor of the Warrior Guild had sent their most veteran, Elder Lu Lun. He was the branch chief of the First Floor of the Warrior Guild, the moment he heard that there were Golden Elves above who were coming to the Soaring Dragon Continent, he had dressed splendidly without delay, with his walking stick unused for many years in hand, and the symbolic medal of the branch chief displayed, he greeted the distinguished guests courteously.

A smile blossomed on his weathered and wrinkled face, the kind of smile that probably hadn't appeared on his face in hundreds of years.

Actually, the same verification process had already been carried out on the Fifth, Fourth, Third and Second Floor.

However, it held much greater purpose for the First Floor.

It was because once they exited the First Floor, Golden Elves would have then truly set foot on the Soaring Dragon Continent... According to precise records of history, 3000 years ago, a few Golden Elves were close friends with humans, they fought alongside humans in war and were invited to visit the Soaring Dragon Continent after an alliance was formed, such were the records of history in the Warrior Guild. Of course, the fact whether if there had been any Golden Elf Rankers, especially Golden Elf Innates, who had travelled by the Ancient Passage to the Soaring Dragon Continent for adventure, remained unknown... But, in at least a thousand years, there hadn't been any records that could prove that Golden Elves had appeared on the Soaring Dragon Continent.

To those who were more selfish and sly, Golden Elves were both beautiful and intelligent, an outstanding race with both good nature and moral character.

For a Human Warrior to be acquainted with a Golden Elf teammate and to exchange a few words, it would have been enough to brag about for a long time.

Now, there were actually 3 Golden Elves who had volunteered to come to the Soaring Dragon Continent to assist in battle against the Black Hell Army and two of them were even world-famous Golden Elf beauties. This news made the branch chief of the First Floor of the Warrior Guild, Elder Lu Lun, immensely proud. It was absolutely the greatest diplomatic glory within his term of office

ever!

“Clap clap clap!”

Receptionists standing in formation behind Elder Lu Lun applauded continuously.

If it wasn't that Anna and Lin En had courteously rejected the Warrior Guild's suggestion to hold a grand welcoming dinner for them, Elder Lu Lun had even prepared to take out his secret stash of money to celebrate.

Elder Lu Lun aside, even Jun Wu You and Hua Xu Ri have sent their royal special envoys to express their welcome greetings.

With great difficulty, they stepped out onto the Soaring Dragon Continent.

Ox-head girl Fan Lun Tie looked at the sky and said something that almost made Yue Yang split his sides laughing: “I had thought about what kind of place the Soaring Dragon Continent was, it turns out to be really similar to our place, how could it have produced so many abnormally powerful fellas?”

“We want to beat up Ye Kong and Fatty Hai, nobody can stop us!” The four orc girls harbored hard feelings.

“Right, I had even cried at that time.” Bao Er also recalled the embarrassing moment.

“Humans are indeed a race with unlimited potential...” Lin En caught sight of the tide of people nearing them and sighed. He didn’t really mean the inner qualities of humans but referred to their numbers instead. As long as their population continue to increase in size, an Innate was bound to appear every hundredth, or maybe ten thousandth person. It was no wonder there were so many human Innates. It must be understood that not just the Golden Elves, even if one put the whole Elfin race together, their whole population size might not even be a tenth of the human population in the Soaring Dragon Continent alone.

“You haven’t been to the Demon Abyss, the numbers there are the real deal.” Yue Yang retorted, numbers were also not everything.

“There are certainly many living creatures in the Demon Abyss, but most lack in intelligence. If all the living creatures in the Demon Abyss had the intelligence of humans, then they might’ve conquered the all the lands in the entire Tong Tian Tower.” Anna smiled faintly. She still admired the speed of growth of the human intelligence the most. The elf race, on the other hand, like Bao Er, who had lived in the Elf Forest for 150 years, had a mental capacity of a 14-15 year old human. Hell, she might not even be as sensible as a 14-15 year old human. This was the difference between their two races.

She had heard from Fatty Hai and Ye Kong about Yue Yang’s sister, Yue Bing, who, despite her young age, was more mature than Bao Er. She also had combat powers that were very much stronger.

Golden Elves, when compared to humans, had only one superiority, which was that they had a comparatively longer lifespan.

It was very common for Golden Elves to live for more than 3000 years, whereas it was extremely rare to see normal humans over 200 years of age.

To Ox-heads like Li Ao and Fan Lun Tie, humans were not superior in terms of numbers and quick maturity. Instead, they were far more creative than them. The Ox-heads did not lack Warriors, since all of them were naturally born as warriors. They reached adulthood at 10 years of age and were ready to rush into the battlefield. However, to Ox-heads who were only good at charging and breaking through enemy lines, creating materials and cultivating a culture was a tough problem. They had even relied on a single method to educate their young, which was to nurture their instincts... If only all Ox-heads could create materials and cultures like humans to educate their young, they might probably be a stronger race than the human race.

Certainly, this was a presumption limited to Li Ao's and Fan Lun Tie's imagination.

This time, Yue Yang could not bring them to the Yue Clan castle first. To show respect for Jun Wu You, he led them to teleport straight to Shang Jing and proceeded to the palace.

Jun Wu You looked full of vigor, with his crown atop his head

and in his court dress, bathed in an air of elegance, he led people and went out to welcome them.

The resonant bugle horn sounded.

Imperial guards filed out under the lead of Commander Feng Kuang and stood uniformly at attention on both sides of the imperial path, their armour and swords shining brightly, ensign clearly distinct.

Ten strong men lifted a pole and sounded the giant Coiling Dragon Bell, which could be heard in the entire Shang Jing, heavily, for 28 times. The whole city buzzed with excitement at the sound of the melodious and mellow humming. This was the greatest ceremony to welcome guests or to celebrate since other than the enthronement of new emperors and their brides and the appointment of new Heavenly Imperial Guardians, the giant Coiling Dragon Bell would only normally be rung 10 times for events such as naming a crown prince or marrying a princess.

When Golden Elves Lin En, Anna and Bao Er stepped forward, they first paid respects to Jun Wu You.

The whole imperial path rang with loud cheering.

This, was absolutely an honor to the Da Xia Kingdom!

The noble Golden Elves, brave Ox-heads and the strong heroic Orcs, had all paid respect to their king, a never before possessed

honor for humans since ancient times!

All the distinguished guests were powerful Warriors from the Sixth Floor of the Tong Tian Tower.

Most of all, while the Da Xia Kingdom was in the chaos of war, they had travelled a long distance to fight for their human allies, it made the friendship more precious!

“Welcome to the Soaring Dragon Continent, your presence here is the greatest encouragement to the Warriors of the Soaring Dragon Continent and this moment would go down in history. No matter the future of the Soaring Dragon Continent, I hope our Da Xia Warriors and Golden Elves, Ox-heads and Orcs, will be forever bonded as brothers and sisters, to support and help each other. Today, all of you could come a long way to fight against the enemy invasion of our Da Xia. In the future, the Warriors and children of Da Xia would certainly return this favour a hundredfold.” Jun Wu You’s impassioned speech rang loud across the skies.

He felt really emotional as this wasn’t as simple as a few foreign tribes coming forward to aid in the war.

The arrival of Lin En, Anna and the rest were the greatest encouragement and boosted the morale of the warriors of Da Xia.

Furthermore, it can be seen from this just how charismatic Yue Yang, Ye Kong and Fatty Hai were. Having only spent a short time of a month together, Golden Elves, who were usually the least sociable with human warriors, were willing to step forward to

offer their help. Having achieved such an impressive feat that countless seniors have failed to achieve, wasn't this enough to show how outstanding the younger generation, such as Yue Yang, were?

Even if the Da Xia Kingdom failed to withstand the attack of the Black Hell Army, with a charming younger generation and with so many foreign tribes that have extended their helping hand, what's the difficulty in restoring the Da Xia Kingdom once again?

“Emperor of the humans, we are glad to be here in the Soaring Dragon Continent. To us, the Soaring Dragon Continent was an unfamiliar place and the Da Xia Kingdom was also just a kingdom in a foreign land out of many foreign lands of the Tong Tian Tower, but this magical land had also fascinated us for a long time. We had always been curious about the kind of land that produced many outstanding human warriors, not to mention the third young master of the Yue Clan, who still remains a unimaginable mystery to us, just Hai Da Fu, Ye Kong and the Li Brothers, who were all tenacious and full of fighting spirit amazes us. On our adventures, we realised that the outstanding warriors of Da Xia were different from others, they were all the best young rankers. We have forged close friendships and fought as one on the battlefield, to live and die as one. To sum it in a sentence, they were not Golden Elves, nor Ox-heads, nor Orcs but they're all our brothers and sisters in our hearts, they're family. We were willing to come fight for these friends and family and we would be willing even if we were to die bravely in war, we would have no regrets!” Lin En, following Jun Wu You's speech, expressed her own feelings on the behalf of Golden Elves, Ox-heads and Orcs.

“Wow, long live, long live...”

This had deeply moved the people of Da Xia.

Touching words like brothers and sisters as well as family, defeated the older generation and all their eyes brimmed with tears of excitement.

Yue Yang, Ye Kong and Fatty Hai of the younger generation, were all so capable. Since ancient times, how many races would have travelled and offered their help to a foreign land? Not to mention human warriors who were always seen as trouble and unwelcomed by the Foreign Tribes. Now, a Golden Elf had announced that they recognised the people of Da Xia as family and were willing to die in battle for them. This statement was indeed super impressive and there wasn't any way to not be touched!

The younger people were even more excited and fired up. Golden Elves were even here to help the war, they would have nothing to fear about the Black Hell Army and just had to fight with all their might.

Ordinary soldiers couldn't wait to fight the enemy on the battlefield immediately, the anticipation of war left them feeling frustrated.

They pounded heavily on their breastplate with their clenched fists.

What started with a few hundred soldiers grew to thousands then millions of them as they all pounded on their breastplates, filling

the streets with the thunderous sound of their thumping. As more and more people joined in and the thumping became neater and rhythmic, the morale of the soldiers combined to form a crazy flood that totally covered the cheering of the people.

Thump thump thump, thump thump thump...

Their inner emotions could no longer be expressed by cheering and only through such a manner, could they have somewhat expressed the excitement in their hearts!

Jun Wu You looked at Yue Yang gratefully.

He knew all of these were in fact planned by Yue Yang in advance. Otherwise, Yue Yang wouldn't have brought the team of Golden Elves back to the Soaring Dragon Continent with such great fanfare. Neither would Yue Yang have informed him in advance to let him get himself ready... Jun Wu You was clear that Yue Yang wanted to help him boost morales. Due to the Black Hell Army's declaration of war on the Da Xia Kingdom and the incitement of spies, the morale of the people were all low. The people had felt that the chances of defeat were high, and it negatively affected the morale of the soldiers indirectly. Some generals were even wavered by the low morales.

Now, after the Golden Elves have paid respect to the King of Da Xia and announced their heroic intention to fight to the death, the morales of the people and soldiers would be boosted greatly.

Not mentioning others, Jun Wu You himself, felt greatly

encouraged.

It turned out that Jun Wu You was secretly prepared for defeat. Although he had rather die than submit, he had never thought he would be able to win against the Black Hell Army, so all his considerations were for defeat. Now with Yue Yang's rooting, Jun Wu You has regained his ambition and decided that the battle was undecided until the end. He had Marshall Yue Hai to lead his army and Yue Yang to fight the Innates. Even if the Black Hell Army was awesome, they wouldn't be defeated without a fight.

"We'll fight to the end!" Jun Wu You nodded at Yue Yang. After all Yue Yang has done, as the emperor, he must not lose face to Yue Yang!

"Heh!" Yue Yang did had the intention to encourage Jun Wu You.

He didn't care about the morales of the ordinary people as it wasn't a significant factor affecting the war. However, Jun Wu You must remain strong as the emperor. If he were to admit defeat and give up, then no matter how skilled his people were, they wouldn't be able to perform.

Should they really avoid going to battle with the Black Hell King and the Black Hell Army?

Yue Yang has never submitted himself to the worst case scenario. He had even dared to fight the Three Great Leaders of the Heaven Realm as well as attacked the Scarlet Emperor. Why should he

even be afraid of merely the Black Hell King?

Amidst the cheerings of the crowd, Jun Wu You welcomed Anna, Bao Er and gang into the palace. Fatty Hai and Ye Kong were waiting in the main hall with smiles, looking very cheeky. Yue Yang flourished his hand: "There, go on and beat them up, don't be shy. But it better not last more than an hour because the emperor has arranged a feast in an hour's time."

"You're unbelievable. So be it if you hadn't tried to dissuade the fight, but you are asking them to take action..." Fatty Hai let out a shriek as Ox-head Fan Lun Tie started to beat him up before he was finished speaking.

"This is called 'Better you die than me!'" Yue Yang turned his back easily on Fatty Hai.

In Jun Wu You's royal study, Jun Wu You thanked his future son-in-law, lifted his tea cup, sipped his tea comfortably and asked, "If you have any more good news for me, feel free to say it now, while my heart still can take it!" He knew Yue Yang would definitely have more good stuff he hadn't shared yet.

Yue Yang had spend much effort as he believed a little sacrifice is nothing in order to pick up girls. Who asked Jun Wu You to have such an exceeding daughter, the tigress? Yue Yang cleared his throat, "It's like this, Mr Chen from the Qi Lan continent will be providing aid to your highness. He will be giving us 500 Thunder Beasts and 100 sets of Thunder Armour."

Jun Wu You choked upon hearing what Yue Yang said.

The fame of Thunder Beasts and the Thunder Armour wasn't less than that of the Qi Lan Wine, it is only natural that Jun Wu You had heard of them before. He had even wanted to get himself a set when he was still a prince but various problems prevented him from getting one, the Thunder Armour together with the Storage Ring then became his greatest regrets. He had not expected this future son-in-law to gift 100 of the Thunder Armour all at once.

Ignoring Jun Wu You's choked expression, Yue Yang casually continued, "Here is a secret agreement I had signed with the Great Demon King Baruth and Demon King Ha Xin, they would send troops to attack the flanks if Da Xia could fight to a tie with the Black Hell Army, letting the Black Hell Army suffer consequences..."

"Ptui!" Jun Wu You cannot help but spurted water, followed by fierce coughing. Yue Yang words, almost caused him to choke to death.

Chapter 425 – Queue Up, This Is Very Important

Although Yue Yang signed a secret agreement with the various demons from the Demon Abyss, he couldn't let the common men and soldiers know about it.

But the agreement shocked the leaders of Da Xia Kingdom too much!

It could be said that this lifted up their spirits a hundred times better than the Golden Elves coming to their aid!

After all this was a solid aid to the situation, the help coming from the Golden Elves was more of a form of mental support.

Thinking of the demons from the Demon Abyss fighting against the Black Hell King jointly with human Innates boosted Jun Wu You's confidence to the maximum. According to what Yue Yang said, Jun Wu You's fighting spirit had been ignited, and he could transform into a spartan readily, launching attacks anytime... Luckily the Black Hell King didn't see Jun Wu You in such an agitated state, if not he would have retreated his army in fright!

Other than Elder Yue Hai, Shui Dong Liu, the State Grandmaster, two Heavenly Imperial Guardians and the Heavenly Imperial Guardians sent from Tian Luo Kingdom, people like Feng Xiao Yun, Xue Wen Dao and Yan Qian Zhong had only seen the agreement but didn't see the content on the agreement.

Even so, the emergence of this secret agreement boosted their morale tremendously!

Especially Yan Qian Zhong who was in a dilemma. This made him reel in shock.

He even suspected that Jun Wu You did it deliberately for him to see. On one end, Zi Jin Kingdom was trying as hard as they can to recruit him, wishing for him to be the first one to be out of the four great clans; On the other end he wasn't willing to become other's lackey, because the Black Hell King might not turn out to be a good bet in the end. After the war, he might even burn their bridges.

Becoming a traitor would cause not only himself, but also his future generations to bear the dirty name, just like Green Summit Sect who escaped from the Yue Clan. Although Zi Jin Kingdom was generous to them, descendants from Duan Mu and Mo Qi still couldn't raise their head up in pride today.

Moreover, Da Xia might not be destructed after all.

Forget about having Tian Luo Kingdom as their ally, other than the Western Lion Pagoda, the rest of the four clans like Eastern Ocean Crystal Palace, Southern Floating Mist Sect and Northern Moon Fairy Pavilion all didn't wish for the Black Hell King to disrupt the balance in the Soaring Dragon Continent, they were also annoyed by the possibility that the Black Hell King might step foot into the Soaring Dragon Continent. So although they might not help blatantly, they would definitely provide assistance

secretly.

What Yan Qian Zhong feared the most was Yue Yang.

He was definitely an abnormal guy, would the Black Hell King be able to kill him? Yan Qian Zhong felt that even if a Beast were to become more stupid it wouldn't think so!

If he were to betray the four great clans and Da Xia Kingdom, and even if the Black Hell King don't kill his family, Yue Yang would definitely not let him off... Under this situation, Yan Qian Zhong felt that he should live with a bit more dignity and work alongside with the Feng, Xue and Yue clans. Even if he were to die, his son Yan Po Jun would still be around. With Yue Yang leading him, making the Yan clan prosper again would just be a matter of time.

Yan Qian Zhong who previously rejected Zi Jin Kingdom's advancement reeled in shock as he broke out in sweat on seeing the secret agreement Yue Yang signed with Demon Abyss.

Fortunately he didn't make a foolish decision...

Luckily he rejected Zi Jin Kingdom...

If not the Yan Clan would really die in shame and would have to carry a dirty name for a long time!

If he were to agree, the Yan Clan would definitely be erased from the four great clans, and the Hai Clan and Ye Clan with Fatty Hai

and Ye Kong would possibly replace the Yan Clan to become part of the four great clans.

The Black Hell King was right. He was definitely a terrifying existence. But in Yan Qian Zhong's opinion, the most terrifying person would be Yue Yang. Forget about his potential and rate of growth, everyone in the world knew that he was abnormal, even his Beasts were abnormal too. Sky Law from the Demonic Palace and the Night Empress from Tian Luo thought highly of him, even Zhi Zun the human became his personal introducer... It's not wise to belittle the Black Hell King, but the consequences of belittling Yue Yang would be even more horrifying! In retrospect, Yan Qian Zhong discovered that those who opposed him never had a good ending! Previously Shun Tian and the Thousand Goblins Sect Leader were defeated by him, it looks like the Black Hell King wouldn't be an exception this time round!

There had never been such possibility for a human Innate to get to the Demon Palace and negotiate with an arch enemy like the Demon Abyss, and turning into allies successfully at the end of the negotiation.

If the Human Innate wasn't Yue Yang but someone else, Yan Qian Zhong wouldn't believe that this was true.

But if it was Yue Yang, Yan Qian Zhong felt that it was normal.

Yue Yang was born to do things that other cannot do... Everything he did was not able to be accomplished by others. For example, self training to become an Innate at age twenty, fighting the Thousand Goblin Sect Leader, chasing after the Eastern

demons, defeating the Seven Great Bears, resolving the conflict in the Yue Clan, making Shun Tian retreat, invading the Demon Palace to attack Duan Mu Long Cheng, breaking the demon statue to snatch the Beast... All these uncountable heroic acts were unaccomplishable by people of the same age as him, it might not even be achievable for other Innates! Because of him, the Golden Elves that hadn't visited the Soaring Dragon Continent for a thousand years came. What was more unbelievable was that the demons who hated human to the core from the Demon Abyss actually signed a secret agreement with this guy as they prepared to attack the Black Hell King together.

Now, Yan Qian Zhong felt that even if Yue Yang were to say that Zhi Zun would come to their aid later and kill Black Hell King on the spot, he wouldn't doubt him.

Yue Yang simply couldn't be judged with a normal person's standard!

When Yan Qian Zhong was looking at Yue Yang secretly, he found out that Yue Yang was also looking at him intentionally or otherwise, and it made him reel in shock.

Could it be that Yue Yang found out that he sent a letter to the Zi Jin Kingdom? Yan Qian Zhong prayed hard. May all ancestors bless me, the rejection letter must reach Zi Jin Kingdom, please don't let it get lost halfway, if not it would be hard to prove my loyalty.

He quickly sat properly, as he swore that if Zi Jin Kingdom were to send any more letters to him, he would give it to Jun Wu You

directly without reading them.

It's still okay if he were to become enemies with the Black Hell King, but he really had no guts to become rivals with Yue Yang...

“Although the demons from Demon Abyss signed the agreement, they are fickle beings, we need to have a backup plan.” Elder Yue Hai's strength wasn't on par to an Innate, but his military strategies were definitely top notch among human beings. Jun Wu You had given him the authority to command his troop long ago, even the Heavenly Imperial Guardians of Tian Luo indicated that their troop would listen to the old marshal's commands to defeat the Black Hell Army jointly. Elder Yue Hai was both overjoyed and apprehensive about the secret agreement. He was overjoyed because if everything goes well, they would emerge victorious; The reason for his apprehensiveness was that if there's any hiccups, Demon Abyss might make matter worse for them. It's impossible to trust Demon Abyss completely to abide by the agreement. Forget about Demon Abyss, even human beings would only support the stronger ones!

“Certainly it's hard to completely win, but there's still hope of having a tie.” Shui Dong Liu was also a warfare expert, it was just that he did not have the opportunity to show it before.

“We'll take care of the war between Innates.” The Heavenly Imperial Guardians of Tian Luo smiled elegantly. “ Although we can't take down the Black Hell King, we will definitely fight against his four Fallen Innates with all our might. As for the Black Hell King, the mission to take him down will go to Night Empress and little Yue Yang.”

“It wouldn’t be a problem if its just the Black Hell King.” Jun Wu You’s forefingers pressed onto the table softly. After thinking for a while, he looked towards Yue Yang. “According to the information sent back by little Yue Yang, and the things that happened recently, we have sufficient reasons to suspect that Shun Tian, the Black Prince, Thousand Goblin Sect Leader and more Fallen Innates will join this battle towards the end.”

“Indeed, this is a problem. It is a little unrealistic to request Baruth and Ha Xin to come out in advance to fight against Shun Tian, the Black Prince and the Thousand Goblin Sect Leader.” The Ascetic Practice Saint was also pessimistic towards the aid of the Demon Abyss.

“Is it possible for little Yue Yang to get Sky Law to help?” The Scholar asked Yue Yang teasingly . Actually everyone knew about his relationship with her.

“It will be difficult!” Yue Yang shrugged his shoulders and waved his hands.

“Did you guys quarrel?” The Ascetic Practice Saint joked.

“Nope, I killed Sky Dragon who was ranked tenth on the board of Demonic Palace. I think people from the Demonic Palace will be incensed if they were to see me...” Yue Yang sighed innocently. “If i had known that the Black Hell King would invade, I would have spared his life. I really did not know at that point in time!”

“Pu...” Those who were drinking water spurted it out. Feng Xiao Yun, Xue Wen Dao and Yan Qian Zhong almost coughed out their bronchiole.

Actually everyone knew that Sky Dragon was his love rival.

If Sky Dragon were to land into his hands, he would have died more than ten times. But even if they knew about it, they were still uncontrollably shocked. After all Sky Dragon was a super powerful Level Six Innate, if he were to come to Da Xia, he could have been a Heavenly Imperial Guardian. Who would have thought that he would be killed by Yue Yang. The most ridiculous thing was that the Demonic Palace actually did not pursue the matter. They could have had argued with him instead of doing nothing at all. It seemed that even Sky Execution was wary of Yue Yang.

If it were to be another person, Sky Execution would have killed him already!

Jun Wu You spoke immediately. He comforted Yue Yang who was pretending to be upset. “Its alright, even the Demonic Palace respect the more powerful person. I support you, charge into the Demonic Palace fearlessly, and snatch Sky Law back! Even if Sky Dragon died, he died in vain, and you are doing it for the good of everyone!”

“Your Highness, please don’t lead a child wayward.” Elder Yue Hai was speechless.

“...” The lot fought hard to suppress their laughter. Even if Jun

Wu You didn't teach him so, Yue Yang was bad enough in the first place.

Even if Jun Wu You didn't mention it, Yue Yang already had the thought going to the Demonic Palace to negotiate.

He had already went to the Demon Palace, what would be stopping him from getting to the Demonic Palace now? If he could persuade his rivals like Baruth and Ha Xin, Yue Yang didn't believe that he couldn't persuade Sky Execution now! Moreover, the Demonic Palace was still considered to be a brother of Da Xia. The reason why Yue Yang didn't go immediately was because he was still waiting for the Phoenix Fairy Beauty's response. With her acting as the middleman, he wouldn't have to waste a lot of effort nor does he have to bear with the arrogant attitude of Sky Execution. He could start his negotiation directly.

=

If this was before his experience in the Prison Emperor Divine Palace, Yue Yang wouldn't have the confidence that he could persuade Sky Execution.

But after the battle between the Three Great Leader of Heaven Realm, acquiring the Prison Emperor Divine Seal, followed by defeating the Scarlet Emperor and signing secret agreement with the Great Demon King Baruth, Yue Yang was very certain that he would be able to convince Sky Pearl...

Yan Qian Zhong looked at Yue Yang and realised that he was giving off a confident smile.

Yan Qian Zhong's heart shook.

What a guy. Looks like the Black Hell King would be the unlucky one this time round instead of Da Xia Kingdom. With the aid of the Demonic Palace, as Yue Yang was destined to be favoured by the Heavens, Shun Tian, the Black King and Thousand Goblin Sect Leader would definitely flee quickly. With the joint attack of the Night Empress, Sky Execution, Sky Law, Baruth and Ha Xin, together with Yue Yang, the Black Hell King's end would come soon...

Thinking of this, Yan Qian Zhong's ambitions started burning...

If the Black Hell King was destined to fail, then how could Zi Jin Kingdom and the Lion Pagoda continue to survive?

When these three powers fall, the four great clans would definitely rise, although his Yan Clan wouldn't be able to reap benefits as huge like the Yue Clan, he would definitely be able to get the small benefits. At least it would stabilize the Yan Clan's status in the four great clans.

He wouldn't give Hai Clan and Ye Clan chances to catch up!

On thinking of it, Yan Qian Zhong decided immediately to use all his might to support Jun Wu You. If he stands on his sides now, it would bring great fortune to all his future generations.

"Your highness, Qian Zhong's region is nearer to where Zi Jin

Kingdom is, so he will be more familiar with the information of Zi Jin. So he will be of more help to Marshal Yue Hai's adjustment to the war plan..." Yan Qian Zhong stood up to report immediately. On seeing that everyone wore a 'I was waiting for you to say this' look, he broke out in cold sweat.

Chapter 426 – Shameless, A Whole New Realm Of Shamelessness!

Just as Yan Qian Zhong was announcing Zi Jin Kingdom's secret loudly, Feng Kuang came to report that a few messengers had come from the Demonic Palace. He was representing Sky Law (Phoenix Fairy Beauty) to invite the third young master of Yue Clan to come to the Xie Ma (Slanting Horse) Valley for a meet-up.

Jun Wu You and the others looked at Yue Yang like a bunch of nosy kids.

Before Yue Yang left, Jun Wu You had even pulled Yue Yang's hand and asked, "Do you have any secret codes with Sky Law? Could this be a trap?"

Yue Yang was secretly speechless, but he showed an appearance of an obedient child, "Actually, Sky Law and I are purely just friends. We are only together in order to cultivate to new heights. No matter last time or now, we have always kept our relationship as platonic friendship."

Everyone in the Imperial Study almost fainted.

Everyone almost couldn't take it anymore.

This brat's shamelessness was not only at the level of shameless, it was a whole new realm of shameless!

Even Jun Wu You, the experienced casanova in terms of women, almost couldn't take Yue Yang's shameless shenanigans. They probably only lacked having a baby and have done almost everything else. Yet, he still dared to say "platonic friendship"? 'Purely just friends'? If he mentioned this to others, even fools wouldn't believe him!

Regardless if it was a trap, Yue Yang was determined to go to Xie Ma Valley.

If Sky Execution really wanted to kill Yue Yang, the best time to do it wouldn't be at Xie Ma Valley. Sky Execution would have done it when Yue Yang was at a critical moment in his fight with the Black Hell King.

The fact that they had invited him to the Xie Ma Valley means that there was still space to turn back... Of course, Yue Yang believed that Sky Execution had already known about the Sky Dragon Incident. The fact that he had killed Sky Dragon could only be hidden for a short while. Maybe Sky Execution had already known this fact long ago, but he didn't try to confront Yue Yang immediately. It seemed like Yue Yang wouldn't be able to avoid fighting in the Xie Ma Valley. He didn't have anything to lose anyway, if he fought with Sky Execution, who had everything, Sky Execution would be the one to lose something. In any case, it was also time to meet Sky Execution!

The Xie Ma Valley was once a beautiful place.

It was said that it was a beautiful grass plain before. The scenery was magnificent and the grass was green. Shepherds' songs would

usually fill the whole place, it was practically a happy place that rarely exist in this world.

Until one day, two brothers came to this place. The older brother wished to cultivate to a whole new realm, so he suggested to the younger brother that they journey to the east to find the East Saint at that time and become his disciple. The younger brother, on the other hand, felt that they should journey to the west. He felt that the West Saint, who would repay favor with favor and enmity with enmity, would be a better teacher for them than the East Saint, who lived a simple and peaceful life. The two brothers had actually came from a rich household, but after their parents died, their inheritance were forcefully snatched from them by their uncle. The two brothers were then kicked out from their house. Hence, the younger brother wanted to become strong and come back for their house and inheritance again in the future.

The most ironical thing was that the older brother was critically injured by bandits along the way, and met the West Saint who was coincidentally walking past.

Meanwhile, the younger brother had saved a girl from the bandits, and because of this, he received the East Saint's favor, because that girl was the East Saint's granddaughter.

Ten years later, the older brother whose personality had changed studying under the West Saint, had turned into an evil, narrow-minded and grudge-bearing warrior. On the other hand, the younger brother had married the East Saint's granddaughter and had many children with her. Under the East Saint's simple and peaceful teaching, slowly, he started to give up on the idea to take

revenge on his uncle and snatch their house and inheritance back. When the two brothers met again, due to the difference in their thoughts and philosophy, they couldn't see each other eye to eye. In the end, they started a big fight.

The younger brother who was stronger than his brother accidentally killed him from a misstep.

This matter then triggered the great fight between the West Saint, who wanted to take revenge for his disciple, and the East Saint, who wanted to protect his grandson-in-law.

The great fight had decimated the Xie Ma Valley. It was burnt to the ground and flooded in storms. When the West Saint and the East Saint brought out their whole power, the impact caused great earthquakes and thunder, splitting the earth apart.

In the end, the ground was split in two, forming the Xie Ma Valley.

To Da Xia Kingdom, Xie Ma Valley was their ancestor's land. This was because the legend really did happen. The founders of the Da Xia Kingdom was actually the descendant of the younger brother, the crux of the great fight between the West and East Saint. On the other hand, the earliest Fallen Warrior of the Demonic Palace was actually the descendants of the older brother from the great fight in the Xie Ma Valley. Since three thousand years ago, the two families would carry out a decisive battle in Xie Ma Valley every ten years. The grudge became deeper and deeper with each generation, until one day, a girl who was extremely loved by both families decided to kill herself in front of the Xie Ma Blood

Monument in order to stop the fight between the two families. Only then did the two families stopped their needless fight.

The younger brother's descendants started anew and founded the Da Xia Kingdom.

The older brother's descendants continued to lose their way in hatred and founded the Demonic Palace. They made an oath not to reconcile with the younger brother's descendant unless the girl who committed suicide at that time could be resurrected.

“That story is such a pain in the ass!” When Princess Qian Qian told this legend to Yue Yang, that brat's reaction was as such.

At that time, he was beaten up by the furious Princess Qian Qian as a result, and she refused to speak to him for one whole day.

Right now, as Yue Yang stepped onto the Xie Ma Valley, he realized that it had turned into a harsh, deserted and barren land. The strangest thing was that the earth here was red, like a human's blood. Although Yue Yang knew that it was definitely not because the ground was stained by human's blood, he couldn't help feeling a kind of mournful feeling.

Of course, there was one anomaly. Wasn't it just a girl?

Continuing to fight to their deaths, they were really too foolish.

Yue Yang never tried to put himself into their shoes. If someone

wanted to snatch Luo Hua City Mistress, Princess Qian Qian or Xue Wu Xia from him, wouldn't he do anything to get them back?

Forget about them, even if someone dared to have any ideas on that adorable little Golden Elf loli, Yue Yang would definitely chop that poor chap's head down without hesitation. Trying to snatch the guy from another dimension's girl? This was practically going against the heaven's orders!

Sky Law would definitely never invite Yue Yang to this kind of place. It was definitely Sky Execution.

Inviting Yue Yang to the Xie Ma Valley definitely posed a deeper meaning. It was as if they wanted to use this to portray that their two families was destined to oppose each other forever. It wouldn't be possible for them to work together.

Yue Yang understood that completely, but he would definitely pretended not to on the outside. He pretended that he didn't understand anything. All along, those who are shameless always won. Only fools would send an upright man to a negotiation with their enemy!

“Dong, dong, dong, dong, dong...”

At a distance, the deep sound of drums reverberated deeply, making others' heartbeats go faster. This was not a kind of war drum, but rather a drum for funerals that made others feel uncomfortable.

When Yue Yang heard this, he immediately changed his pace as if he was shooting a slow motion movie and walked slowly forward.

When he reached the source of the drumbeat, a giant warrior that was beating the drum hard, a full half an hour had passed. That giant warrior who had huge muscles finally stopped beating the drum, and he glared at Yue Yang with his ox-like eyes. He roared at Yue Yang, looking as if he wanted to eat him whole, “What the heck are you doing? Walking so slowly like that! I was so kind-hearted so as to beat the drum to let you know our meeting location, it’s still okay if you don’t thank me, you still dared to purposely walk like a snail! You are purposely trying to make life difficult for me, right? Come, let me teach you a lesson!”

When Yue Yang heard this, he immediately revealed a wide smile, showing all of his teeth, radiant like the sun.

They say that people wouldn’t hit a smiling, friendly person.

The giant warrior’s fist had already reached the tip of Yue Yang’s nose, but he still stopped in the end, “Don’t smile. Let me beat you to a pulp first. Bloody hell, I get angry just by seeing that pretty boy look of yours!”

Yue Yang’s smile became even wider as he chuckled, “This big brother over here, how do I address you? Are you Sky Fury or Sky Assassinate?”

“Who’s your big brother?! And my name has got nothing to do with you!” The giant warrior was completely driven mad. It was

the first time he met this brat, yet he dared to call him big brother. If he met him again, he would probably call him uncle, or even grandpa! He really never met such a weirdo in his life. If this brat had approached him and immediately started a fight with him without saying anything, he would be alright with it. Yet this brat not only did not make his move, he even called him big brother so intimately. He was completely at a loss on what to do with him.

“Sky Law will be my future wife, so you can be considered as my wife’s extended family. Seeing that you are much older than me, I think calling you great uncle will be better!” Yue Yang said it in a way as if he had let the giant off too easily, he could have called him great grandpa. It was as if Yue Yang expected the giant to be thankful to him.

“You...!” The giant warrior was so angry that he almost puked blood. Such a shameless brat, how could he have managed to survive until now? How could there be such a shameless brat in this world?

“What a glib tongue. Your words are so sweet, ‘wife’s extended family’, ‘great uncle’, ‘small uncle’. If my memory serves me right, not long ago, there was also a similar ‘great uncle’ called Sky Dragon. You were the one who killed him in the Thunder Fortress, right? Can I trouble you to explain this matter for a while? Why didn’t you think he was your great uncle then?” A tall, lanky man carrying an ancient sword at his back suddenly appeared behind Yue Yang’s back. He was wearing a long robe.

This man’s power was above Sky Dragon’s.

His gaze was extremely sharp, as if a look from him could cause one to suffer from multiple cuts and lacerations.

Yue Yang didn't face him, he allowed him to continue looking at his back. He felt as if there was an icy cold sword pressing against his back.

Needless to say, this tall lanky man who carried an ancient sword on his back was the man holding the number 9 seat of the Demonic Palace – Sky Sword. After Sky Dragon died, he had become the only Sky Demon who possessed the power of Innate Level 6 amongst the other ten Sky Demons... Of course, his Innate Level 6 was more powerful than Sky Dragon's. Even though both of them were Innate Level 6, Yue Yang thought that two Sky Dragons might not even be enough to defeat this Sky Sword.

Sky Sword's only weakness was probably his over-reliance on that Saint-ranked Ancient Sword. Hence, he was stuck at Innate Level 6, unable to break through to higher levels.

Of course, possessing that Saint-ranked Ancient Sword, this Sky Sword's power was already very close to the Drumbeating Giant Warrior, even when the Drumbeating Giant Warrior possess a Platinum-ranked Sky Anguish Drum!

“This Ancient Sword is really good stuff...” Yue Yang drooled a little. If Sky Sword was alone, he would have already snatched the ancient sword from him. However, Sky Execution was nowhere to be seen, hence he couldn't have any ideas about the ancient sword at the mean time. Yue Yang returned back to the main topic as he leisurely smiled and replied Sky Sword's question, he shamelessly

said, “Actually, the matter concerning great uncle was really very simple. If a certain person is willing to be my great uncle, he will be my great uncle. When that certain person is not willing to be my great uncle, and even tried to fight for the place as my wife’s husband, that certain someone definitely can’t be my great uncle anymore.”

“Since it’s like that, I’d like to fight too, let’s see how it goes!” Sky Sword released hundred thousands Blade Qi in an instant, causing deep cuts on the ground as far as ten metres in front of Yue Yang.

This was merely the power of Sky Sword’s glare.

A number of cuts also appeared on Yue Yang’s Dragon Leather Armor, as if it had been cut by a sharp knife.

However, forget about a cut in the cheeks, Yue Yang didn’t even let a single thread of his hair cut. He calmly and annoyingly waved a stick of wood and coolly said, “You should just do your part as my great uncle well. With that face of yours, if you insist to fight with me, you will make me die of laughter. Have you ever seen yourself in the mirror? Furthermore, even if I don’t beat you up now, my wife Sky Law will definitely beat you up! A great person should know their own limits. Can I trouble you to stand at the side, I think you are still not qualified enough to be my wife’s extended family. If you change your mind, you can always tell me. Thank you!”

“You...!” Sky Sword’s was so angry that his face turned red, then purple, then black.

He thought of pulling his ancient sword and slashed this brat to death countless times.

Then he would cut him to pieces and hang each piece of meat in a line for everyone to see! He had met annoying people before, but he never met such an annoying person before!

After forcing Sky Sword to admit defeat, at the bottom of the Xie Ma Valley, there was a man that was floating in the sky leisurely. He looked so relaxed that Yue Yang was jealous of him. He looked at Yue Yang and smiled, similarly showing all of his teeth, radiant like the stars. His smile was darker than the night. He learnt Yue Yang's way of flipping his hair, then spoke with a voice that seemed to bring spring breeze with it, "Can I be your love rival too? If you are talking about looks, I don't think I'm worse off than you. As for having any ideas, I would have some ideas about your wife sometimes. What do you think of me?"

Yue Yang immediately changed from a modest gentleman into a little rogue, his words were extremely vulgar as he assailed his opponent, "Wifey, fortunately you spoke out quickly, otherwise I would have to spank you. You must know that I hate people who look better than me the most! But I don't mind if it is a woman. Welcome, my name is Yue Yang, but people usually called me the Yue Clan Third Young master. I have an upright and cheerful personality, and I have carriages and houses. I am a rich second generation who never have to worry about food to eat or clothes to wear. I have someone to protect me and sacrifice for me, I have someone to open the way for me and back me up from behind. I have authority and riches to enjoy. My hobbies include taking photos, art and studying beasts. I am the most eligible bachelor

that everyone is fighting over for... I wonder if you still have any interest to interview for the position as a member of my wonderful harem?"

Before this shameless brat could finish speaking, the other party had already fainted to the ground.

Chapter 427 – Deceive, Continue To Deceive

“If you have a sister and a wretched, low class dandy were to flirt and take liberties with her for no reason, what would you do?” A man’s voice came from nowhere. There’s a certain attractiveness to the voice, no matter who the listener is, one would definitely associate it with maturity and sensibility, but his words were mean. These two stark contrast formed an amazing contradiction. Both were similar yet opposing, rational yet angry, earnest yet incisive...

Yue Yang had seen a lot of powerful people and he had his fair share of encounter with weirdos too.

Undoubtedly, this man is one of those weirdos.

And he could be considered one of the more special ones.

On the topic of witty conversation, if Yue Yang calls himself number two, no one would dare to claim that they are number one in the whole of Soaring Dragon Continent.

Hearing the confrontation of the man, others would have broke out in cold sweat or would have felt awkward, but Yue Yang still laughed. “Then you would have to see if he did it intentionally!”

The man who confronted him was stunned. After pausing her a moment, he spoke. “What would you do if he did it intentionally?”

“

“Then I’ll kill him! “ Yue Yang waved his hands and acted as if he was angry. “He would be asking for death if he dares to flirt with my sister! “

“Then what if he did it unintentionally?” A handsome young man standing in front of Yue Yang asked deliberately. He was the type of guy that would make one’s heart flutter even if he’s not smiling.

“I don’t care if he did it intentionally or not. I will kill anyone who dare to flirt with my sister. Did he even know who I am, am I the type of people that will be reasonable? “ Yue Yang replied proudly.

“Your answer is not bad. Looks like I’ll have to learn from you.“ The voice replied.

“Don’t look up to me too much! “ Yue Yang touched his hair narcissistically.

“No matter what, I want to see what great skills you have, especially your famous Nirvana Flame and World Exterminating Wheel.” The man with the magnetic voice seemed to set his mind on fighting with Yue Yang. But it seemed that he was trying to settle personal dispute with him, so it wouldn’t obstruct Yue Yang’s negotiation process.

“It’s a rare occasion that you are humble enough to ask me to teach you. As your son-in-law I’ll reluctantly accept the job of

guiding you! “ Yue Yang said without feeling ashamed.

“...” Sky Sword who was standing behind Yue Yang grimaced and almost died puking blood.

This guy’s level of shame had reached rock bottom. He could probably kill his enemies with it. Speaking to Yue Yang could agitate their enemies enough to cause them internal injuries!

The drum beating giant guy couldn’t stand him even more.

He carried his Sky Anguish Drum and walked away with huge steps without turning his head back.

He decided not to talk to Yue Yang ever again. He didn’t even want to see Yue Yang anymore as he was afraid that Yue Yang would be bad influence to him. Although the drum beating giant guy agrees that he isn’t a saint with his bloodied hands, he still held onto some principles. But after hanging around with Yue Yang, the drum beating giant guy thought that if he get too close with this Yue Clan Third Young Master brat, what’s left of his little principles would be destroyed.

With regards to shamelessness alone, not even the shamelessness of all the demons from the Demonic Palace add up together could compare to Yue Yang’s.

Yue Yang was the kind of person that’s not to be trifled with.

So the the drum beating giant guy avoided him. Regarding him killing Sky Dragon, the drum beating giant guy wondered if Sky Dragon died from being too angry with Yue Yang!

“I want to know how the third young master of Yue Clan would convince us to help Da Xia.” Another voice that sounded like a thorny devil’s resounded.

This person’s voice made people uncomfortable just by hearing. It made others felt as if there was thorns on their body, but they couldn’t identify the location.

It made people feel very uneasy!

With regards to power level, the person with the thorny devil’s voice should be of similar power to the man with an attractive voice. Yue Yang estimated that these two people were probably Sky Calamity and Sky Crime that were ranked fourth and fifth among the Ten Great Sky Demons of the Demonic Palace. As for the ‘handsome’ cross-dressing girl who got molested verbally by Yue Yang in the end, he was definitely Sky Disaster who was ranked sixth in the Demonic Palace. She was climbing up the rank the fastest in the Demonic Palace.

Yue Yang estimated that the giant guy who left carrying the Sky Anguish Drum was Sky Fury.

The other one whom Yue Yang could sense that he was within ten metres from him but couldn’t see with his naked eye was Sky Assassinate!

Sky Assassinate had superb skills of being invisible, if not for Yue Yang's Heaven Eye Divine Vision that allowed him to even see through Sky Disaster's cross-dressing, Yue Yang wouldn't be able to realise Sky Assassinate the silent killer who was just within ten metres from him.

However Sky Assassinate's cloaking only succeeded under the camouflage of the Sword Qi given off by Sky Sword.

Yue Yang was still very impressed.

With a cloaking power like this, it was no wonder that he was called Sky Assassinate!

No wonder he was born to be an assassin!

Now, all the ten Sky Demons were almost all here.

Only the strongest Sky Execution, Sky Wrath who was ranked third and the hibernating Phoenix Fairy Beauty Sky Law were not present. Maybe these three were just spying on Yue Yang from somewhere he couldn't see. Due to the presence of Sky Calamity, Sky Crime, Sky Disaster, Sky Fury, Sky Assassinate and Sky Sword, they made Yue Yang less sensitive. They besieged him in certain sense, and formed an ancient summoning pattern that prevented Yue Yang from sensing his surroundings, causing him to be unable to detect where Sky Execution, Sky Wrath and Sky Law were.

“Convincing y’all? No, all along I’ve been too lazy to waste my saliva on hopeless people like y’all.” Yue Yang was unrelenting in being mean.

“Hey hey, be nice to ladies! “ Sky Disaster who was cross dressing warned Yue Yang not to be too arrogant.

“I’m just telling the truth... “ Yue Yang gave an evil smile, he acted like a perverted uncle. Sky Disaster grew uncomfortable under his gaze. After coughing for a while, Yue Yang turned decent again. He then started reprimanding like an old man. “Actually I don’t blame you all, because you guys have yet to see the world, so it’s normal for y’all to be narrow minded and hopeless, it would be strange if y’all are reasonable! Wait, don’t attack me first, let me finish what I want to say! “

Yue Yang quickly waved his hand when he saw Sky Disaster raising her fist.

At this time, Yue Yang realized that a person had sat beside him without him realizing.

He sat on the ground casually with two legs stretched out. He was only clad in a rough sackcloth with long dark gold chains wound around his neck and arms. This crestfallen man looked like a farmer with unshaven moustache. He looked like a forty years old uncle with a mediocre look.

But his powers shocked Yue Yang slightly.

On the surface he looked like a Level One Innate, but Yue Yang estimated that this crestfallen uncle would at least be a powerful person with rank as Level Eight Innate. He might even be near a Level Nine Innate.

Although he looked at Yue Yang calmly without any emotions, he was emitting an invisible sense of violent vibe akin to that of a ferocious tiger hiding in the jungle, just waiting to pounce on its prey. The target didn't sense it, but he would be in deep trouble already.

“You are Sky Calamity?” Yue Yang turned around and asked.

“Sky Crime.” The crestfallen uncle caressed the ancient box with his callus filled hand, causing the heavy black golden chain to give crackling sounds.

“Why didn't the mean Sky Calamity come?” Yue Yang asked again.

“Haven't you heard of the saying, ‘Once Sky Calamity comes, everything ten metres within him would be destroyed? He will start his killing spree once he comes, if you are suicidal, I can summon him!’”

“Then nevermind, i'm different from you, i don't have the hobby of being abused.” Yue Yang retaliated.

“If you don't have any good reasons, then i'm going to strike

now.” Sky Calamity who was hiding somewhere said arrogantly. Of course, he was stronger than Sky Crime and was just behind the rank of the Phoenix Fairy Beauty, he didn’t have to care so much like how Sky Sword was. Even if he couldn’t guarantee that he could kill Yue Yang, there’s still a high possibility for him to injure Yue Yang severely.

“I don’t intend to convince you all, to put it forward bluntly, you all are goddamn stubborn! I’m too lazy to ask y’all to help, it wouldn’t affect me much if the Black Hell King were to destroy Da Xia anyway. I don’t really care if i can’t return to the Yue Clan Castle because I’m going to reside in the Heaven Realms soon and I’m already in the midst of application for migration. I’ve even gotten the green card already, so what’s there to be afraid of? Things like the Ruins Palace, Ancient Passage, Warrior Soul and other treasures are all useless now! I am still a bachelor anyway, if you all aren’t afraid then why will I be?” Yue Yang started to laughed loudly.

“If I remember correctly, there’s this guy who is both a filial son and a loving brother, am I right?” Sky Disaster tilted her head and looked at Yue Yang playfully.

“I will bring fourth mother and my sister with me, I don’t care about the rest of the family members, the Black Hell King can’t do anything to me! Moreover, if Da Xia were to be destroyed, the Black Hell King will turn his target to you all, he will definitely not go after the minor people! But it’s hard to say what will happen to y’all because y’all have a big family business that many are eyeing on, hehe!” Yue Yang stated to scare them.

“You think the Black Hell King can invade our Demonic Palace?” Sky Crime’s particularly attractive voice sounded.

“No.” Yue Yang shook his head.

“Then you are just uttering bullshit! Bulshit of the bullshit!” Sky Sword couldn’t take it anymore. Yue Yang shouldn’t have spoken like this even if he was just fooling around with a kid!

“The Black Hell King couldn’t do it, but if there’s the combined power of Shun tian, the black Prince, Thousand Globins Sect Leader and the Thousand Goblins King who is about to get out of his seal, then what do you think the outcome will be?” Yue Yang asked.

“Still can’t! “Sky Realm thought for a while and replied grimly. “Even with the Great Demon Baruth and Ha Xin’s joining in, no one can invade our Demonic Palace. Third young master, it seems that you don’t quite know us well! “

“What if there’s two more people?” Yue Yang smiled after hearing. “What if the Scarlet Emperor and the Scarlet Concubine were to join in?”

“Come again?” upon hearing the name, even the vicious Sky Disaster was shocked. “The Scarlet Emperor?”

“Looks like my girl didn’t tell y’all!” Yue Yang smiled like a cunning fox. “A few days ago I heard that Shun Tian and the Black

Prince released a powerful ancient Ranker from the ancient sealing circle in the Evil Dragon Lair. That Ranker is none other than the Scarlet Emperor! If you guys are not familiar with his name, then I can tell y'all another name. Prison emperor! He was the arch enemy of the Scarlet Emperor six thousand years ago. As for the Black Hell King, he's just a lackey working under the Prison Emperor, and he's a unloyal lackey who betrayed his master, how can he compare to the Scarlet Emperor? “

“Is the Scarlet Emperor really that terrifying? “ Sky Disasters expression changed, but he looked more of being doubtful.

On hearing it, Yue Yang smiled immediately.

If he could move the other party, then his bullshit can continue. By spicing up his bullshit to make it more convincing, would working together with the Demonic Palace to counterattack the Black Hell Army still be a problem?

Glossary:

Ten Great Demons of Demonic Palace (天魔殿十大天魔):

1. 天诛 – Sky Execution
2. 天罚 – Sky Law
3. 天谴 – Sky Wrath
4. 天劫 – Sky Calamity (thorn devil's voice)
5. 天罪 – Sky Crime (attractive voice, clad in a rough sackcloth with long dark gold chains wounded around his neck and arms. This crestfallen man looked like a farmer with unshaven moustache. He looked like a forty years old uncle with a mediocre

look.)

6. 天灾 – Sky Disaster (cross-dressing girl who got molested verbally by Yue Yang)

7. 天怒 – Sky Fury (Platinum-ranked Sky Anguish Drum)

8. 天杀 – Sky Assassinate (always hiding)

9. 天剑 – Sky Sword (Saint-ranked Ancient Sword)

10. 天龙 – Sky Dragon (Dead)

Chapter 428 – Brother-In-Law's Anger!

“Is the Scarlet Emperor terrifying? How could you use terrifying to describe him?” Yue Yang expressed that this description was not good enough.

“If he’s not scary, then is he cute?” Sky Disaster couldn’t help but go against Yue Yang.

“You... The Scarlet Emperor could only be described with abominable. No other words fits more than this!” Hearing this, Sky Disaster became happy. However, when the others heard of it, they felt their heart clench. In this world, how many people could actually make Yue Yang call them abominable?

The Legends of the Prison Emperor was a long time ago and there were not many of them.

However, everyone knew that the Prison Emperor was a Supreme Ranker six thousand years ago. His was extremely powerful to the point that he could face Heaven Realm’s Three Great Leaders. Although Sky Law did not tell everyone, everyone already secretly knew about the news that Yue Yang had passed through the Prison Emperor’s Divine Palace. At that time everyone was extremely worried. Even if the seal on Heaven Realm’s Three Great Leaders was extended, once they are unsealed, they would become existences that rankers could not defy.

Nobody knew what happened in the Prison Emperor’s Divine Palace.

When Sky Law had quietly returned, she did not tell them what happened. She only told them that the seal on Heaven Realm's Three Great Leaders was already broken and they had left the Prison Emperor's Divine Palace.

Even Sky Execution was shocked trying to imagine what actually happened....

However, because of the unfathomable Yue Clan's Third Young Master, Sky Law did not die. Moreover, her strength had increased, rising to Innate Rank 10. In addition, the most mysterious thing is that, everytime Sky Law and Yue Yang worked together, her power would rise quickly. Before she had helped Yue Yang fight against Shun Tian, Black Prince and Baruth, her strength was just a bit higher than Sky Wrath.

After this battle, she had already surpassed Sky Wrath and truly became Demonic Palace's second strongest Great Sky Demon.

After the battle in the Prison Emperor's Divine Palace, even Sky Execution was shocked at her level up rate.

Without even three months, she was already a Rank 10 Innate.

Even her potential of breaking through was greater than before. Breaking through Zhi Zun's realm was something that can happen just around the corner.

Sky Wrath was left crying in defeat, with just three months, he had been distantly surpassed by Sky Law... The thing that made Sky Wrath want to kill himself was the secret technique that Yue Yang had taught Sky Law. The more Sky law trained the more her level went down. She had dropped down from Innate Rank 10 to Innate Rank 9, but her power did not drop and instead rose up. This made everyone's eyes pop out... It was precisely because of this secret technique that Sky Execution, Sky Wrath and the others understood that Yue Clan's Third Young Master was not weak leveled, rather it was because this brat did not need to level so high. He was capable of surpassing high leveled people with his weak level!

Even Sky Execution remained speechless when facing such an abnormal person.

If they could obtain this kind of secret technique, the Ten Great Sky Demons could probably sweep through the entire Tong Tian Tower.

The only problem was that the Yue Clan's Third Young Master was only willing to teach Sky Law!

Although everybody's heart thirsted for this knowledge, they would absolutely not make things difficult for Sky Law. After all, many things could only be obtained through oneself. It was just like the beasts and skills that a grimoire would give, they could only be bestowed by heaven and impossible to demand! Moreover, the things that were demanded might not even match the person!

After that battle in the Prison Emperor's Divine Palace, the shock

that Heaven Realm's Three Great Leaders had brought everybody of the Demonic Palace had not yet vanished.

Now, a Scarlet Emperor appeared!

Heaven Realm's Three Great Leaders were still not bad because they had all returned to Heaven Realm.

However, the Scarlet Emperor was not a person from Heaven Realm. He would definitely incite trouble within Tong Tian Tower...

"..." Thinking about this, Sky Calamity, Sky Crime, Sky Disaster and Sky Sword began to have headaches.

The Scarlet Emperor was completely different.

It would probably take him one year's time for him to completely recover.

What could they do within a year? Packing up their luggage and escape would be the natural answer. However, even if they escaped, where would they escape to?

"Describe the Scarlet Emperor, the more details the better!" Sky Crime's expression was very grave. The black gold chains on his arm shook.

“I do not dare say how strong the Scarlet Emperor is, but I can confirm one thing, that bastard is not easy to defeat... At that time, I went over to the Evil Dragon Lair and never expected this to happen... His self-important appearance was very discomfoting. Additionally Shun Tian’s and the Black Prince’s butt-kissing appearance made me very angry. So I used Nirvana Flames and World-Exterminating Wheel to cut him down.” Yue Yang expressed that he was a pacifist and when he attacked the Scarlet Emperor it was only to avert danger from the populace. As if he was a very good student and would be the best son-in-law.

“Shun Tian, Black Prince and the Scarlet Concubine were there and yet you still charged ahead?” Sky Disaster’s mouth formed an O, completely not believing him.

“I truly do not know if I should call you brave or stupid!” Sky Calamity continued to use his sharp voice to prick Yue Yang.

“If this young master didn’t attack him with my heroic resolution, you all would have already become stray dogs!” Yue Yang suddenly became angry and pointed at everyone else. He scolded them: “This young master had been beaten by the Scarlet Emperor that his skin had almost been peeled. Why do you think I even did this? Is it for a girl? For fame? Wrong, it was for you lazy bastards who have nothing to do! If I did not heavily injure the Scarlet Emperor when he escaped, would you guys still be in the mood to talk big? You would have already been hiding under your bed in fear! If this young master did not bring out the chestnut cracker Prison Emperor’s Divine Seal left by the Prison Emperor, angrily smashing it towards the Scarlet Emperor’s head and caving it, the one you would be facing right now would be the incomparably strong and woundless Scarlet Emperor! Moreover,

Shun Tian and the Black Prince, those two henchmen would also help him. You guys would have already been finished!

“The Scarlet Emperor was heavily injured by you? Under the attacks of Shun Tian, the Black Prince and the Scarlet Concubine, you were still able to heavily injure the Scarlet Emperor?” Sky Disaster did not dare believe it.

“This was what happened....” Yue Yang added his own details to the story and told them.

In the middle, there were naturally a few overstatements.

At the same time, he also bragged a bit, showing how heroic, how grand he was. He had forgotten to add that he had saved the millions and millions of lives in the Tong Tian Tower.

Although everyone ignored his bragging, the narration about his battle with the Scarlet Emperor was enough to shock them.

The strong Scarlet Emperor was completely outside their imagination.

Compared the the Black Hell King, the traitor that they were familiar of, the Scarlet Emperor was stronger by leaps and bounds...

A thought flashed through the Sky Demons' minds. Based on Demonic Palace's power, it would be hard to contend against the

Scarlet Emperor. Most probably if Sky Execution, Night Empress and Zhi Zun work together, they might have a chance...Even this abnormal Yue Clan Third Young Master would probably be needed.

“Is he weaker than Heaven Realm’s Three Great Leader?” Sky Crime’s expression was incredibly distressed. He once again sat beside the simple box and pondered over it.

“It’s a pity that Sister Sky Law had returned to Demonic Palace, if not she could probably help you.” Sky Disaster regretfully sighed.

“You are right. If she did not take advantage of my sleep and left without saying goodbye, the Scarlet Emperor would probably be more injured.” Yue Yang agreed, but was not aware of how vague these words were.

“Concretely speaking, how was he injured?” Sky Calamity carefully questioned.

“Half-dead state. Because I was not willing to let it go like this, I waited until Shun Tian and the Black Prince to leave and fought with him again. However, it still didn’t work. I was only able to cut an arm and a leg. If you were in this young master’s place, you would probably be insta-killed. I am not bluffing. If you have the time you could try it. I even dare say that if your leader Sky Execution fought with the completely recovered Scarlet Emperor, he would also face the consequences!” Yue Yang desperately bragged about himself as he recounted the events. He bragged as if he was stronger than Sky Execution.

“...” Sky Calamity and the others were once again shocked. This brat is so abnormal, the Scarlet Emperor was actually beaten close to death?

“Do you know where the Scarlet Emperor is? We must quickly find him and surround him. We must not let him recover!” Sky Sword became worried. The Scarlet Emperor had just escaped the Ancient Seal and was still very weak. If he was still unkillable, then if he had recovered to his peak, then it would be a disaster.

“I am truly sorry, I don’t know where he is hiding!” Yue Yang shook his shoulders showing that he had no way of knowing.

“Can you use your secret Innate Skill to probe the Scarlet Emperor’s true strength?” Sky Crime suddenly once again stood up and stared at Yue Yang.

“The Scarlet Emperor? My secret Innate Skill could not see through his strength. However, the Scarlet Concubine is probably at Sky-rank Level 3. This is equivalent to our [Zhi Zun](#)-rank 3. In other words, other than Zhi Zun, you are not even opponents for the Scarlet Concubine at peak strength. Once she has recovered, you all would be insta-killed by her! In your words, it would be like a Rank 3 Innate fighting against a level 7 [Overlord] or a level 8 [Emperor], extremely easy!” Yue Yang’s smile rejoiced at their misfortune. His smile was extremely annoying.

(Last: Just in case you forgot, Zhi Zun is not a name but a title.)

“...” For a moment, Sky Calamity, Sky Crime, Sky Disaster, Sky

Sword became silent.

The Scarlet Emperor was already very hard to deal with and now there is another Scarlet Concubine.

It seems like the Soaring Dragon Continent would truly not stay peaceful!

Yue Yang's bullshit was taking effect. His face carried a victorious smile. He wished he could be like [Zhu Geliang](#) and use fan himself with a goose-feathered fan.

An ancient voice seemed to echo from afar. When Yue Yang heard it, he felt that it was very strange. His heart felt that the voice came from behind but his ears felt that it came from afar. Without even guessing, this voice was definitely from their leader, Sky Execution!

Sky Execution only said one sentence: "We can join hands but there are conditions."

Yue Yang muttered: "I knew it wouldn't be this easy..."

When Sky Disaster heard it, she was very delighted: "Leader already told me about it. We, Demonic Palace, does not request for much, only three conditions. First, let Jun Wu You represent everyone to admit their mistakes against the founder of the Demonic Palace, hand down the imperial edict and kneel down to repent! Second, after defeating the Black Hell King, everyone will

use their all to explore God's Ruins and split the treasures, additionally share the Ascension Rhyme. Third, our Demonic Palace has a rule to return enmity with enmity. No matter how you beg Sky Law, we do not care, but since you killed Sky Dragon, you must let us surround and try to kill you once. If you can escape then it is your ability. If you lose, then leave your life."

"Great Aunt, if you were given these conditions, would you agree to them? Let alone the me, even a child who had eaten [Wisdom Fruits](#) until he became stupid would not accept them. I am still clever and wise Yue Clan's Third Young Master, who had never suffered any losses. I would bully others but not let anyone else bully me!" Yue Yang firmly opposed.

(Last: Remember how humans cannot eat wisdom fruits or else they'll become stupid)

"Is the first condition no good?" Sky Disaster was bewildered. Compared to the destruction of a country, isn't handing down an imperial edict for their crimes and kneeling down in repentance better?

"You go ask Jun Wu You that old guy. I cannot substitute him in agreeing. Men cannot randomly kneel against anyone. Moreover, he is still an emperor." Yue Yang clearly rejected the first condition.

"Then what about the second condition?" Sky Disaster asked.

"You all cannot explore God's Ruins and everything is on me. For What reason would I split the treasures? Of course I wouldn't do it!

Moreover, if you saw it, you would not even understand the Ascension Rhyme, would also request me to do it? You won't even help with anything, are you treating me as a laborer? No, unless you help me get rid of the Thousand Goblin King, there is no need to discuss this." Yue Yang was a model at being someone who would not let himself suffer. If this kind of person became a negotiator, they would be geniuses.

"Then let us first discuss the third condition. Since you killed Sky Dragon, let us try to surround and kill you once, and then let bygones be bygones. What's wrong with this one?" Sky Disaster could not understand.

"Little friend, have you ever seen employees ganging up on their boss? I am your future boss who would give you treasures, divine tools, weapons and Divine Beasts and yet you do not respectfully kiss my ass but also want to kill me? If you killed me, where would you find people to explore God's Ruins? Would you even know how to advance? Would you even understand the Ascension Rhyme? Would you even know how to enter Heaven Realm? An employee should be aware that he is an employee. Tell me, that wretch Sky Dragon wanted to fight over a woman with this boss, of course I would kill him, could it be that I must respect him as my ancestor? You all should also not stick out for an idiot like him, you are just bringing trouble for yourselves! Let me say it clearly, no matter how many betrothal gifts you want, this young master will give it. You do not have to be modest, especially the aunt that had grown careless. If you want to have an extramarital affair, I could even consider it!" The shameless guy from another world displayed his highest tricking skill as he spoke out convincingly

"Speaking with you is giving me a headache!" Sky Disaster could

not stand this guy. Once the situation returns to him, he actually has a reason for them all.

Actually, Yue Yang also lacked the confidence in understanding the Ascension Rhyme.

As for the inner region of God's Ruins, he also didn't understand how to advance.

He did not even enter the outer region and only strolled the edges of the ancient passage twice. Yue Yang secretly rejoiced that the opposite side was not clear about this, if not his trick would be exposed.

Naturally, he was indifferent about it.

He cannot expose his weakness, if he did not understand, he must pretend to understand! He must first control the other party!

As long as he was able to trick these madmen and let them in the same boat, even if they found out the truth it would be too late for regrets. Naturally, Yue Yang also grasped a few information about this. After all Fourth Mother might now the secrets of the Ascension Rhyme. Moreover, the knowledge passed on by the tragic guy's mother has not completely been revealed yet so there is a possibility that it contained the secrets of God's Ruins.

The tragic guy's mother had definitely entered God's Ruins. She definitely knew a few things. The only problem was that Yue Yang

was not sure that he could sort out all that knowledge.

“Even if we work together, we must still fight!” Sky Crime stood up and this black gold chains clanked.

“I thought you were the most honest, I never imagined that you were the most violent, did I provoke you?” Yue Yang was puzzled.

“Even if we are not taking revenge for Sky Dragon, we must also beat you up once.” Sky Crime said.

“Why?” Yue Yang was baffled.

“Because you seem to need some spanking...” Sky Disaster happily explained. This reason made Yue Yang speechless.

“We welcome you to join our ranks as one of the Ten Great Sky Demons.” That close yet far voice of Sky Execution had finished the entire negotiation. When Yue Yang heard it, he shouted like a cat that had its tail stepped on: “I did not agree to this. This is called forcing someone, this is called ‘harassment’! I absolutely do not agree...”

“Just agree to it. Sister Sky Law would then think about your relationship with her. She had made a vow before that she would only marry someone from Demonic Palace.” Sky Disaster did not forget to throw rocks while Yue Yang was down.

“Fuck!” Yue Yang finally could not hold back swearing.

Sky Crime, Sky Sword, Sky Disaster, Sky Fury, who had rushed back, the hidden Sky Assassinate, and the erratic Sky Calamity had slowly surrounded him.

It seems that they were prepared to gang up on Yue Yang. Even if Yue Yang had entered Demonic Palace, their original intention of beating him up did not change.

Yue Yang became angry and raised his Hui Jin Magic Blade and Crescent Moon: “If I knew earlier that this was a bandit’s nest, this daddy would not have wasted his words. Who’s afraid of who? Come, attack me. Sky Disaster you are the bad. Don’t let this daddy catch you or else I would strip you in front of everyone and let you understand what’s called brother-in-law’s anger!”

A few Sky Demons were speechless.

Is having this shameless bastard enter Demonic Palace a good thing?

Chapter 429 – Breaking Through A New Realm, With Help

Sky Sword who stood behind Yue Yang, went all-out.

The Saint-ranked Ancient Sword was unleashed.

Bright light spilled endlessly from the sword!

Yue Yang summoned his Grimoire immediately and raised a protective shield. Naturally, the protective shield would be unable to completely resist the attack of the Saint-ranked Ancient Sword, but it could slow down the speed of Sky Sword. Having bought himself the tiniest bit of time, Yue Yang began his counterattack. The Hui Jin Magic Blade and the Crescent Moon Blade, miraculously struck the [fuller](#) of the ancient sword and on contact of the three, a peal of humming was produced.

(Last: Fuller is the spinal/middle part of the sword)

The Saint-ranked Ancient Sword, had a spirit and despite being trapped by the attack of the two swords on its fuller, it was able to resist the attack and shook off the Hui Jin Magic Blade and the Crescent Moon Blade.

However, it couldn't deal with the attack from Yue Yang, which was concentrated with Yue Yang's Innate Qi.

Ding!

A sound rang out.

Sky Sword's right fingers were jolted numb and his sword almost flew out of his hand.

Sky Sword felt that Yue Yang had aimed the attack at his weakest area, a strongest strike on his weakest area, he felt sick at heart and almost vomited blood. He had never thought his weakness would be on his sword's fuller and even more so, didn't expect Yue Yang to be able to figure out that weakness.

Luckily this wasn't a life or death fight, if not, he would have been in danger.

Sky Sword, who was forced backwards by Yue Yang's miraculous attack felt lingering fear in his heart which he couldn't overcome even after some time.

He didn't know that Yue Yang had a brilliant skill, the 'Divine Vision' which could combine perfectly with the Heaven Eye realm of an Innate's formless Sword Qi to form an even more formidable 'Heaven Eyes Divine Vision', which had allowed Yue Yang to immediately see Sky Sword's weakness when he had first attacked. There was no doubt that it also had something to do with Yue Yang's enamourment with the Saint-ranked Ancient Sword. Even when he already possessed the Hui Jin Magic Blade and the Crescent Moon Blade, Yue Yang's desire for treasure remained insatiable.

How could Yue Yang not be tempted by the Saint-ranked Ancient Sword? To steal a few glances was perfectly normal!

Sky Sword retreated and repressed the panic in his heart.

As Sky Sword's state of mind became peaceful, with his sword in hand, his Sword Qi began to soar.

“Thousand swords piercing the heart!”

This move was one of the top 3 unique skills of Sky Sword. It wasn't usually used but in an attempt to oppress Yue Yang's spirit, Sky Sword was putting in his best effort.

The entire land felt as though it was being severed by million of rays of Sword Qi. the rays of Sword Qi then became almost visible in the air, before they all shot towards Yue Yang's body with a whoosh.

Among them, there was a sword with the strongest power and greatest intent to kill.

It was no other than the Saint-ranked Ancient Sword, its tip like a cold star, pointed straight at Yue Yang's heart.

“Too slow!”

Yue Yang bellowed.

His real body appeared behind the Sky Sword as a million swords passed through his afterimage.

Such a move that concentrated powerful Sword Qi may not necessarily be effective since in order to hit Yue Yang, who had previously adapted to the Scarlet Emperor's superspeed attacks, the Sky Sword still had to be much faster. With the power of Yue Yang's Yin and Yang abilities, the Hui Jin Magic and Crescent Moon Blades controlled by Yue Yang moved at extremely slow speeds. They drew a large circle as if in slow motion, then aimed to attack Sky Sword. Sky Sword thought there was no way such an attack at a snail's pace would be able to hit himself, but when he tried to lift his sword, then did he realised that his own movements had become much slower and more snail-like under the Qi of his opponent..... Now, as he faced the two blades that were chopping their way towards him, Sky Sword could only look on helplessly, at a loss.

I'm done for!

Cold sweat broke out in Sky Sword's heart.

Just when the blades were right at the tip of his nose, the Saint-ranked Ancient Sword suddenly emitted a burst of golden light pillar and automatically flew around his body to protect him.

With two clangs, the sword blocked off the attacks from the Hui Jin Magic Blade and the Crescent Moon Blade which its master had no means to defend himself against.

However, such protective behavior would have caused large amounts of energy to be depleted, even for the Saint-ranked Ancient Sword. The radiance of the sword dwindled rapidly, just like how a Ranker has become extremely exhausted and was too tired to fight again. Yue Yang laughed out loud. He then mimicked the style of the Scarlet Emperor, he extended his leg very quickly and kicked Sky Sword heavily in the stomach, causing Sky Sword to be thrown far away.

Although the speed of Yue Yang's kick was still far from that of the Scarlet Emperor's, it already had the feel of that of the Scarlet Emperor's.

As long as he continues to improve and comprehend, Yue Yang could very possibly achieve the same speed as the Scarlet Emperor. With Yue Yang's talent, it was even possible that he would surpass the speed of the Scarlet Emperor. As Yue Yang was enjoying fighting and comprehending, the drum beating giant guy rushed up to him angrily and threw a heavy punch at Yue Yang. What surprised Yue Yang was that the barbarian bull-like guy had a seriously fierce fist!

Not fighting with the help of any items nor Beasts, just with the power of his fist, he pierced the protective armour. It was a first for Yue Yang to meet such an enemy.

The large fist was unstoppable and it banged on Yue Yang's chest.

The power was more than that of the impact of ten mammoths

and giant elephants.

If he had to block the full punch with only his body, Yue Yang wouldn't have been able to survive no matter how alike his survival skills were to a cockroach.

But, even the Scarlet Emperor had trouble landing direct hits on Yue Yang since Yue Yang had the Three Mysterious Styles, not to mention the lumbering cow-like Sky Fury.

Yue Yang's body spun.

The bombardment of Sky Fury's heavy punches caused a temporary flash of pain in Yue Yang's ribs. At the same time, Yue Yang had already begun his counterattack.

“Boom boom boom boom boom boom boom.....”

It was a counterattack like raindrops. When Sky Fury threw a punch, Yue Yang would have returned the attack with 36 well-aimed kicks to Sky Fury's stomach before Sky Fury could even retract his fist. Yue Yang even hit Sky Fury's chin on the 36th kick. The kick would have caused other living creatures, even Ye Kong, who was widely known for his defensive skills, to flip over. Yet, what stunned Yue Yang for the second time was that Sky Fury merely stumbled a few steps backwards and held his head for 2 seconds as his head spun before he simply recovered from the attack.

Yue Yang was speechless. Was that thing really human?

Upon seeing such incredible defensive skills, Demons as well as the huge dragons would have had to call Sky Fury big brother!

Yue Yang didn't know that Sky Fury had the toughest body defence in the whole of Sky Demon Palace. Born with a tough physique coupled with his gift for endurance, Sky Fury was possibly the strongest and most resistant to beatings in the entire palace.

Yue Yang would never be able to defeat such a human tank with mere punches and kicks if he didn't use the Nirvana Flames and the World Exterminating Wheel.

“Good lad, you've incurred my wrath! “ Although he may appear to be an honest fellow, Sky Fury was by no means stupid. He knew it would be foolish to go head-to-head with Yue Yang in close-combat as it was akin to asking for a beating and he would not be able to gain any advantage.

Hence, he retreated ten metres, grabbed his platinum drum sticks and with a huge burst of strength, punched it once ferociously.

The earth shook under the great impact.

The deafening “Boom” emptied Yue Yang's mind as he lost his train of thoughts and almost fainted.

Yue Yang never thought this drum would be able to produce such a deafening sound.

Yue Yang was mentally prepared to defend himself against the drum as he knew the drum wasn't simple but when the destructive shockwaves blasted, Yue Yang realised that he had miscalculated.

Yue Yang was now swaying like he was drunk, confused and disoriented.....

Sky Fury laughed from where he had retreated far away to.

Sky Crime who hadn't retreated, expressed a look of pure misery on his face even though he had his fingers in his ears.

Sky Fury was famed not for his endurance to beatings nor for his astonishing strength. It also wasn't for his temper but for his Heaven Shaking Drums which could produce sound as terrifying as when the heavens are angry.

Yue Yang suffered because he didn't know this.

“So much for being arrogant, so much for having awesome abilities. Show me how good you are now!” Sky Fury was ecstatic. Once the ringing of the Heaven Shaking Drums has struck their target, the victim would fall into a state of dizziness and disorientation. Since even the powerful Sky Disaster had been affected for 10 seconds when hit thus Sky Fury was sure that Yue

Yang wouldn't recover for at least 10 seconds! With this time, Sky Fury was confident that he could reduce Yue Yang to a sorry state.....The unstoppable fists were unleashed once again, hurling towards Yue Yang forcefully!

Yet, there had never been an enemy who had gotten away unharmed after disadvantaging Yue Yang.

The person who can take advantage of Yue Yang must still be unborn!

Just as Sky Fury's heavy punches landed on Yue Yang's body, Sky Disaster turned ashen and shouted:" Watch out Sky Fury! Sigh, you dumb ox....."

She watched helplessly as Sky Fury smashed Yue Yang's afterimage while the real Yue Yang who had already escaped the dizzy trance appeared atop Sky Fury. Sky Fury wouldn't have anything to fear if he was only going to be beaten up since he was resistant to bodily attacks.

Also, if Yue Yang was going to attack with the Hui Jin Magic Blade and the Crescent Moon Blade, Sky Disaster could've helped.

However, upon seeing what Yue Yang took out, not only Sky Disaster but even Sky Crime, who hadn't budged from the start, picked up his big ancient box and fled hurriedly.

It was because what Yue Yang took out was the Spirit Absorbing

Bell!

It had originally belonged to the Scarlet Emperor!

If Yue Yang had not had the Nirvana Flames and his Innate Qi to protect his life back when he had battled the Scarlet Emperor, the demonic energy of the Spirit Absorbing Bell would not have been dispersed and Yue Yang would have been the one killed. The Spirit Absorbing bell was no joking matter.....When Yue Yang rang the bell, not to mention Sky Fury who was beneath the bell, even he felt giddy himself!

The entire Xie Ma (Slanting Horse) Valley was engulfed by the same ringing, the exact same shockwaves of the Spirit Absorbing Bell that had once caused the whole Evil Dragon Lair to collapse.

Today at the Xie Ma Valley, even if it was not to the extent of collapse, it caused a giant explosion on the bodies of Sky Disaster, Sky Crime, Sky Sword, Sky Assassinate and the hidden Sky Calamity due to a clash between their protection Qi and the shockwaves. Just like a sandstorm in a desert, it was earth-shattering, with loess in the air that reduced visibility. It turned out that the earth had collapsed in many places and the cracks in the ground widened.

Yue Yang felt the lingering ringing was unbearable and hastily kept the Spirit Absorbing Bell. By this time, the entire Xie Ma Valley had already been destroyed beyond recognition.

The ground was shattered and the skies were gloomy, the earth

dark.

The air was filled with sand particles.

Bleeding from his ears, Sky Fury wobbled and swayed like an idiot.

Taking a few step shakily, Sky Fury fell with a thud and clouds of smoke and dust rose from the ground.

“Zzzzzzz, Zzzzzzz.....” Sky Fury let out thunderous rumbling snores from where he laid on the ground. Yue Yang broke out in sweat. Sky Fury was worthy of his name just by the sound of his snoring. Even if snoring, especially from a man came as no surprise, reportedly, the loudest snores could go up to over 80 decibels, which was no less than the noise of cars in traffic. Yet, the snores of Sky Fury was simply unbelievably loud, it was like thunder and was louder than the whistle of passing trains.

“Luckily you are not married or you would have been such a nuisance to your wife.” Yue Yang wiped sweat off his forehead exaggeratedly.

“.....”What made Yue Yang break out in more sweat was that Sky Assassinate actually managed to slip stealthily over while Sky Fury was snoring to hold him at knifepoint. Yue Yang didn’t even notice he was under attack, with the platinum ranked dagger on his throat until a small line of blood formed on his neck.

Yue Yang really admired Sky Assassinate for his abilities to conceal himself and sneak up to assassinate targets.

Yue Yang was definitely not an easy man to get to but Sky Assassinate had successfully went under Yue Yang's super radar!

Yue Yang appeared a few metres away with blood on his neck as his afterimage disappeared for the third time. Yue Yang was not an easy target and he had teleported away. Sky Assassinate did not turn around. Another treasure, a platinum ranked crossbow, appeared in his hand. As if he had already known where Yue Yang would teleport to, Sky Assassinate was already shooting in the direction where Yue Yang appeared.

This ability to make good judgements caused Yue Yang to once again feel admiration for Sky Assassinate. It was indeed true that everyone in the Sky Demon Palace were highly skilled and impressive people who cannot be underestimated!

Whoosh whoosh whoosh!

In a flash, the three arrows released continuously from the crossbow hit Yue Yang's vest and pierced through his armour.....

They were all gold ranked 'Destroying Demon Arrow'.

The fire and ice shield formed by Yue Yang's Blazing Flames and Freezing Ice were all pierced. They were able to block the combined attack of Level 5 Innates but were unable to block the

arrows.

“It would be rude to not respond in kind!” Yue Yang waved his hands and the 3 arrows vanished.

Although the golden ranked arrows were formidable, they were nothing but gifts to Yue Yang.

Just when Sky Assassinate regretted giving the arrows to the greedy and shameless Yue Yang for free, Yue Yang began to attack. His yang ability condensed to form a purple flame bow, ice and thunder as well as the Heaven Runes. They slowly merged to form 3 icy purple electric arrows.

Sky Assassinate fled immediately.

He hid under the ground.

However, the 3 arrows whizzed angrily and immediately hit the spot where Sky Assassinate had disappeared into the ground. The surface of the ground exploded, the terrifying power forced Sky Assassinate out from the ground.

Yue Yang waved his Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear and swiped at Sky Assassinate, making use of his long weapon to defeat Sky Assassinate's shorter dagger. If Yue Yang had used his Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Dagger, he may not have been able win Sky Assassinate, who was a master with daggers. But, having always taken advantage of his own strengths to defeat his enemy's

weakness, why would Yue Yang have abided by the rules and fought with Sky Assassinate using his dagger?

Having defeated Sky Sword, Sky Assassinate and Sky Fury in succession, Yue Yang thought the fighting was almost done.

However, Sky Disaster, Sky Crime and Sky Calamity stepped up and surrounded him.....

Yue Yang was truly annoyed.

He rose up into the sky and coagulated the newly refined Heaven's Fury Fire Lotus. A terrifying power descended upon the ground, causing Sky Disaster, Sky Crime and Sky Calamity to experience feelings of suffocation and petrification. In the sky, flowers of the purple gold Heaven's Fury Fire Lotus appeared from Yue Yang's hands. When Yue Yang reached the limit of his body, it felt like he had to release the energy from his body or he wouldn't feel good, thus he followed his heart and pushed his palms towards the ground.....A massive power escaped his palms and rumbled towards the ground. Sky Disaster fled immediately and Sky Calamity followed suit and hid himself. Only Sky Crime decided to take on Yue Yang attack recklessly. Sky Crime cried out from pain, the sound was as horrifying as the wails of the countless souls atoning in hell and around him, he illusioned demons from hell. Sky Crime remained in place, holding up his big ancient box and forcibly resisting the power from Yue Yang's palm.

However, the ground beneath Sky Crime exploded with a bang.

With Sky Crime at the core, the shape of a palm appeared within a ten metre radius on the ground.

The print of the palm was clearly visible.

It was exactly like Yue Yang's palm.

Only that it was gigantic and five metres deep in the ground. Where Sky Crime stood, there remained a small heap of soil. However, even when Sky Crime looked down at the ground, he couldn't help but feel astonishment at the might of Yue Yang's palm.....

A strike from his palm had such power from where he was in the air.

Was Yue Yang really human?

“Psycho!” Sky Disaster was also pale from fright. Since her combat strength came mostly from her Beasts, without them, her combat skills would only be at half strength. But when did Yue Yang even summoned his Beasts for help? Like what Sky Law said before, if they only battled with combat skills, there was no way anyone could win Yue Yang. He wasn't a genius at combat skills but an abnormal freak who cannot be described with the word genius!

“Come again, you can all attack together. Let me see just what abilities you 6 Great Demons have!” As pride swelled in Yue Yang's

heart, he shamelessly boasted that he wants to challenge the 6 Great Demons.

This move may seem egotistical on the surface.

But Sky Crime, who had taken an attack from Yue Yang, knew that Yue Yang really did have the ability to challenge them.

It was only natural that nobody realised that Yue Yang was actually pretending. The egotistical front was only a disguise..... The truth was that Yue Yang felt his state of mind has gradually went into a new, wonderful Realm due to the battle and he needed external stress to help him achieve this breakthrough. The 6 Great Demons were exactly the kind of pressure and motivation he needed, thus Yue Yang wanted to make use of their combined power to force himself into the new Realm. Just like how divers use the diving boards, Yue Yang only wanted to 'borrow' some power to upgrade himself.....

All along, Yue Yang had battled numerous experts and benefitted greatly.

At those points in time, Yue Yang hadn't been able to fully immerse his mind into the battle since they were all life and death moments. So, even if he had been close to breaching the new Realm, he hadn't dared to attempt to comprehend and upgrade himself.

Now, the 6 Great Demons were his best enemies that wouldn't kill him. Where would he even find such a great opportunity for

sparring?

Yue Yang then submitted himself to the comprehending of the new Realm, his body fully under the command of his subconsciousness.

He screamed like a madman and dived head down.

A light shined deep in his eyes, signalling the start of his breakthrough of the new Realm.....

Chapter 430 – Level Up, Two New Skills

There had never been history of six Sky Demons attacking one single human being ever before. Even Sky Execution hadn't 'enjoyed' such a treatment.

One hour after an intense fight.

The six dejected Sky Demons looked angrily at Yue Yang who was showered in light of the levelling up pillar. After a feisty fight, not only did Yue Yang not collapse, he made use of the six Sky Demons' power to level himself up, how could this happen? During the fight between Yue Yang and the six Sky Demons, he utilize all his treasures fully. Other than his trump card, the Five Colors of Divine Light and the Black Light, he used all of his other treasures and barely come to a tie with them.

Fighting against the joint power of the six was no easy feat.

Luckily Yue Yang had long been accustomed to fighting against a group of people. With many trainings, and taking advantage of the situation that he was just about to have his breakthrough, he managed not to be beaten to pulp by the six Sky Demons.

Today, his Summoning Grimoire was also put into great use.

Although Yue Yang didn't summon any Beast, 'World' the special type Guardian Beast helped Yue Yang a lot. It's skills, Chaotic Beginning and Domain Elements were of great help to Yue Yang but would weaken his enemies tremendously.

If not for it, it would be hard for Yue Yang to have a tie with the six Sky Demons.

Of course Yue Yang wasn't using World deliberately. He did it subconsciously because he hadn't recalled World after summoning it from his Grimoire. This resulted in the six Sky Demons finding the fight becoming more depressing and sickening as it continued. They realised that the reason was because Yue Yang's Grimoire would follow him around, so it would stay effective. But for others who summoned their Grimoire, once they leave their protective cloak, the Grimoire wouldn't offer them any protection anymore... Yue Yang's Grimoire made them very speechless because it did not seem like any other Grimoire, it was like a Beast who possessed intelligence. It was too 'smart' to be a Grimoire.

"I think there wouldn't be any other people in this world who is as abnormal as Yue Yang, all the things that happened around him are abnormal!" Sky Calamity and Sky Crime had given up on criticising him.

"It's fine, if he were to be any normal man, he wouldn't be called the Third Young Master of the Yue Clan." Sky Disaster felt that this was alright. Having to deal with a weird guy was better than dealing with people that were all the same.

Yue Yang had no time to bother about the Sky Demons who were both envious and jealous of him. As compared to normal warriors, he had abnormal inherent skills.

But it wasn't that exaggerated.

He was basking with pleasure under the level up golden light pillar, and he couldn't withdraw from this feeling after a long while. The six Sky Demons kept sighing because honestly speaking, they were really envious of him. To have a breakthrough at such a high level was not easily. Yue Yang's tremendous improvement caused them to drool.

The mud that splattered into the air during the intense fight fell down gradually and the sky returned back to how it was like before.

However, the messy ground couldn't go back to its original state that easily.

Perhaps the sand in the Tilted Horse Valley required decades or maybe centuries to wipe out the traces left behind from the battle today. Especially the giant pit created as a result of the clashes between Innates. A few thousand years would be required to overturn this devastating scene.

After ranking up to a whole new level, Yue Yang's first feeling was that he felt closer to nature.

It was as if his heart and soul was fused into the surrounding, the air was like his breath, his chest was the sky, his body was the earth, his legs were the tall mountains and both of his hands, together with his will, stretched towards the limitless outer space... it was different to the Natural Hearts as it included all

creatures in the world, Yue Yang's level was beyond that in terms of sensations, he felt like he was a part of the world completely, with the world inside his body and he could change the world just with his will, and his energy also came from his will... In Yue Yang's previous breakthrough, he felt like he was a giant who could support the Heavens with his hands and shake the ground by stomping his feet, but not this time round. He did not feel like a giant anymore but he felt like he became part of the Heaven and the Earth.

Although his body was still his, it was connected to Heaven and the Earth.

Yue Yang thought that this was similar to when the Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man absorbed the The Heart of Earth. But she was merely connected to the Earth.

But for him now, he was part of the Heaven and the Earth, he could even be connected to any creature in it... When Yue Yang made his breakthrough, the uncontrollable black hole like Devour inherent skill in his body became more apparent and stronger as it absorbed the energy from the Heaven and Earth directly. It no longer needs to wait to absorb energy after Yue Yang is beaten up.

Of course Yue Yang also didn't understand what use does this black hole like presence does.

Could it be that it was the Universal Pouch?

Or that the place where the Heavenly Sword Goddess resided

needed more pure energy from the Heaven and Earth, so this black hole had to absorb energy endlessly for her?

Yue Yang couldn't understand all of these because those weren't what he could control, it was similar to the feeling he had when he was training with the big loli in his dreams...

"I finally leveled up to Platinum Grimoire after fighting for so long!" Yue Yang's Golden Grimoire levelled up to mid rank after the evolution of the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen. It finally rose to high rank after the battle at the prison Emperor's Palace. Then he went through killing of Tiger Nian, Nightmare, Demon Eye, Sky Dragon and Jiang Ying the dragon girl, and exploring of the Five Elements Palace, attacking of the Scarlet Emperor, Shun Tian, the Black Prince and the Scarlet Concubine. But as he rarely used his Summoning grimoire in this process, it did not get to upgrade. Today, the high rank Golden Grimoire finally levelled up to become a beginner Platinum Grimoire as a result of his solo fight against the six Sky Demons and the impact from his breakthrough.

It could be said that if not for him attacking the Scarlet Emperor and gaining abundant experience and realisation from it, Yue Yang's grimoire would not be able to level up until now.

He finally understood now why the Summoning Grimoire could level up easily at the early stage but towards the later part the powerful ones all held Golden Grimoires only.

The reason was because battling experience wasn't the main thing that drives it's levelling up.

Even if one were to accumulate sufficient battling experience, the Grimoire mightn't rank up!

Yue Yang's summoning Grimoire became more shiny and glamorous after its level up. Considering the rays alone, there were almost more than ten shades.....

No one's Summoning Grimoire contained as many Runes as that of in Yue Yang's.

On closer inspection, one would realise that all the narrow vein lines on it were formed by tiny runes.

"..." Yue Yang remembered that after upgrading his Grimoire, he was rewarded with the Ancient Code limitations. As he opened it up anxiously, he was stunned by what he saw.

Surprisingly his frequently used Sky Eyes Divine Vision did not get to level up.

Maybe it had better ways of being utilised Yue Yang didn't know the reason why as if now ,but his rarely used Counterfeit Inherent Skill was upgraded and he was rewarded with another skill.

Mesmerising: When the person possessing this skills smile, it will trigger a special effect that would hypnotise the other party (only effective towards those of the opposite gender).

The awarded 'mesmerising' ability was correlated to the Counterfeit inherent ability. The stronger the Counterfeit Inherent Ability is, the stronger the mesmerising effect will be. More accurately, the mesmerising ability was a special type of counterfeit, it is just that the effect wouldn't appear on the user himself but on the other person of opposite gender.

Yue Yang was speechless after looking at it.

Wouldn't this be forcing him into smiling more frequently?

If he were to be in a bad mood, then this skill couldn't be used at all. But fortunately it was rewarded to him. If it were to be rewarded to the emotionless Xue Tan Lang, he wouldn't be able to use it in his entire life!

Other than the levelling up of the Counterfeit inherent Ability, and being rewarded with the 'mesmerising' ability, his first Guardian Beast, Phantom Shadow, was levelled up too.

The timely level up made Yue Yang pleasantly pleased.

Ah Man needed the most help from Phantom Shadow's upgrade, because she was part of Phantom Shadow originally. So she got from more aid from Phantom Shadow than Bloody Queen Red. Now, as Ah Man is fusing with the Heart of Earth and going towards becoming a two star Holy beast, this levelling up of Phantom Shadow came just in time! After obtaining the 'Giant Shadow', 'Possession', 'Reform' and 'Shadow Evasion', Phantom Shadow got its fifth skill, that is, 'Never leave your side'.

Never leave your side: All of the Phantom Shadows' exist due the will of the owner. If the owner doesn't die, the Phantom Shadows will not leave their owner, any special power won't be able to chase Phantom Shadow away from its owner's sides.

"I have hit the jackpot..." Yue Yang understood from his journey in the Five Elements Palace that Beasts couldn't do everything. If one wasn't able to summon it under certain rules and regulations, then the Beast would be useless no matter how strong it is. Now that Phantom Shadow possessed such a power, Yue Yang was very excited. Putting all things aside, at least Phantom Shadow wouldn't be restricted by the rules anymore.

If there were such rules in the Sixth floor, it couldn't be guaranteed that there wouldn't be any in the Seventh, Eighth, Ninth and Tenth floor.

Moreover, there might be some experts in the Heaven Realms such that the Three Great Leaders Yue Guang Ming, Xu Kong and Jiu Xiao, that could create an entire space that could restrict others from summoning their Beasts, that would be most desirable!

"You are smiling like a cooked dog head, let me see what good thing happened to you!" Sky Disaster went up interestedly, wanting to take a look at Yue Yang's Grimoire.

"Little kid, call me your brother-in-law and i'll give you some candies." Yue Yang quickly closed his Grimoire and teased Sky Disaster.

“Be careful that I’ll complain to sister Sky Law, and make her punish you to kneel down! “ Sky Disaster dodged Yue Yang’s attempt to embrace her as she raised her fist to punch him. The all smiles Sky Disaster waved at least a hundred punches onto Yue Yang, and the strength of the punches weren’t any weaker than that of Sky Fury’s. This caused Yue Yang to be incensed, he would definitely scrip this girl’s clothes off if he finds a chance and get back his compensation with her body.

“So are you going to complain that I’m flirting with you? Actually I belong under the category of those who will give in to temptations easily, I will definitely tell her truthfully that I betrayed her because some girl seduced me... “Yue Yang thought of the sensation he got from touching Sky Disaster’s butt and was pleased. Of course the Phoenix Fairy Beauty couldn’t know about this, if not she would definitely be so jealous and salty. He also believed that Sky Disaster who was taken advantage of wouldn’t tell her too because she still had some pride, unlike Yue Yang.

“Wait, there’s something wrong with your smile. “ Sky Calamity saw Yue Yang’s face and was startled for a while. She examined him closely and shouted. “ This is similar to sister Sky Law’s Charm Inherent ability, but the strength is weaker. You learnt her skills secretly didn’t you? No, hers is an inherent skill, what about yours? “

“What are you talking about? “Yue Yang was best at feigning ignorance. Actually if he kept a straight face, his Mesmerising ability wouldn’t be able to work.

Sky Disaster thought she saw it wrongly and was a little confused.

She frowned her eyebrows instantly. Certainly she doubted Yue Yang, but she didn't know that there exist such a weird skill.

Moreover, Sky Crime and the rest didn't seem to detect it, so Sky Disaster was suspecting if she sensed it wrongly.

After hmph-ing and getting away from Yue Yang's harassment, she ran away. "I'll fight against you after finishing the Black Hell King, I will make sure that you understand what the joint power of the six Sky Demons is like! I didn't summon my beast this time round, but I'll let you experience what Sky Disaster truly means! "

Yue Yang became furious from hearing. "You think I'll be afraid of a little girl like you? "

Sky Crime coughed and walked toward him. "Third young master, welcome to the Sky Demon Palace, do you want to exchange informations? "

Yue Yang nodded his head interestedly. "Then open up your box first and let me see what's inside. Exchanging informations? So you want to know my secrets? Then use the big box to exchange for them! " Sky Crime turned around immediately after hearing! Yue Yang pointed middle finger to him. Sky Crime put it across so nicely, but would he really reveal his deepest secrets?

Of course, it's right for Sky Crime to reject Yue Yang's offer. Because even if he were to use the ancient big box for exchange, Yue Yang would never reveal his real secrets!

On the topic of being shameless, who would be able to surpass Yue Yang?

“We'll fight later. “ Sky Calamity fought the least, but was injured the most. He was injured by Yue Yang even before he made his appearance because he was tricked by Yue Yang. Under Yue Yang's Sky Eyes Divine Vision, Sky Calamity's high speed movement would be of no meaning. Being hit with the Innate Invisible Sword Qi made Sky Disaster swear that he would avenge himself for today.

“ Sky Calamity, how old are you this year? You are a few hundred years old already, you are even an Innate Ranker, why are you still acting like a child? Be less petty. Moreover, I did not do it deliberately, it was you who knocked onto my Sword Qi, I'm innocent.” Yue Yang's act of feigning innocence after injuring Sky Calamity caused Sky Calamity to almost lash out at him.

Sky Fury quickly carried his Sky Anguish Drum and went away. Yue Yang almost snatched his drum away just now. Luckily he managed to get it back with all his might.

As for Sky Sword who possessed the sacred ancient sword, he ran off even earlier.

When he realised that Yue Yang saw the ancient sword on his

back with glimmering eyes, it would be strange if he don't feel scared!

Sky Assassinate who was once an assassin actually admired Yue Yang. Perhaps he was the only one among the Sky Demon who don't hate Yue Yang. Sky Assassinate did not care about Yue Yang's shameless acts during the battle, all he saw was a Ranker who was fighting against six Sky Demons all by himself.

“Fighting is good, actually we are all quite bored. “ Sky Assassinate left these words before going invisible.

“...” Yue Yang was preparing to return to the Yue Clan Castle but the thought of his rivals launching a surprise attack flashed across his mind. He didn't have to worry about Xue Wu Xia, Luo Hua City Mistress, Princess Qian Qian. His sister Yue Shuang was with his mother safely in the Mirage and under the protection of Grandma Wu Teng so their safety wouldn't be much of a problem. The only one he had to worry about was his second sister Yue Yu.

Yue Yu and her mentor didn't specialise in combats, so if the rivals were to know that they are in the Shang Jin Academy, they would be in trouble.

Yue Yang quickly changed his mind and went to the Shang Jin Academy to fetch Yue Yu.

When he stepped into the Shang Jin Academy, someone called him from behind. “Mate, do you know how to get to quiet small villa? “ This question almost made Yue Yang's heartbeat pause. But

still, he turned and flashed a bright grin. “Of course, I know the quiet small villa inside out, you can call me Mr. Know it all! “

The quiet small villa was where Yue Yu’s mentor resided. Visitors were rare on normal days, but today, someone actually asked for the directions to reach there.

Chapter 431 – An Old Friend Visiting? An Acting Contest!

Yue Yang turned around and realised that the person asking for directions was a cute female student.

From the school logo on her shirt, it could be inferred that she was from White Deer Academy in Tian Luo Kingdom.

Although Tian Luo Kingdom's Fragrance Academy was famous for its pretty female students, White Deer Academy was not bad too. The reason for these pretty students was because girls born in Tian Luo Kingdom were all beauties, and they had plenty of such rare assets. Of course, the female student in front of Yue Yang wasn't the kind that would dazzle one with one look. She was only an above average girl-next-door. She looked cute but her smile was more cordial and sweet than other regular beauties.

Just judging from her looks, she wasn't outstanding.

But this cute female student had a unique vibe that distracted Yue Yang.

“Hi, Mr Know it All!” She had no reactions towards Yue Yang's ‘mesmerising’ smile at all. After she bowed slightly, she frowned her delicate eyebrows. “You look familiar, but I can't remember where I've seen you...”

“Senior, you must have seen me in the White Deer Academy, I

was there on an exchange programme for half a year.” Yue Yang could lie without blinking his eyes.

“Oh so you were an exchange student in White Deer Academy!” The cute girl became overjoyed instantly. “That might be it, but I graduated earlier, if not I would definitely gotten to know such an outstanding junior like you. Junior Know it All, I’ve just received a mission. There is an elderly who wish to visit his old friend, and he wanted to bring along two of his disciples to go to the Shang Jin Academy to visit ‘Elder Jing Hu’ who resides in the quiet small villa. Do you know the way there, junior? If you do, bring me there quickly, Master Ning Hai has been looking for Elder Jing Hu for ages!”

“Master Ning Hai?” Yue Yang had never heard of anything regarding him.

“You don’t know about it? Master Ning Hai is a Level Eight Emperor. Other than his strong powers, he also very knowledgeable. However, due to his peace seeking nature, he has been living in the woods, so not many know about him. He wants to visit his old friend, Elder Jing Hu. And today, he brought along two of his disciples, showing his genuinity in wanting to find his old friend. When i accepted this mission at the entrance of the Warrior Guild, I told him that even if there’s no monetary rewards, I’ll definitely help him find his old friend!” The cute student walked towards a shade with Yue Yang.

Under the shade, there stood three men.

One of them was a youthful elder with hair as white as snow

cranes. His bald forehead showed his wisdom, but his deep eye sockets, aquiline nose and sharp eyes gave him away as a cunning person.

Of course, all these were hidden under his warm, compassionate smile.

If it wasn't Yue Yang, other common men would have thought that this elderly standing before them was a wise, benevolent old man.

Two people, a guy on the left and a girl on the right, stood behind him. The guy was tall and slender and was clad in a similar robe as Master Ning Hai, it was just that his sleeve did not bear the royal logo like Master Ning Hai's. From his Warrior Heavenly Badge alone, the tall slender man should be a Level Six Elder, so he should be a big shot too. But from his submissive attitude and bowing body posture, it could be inferred how high the status of Master Ning Hai is.

The girl on the right looked more beautiful than the cute female student.

But she was cold and indifferent towards the things that were happening around her. When Yue Yang walked towards her, he realised that his smile bore no effect on her as well.

But Yue Yang's eyes glimmered when he saw her. He even whistled like how normal students would whenever they see pretty girls.

He acted very shallowly.

It was only until his whistle did Master Ning Hai let down his guards towards him.

Previously Master Ning Hai thought that there was something wrong with Yue Yang, but after his superficial acts, Master Ning Hai immediately ignored him. From his act of whistling at pretty girls, Master Ning Hai thought that Yue Yang was definitely a newbie who hasn't seen the world yet...

“Junior, this is Master Ning Hai, this is the City Master of Wen Feng and this is Ms. Cai Yi. Oh, and I am Liu [Ye](#), Junior Know it All, you can call me Sister Ye Zi!” The cute female student named Liu Ye introduced Yue Yang to the lot as if he was her biological brother. “This is Know it All, an exchange student in the White Deer Academy. He is from Shang Jing Academy. He is my junior!”

(want2eat: ‘Ye’ means leaf in chinese, ‘Ye Zi’ is a more specific name for leaf.)

“So he is your junior, no wonder he’s so outstanding!” Master Ning Hai complimented him like how a caring elder would do.

“Don’t mention it, it’s my honour to lead the way for a Master like you!” Yue Yang quickly acted as if he was both honoured and nervous. He then pointed in the directions of the small quiet villa passionately. “It’s just ahead, but it can be quite a long way from here.”

“It’s okay, we have already braved through the mountains and the seas, I wouldn’t be bothered by such a short distance.” Master Ning Hai sighed as if he was reminiscing the past. “Decades past by in the blink of an eye, in retrospect, Elder Jing Hu and I met when we were your age. Time and tide waits for no man, my hair’s all white and we have all aged, if we don’t meet now, there might not be anymore chances.”

“No, you will live to a ripe old age, don’t talk about dying easily. Moreover, isn’t Elder Jing Hu just waiting for you ahead?” The cute Liu Ye quickly comforted Master Ning Hai, and gestured for Yue Yang to get going.

Along the way, Yue Yang kept boasting about the sceneries in the Shang Jing Academy.

Master Ning Hai smiled but did not comment any further upon hearing. He acted like a mysterious old man.

The tall slender man who was the City Master of Wen Feng nodded frequently, and replied with ‘Oh really’, ‘Beautiful’ and ‘not bad’. As for the cold Ms Cai Yi, she was totally disinterested, and immuned to Yue Yang’s smiling attacks. If not for Sky Disaster’s reaction previously, Yue Yang would have suspected if his mesmerising skill was of any use.

Ms Cai Yi ignored Yue Yang completely, and the friendly Liu Ye was similarly not affected by his smile.

But after seeing Yue Yang smiling so frequently, Liu Ye

complimented him. “Your teeth is very white, Junior. You look more energetic when you are smiling, so you should smile more. Friendly guys are more attractive to girls.”

“...” Yue Yang almost collapsed onto the ground after hearing.

Forget about Ms Cai Yi, how could Liu Ye be immuned to his mesmerising smile? It affected the powerful Sky Disaster, how could she simply ignore it?

This puzzled Yue Yang the most!

When they reached the small quiet villa, the courtyard further down was where Yue Yu’s mentor, Elder Jing Hu resided.

Master Ning Hai was excited, he made a gesture, and the City Master of Wen Feng immediately fished out a few gold coins as reward to Yue Yang for showing them the way. Senior Liu Ye hinted him not to accept it. If it was in China, she would definitely be advocating for people to act like [Lei Feng](#). Yue Yang acted like he was very awkward, it was as if he wanted the money but was a little embarrassed to accept it, he rubbed his hands as his eyes flickered between Liu Ye and the City Master of Wen Feng... Master Ning Hai was pleased with Yue Yang’s reactions. There would be a problem if Yue Yang didn’t like money.

(want2eat: Lei Feng is a cultural icon representing earnestness and service in China)

Master Ning Hai took the gold coins and placed it onto Yue Yang’s palm. “Kid, remember that there’s reward for any work, so

you deserve these. To you, this might be just a mission, but to me, this is a sentimental moment, i have been waiting for this for decades.”

After he finished speaking, there were even tears at the edge of his eyes.

The Oscar Award winner would be nothing compared to him, Yue Yang was almost touched by him too. He then quickly took the money and thanked Master Ning Hai profusely.

On acting, Yue Yang might not be top notch, but he wasn't weak.

Yue Yang felt that other than Liu Ye the female Lei Feng, the City Master of Wen Feng could also be an Oscar Award Winner.

After completing his mission, Yue Yang wanted to leave quickly. But Liu Ye felt that since Yue Yang accepted the money, he should fulfill all his responsibilities. Although Master Ning Hai indicated that it would be more sincere for him to knock on the door, Liu Ye did not allow Yue Yang to leave. She kept him by her sides to accompany Master Ning Hai to visit Elder Jing Hu.

“Alright, alright!” Yue Yang felt that it would be the same whether he choose to stay or leave. The only difference was that he would be launching direct attack instead of a sneak attack.

“May i ask if Jing Hu... Elder Jing Hu is around?” Master Ning Hai changed into a trembling tone.

Yue Yang was amazed, his acting skill was definitely top notch.

The City Master of Wen Feng straightened up his back instantly like a hunting leopard.

The cold and aloof Ms. Cai Yi directly looked at the small room in the courtyard.

Towards all these, Liu Ye didn't know what was going on at all, she merely looked at Master Ning Hai's teary, sorrowful expression agitatedly, and was completely steeped in the sentimental ambience, she almost cried together with Master Ning Hai.

Yue Yang coughed slightly. "It's too far to call from here, we'll have to go in and knock on the door directly."

Yue Yang opened the bamboo door of the yard and ran for a short distance. He went past the flowerbed on both sides and walked onto the steps then finally knocked on the wooden door. "Elder Jing Hu, Know it All wants to see you!" Liu Ye was very scared that Yue Yang would be a wet blanket and mention Master Ning Hai's name directly, causing the mysterious ambience to be lost. On seeing that Yue Yang was still sensible enough to report his own name, it caused the agitated Master Ning Hai to go forward.

Yue Yu opened up the door, looking shocked. "Eh?"

Yue Yang pressed his forefinger against his lips, shushing her and

pointed to the four men behind, signalling for her not to talk and remain mysterious. Liu Ye and Master Ning Hai behind Yue Yang saw his actions and smiled as they thought that he was sensible. Yue Yang leaned in and whispered into Yue Yu's ears. Yue Yu's cherry lips immediately turn into an O shape.

Yue Yu regained her composure after a long while and gestured to Master Yue Hai that her mentor was inside.

“Teacher has just turned in, do you all want to wait or do y'all want me to wake him up?” Yue Ye tried to probe.

“Wake her up, no, let her rest... You are Jing Hu's disciple? Not bad! What's your name kid?” Master Ning Hai examined Yue Yu's looks closely, and finally nodded as if he just confirmed something. The tall slender City Master of Wen Feng, walked to Yue Yu's sides slowly, and the aloof Ms Cai Yi walked to her back, besieging her silently.

“I am Yue Yu, and I am teacher's only disciple, you are Master Ning Hai right, i just followed my teacher around, and i have never heard of you!” Yue Yu looked at Yue Yang as she nodded and reply.

“Really? Has she forgotten me already?” Master Ning Hai made a grievous look again, and Yue Yang almost clapped for his superb acting!

“We may disturb Elder Jing Hu's rest here, how about we go out and talk, and you share with Master Ning Hai on how Elder Jing Hu has been doing all these years as he has always been concerned

about her.” The tall and slender City Master of Wen Feng suddenly threw out this suggestion. Yue Yang admired the excuse he managed to come up with.

“Yea its not very good to disturb teacher’s rest, let’s go out and discuss how we can surprise her!” Yue Yang agreed to it wholly.

“Um...” Yue Yu was a little hesitant, she looked inside the house but still followed Yue Yang out in the end.

Yue Yang was secretly pleased, turns out that his second sister’s acting skills weren’t that bad too.

Her strong improvisation skills were amazing, it looks like all girls are born to be actresses, if it were to be Fatty Hai and Ye Kong, they might have already screw up this good show!

Chapter 432 – Truth, More Than One Truths

After leaving the courtyard, City Master Wen Feng's footstep did not stop.

He continued walking only until he reached the door to the isolated villa.

Liu Ye thought, wasn't this too exaggerated. At this distance, let alone waking up Elder Jing Hu because of the noise, even tigers fighting wouldn't be heard. Naturally, Liu Ye thought that City Master Cai Yi placed this matter with importance and probably did this to retain the feeling of secrecy, so she did not think too deeply. Master Ning Hai on the other hand continued to inquire Yue Yu about Elder Jing Hu. At moments he expressed happiness and at times he expressed sadness. His constantly changing expression made Yue Yang secretly awed!

Regarding the aloof Ms. Cai Yi, she continuously followed behind silently as if transporting a detainee.

City Master Wen Feng noticed that there was no one around. He secretly sighed that the heavens was helping him.

He clapped his hands and proudly showed a strange smile: "Okay, we're here."

Liu Ye cheerfully spoke first: "I feel that we should first prepare a gift. Yue Yu should quietly lead Master Ning Hai inside and then sit besides Elder Jing Hu's bed. This way, when Elder Jing Hu opens

her eyes, she would instantly see Master Ning Hai. I can imagine the excitement on her face. As for us, we will enter at the right time and present the gift to celebrate their reunion...”

Yue Yang clapped his hands: “Good idea, good idea!”

Yue Yu nodded showing that this method was okay.

Unknowingly City Master Wen Feng’s expression changed, He coldly said: “There is no need to prepare any gifts as long as the two of you obediently disappear. Cai Yi, kill these two ignorant idiots. Ning Hai, you grab Yue Yu and let’s immediately leave this place.”

On one hand he said this on the other he took out a golden scroll.

When he opened it, a golden light rose and become a huge light barrier. The light extended tens of kilometers high, trapping everyone inside and isolating them from the outside.

“This is an ‘Isolation Barrier’? This barrier was the one used by the assassin that attacked Tian Luo’s 19th Emperor!” Liu Ye was spooked. She had never imagined that the situation would become like this. She became speechless at City Master Wen Feng’s words.

“Villain!” Yue Yang jumped up and pointed City Master Wen Feng and shouted: “I finally understood, you are a villain!”

This amateur acting made Yue Yu roll her eyes at Yue Yang.

It's already like this yet you are still playing?

I don't know what to do with you anymore!

When Liu Ye heard Yue Yang's shout, her body shook.

She immediately responded and looked at City Master Wen Feng's and Master Ning Hai's expressions. She discovered that they were staring at Yue Yu and immediately understood that their goal was never Elder Jing Hu but her disciple Yue Yu. For a moment, she remembered Yue Yu's identity. She was the Yue Clan's Second Young Miss and the Yue Clan was Da Xia's strongest force. Capturing the Second Young Miss was undoubtedly the best hostage.

This was especially true now that the Black Hell King had declared war on Da Xia and the Zi Jin Kingdom was allied with the Black Hell King.

So it was like this!

After Liu Ye responded, she noticed that she did such a stupid thing.

The enemy used her kindness and sympathy to form a plan to deceive her and shamelessly use her!

“Truly an incurable idiot...” Once City Master Wen Feng raised his hand, the aloof Miss Cai Yi immediately approached Yue Yang, as if wanting Yue Yang to die.

“You are not City Master Wen Feng. A level six Elder is not as strong as you!” Liu Ye also discovered that Master Ning Hai already lost his master-like appearance. Now, Ning Hai had become City Master Wen Feng’s lackey. Liu Ye became increasingly alarmed. Master Ning Hai, who was already a level 8 Emperor, was now a City Master Wen Feng’s lackey. What kind of strength did he possess?

“Wen Feng is only my substitute. Stupid human, your eyes will always deceive you. Never trust what your eyes can see!” City Master Wen Feng gradually transformed. After a few seconds, he became an ugly horned monster with six arms.

The most disgusting thing was his face. Other than having multiple different sized eyes, there were also multiple mouths.

Those mouths continuously opened and closed, when others saw it their appetites would be spoiled.

Yue Yu wrinkled her brows.

She instinctively stood behind Yue Yang. Originally, this movement would give rise to the opponent’s suspicions but, Ning Hai felt that it was only the instinct of a female hiding behind a male in times of danger.

He never imagined that Yue Yu hiding behind Yue Yang was because Yue Yang was her most trusted little brother, so she subconsciously did this.

According to their strength, the fake Wen Feng was stronger than Master Ning Hai by a lot.

This was because he was already a level 1 Innate.

An emblem could be seen on his stomach. This emblem symbolizes being a member of the Black Hell Army. Moreover, he was a monster Innate who was from a different continent. God knows whether he was brought here by a ranker from Zi Jin Kingdom or he came from the Ancient Passage. As for Master Ning Hai, he was indeed human, but Yue Yang determined that he was not a warrior of the Soaring Dragon Continent.

This was because he was a level eight Emperor who did not recognize Yue Yang. Could there even be a hidden warrior from Soaring Dragon Continent who did not know him?

Not recognizing Yue Yang was fine. When Yue Yang had bragged about Shang Jing Academy's history a while ago, everything he said was lies. How could a master warrior not even understand these general knowledge? Especially the rumors about Elder Jing Hu. When Yue Yang told him these rumors without saying the name, he only displayed blankness and completely did not know Yue Yang was talking about Elder Jing Hu. Yue Yang kept probing along the way and discovered that Master Ning Hai was basically not a warrior of Soaring Dragon Continent but from some other place. His heart completely relaxed because the enemy's

information about their side was not a lot and it only scratched the surface.

If they want to use this kind of information to understand the inner workings of Da Xia, it would be very hard.

Actually, when they had sought Liu Ye, this kind of girl, it was already known that other than this kind of warm hearted and innocent female student, they could not deceive anyone.

“...” Yue Yu secretly drew something on Yue Yang’s back.

Yue Yang nodded his head and prepared to make his move.

Just as Yue Yang and Yue Yu prepared to attack, Liu Yue suddenly rushed out blocking Miss Cai Yi’s path: “I won’t say anything about you using me, but if you want to capture Yue Yu, you can only do it over my dead body!”

Hearing this, Yue Yang couldn’t help but pat her shoulder: “Hey, hey. Are you really doing this?”

“Even if I can’t, I must do it. You should quickly run away and use a teleportation scroll!” Liu Ye’s expression was abnormally firm. She summoned her Platinum Grimoire and raised the protective barrier.

“Courting death!”

In front of Innates, how long would the protective barrier even last?

Moreover, Miss Cai Yi was also similarly strong.

As for Ning Hai, he was simply not the main force!

Yue Yang took out a gold coin and sullenly said: “None of this is my business, since I am only passing through. Let me return this gold coin and I can pretend that nothing happened.”

Ning Hai leaked out an incredibly ‘kind’ smile. A malicious light flashed in the depths of his eyes, his killing intent leaked out, with a dagger hidden in his smile, he said: “Too late. Although both of you are pretty good youngsters, I also like you. However, those who know our secret should eternally keep it a secret. Since you know, other than death, there is no way to keep this secret. Immediately commit suicide, believe me that this would be the best choice you will ever make, otherwise, you would definitely regret not doing so. If you land in our hands, I guarantee that you will wish you were dead! The two students, in your next life, you should not be this stupid and innocent. Let me tell you the truth, in this world, no one is trustworthy!”

Hearing this, Liu Ye bit her lips.

Dark red blood flowed from her lips.

She painfully clenched her fists. In her heart, she felt guilty of her mistake. However, the current situation made her unable to continue soaking under her guilty conscience.

Right now she must fight!

The stubborn Liu Ye decided to use all her strength to redeem her mistakes!

“Even if I die, I will protect you. Please forgive me, I mistakenly trusted the enemy...” Liu Ye sincerely apologized towards Yue Yu. On one hand Yue Yu waved her hand showing that there was no problem, on the other hand Yue Yang snorted as if not willing to forgive her. Liu Ye’s expression darkened but she clenched her teeth and summoned a silver deer. She lowered her voice and secretly told Yue Yu: “quickly ride my silver deer, it can bring you out of here!”

“What about me?” Yue Yang’s sharp ears also heard it.

“You stay with me to block the enemy.” Liu Ye substituted Yue Yang to make a major decision.

“Why? I definitely don’t want to remain here and die. Summon another silver deer and let me ride it to run away. I am very scared!” Yue Yang pretended to be afraid of death.

“I apologize, I only have one silver deer.” Liu Ye lightly patted Yue Yang’s shoulders and softly consoled him: “Junior, you must

have more courage, you are a man after all!”

“Do men have to throw away their lives in vain...” Yue Yang squatted on the corner and drew circles.

This action made Liu Ye felt even guiltier.

She wanted to persuade him, but she did not know what to say.

Everything was her fault.

Originally Junior Know It All was getting by very well. If she did not call him, his life wouldn't have been ruined.

If she knew it was like this, she would definitely not ask him directions...

However, it was already too late for regrets!

Liu Ye lightly wiped the tears on the corner of her eyes and softly said: “I'm sorry, I will die in front of you. This is the only thing I can do!”

“Dream on, no matter what you do, you cannot escape this place!” Master Ning Hai raised his hands and countless brambles grow from the floor. These thorny brambles danced as if they were alive.

Even a flying butterfly would be immediately caught.

If they wanted to escape the brambles, it was simply impossible without the power of an Innate!

Even Ning Hai felt that capturing Yue Yu with three people was too exaggerated. With the other side's strength, even he alone would be enough!

"I have already thoroughly inspected the surroundings. No one will appear, and everything is secure, attack!" While the Innate monster was talking, he also shot out poisonous insects to survey the area. After the insects returned, he had finally confirmed that everything was secure. Elder Jing Hu did not notice the danger and no students appeared from the surroundings. It was precisely the best time to kidnap someone.

"Roar!" Miss Cai Yi followed the fake Wen Feng's signals and emotionlessly pounced over.

She raised her hands and attacked Liu Ye's protective barrier like a tempest.

The protective barrier shook under her attacks.

However, she seemed to lack pain and continuously attacked violently.

The recoil exploded on her hands as her skin and blood splattered

all over.

The skin on her hands burst open showing her bones. Yet, she still continued to attack without any reduction in speed and her power was getting stronger.

“Waaa!” Liu Ye was frightened. It was the first time she saw this kind of wild attack.

Let alone women, even men would never do this.

This was not attacking, this was simply self-harming!

The power and speed increased as the fists hammered down. The protective barrier was quickly dimming and would probably be broken soon.

Now, there was no more skin on Miss Cai Yi's fists. It clearly showed a pair of structurally precise mechanical arm. Liu Ye and Yue Yu were surprised because only until now did they realize that the crazed Cai Yi was actually a female puppet.

Yue Yang curled his lips.

Even if he did not use Heaven's Eyes, Yue Yang knew that Cai Yi was not human because his mesmerising ability did not work on her.

Other than Liu Ye, who had an odd Inherent Skill, Yue Yang felt that there was no second woman who would be immune to his mesmerising ability. After all this ability was even able to influence Sky Disaster! Moreover, Liu Ye's immunity was different from Cai Yi. His influence towards Liu Ye was very small and she had even complimented Yue Yang's smile earlier. This proved that she was influenced by the ability but not strong enough.

Yue Yang had two reasons for playing along with the opponent's act. First was to understand his opponent. Second was to understand how Cai Yi was made.

Perhaps, Cai Yi's creation could help him complete Yue Gong's third wish.

"It's over..." In the instant that the protective barrier disappeared, Liu Ye quickly pushed Yue Yu on top of the silver deer. She then shouted and pushed down Yue Yang to block him: "Sorry, this is all my fault. In the next life, I will definitely return it to you!"

In the final moment, she still wanted to make up for her mistakes even though she knew her efforts were futile.

The protective barrier vanished and the silver deer shot out. Amidst the countless brambles, it smoothly charged out, even the Isolation Barrier was not able to stop its footsteps.

However, Yue Yu was not on its back and instead, stayed besides Liu Ye. The puppet Cai Yi's iron fists explosively attacked towards

her. Liu Ye responded by turning around and saw this scene. She couldn't help but cry: "No!"

She never realized that the Junior that was pressed down by her had already disappeared.

Chapter 433 – To Beat The Opponent At Their Own Game

Crescent Moon sliced through the air.

Very skillfully, very precisely, just like how the puppet master disassembled the machine puppets, Crescent Moon dismantled the arm connected to Cai Yi's body with ease.

Other than a minute amount of connecting wires, that acted as tendons, Yue Yang did not even damage a single screw.

His techniques were just like art, reaching the state of perfection.

Half of an arm, which once belonged to Battle Doll Cai Yi, flung in midair and landed in Yue Yang's Storage Ring. Being unable to feel pain, the Battle Doll continued to throw punches. However, for Yue Yang, who had already seen through the Battle Doll's weak points, this was going according to his plans. The Crescent Moon in his hands danced through the air. In a few seconds, he had already removed Cai Yi's clothes, fake skin, fake flesh. Even the neck connecting the head was dismantled.

In between, the freaky Innate and Ning Hai, who tried to attack, were both sent flying.

Calmly and patiently, Yue Yang dismantled this fine Battle Doll, that could only be made by the masters of machinery six thousand years ago.

To him, this replica of Battle Doll was the best research sample. This was because it was way more superior compared to the Battle Puppets produced today. Even for someone like him, who has received Ghost Genius Yue Gong's Puppet Encyclopedia and Puppet Palace, it was a great source of inspiration.

The Machine Doll's red eyes flashed continuously.

It tried to control its heart to self destruct.

Inside its heart, contained a dragon crystal that provided energy and power. It was connected to a mysterious Rune Circle, once triggered it would explode.

The power of the explosion was probably no less than a Innate Ranker's blood sacrifice to self destruct.

Unfortunately, Yue Yang realised this early. He separated its body and head in time.

Lastly, he also used his Yin Ability to freeze Cai Yi's head after he sent the freaky Innate flying for the second time. After he stored the Battle Doll's head in his Storage Ring, he let out a sigh of relief secretly.

If he took action first and defeated Ning Hai and the freaky Innate, then this Battle Doll would probably self destruct. At that point, not only would he be endangered, he would also lose his

chance to gain something. Now, after Cai Yi attacked, Yue Yang made use of the time. Since Cai Yi would not self destruct instantly when it attacked, Yue Yang decided to take it down first. It was the most practical thing to do.

In addition, Yue Yang reckoned that Black Hell King's settings to allow the Battle Dolls to self destruct was only allowed when all their allies have been badly damaged or killed.

He was right.

He had successfully obtained this Battle Doll as the spoils of war.

However, getting this supreme Battle Doll which was created six thousands years ago for no reason did not satisfy Yue Yang.

Right now, he wants to know the answers to these questions: How did the Black Hell King preserve this six thousand year old Battle Doll? Could there be a second set, a third set of the same Battle Doll?

Cai Yi probably would be unable to answer these questions.

The people Yue Yang could ask, was Ning Hai as well as the freaky Innate who could speak human language.....

“Who are you?” The freaky Innate who impersonated City Master Wen Feng was astonished. He was merely a student, how was it possible for him to defend his two attacks, which were of

Innate level? Furthermore, his actions were gentle and light, yet he could send him flying! How could there be a student more powerful than him in this world? His technique in dismantling Cai Yi, was a feast for the eyes, he was so skillful he made it look so easy. Perhaps the Black Hell King, even as the owner who manipulated the Battle Dolls, did not have such a great understanding as compared to him. Perhaps even the Prison King could not do such a thing.

“.....“ Master Ning Hai’s intuition made him felt that his own tongue bitter. Now he finally realised the identity of the student standing right in front of him.

It was someone whom he did not want to meet the most, in the entire Zi Jin Empire.

Yue Clan’s Third Young Master.

The name, Yue Clan’s Third Young Master, was not new to him even though he was a warrior from Qi Lan Continent.

Before that, warriors from Zi Jin Empire had repeatedly warned the Innates from Black Hell army to be especially careful of this young man, saying that anyone who belittles him would suffer losses. At that point of time, Ning Hai thought they were exaggerating. The twenty year old Innate was not bad, but there was the possibility that his senior promoted him on purpose. It was an action to stimulate the juniors in the Soaring Dragon Continent. In Tong Tian Tower, there were a few superior Innate Rankers who would do such a thing to their followers. By using certain secret techniques, they force one or two followers to increase their

ranks and emerge as Innates.

However, people who rise in rank quickly through this method might not have a bright future. This was because forced rank upgrading would consume their potential greatly.

Those secret techniques often used their future potential to exchange for limit breaks.

Warriors who truly possess the ability to enhance would never choose this short cut for the sake of short term goals.

His partner, 'Miao Xu', who also came from Qi Lan Continent, was one of the products from Black Hell King's experiments for forced rank enhancement. This experiment was intended to produce a large number of low rank Innates for the Black Hell Army. This guy was previously weaker than him, but after using the secret technique, he surpassed him and leaped to Innate Rank 1.

However, it also meant that in the future he would never have the chance to improve and increase his rank.

To be promoted to Innate, was undoubtedly an extremely attractive temptation.

Yet this type of secret technique had terrifying death rates, elimination rates and a extremely disheartening success rate: 1/100. Almost all of Ning Hai's good friends were dead. In about

less than a hundred people he knew, only Miao Xu succeeded.

However, who could tell that Miao Xu this 'winner' was previously a human being?

Due to the secret technique to increase his ranks, although successful, Miao Xu turned from a human into an incredibly ugly monster!

Ning Hai who still had hopes to become an Innate chose to reject the experiment. He would rather be at a lower rank than Miao Xu temporarily. As for invading the Soaring Dragon Continent, Ning Hai was not as enthusiastic as Miao Xu. Although Black Hell Army was powerful, it did not mean that the Rankers in the Soaring Dragon Continent would wait hopelessly to be slaughtered. Even if the Black Hell Army emerged victorious, him, an existence just like cannon fodder might not even be able to live to enjoy the fruits of victory!

The reason why Ning Hai accepted the mission to kidnap Yue Yu, was because the difficulty of this mission was not very high.

The only thing he had to be cautious of was the warnings told by a Ranker from Zi Jin Empire, the Marquis of Zi Jin.

At that time, the Marquis of Zi Jin told him: Stratagem was a must. The best and most clever strategy would be the key to success. Avoid Yue Clan's Third Young Master this source of danger at all costs. If not they were dead meat. Running into him meant that they had no chance in surviving.

At that time, Miao Xu and the members of Black Hell Army did not feel that this piece of advice was important.

Now that he think about it, the Marquis of Zi Jin was not wrong at all.

Ning Hai just needed a look at the opponent to give up his resistance. With one glance, he knew, this type of opponent could not be defeated even with ten Miao Xu!

“How was this possible?” Liu Ye watched Yue Yang dismantle Cai Yi in a flash while it was still moving. He even sent a monster with an Innate’s power flying. Liu Ye was stunned with her eyes wide open and tongue tied. It took her a while to come back to herself. As it turns out, Yue Yu whom she was protecting all along stepped in front of her and even comforted her softly,” My friend, do not be afraid. In reality he is my brother. Just now he was looking for the enemy’s weak point. Now, it is time for him to launch his counterattack!”

“How can your brother be called ‘Know It All’ ? No, You are Yue Clan’s Second Miss, surname is Yue, and his surname is [Wan](#)..... “ Liu Ye ‘s strong point was that she believes people easily. It seemed that she was hardly tricked in her daily life. If she lived with Yue Yang for some time, she probably won’t be so naive anymore.

(Last: Know It All is Wan Shi Tong in chinese so surname is Wan)

“He is actually my third brother.” Yue Yu thought she was already pretty gullible, she did not expect someone to be even more

gullible than her.

“So he was actually Yue Clan’s Third Young Master, that’s why he seemed familiar. I’m too gullible..... “ Now it was Liu Ye’s turn to squat down and draw circles on the ground.

If a bad guys tricked her, then forget about it, but even good people lied to her!

Wha-What happened to the order of nature?

Yue Yu really wanted to tell her, in reality, the third child from her family was the most evil villian. He didn’t feel a single trace of guilt even after lying so much. Yue Yu later felt that she should love and protect her younger brother, thus ended up not saying anything. Anyway, her third brother had tricked way too many people. Even with Liu Ye, it did not make much difference!

THUD!

The monster Miao Xu, who was previously very cocky, had his arm sliced off. He landed on the ground with a thud. Not giving him time to recoil, Yue Yang already had his foot stepping hard on his head.

“Long live the Black Hell King!” The monster Miao Xu was still loyal to his King, he even wanted to self destruct on the spot.

“Noisy.” Yue Yang used his Innate Qi to shock his head. The

monster who overestimated himself let out a blood-curdling screech and fainted. If Yue Yang wanted to kill him, even if Miao Xu had a hundred lives he would have already died. But Yue Yang had to keep him. Other than slowly questioning him while torturing to obtain information, he could also be used as a good fertiliser. If the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen does not want this kind of low ranked Innate, then giving him to Hui Tai Lang to nibble on would be the same. Hui Tai Lang won't be picky.

Moreover, Fatty Hai and Ye Kong are short of good sparring partners. Such a monster would be a pretty good choice.

After Miao Xu fainted from the strike, Ning Hai kneeled down immediately.

Surrender!

What he did was the most intelligent thing in his entire life!

As for the foolish Miao Xu, Ning Hai thought that he should never be so moronic, if not his life would be worse than death. He realised long ago, if this Yue Clan Third Young Master wanted to kill him, he would have done so already. He just wanted to squeeze out all the possible benefits he could get.

“I surrender, I have secrets to exchange. If you do not kill me, then I would use the secrets to redeem my life.”

Ning Hai behaved very much like a loser.

Since he surrendered then he might as well be frank and straightforward.

Yue Yang smiled, “Actually, I don’t really like smart people, but I do not reject working with smart people. This is because it is better than working with idiots!”

Ning Hai’s face turned red, he knew that the other party was ridiculing that he used his intelligence at the wrong place, but he was not skillful and wanted to keep his life and had to do so. Ning Hai took out the venomous pearl hidden in his fake tooth. He gave up displaying utter loyalty to the Black Hell King by committing suicide. He then revealed the secret he thought had the greatest value, “I know a place that uses secret techniques to produce low ranked Innates, if you agree to release me, I will bring you over personally.”

Yue Yang did not really care about such secret techniques which produces fake Innates, but if he could strike hard at the enemy’s vital point, it would be a great thing.

“Then what are you waiting for? Let’s go!” Yue Yang fished out a golden scroll. Ning Hai almost fainted. It was the Location Return Scroll he had. When and how did he snatch it, he was totally unaware. This was a terrifying enemy. It wasn’t surprising that even the Marquis of Zi Jin was exceptionally cautious.

“You dismantled Battle Doll Cai Yi, maybe the enemies would be alarmed!” Yue Yu quickly cautioned Yue Yang to be careful.

“No problem, we can go according to their original plan and take action, let’s beat them at their own game, but we need Second sister and Liu Ye to cooperate.” Yue Yang grinned, making Yue Yu blush. She threw him a punch, “Third brother, don’t grin so much, be a little more serious!”

“..... “ Yue Yang’s sweat dropped, he did not expect his mesmerising ability to be ineffective on Liu Ye, on the contrary, it was effective on his second sister.

“Me, Me too?” Liu Ye realised her tragedy was not over yet.

“Sorry to make you a captive temporarily!” Yue Yang took out a rope made by using Dragon Skin, Rhino Tendons, Golden Silk Snake Phantom’s hair. He used a technique seen from an island country’s romance action movie and tied Liu Ye up, without giving her an explanation. If he had a whip, it would be just like the legendary SM.

Chapter 434 – Forward, Deep Into The Demon's Cave

It was a world of ice and snow.

The howling wind raged across the ground, carrying bits of snow, plundering waves of white frost. Between the sky and the ground, the roaring wind cast fear over every man's heart.

This place was located at the border of Zi Jin Kingdom, it's referred to as Wind Root Mountain Range. 'Wind root' meant that all wind in the Soaring Dragon Continent would form and start from this point. Although it sounded extreme, but the fact that this place was covered in snow and non-stopping gales throughout each year was a reality. Wind Root Mountain Range was one of The Five Death Lands located in Soaring Dragon Continent. It was a forbidden area where men's footprints were rare, just like Gui Jian Chou and Despair Abyss. Due to its remote terrain and low temperatures, other than warriors who wanted to practice austerities, no one else would travel all the way here.

Wind Root Mountain Range and Roaring Flame Desert are equally famous for their extreme weather, the former was freezing cold, the latter was blazing hot. They were extreme places people hardly visited.

No one would have thought that the Black Hell King and Zi Jin Kingdom's secret base would be located in this life threatening forbidden area.

Just seeing the entrance to the base, Yue Yang felt that Zi Jin Kingdom had worked with the Black Hell King for a long time. This huge base was not something that could be built overnight.

With the support from Black Hell King, Thousand Goblin Sect, Lion Pagoda Sect, Green Summit Sect and a muddled relationship with Demon Abyss, it was not surprising that Zi Jin Kingdom dared to conquer the entire Soaring Dragon Continent.

Now, Yue Yang started to understand.

Before that, Shun Tian and the Dark Prince supported the Zi Jin Kingdom and attacked the Yue Clan merely as a test.

If it was not because of his sudden appearance, which disrupted the situation, perhaps now, the Soaring Dragon Continent would be covered in the flames of war.

Ever since the Black Hell King broke free from the seal, he probably had the intention of succeeding the Prison King's will. He also wanted to explore God's Ruins. He had to deal with the fact that his power had not yet recovered. In addition, humanity also has the formidable Zhi Zun, Demonic Palace's intentions were ambiguous; as result the Black Hell King could not obtain what he wanted. Thus, he started working together with Zi Jin Kingdom in the dark. Since ages ago, he had started to use secret techniques to 'mass produce' low level of Innates.

The success rate of mass producing Innates was incredibly low, it was only one out of a hundred. If it wasn't because the Black Hell

King's secret techniques were not effective enough, the entire Soaring Dragon Continent would be overcrowded with Innates.

Mass producing Innates?

When Yue Yang thought about this, he felt that it was ridiculous.

If Innates could be mass produced, then what's the point of everyone refining their skills? Then they might as well bootlick super Innates and beg them to help them level up!

These kinds of fake Innates did not even have Grimoires, so much that they can't be compared with Shun Tian (Great Emperor of Zi Wei) 's subordinates, the Seven Great Bears. At the very least they were previously Lesser Innates, and they had Grimoires.

In front of real Innates, fake Innates were just like dirt!

Of course, to ordinary warriors, these type of fake Innates were still terrifying.

After all, fake Innates were previously warriors at level 6 Elder or above. They still had some sort of foundation. It was not like any ordinary human could obtain such titles.

"Cold!" Yue Yu lied on Yue Yang's back, although Yue Yang wrapped a leather coat around her she could not endure the severe winter. She held onto Yue Yang tightly as her body trembling non-stop.

“..... “Liu Ye gritted her teeth and stayed silent.

She was afraid that if she talked, her jaws would tremble continuously. Actually, Yue Yu and her were still better than most people, because Yue Yang transferred some Yang Energy to them from time to time to keep them warm. If not, merely with their constitution, and thin clothes, they would have already been frozen to death since they reached here from Shang Jin.

Ning Hai, who surrendered, appeared to be well-behaved.

Although he saw the security guards at the entrance of the base, he was as obedient as a grandson.

It was because he knew, once Yue Clan's Third Young Master wanted to behead him, unless the Black Hell King personally protected him, he would lose his life. He saw Yue Yang dissect Miao Xu and opened his upper body. He took out the energy crystals stored in his body and slowly sewed him back up. After witnessing Yue Yang's methods, he decided that he would never ever become enemies with this smiling devil.

When Demon Abyss and the Demon King are compared to Yue Clan's Third Young Master, they instantly become philanthropists!

Ning Hai thought that since he had already killed many people, he considered himself as a villain or at least a scoundrel. Unexpectedly, in front of Yue Clan's Third Young Master, he was not even fart.

“Master Miao Xu, Master Ning Hai, are you back? These two..... Eh, Miss Cai Yi did not return? This should be Yue Clan’s Second Miss, and the other person is?” The captain of the guards at the base came out to greet them. He could not recognise that Yue Yang, who had two fake mustaches stuck above his lips was not Miao Xu. This was because Miao Xu could shape-shift into a hundred different forms. His identification was based on the ‘Black Hell Crest’. This captain was clearly a warrior from Zi Jin Kingdom. He recognized Yue Yu, the hostage but he could not recognize Liu Ye, who was tied up just like a cocoon by Yue Yang.

“Cai Yi that fellow has already self destructed. Yue Clan’s Second Miss’s master, Elder Jing Hu was very powerful. We had a fierce battle before completing the mission. This, is the classmate of Yue Clan’s Second Miss. She was caught up in the incident so we caught her as well.” Ning Hai handed his crest to verify his identification, and gave an explanation.

“You should just kill these kinds of small fry.” The captain felt that it was odd, as if side issues kept arising.

“You..... “ If Liu Ye was not tied up and clasped under Yue Yang’s arm, she would have flung her legs to kick this guy, sending him into the air.

“Mr. Miao Xu thought this girl is still useful, she was caught for fun. After he’s done playing, he might give you people as a reward to pass time.” Ning Hai deliberately lowered his voice and told the captain.

“Great, Master Miao Xu can eat the meat, us brothers will just sip some soup, hahahahaha!” The captain eagerly thanked Yue Yang.

“Hmph!” Yue Yang snorted and acted as if he was an arrogant expert and walked in with his head high up.

He did not dare talk, afraid that people would realize something.

This behaviour would let people mistaken him as putting on airs, moreover entering in a hurry appeared as if he was in heat, and could not wait to deflower the female captive. A few guards let out lascivious laughter. In the end, the captain was the most meticulous, he caught up and bowed with respect, “Master, you can play with this girl as much as you want. But for Yue Clan’s Second Miss, it would be the best if you do not touch her. Because Lord War Tiger commanded before he left to pass on the message, this Yue Clan’s Second Miss was crucial, do not touch her for now.”

Yue Yu, who was on Yue Yang’s back while pretending to be unconscious, started to tremble. She was both embarrassed and angry at the same time. She really wanted to beat this guy badly. However, now that she was involved in her younger brother’s scheme, she could only endure her embarrassment and continue to pretend that she fainted.

Yue Yang lightly patted Yue Yu’s back using his palms, signalling to her not to panic, everything was going according to plan.

He appeared to be annoyed and moved forward.

Ning Hai turned his face, and comforted the frightened captain with a smile, “Mr Miao Xu definitely knows that, there is no need for you to pass on the message. It’s fine, this hostage, Yue Clan’s Second Miss, will be sent to the hands of Lord War Tiger without fail.”

After walking down the meandering passage, what welcomed them was numerous stone steps and cross roads.

Fortunately Ning Hai was there as a guide. If not, merely slipping in would be troublesome. Ning Hai walked ahead to lead the way and headed towards the resting area for the time being. They waited for headquarters to send out elite soldiers. When they arrive to escort Yue Yu, Yue Yang can start raiding their tightly guarded secret base. Charging in with force was not impossible, but all the secrets would be destroyed by the members inside. Yue Yang wanted to find out what secrets were hidden within.

How many more humanoid Battle Dolls like Cai Yi were there?

This was what Yue Yang wanted to find out the most.

Ning Hai brought Yue Yang to Miao Xu’s room. Using the Black Hell Crest, they opened the door. The reeking smell of blood greeted them.

Yue Yang, Yue Yu and Liu Ye went in to see. To their surprise, they found out that it was an obscene and bloody den of violence. There were not just female humans, but also females from

different species. There were even female animals. They were all raped and murdered by Miao Xu here. There were dismembered corpses everywhere. Human heads that died with their eyes open rolled around the room. It was unexpected that the captain boldly advised Yue Yang, who impersonated as Miao Xu to not touch Yue Yu. Because he knew, once he did, Yue Clan's Second Miss would probably not be able to keep her life.

Yue Yu and Liu Ye previously thought that Yue Yang's way of dealing with Miao Xu was cruel, only now did they realized that they had let that trash off too lightly.

Especially Liu Ye, who blamed Yue Yang wrongly, was filled with genuine regret and wanted to apologize to him.

She thought killing Miao Xu was letting him off too easily.

This type of trash, should have his flesh cut apart slowly with each slice.

Don't even talk about these kind-hearted ladies, even Ning Hai, who kills without blinking his eyes gulped in fear and surprise. He did hear about Miao Xu's change, after he became a monster, his character changed drastically. In front of people he behaved in a refined and courteous manner, behind, he was wild and blood-thirsty. He raped and murdered numerous women, this was known by almost everyone.

But Ning Hai could never have imagined that after Miao Xu became a monster, he actually raped and murdered so many

people, no, even female animals.

Insane!

Miao Xu must have went insane.

Ning Hai shivered, thank goodness he did not participate in the secret enhancement experiment. If that was the case, even if he rose to an Innate successfully, he would also become a madman just like Miao Xu..... Ning Hai wiped off the cold sweat on his forehead and reported to Yue Yang, “I reckon that the elite soldiers would reach here within five minutes. Because they cannot allow Miao Xu to hurt Yue Clan’s Second Miss. They will use the fastest speed they can to reach here. If we want to retrieve Miao Xu’s things, we have to be quick!”

Yue Yang waved his hand, “Go back to your room pack up. I will settle here. Come back after five minutes!”

Ning Hai hesitated, but ended up leaving in a hurry.

At this point in time, he had two choices on his mind.

One was to immediately use the transport scroll to get out of here and never come back to the Soaring Dragon Continent, and never ever meet Yue Clan’s Third Young Master.

The other was to follow the instructions given by Yue Clan’s Third Young Master. After he destroys the entire base, he might

fulfill his promise and release him.

The first option was much easier to succeed.

He just had to crush the teleportation stone to escape back to the Ancient Passage. Even if the young master went after him, he might not be able to locate him; The shortcomings was that he could never let the Yue Clan's Third Young Master find out where he would hide. If not he was dead meat. The second option was dangerous. Yue Clans Third Young Master might not fulfill his promise. More importantly, after the base gets wrecked, even if he escapes, if the Black Hell King found out, he would die either way.

Ning Hai had much on his mind while returning back to his room. He hesitated for about three minutes.

He fished out his teleportation stone and placed it back in his pocket. Again, he took it out and placed it back. He repeated this cycle multiple times.

In the end, he still decided to obediently wait for Yue Clan's Third Young Master to fulfill his promise..... It was because he felt that using his own teleportation stone to flee was not a safe move. Furthermore, if the Black Hell King knew he fled halfway, he was dead meat. After all, it was Yue Clan's Third Young Master who brought him into the base. Black Hell King would know better than Yue Yang where he would hide. So this battle, he had to pray that Yue Clan's Third Young Master wins. If he lost, his own life would be at stake!

Five minutes later, Ning Hai knocked on the door.

Yue Yang opened the door himself and smiled, “I knew you wouldn’t use the teleportation stone to flee...” He said it as if unintentionally.

A single sentence, made Ning Hai felt his scalp had gone numb. Whatever he was thinking about was clear to his opponent. The scariest thing was that, it was merely a test.

No wonder Yue Clan’s Third Young Master only took away his return teleportation scroll and left him with his teleportation stones. It was all within his plans. If he had tried to escape just now, he would probably be following Miao Xu’s footsteps!

Ning Hai thought about it, his fear almost made him pee in his pants!

After another minute, five armoured elite soldiers with most of their faces covered came to escort them.

They spoke politely but they held the command medal from the person in charge, War Tiger, in their hands.

Yue Yang appeared to be unwilling on the surface, but after being ‘persuaded’ by Ning Hai with his highly skilled acting, he agreed to personally carry Yue Yu to meet War Tiger for their rewards. After the five armoured elites checked Yue Yu’s face against a picture, they agreed to Yue Yang’s request.

As for Liu Ye, Yue Yang pretended to be prepared to kill her when he felt like it with a single slash.

And so she immediately begged strenuously, showing that she was willing to serve him full heartedly. As long as she does not die, anything was fine.

If Ning Hai did not know it was part of Yue Yang's plans, he would really believe that her tears and pleading were sincere. Women are all natural masters of acting. Ning Hai silently sighed. Compared to her, his acting skills was way more inferior. He felt unpleasant. Of course he also knew that if women did not know how to lie, then they would no longer be called women. They would be called idiots instead!

“Keeping you here will not do, what if you ran away? No, I must drag you along!” Yue Yang untied Liu Ye's two legs but left her upper body and hands tied.

The five elite soldiers found it strange. Escorting Yue Clan's Second Miss personally was fine, but to bring another woman?

However, since this woman was tied up and very weak, they let it go in the end.

After all, they knew that Miao Xu was entitled ‘The lunatic who raped and murdered countless women’. In fact, not just Miao Xu, all of the Innates that were produced from the experiment were abnormal. A few days ago, a guy that was forcefully raised to a

Innate fell in love with gnawing and eating corpses for no good reason. That was called revolting! The five armoured elites, with two in front, three behind, half escorted and half led Yue Yang and the rest to their destination.

To them, as long as Yue Clan's Second Miss could be delivered to Lord War Tiger, anything else did not matter.

Ning Hai was confused by Yue Yang's decision to bring Liu Ye, but he did not have a single trace of doubt. He also believed that if Liu Ye was useless, Yue Clan's Third Young Master would not have brought her along.

Liu Ye also did not understand why she also had to enter deeper into the demon's nest. Yue Yang did not explain.

However, after seeing Liu Ye's Inherent Skill and Guardian Spirit Beast, Yue Yang knew that when he deals with the Black Hell King or when he has to explore God's Ruins, he would need Liu Ye's unrivalled Inherent skill..... After Liu Ye summoned her Grimoire, only then did Yue Yang understand why she was way more powerful than Sky Disaster and why she could ignore his smile. Liu Ye did not know how powerful and extraordinary her Inherent skill was.

Even commoners believed that it was merely an ordinary Inherent Skill. They did not place any importance on Liu Ye's ability.

Yue Yu guess that her third younger brother was probably going

to use Liu Ye for hard labour.

From the point of view of protecting his brother, she did not tell Liu Ye.

Furthermore, her brother did so to defeat the Black Hell King, to save the world..... After she upgraded his image in her mind to a world saving hero, she finally felt that it was 'in the name of justice' for her younger brother to take advantage and make use of people.

Okay, her brother is a scoundrel. But this was something that was alright to know but not something to be spread!

Yue Yu, who pretended to be asleep secretly opened her eyes. Pity filled her heart as she glanced at Liu Ye, who was tied up and led along by Yue Yang.

Especially that special way of tying people, just where did this younger brother learn all this from. That was too much. Yue Yu secretly pinched Yue Yang, as Yue Yang got startled, she immediately pretended to be asleep. She was smiling with triumph deep down: no matter how evil and cocky he was, he was still her younger brother. As his own second sister, wouldn't it be simple for her to sort him out?

Chapter 435 – Meeting Yue Shan Once Again

Previously Yue Yang played a game called “Hit the Dino”. Nostalgically, it was similar to what’s happening now.

Of course, this base did not have any dinosaurs.

After entering a hallway with golden walls, passing through numerous identity verification, once again he passed through a number of huge metal doors. Using a mechanical pulley system which acted as an elevator, Yue Yang ended up a few meters underground. Only then did he officially reach the entrance to the base. The temperature inside here was entirely different from the temperature outside. It was a world of ice and snow outside, but in the underground base, the air was stuffy and warm. There was even a trace of sulfur.

Yue Yang recalled that he smelled something similar in the Evil Dragon Lair.

After entering the base, the number of people clearly increased. They were all the members of the underground base; the armoured security guards on duty marched past in rows. If Yue Yang did not impersonate Miao Xu, it would have been very difficult for him to sneak in. Simply because there were too many sealed metal doors that he had to pass.

Once he finds the enemy, even if he was able to stop them, the people inside would still have time to destroy all the data.

“Please wait for a while, Lord War Tiger just left. We need to report to Mr. Feng first.” Two armoured elites indicated for Yue Yang to wait and went in to report.

“Mr. Feng?” Yue Yang had a question mark in his mind.

There were quite a number of people with the surname ‘Feng’ in Soaring Dragon Continent. However, Innates with surname Feng was rare. Perhaps this issue was related to the Feng Family?

Sometime ago, the young lady of Feng family and his Fourth Uncle’s were unexpectedly poisoned, this made Yue yang extremely angry. He swore to take revenge. Now, hearing about this person called “Mr Feng” all of a sudden made him suspect that something was fishy.

About three minutes later, the two armoured elites came out with their head hanging dispiritedly. They seemed as if they got scolded.

Yue Yang carried Yue Yu on his back and led Liu Ye by the hand.

They were now walking in to meet Mr Feng.

Even before they could take a good look, Mr Feng, who was facing them bursted out his scoldings, ”Miao Xu, and Ning Hai! Are the two of you borned idiots? This is such an important place, how dare you bring a stranger in? Even if it’s a woman, it is forbidden! War Tiger has warned many times, no matter what we have to take

strict precautions and prevent possible spies. Are you 100% sure that the person you brought in is not a spy? Do you guys know how important the secrets here are? If not, let me repeat once again, this is the base to conquer the Soaring Dragon Continent. It is the starting point to conquer the entire Tong Tian Tower, It is the bridge to entering the Heaven Realm. Did you hear what i said? Did you understand? You bunch of idiots!”

Yue Yang realised that this Mr Feng looked just like the Feng Family’s Clan Master. Other than the fact that his temper was worse, his strength was more superior, and he also seemed older. Other than these traits, his appearance could be said to look identical to that of the Feng Family’s Clan Master.

This person was probably a traitor from the Feng Family.

However, Yue Yang had never paid attention to the Feng Family’s matters. Perhaps Fourth Mother or Jun Wu You would know better who this person was.

“ Mr Feng, what happened was that when we were trying to capture Yue Clan’s Second Miss, we found this girl. We were in the middle of a battle so we had no choice but to capture her and bring her back. To decide what to do with her was why we came to report to you, right?” Ning Hai hurriedly covered up for Yue Yang.

“ Fancy that you have lived for 200 years, are you still a child? Do you need to report to me about such things? You just have to get rid of her corpse and erase all evidence, right? I hate to clean up after you two, because I have little time. I need a lot of time for research and I have simply no time to care about your stupid

problems! Someone, feed her to the beasts! I warn you two, if you people need me to clean up your mess, I will throw the two of you into Demon Insect Swamp to feed the beasts. I do not care if you guys are Innates. Anyone who wastes my time has to die!” Mr Feng was still fuming with anger.

Liu Ye was so frightened her face paled and her entire body was trembling.

She glanced in Yue Yang’s direction and realised that he did not seem to be bothered. Worried that he did not care about her, Liu Ye was so horrified her legs seemed to give away.

The two armoured elites came up, wanting to drag Liu Ye away.

Mr Feng, who just finished scolding glanced at Liu Ye and suddenly let out a sign of surprise. He held up his hand to signal the elites to pause.

The two armoured elites accepted the order naturally, but Ning Hai rubbed off his cold sweat due to his nervousness. He stole a glance at Yue Yang. He realised that Yue Yang has already anticipated that this would happen, this made his fear grow even more. Yue’s Clan’s Third Young Master could calculate how Mr Feng behaves even though they had never met before?

If that was really the case, that would be terrifying!

Was Yue’s Clan’s Third Young Master a human or a demon?

“This child seems to have potential, her body is emitting some kind of strange energy..... Hey, do you have the summoning grimoire?” Mr Feng asked.

“Ye... Yes.” Liu Ye was so scared, she hurriedly replied.

“ What is your Inherent Skill, and what is your Guardian Beast? Answer honestly, I will consider letting you live!” Mr Feng looked at Liu Ye from head to toe, just like how a venomous snake would stare at its prey.

Liu Ye stole a glance at Yue Yang, upon catching his quick signal, she answered, her head down while trembling with fear, “It is [Purification] Inherent Skill and Perforate Deer”.

Although panic-stricken, Liu Ye did not reveal the actual Inherent Skill she possessed.

She changed it slightly.

She replaced the term ‘[Cleansing] Inherent skill’ with ‘[Purification] Inherent skill’.

Yue Yang saw Liu Ye’s [Cleansing] Inherent Skill before, he thought that this Inherent skill was a highly valuable Inherent Skill. Although ordinary folks did not know of its importance, Liu Ye undoubtedly understood. It was also highly possible that her tutor warned her before, telling her that this Inherent skill should

not be something that she brings up when conversing with normal people. As a result, when she answered Mr Feng's question, she would rather give a half true half false answer. She told the truth about her Guardian Spirit Beast, but was unwilling to reveal her actual inherent skill.

[Cleansing] Inherent Skill: Possessed by good-natured people with noble character. This Inherent Skill is the enemy for the vicious and evil, all negative psychological attacks or malicious curses are useless in front of this skill. The Blood of Cleansing from the user's body can be used to cleanse evil. The higher the purity of the Blood of Cleansing, the greater its cleansing strength. At the moment it is at level three.

When Yue Yang saw this Inherent skill, he exclaimed "Lucky" in his mind. He finally found the key to lift Curse Seals.

For items like the Gemini Mask, Golden Bell etc, they all have seals.

Yue Yang could use his Innate Qi to unseal them but that would take too much effort. The time taken to completely unseal them would be difficult to determine as well.

Now, he did not need to waste so much effort anymore. It just required Liu Ye to provide a bit of blood. This, together with Innate Qi would reduce the effort needed by half. Things such as Gemini Mask were not the main thing, what was important were holy objects and divine weapons that have way stronger seals. Even some ancient huge gates, entrances to Connecting Realms as well as Runic traps all possess different seals. These type of seals

are often curses. Hence, when exploring the God's Ruins, bringing along Liu Ye, who possesses the [Cleansing] Inherent Skill, would be just like bringing a human shaped "portable key".

Of course, if this [Cleansing] Inherent Skill were to be given to Yue Yang, it would be entirely useless. Giving it to Fatty Hai and Ye Kong would just make it a decoration.

The [Cleansing] Inherent Skill is intimately related to the user's nature and moral character.

The more noble, more kindhearted the user, the higher the purity of the user's body.

As for people like Yue Yang, even if he obtained the [Cleansing] Inherent Skill, he might be unable to even cleanse a single grain of sand from the Demon Abyss.....

As for Liu Ye's Guardian Spirit Beast, Yue Yang also thought of it as a treasure.

Compared to other things like Golden Tigress, Silver Wolf or Bronze Bull, this was way better.

Perforation Deer: Special type. Deer form Silver Rank level two. Energy half-entity. Levitates. Guardian Beast, special move: Air Dash, Perforation.

This deer may be considered just 'not bad' by others, but to Yue

Yang it's as precious as jewel!

If it were to be used together with “teleportation”, exploring the God's Ruins would be way easier. At the very least, areas such as Ancient Passages and Death Canyon would be much easier to conquer. With this, Yue Yang believed that after entering the Black Hell King and Zi Jin Empire's secret base, even if the enemies found him, be it wreaking havoc or fleeing, it would be a piece of cake.

As for the discovery of Liu Ye's Inherent Skill and Guardian Spirit Beast, they were Yue Yang's main reason in his counterattack strategy to beat the other party in their own game.

“Good, a pretty good Inherent skill and Guardian Spirit Beast! In fact, as long as you possess a Summoning grimoire, you are an excellent youngster. There are no useless Inherent Skill nor Guardian Spirit Beasts in this world, there are only useless masters. Okay, you do not have to be afraid, I will not kill you. Instead, I will nurture you properly so that you would become a powerful Innate, understand? You have such potential, because you are the purest youngster I have ever met..... Ah, Of course, Yue Clan's Second Miss isn't bad either. If you listen obediently, I promise you that you would become an Innate. Yue Clan's Second Miss has powers as gentle and serene as water. As expected of the new generation of Yue Clan, indeed an outstanding bloodline! This is uncomparable to the shitty Feng Family. Nevermind, why am I saying all this!” After Mr Feng consoled Liu Ye, he started to chatter away. As Yue Yu came down from Yue Yang's back, Mr Feng could not resist to size her up.

Seeing that Liu Ye was able to stand on her feet, Yue Yu also decided to put on a brave face. She did not hide behind Liu Ye, instead, she stood beside her, glaring back at Mr Feng.

She even openen her mouth to question, “Who are you in the Feng Family? Why did you kidnap me here?”

Mr Feng let out an uncanny laughter.

Afterwards, he waved his hands repeatedly, “Yue Clan’s Second Miss, don’t rush, let me answer your questions in a moment. It would be quick, give me some time. Let me vent my frustrations on these two foolish lads. I really want to restrain myself but I realised that I could not. Some people are like this, if you do not berate them, they would not understand what their mistake is!”

This old man turned to face Yue Yang and Ning Hai, waving his fists in the air and roared,” Yes, I understand now, why you people did not kill her at the scene and also kidnapped her, a girl who possess [Purification] Inherent Skill! Yes, you people think you are very clever, thinking that if I saw her I would forget about Cai Yi, the perfect Battle Machine Doll, and perhaps I did not forget, I would not kill you out of fury..... Yes, I do admit you guys are petty minded but if you do so, I am still unable to feel satisfied. In fact it made me feel very mortified. A failed mission, utter failure. You guys actually let a Battle Doll from six thousands years ago to self-destruct! Why didn’t the two of you self-destruct instead? Did you guys think that your lives were more valuable than it? Wrong, even if you people had ten more lives, even after summing up your lives, it isn’t even as valuable as that one Machine Doll, understand? Do you think War Tiger would dispatch a thousand

hundred humanoid Battle Dolls to go out and complete missions?”

“No, This is a Battle Doll from six thousands years ago. A Battle Doll you cannot duplicate! Most importantly, they are all amended personally by Yue Clan’s most gifted Ghost Genius Yue Gong. They are his blood and sweat. They are the master’s work of miracle. Now that the Ghost Genius Yue Gong has passed away, even if there are a hundred thousands Battle Dolls in front of me, all I could do would be to stare at it. Do you people understand my point now? Foolish lads, I should have asked Cai Yi to go and do the testing. Yes, I mistakenly believed your abilities. You people should die, I wish I could choke the two of you to death!” Mr Feng rained curses on the two. Ning Hai was so frightened that his legs almost gave away, he almost fell on his knees.

This was definitely not caused by the pressure from Mr Feng’s Innate strength, it was thanks to his authority.

Ning Hai had seen it more than once. Any work Mr Feng found unsatisfying, even if it was an ‘Innate’ who was finally obtained from experiments, it would be used for dissection.

As for such a mad decision, Lord War Tiger, the base’s highest position leader had always supported him firmly. He even personally strangled a dozen people who intended to rebel.

Just one sentence, as long as Mr Feng was in this base, his command was equivalent to the highest order.

Even the powerful War Tiger takes advice from him!

Mr Feng tightened his fists and took a few deep breathes, as if trying to bear with the fury, “Okay, no matter what, you guys did bring back Yue Clan’s Second Miss. Your accomplishments do deserve a reward. I am a person who rewards and punishes accordingly. You people did foolish things, I would report it to War Tiger and let him decide. You people also did correct things, I would not hesitate to reward. Miao Xu, you can receive even more beautiful women and fresh blood. Your inquiries would all be met, but let me warn you, next time do not do stupid things again. If not i would really slaughter you! As for Ning Hai, you can obtain the rewards when you level up to Innate rank. You can use your achievement to exchange a treasure you like, these are all up to you..... Wait, There is something I must first do. Take out all the Dragon Crystals in the last two Battle Dolls, incase they self destruct just like what had happened. As you know, these Battle Dolls are too precious. Based on the puppet manufacturing techniques now, even researching is not possible, not to mention duplicating them!”

Yue Yang understood instantly, as expected, these Battle Dolls only started operating after they were amended by the Ghost Genius Yue Gong.

Six thousand years, it was too long for the battle mechanics to last.

Thus, Yue Gong would have such will.

The Battle Dolls like Cai Yi was already very advanced. They could move freely and follow instructions to complete tasks.

However, they did not possess emotions nor rationality which are human traits.

If Yue Yang could add in these, fulfilling Yue Gong's third wish would probably no longer be difficult.

Mr Feng smacked his forehead with his hand, as if he suddenly recalled something," Ah, there's no time, I forgot to negotiate with that guy. You guys should not leave, detain Yue Clan's Second Miss and this girl. Miao Xu and Ning Hai, the two of you must look after Second Miss, if anything happens to her, the two of you are dead meat! Go, I am in a hurry!"

He opened a trapdoor and rushed in.

Ning Hai glanced at Yue Yang secretly.

Yue Yang ignored him, dragged Yue Yu , led Liu Ye along and followed the lunatic Mr Feng in big strides.

Behind them, about a dozen armoured elites followed with mutual understanding. However, at each heavy door, two would stay automatically to guard. They were prudent and careful at any time. Be it their actions or when completing orders, they seemed more mechanical than actual machine puppet dolls.

After walking through three consecutive large metal gates, they walked down the staircase.

The place they were walking to seemed to be an underground prison.

The walls here were no longer made up of metal, instead they were made by special crystals. Yue Yang was unable to identify what kind of crystal but he found out that it was extremely hard.

Seemingly, every crystal room confined a person. Yue Yang discovered that these crystals could isolate Qi. He was unable to detect who was inside. As for his Heaven Eyes Divine Vision, he definitely could not use it in front of Mr Feng, who was an extremely sharp and sensitive Old man. Yue Yang had to suppress his curiosity and continue to control his Qi, imitating Miao Xu's Qi. He followed behind, pretending to be a loyal fighter.

In front of the greatest crystal room they walked past so far, Mr Feng used a secret way to lift the seal on the sealing circle.

His actions were rapid but highly complicated.

However, Yue Yang memorized everything by heart.

The walls rumbled and opened slightly, a crack not more than two meters formed on the wall.

Inside, there appeared a middle aged man. His left and right shoulders, ribs, thighs, knees, wrists and the back of his head were all chained up using locks and shackles. Yue Yang, with his good eyes, immediately drew back subtly after seeing who it was. He

avoided eye contact with the person and hid behind the walls, where the man could not see. Next to Yue Yang, Yue Yu let out a cry of sorrow. This was because she realised that the man who was tortured to the extent of having his flesh lacerated, and his bones showing, was someone who had been missing: Yue Shan.

“Ah No..... “ Yue Yu’s tears fell like rain as her body trembled in pain.

Their father did not betray and flee to Demon Abyss, but was imprisoned by the Black Hell King.

Now, not just Yue Yang, Yue Yu, even Liu Ye who was previously entirely unaware started to understand why Mr Feng had to capture Yue Yu as the hostage.

The reason was very simple. It was to threaten and force Yue Shan to surrender.

Chapter 436 – Faith

“Is that you, Yu Er? Goddamn it Feng Jin, how dare you capture my daughter!” Yue Shan looked at Yue Yu. At first he was stunned in the next second, his anger burst out like a volcanic eruption.

Yue Shan extended his arms to his the limit, trying to strangle Mr Feng.

However, the rattling chains and shackles stopped him from reaching Mr Feng. He was merely a centimeter away, unable to move forward.

No matter how he struggled, it was all futile.

Yue Shan cried out in resentment and sorrow, “Ah..... “

He was just like an injured beast. He was utterly powerless. He could only watch the enemy, about to tear his young cub into pieces. Yue Shan’s heartbreaking cry seemed to be able to move the Heavens and Earth, whoever heard it would feel sorrowful. Liu Ye could not help it but to cry bitterly. She embraced Yue Yu, who almost fainted from her tears.

Yet, Mr Feng was apathetic. He ignored everything. It seemed as if his heart was made out of steel.

As far as this cold-blooded executioner was concerned, Yue Shan slammed his body into the wall repeatedly. He used his fists to beat

and punch the wall, exerting whatever strength he had left. He used his head to violently attack the gigantic metal ring on the crystal wall. Instantly the huge metal ring was stained with spots of blood. After quite sometime, Yue Shan finally calmed down due to the pain. He faced Mr Feng and bowed his head. He spoke, “Feng Jin, you won, you won..... Let my daughter go. I am willing to do the experiments. I would hand over my body to you, no matter what you ask me to do, I will follow, as long as you free my daughter!” His voice seemed to age by ten years, it was filled with utter bitterness and sadness.

Mr Feng laughed loudly, “AHAHAHA, what did I say? Yue Shan I told you I would win. I told you, you would surrender, was I correct? The man who claimed to be Yue Clan’s most strong willed person would surrender one day, HAHAAAAHA, In this world, what would still be impossible?”

“Let my daughter go immediately. If not I would bang my head against the wall and die right now. The secrets you want to know would never be revealed!”

Sadly, the chains restricted his movements mercilessly, confining his body.

Even if Yue Shan used all his might, his fingertips were still a centimeter away from Mr Feng.

This one centimeter, was what shattered all hope..... Seeing Yue Shan hating himself that he was unable to skin and eat him alive, Mr Feng laughed crazily in triumph.

He relaxed his shoulders, “Yue Shan, I think there is something wrong with your attitude. The clever Yue Clan’s first son, if you were me, what would you do? Humiliate the enemy, I guess you would use all kinds of methods to humiliate your enemy! Why don’t I use your strategy? Come, the arrogant Yue Clan’s first son, bend your knees and bow down to me! Yue Clan’s men would never bow down to the enemies right? Come, there would be a first to almost everything. Kneel, kneel right now. If not I would get people to gang rape your daughter..... Such a good daughter, she has the beauty of a flower, she is at the prime of her youth, it is the time when her brilliant life starts to bloom. If it were to be destroyed, how sorrowful would that be! Yue Shan, the only opponent I could not break, come, bow down to me!”

“No! Father, Yue Clan’s children die standing. We never kneel. Never kneel down to the enemy!” Yue Yu shrieked, “Nobody can use me to humiliate you, Father, I would die with dignity, what they would receive would only be my dead body!”

It was unknown when she took out a dagger and aimed it at her own neck.

Perhaps because she was too emotional, the sharp blade drew a red line across the side of her tender, delicate neck. A drop of red blood rolled along the blade slowly.

Yue Yang was afraid that this second sister would really do foolish things, with a snap of his fingers, the blade of the dagger shattered.

Mr Feng saw the blade falling, he quickly kicked it aside.

Two armoured elites quickly seized the blade. At the same time, all armoured soldiers were particularly careful of the weapons on their waists. They did not give Yue Yu any chance to get into contact with the sharp weapons.

“Not bad, as for how this dagger was brought in, I will let it pass. Later when we leave I will reward you a beautiful woman. Keep your eyes on Yue Clan’s Second Miss, she is Yue Shan’s dearest daughter. If we want this strong willed person to surrender, we need her.” Mr Feng glanced at Yue Yang, but diverted his attention away right after that. In his mind, Mao Xu, who was now impersonated by Yue Yang, was merely a tool. There was no point in giving him too much attention.

“Yue Clan’s Second Miss, I hope you behave smarter. Suicide won’t solve all the problems. Once you die, I will kidnap your brother and sister. Did you think that your death would be useful? Act smarter, urge your father to surrender and cooperate with us. That is the real way out of this.” Ning Hai appeared to be persuading Yue Yu.

In reality, he was hinting at Yue Yu.

Yue Clan’s Third Young Master was by her side, she did not need to be so emotional.

After his quick reminder, the emotional pair, Yue Yu and Liu Ye realised that in reality, circumstances were not so dreadful. With

tears in their eyes, they glanced at Yue Yang. Their emotions stabilised afterwards. However, afraid that Mr Feng would see through Yue Yang, the two girls embraced each other tightly in case Mr Feng would sense anything fishy.

Yue Shan's entire body was shaking, tears of blood welled up in his eyes.

Hot tears rolled down his cheeks.

“Shit, you, my father taught us brothers since young, Yue Clan's men would rather die in front of their enemies. Goddamned Feng Jin, you can kill me, but don't you try to humiliate our Yue Clan. Even though I, Yue Shan, am powerless, it does not mean our Yue Clan is unmanned. You can kill me, You can kill my daughter but you motherfucker cannot destroy our Yue Clan's belief. Want us to surrender, that is impossible! Never! “ Yue Shan roared, his loud voice caused the entire underground prison to shake.

“I know. You ,Yue Clan, are all strong willed. I did not say you aren't.” Mr Feng burst out in laughter, “In fact I admire your Yue Clan. Although you are all motherfucking brain dead idiots, you all are strong unyielding people. I have seen too many cowards and scumbags. I have met too many, those who would kneel in front of me and wag their tails like dogs. Seeing those trash behave that way, I feel disgusted. In fact, I admire opponents like you, no matter how I beat you, how I torture you, you would still maintain your pride as Yue Clan's men..... Just now, when your daughter appeared, your will swayed. However, her words made you strong again. Such a great bloodline! But Yue Shan, do you think in this world all you need is strong will? You are wrong. I will tell you

that you are gravely mistaken!”

“Do you want to know how I would deal with your daughter? I would use every evil method in this world to torture her. Hundreds of ways. You would watch in utter bitterness, you would eventually kneel down in front of me and beg me to kill her! Do you want me to slice your daughter’s flesh? Such beautiful skin, such good body. Do you think, after hundreds of ways of torture, she would still be like this? I promise you, if you take another look at her, you would puke! There are so many obscene rapists here, no, don’t even mention them. With Miao Xu, who likes to rape and murder women based on his mood, once I command it, he would let your daughter wish that she was never born in this world..... “

“After torturing her in front of you, I can heal her and then change her appearance into someone else. After that, I would break her arms and legs, cut her tongue and make her into a idiot slave. Then I would sell her to a brothel in the red light district of Shang Jin. The ugliest and oldest brothel patrons would just need a bit of money to enjoy her physical body!”

“All these can be avoided, Yue Shan. Now, I do not ask for you to kneel anymore. You do not need to kneel. You are someone I really admire, I do not want to humiliate you, I just hope that you could understand and cooperate with us, that is your only way out. Yue Shan, I think someone as clever as you, would not be unable to understand what I said. Why do you have to still hold on to that belief for Jun Wu You and Da Xia Empire? How’s your image in the eyes of the public? You are just a traitor. A traitor to humankind, a traitor who fell into Demon Abyss. A suspect who murdered his brother. The number one offender who persecuted his sister-in-law and his own nephew! This is who you are, so what are you so

persisting for? Tell me your final decision, I can let your daughter go. I also like outstanding juniors like her, I do not want her fate to end in misery. Everything would be up to you. As long as you are willing to cooperate with us, then you and your daughter will get the best things and the most secure safeguard.”

“As the most competent enemy, let me advise you, persistence is useless. At least I am not someone to be moved by tears and will. Do not force me to take action, Yue Shan. Now answer me!”

“Boom!”

Yue Shan’s knees bent slowly.

With a loud thud, his knees landed on the ground with force.

Mr Feng’s eyes flashed a sign of excitement. He wanted to cheer but he had to force himself not to.

He clenched his fists tightly. The man who refused to surrender in the past few months finally kneeled in front of him, giving in. This feeling of success was difficult to be put into words. Mr Feng was feeling emotional. The thrill from this sort of success gave him a sense of accomplishment much greater than what he felt when he discovered new techniques from his research.

The Black Hell King made such a comment before: To conquer Tong Tian Tower, one must first conquer the Soaring Dragon Continent; To conquer the Soaring Dragon Continent, one must

first conquer the Da Xia Empire; To conquer the Da Xia Empire, one must first conquer the Yue Clan!

Now, progress was finally made. The very first step: conquering the Yue Clan.

Yue Shan finally gave in!

Yue Clan's men would rather die than to kneel in front of their opponents. Today, in front of him, one of them kneeled. Doesn't this mean that the entire Da Xia Empire and the entire Soaring Dragon Continent would start to crumble?

Yue Shan's head banged against the ground, his forehead was against the ground with so much force that fresh blood spluttered out.

His voice, rose from extreme pain and humiliation, "I beg you, Feng Jin, let my daughter go! She did nothing wrong. She did not have any thoughts on becoming enemies with the Black Hell King. She is just a woman, a fragile woman. You can catch my son, you can kill every man in Yue Clan, but please, let her go! Let this be a plea from a father. Feng Jin, you were also a father, you should understand how I feel..... I know, that this request is unrealistic, it seems unreal, just like mist. It's impossible for you to agree, you are just a cold-hearted scum, but for my dearest daughter, I, Yue Shan would kneel in front of you today. Even if the chances are as small as one out of a million, I would not give up..... Feng Jin, you just have to let her go. You can kill me or cut off my flesh as you want, I do not care! I can kneel down, my body can be used by you for any experiment. I can bow down and kowtow just like a dog in

front a scum like you, as long as you can let go of my daughter, I am willing to do anything!”

Yue Shan raised his head, from his sorrowful eyes, tears of blood rolled down his cheeks.

Kneeling down in front of their enemies was a painful humiliation worse than death. It was an action Yue Clan men never thought was worth doing. He hated himself and wished to die instantly.

But he could not.

He was a father, he could not die in such a way.

He had to endure such pain and humiliation that was worse than death. Kneeling down to the enemy, even though he knew success was impossible, he had to try. It was because it might be able to save his own daughter.....

“You!” Mr Feng’s face distorted as if someone had slapped him in the face several times. He let out a high-pitched shriek just like a wounded animal. This huge sense of defeat made him felt as if he was going mad. Under such circumstances, Yue Shan would rather kneel down; he would rather beg him, a victorious enemy, to free his own daughter than to surrender.

The most desperate thing is that, Yue Shan did not even feel the need to trick him. He did not even pretend to surrender!

Could it be that in the Yue Clan's dictionary, there was never the word 'surrender'? Could it be that these guys' brain structures were different from the rest?

Yue Yang let out a sigh of relief in his heart.

Not bad, Yue Shan was still a real man. He was still a qualified father!

Ning Hai was dumbstruck, he had never seen such a man before. At this instant, he realised that compared to Yue Shan, he was so small. Yue Shan may not be as powerful as him but the aura he emitted formed a presence just like the Domain of Power created by powerful Innate Rankers. Ning Hai shivered with fear in his heart.

This was so terrifying.....

A man who was not afraid of death chose to kneel. Such terrifying faith and hatred, such power, was it really something that could be defeated?

Mr Feng was hopping with pure anger, he snarled hysterically, "Last chance, Yue Shan, you do not have a choice. Unless you surrender and cooperate with us your daughter will be safe. If not, I swear, I will use all kinds of methods to torture her, until you regret! One word, Surrender!"

“No! Never!” Yue Shan spat out the blood in his mouth, which was filled with broken teeth, “I beg you for the last time, let me daughter go!”

“Impossible! Never!” Feng Jin was equally persistent.

“Yu Er, I let you down! I am a worthless father, I cannot save you..... “ Yue Shan suddenly diverted the conversation to Yue Yu, who was drenched in tears. He called out to her softly.

In his entire life, he was never so gentle.

His gaze, in his entire life, was never once filled with so much affection. Only until this very moment, he started to behave like a father!

Yue Shan gritted and crushed his teeth, causing fresh blood to gush out. He tried his best to squeeze out a smile for Yue Yu, “Yu Er, since young, I valued males more than females, I never smiled at you. This smile is for you! You are the most obedient daughter, and also the one i am the most proud of. I hope you would not be humiliated by the enemy. If they torture you, then you should kill yourself instantly. Do not give them the opportunity. Before that, you have to endure. Yu Er, after your disappearance, Yue Clan will definitely realize. Your third brother is capable, he will be able to rush over and save you. You must persevere until the last moment. If I stay here, Feng Jin that asshole would use you. If I died, you would be safer, so I will leave..... If you go back and see your grandfather, tell him, I, Yue Shan is not a coward, nor am I a traitor. My third and fourth brother were not killed by me. I, Yue Shan, am still Yue Clan’s man. Always!”

“If you dare to suicide, I promise, your daughter will suffer from the most painful torture.....” Mr Feng frantically unsheathed his dagger, and pointed it at Yue Yu’s face, “I will peel off the skin on her face, no, I will peel off every inch of skin on her!”

“Feng Jin, did you think a scum like you could scare me? Fuck off, us Yue Clan can die but we will never surrender!”

Yue Shan stood up, with red blood all over his face.

He held up his right hand, clenching it to form a tight fist. With a boom he landed a powerful hit on his own forehead.

Chapter 437 – One Son Gone, Another Returns

Yue Yang was a smart man.

However, smart people have one defect and that is their distrust.

Yue Yang did not help immediately when he saw Yue Shan. It wasn't because Yue Yang had wanted to watch a touching scene neither was it to see Yue Yu weep with grief, nor to see Yue Shan kneel down, holding his ground for his daughter... It was because Yue Yang wanted to understand what kind of man Yue Shan was, was he good or evil? Since most guys like Yue Shan were traitorous and evil, it was really hard for Yue Yang to accept Yue Shan as a great father all of a sudden.

Moreover, it was all too coincidental.

Miao Xu and Ning Hai attacked right when he was going to pick up Yue Yu. It was then only expected for him to see Yue Shan being captured!

In the moment that Yue Yang saw Yue Shan, Yue Yang felt a strong suspicion. The appearance of Yue Shan wasn't anything good, he could have reached an agreement with the Black Hell King to put up an act to get Yue Yang's pity.

Even if Yue Shan didn't know Miao Xu was Yue Yang in disguise, Yue Shan would have waited for Yue Yang to come to their rescue.

Since Yue Yang would never sit back and watch Miao Xu and Ning Hai abduct Yue Yu, Yue Yang would have saved Yue Yu and would also be saving Yue Shan at the same time.

Was this the Black Hell King's plan?

Or was this a coincidence?

Yue Yang could not stop thinking about these questions.

Things would be much simpler only if the tigress, Princess Qian Qian was present. Since she had the Six Records Inherent Skill, nobody could deceive her and by listening, she would be able to tell if Yue Shan was faking it. Should Yue Shan really be saved and brought back to the Yue Clan castle? Were his words believable? Was this all an act? Yue Yang couldn't deny that he was slightly touched... Yet, he definitely would not fall into the Black Hell King's trap just because he was slightly touched! Yue Yang didn't care if a million Yue Shan were to die. It wasn't because Yue Shan was his uncle nor because Yue Shan had been targeting the tragic guy and Fourth Mother. It was because Yue Shan had never left a good impression on Yue Yang.

Yue Shan wasn't Second Uncle Yue Ling, he was a really smart guy and would pose a serious threat if he were the enemy.

Yue Yang felt that rather than have Yue Shan as an enemy, he would really prefer to be enemies with other Innate Rankers such as Tiger Nian, Nightmare or Demon Eye. It was due to the fact that

despite their strong powers, their tolerance and scheming nature could not even be compared to Yue Shan.

If Yue Shan had a fatal shortcoming, it was that he was not very strong...

In partnership with the Black Hell King, this shortcoming would cease to exist and everything would have been flawless. Thus, Yue Yang was especially careful... From the moment he had seen Yue Shan, Yue Yang had been silently observing and judging his moves from a third party perspective.

Up till the point where Yue Shan had hit himself, Yue Yang still doubted Yue Shan's motives.

“Boom!”

Yue Shan landed a punch with enough power to smash his skull to the top of his head.

Mr Feng jumped with anxiety. He only had the power of a Lesser Innate.

There wasn't time to prevent it at all.

Furthermore, with Mr Feng's paranoia, he wouldn't rush into the crystal prison recklessly.

This crystal prison was a weird prison created specially for the Black Hell King. The prison had to contain a living body inside it at all times.

Mr Feng didn't rush in to save Yue Shan, instead, he used his Qi to push Yue Yu, who had prepared to rush in, far away. At the same time, armoured elites dashed in without care for their personal safety. They knew that if Yue Shan was dead, another had to take his place. However, to the devoted armoured elites, it wasn't an issue.

“Mr Feng, Yue Shan has only passed out, he's not dead!” When thoroughly examining Yue Shan, the armoured elites found that he had a cracked skull but was still alive.

“Ah, this is perfect! Hurry and treat him, we can't let him die!” Mr Feng was jumping with joy.

“...” Ning Hai knew the only reason Yue Shan was still alive and his skull still intact was all because of Yue Yang.

He hadn't seen Yue Yang's move but he just knew about it.

Yue Yang had definitely made a move.

It was only that the move was carefully concealed from everyone present.

If Yue Yang hadn't had confidence that he could manipulate the

situation, he would have rushed in when Yue Shan attempted suicide. He didn't do anything because he had absolute certainty about the situation, not because he had wanted to watch Yue Shan die.

A shiver ran through Ning Hai as he looked at Yue Yang's relaxed expression.

It seemed like death was not a choice after falling into Yue Yang's hands... Luckily he had surrendered early, if not... Ning Hai too, doubted the intentions of Yue Shan's actions. After all, the Black Hell King was not an easy man, even if Yue Shan has pure intentions now, it doesn't mean that he can't change since the Black Hell King may already have a way to make Yue Shan his man.

Suicide, can never be faked.

After seeing the powerful blow and Yue Shan's cracked skull, Ning Hai realised that Yue Yang hadn't stopped the suicidal move but had only strengthened the protection of Yue Shan's head.

If Yue Shan had hit himself with a much lighter blow or if he had missed his head and waited for help, Ning Hai believed that Yue Yang would have immediately drawn his weapon and killed Yue Shan. Thinking about these thoughts, a shiver ran through Ning Hai once more. It looked like it wasn't easy to earn Yue Yang's trust... Yue Shan aside, even the way Yue Yang looked at Liu Ye was different from looking at Yue Yu. Yue Yang was a born skeptic. It would never be easy to fool him!

Yue Shan's suicide proved that he wasn't yet in cahoots with the Black Hell King and was still a man of the Yue Clan!

“Leave one man here, the rest of you bring Yue Shan to the emergency room immediately, I will treat him myself. Miao Xu, Ning Hai, watch over Yue Yu. Bring the two Battle Machine Dolls over, I want the self-detonating Dragon Crystals in their bodies. Hurry, Yue Shan has lost too much blood and probably won't last long!” Mr Feng used the Black Hell Army's badge to open the sealing circle and performed secretive moves before the shackles on Yue Shan's body opened. The shackles then held down another armoured elite as if with a mind of its own.

Mr Feng didn't look on and rushed towards the emergency room when the dungeon doors opened.

Yue Shan's suicide had dismayed him.

In the end, the men of the Yue Clan still could not be conquered. These Yue Clan descendants were all goddamn tough and unmoved by threats on their lives! There's a need to find another better way... However, these were all not as important as saving Yue Shan's life right now!

As a few armoured elites lifted the unconscious Yue Shan and prepared to follow Mr Feng, Yue Yang made his move.

Silently.

In Ning Hai's eyes, Yue Yang was just like a poisonous snake concealed in the dark, attacking in a flash and massacred with its fangs.

The move was graceful and deft, like a dancing swan and like a crane soaring in the air.

One by one, the armoured elites froze at Yue Yang's touch. Within seconds, they all turned into ice statues. Yue Yu took everything in stride whereas Liu Ye was unaccustomed to such a shocking attack and nearly cried out at the sight. Luckily, she covered her mouth at the last moment.

"Hurry up. Are all of you snails?" Mr Feng hadn't noticed the situation behind him and shouted at the armoured elites habitually.

"Coming!" Ning Hai immediately coordinated with Yue Yang and made running actions.

Liu Ye was frightened as hell. If Mr Feng turned to look behind, they would be discovered immediately.

Yue Yang also stopped Yue Yu from using the Summoning Grimoire to save Yue Shan as there would be no way to hide from Mr Feng with his super sensitive senses to Qi...

Yue Yang appeared in front of the crystal prison in a flash,

clasped his hands and moved about.

Ning Hai almost fainted at the sight.

Damn. Yue Yang had only seen it once but had already figured out the secret method to decode the crystal prison. Was he even human?

The crystal prison opened silently. Yue Yang took a look and kicked one of the ice statues in. He then moved to where Mr Feng had opened the sealing circle, did the same actions and released the prisoner in the crystal prison and allowed the ice statue to take his place. It all happened within seconds. The old man released was dressed in a tattered robe. Yue Yang and Yue Yu couldn't recognise him but Liu Ye recognised him to be a famous hermit from the Tian Luo Kingdom and stepped forward to help him.

Within half a minute, Yue Yang released 5 prisoners with different backgrounds.

However, it felt like years to Ning Hai.

It was because Mr Feng could notice that nobody was behind him at any moment, yet they were not even halfway done with the rescue.

Yue Yu was also at her wits end and could only stop Yue Shan's bleeding to the best of her ability. The problem was that none of the prisoners released were fine and they all needed help

desperately. She was at a lost as she couldn't use the Summoning Grimoire.

Yue Yang maintained his steel-like composure until he had opened the last crystal prison. In fact, Ning Hai had felt that it was pretty good to be able to save 4 or 5 people since with more than 10 heavily wounded prisoners, it wouldn't be possible to save them all. They would have been better off just saving a few people successfully. Furthermore, trouble happened when Yue Yang was saving the last prisoner. A sword had flown out and took a swipe at Yue Yang's head when the crystal prison had opened.

There was a guard with powers of a Lesser Innate inside with the prisoner.

Yue Yang ignored the sharp blade and kicked the guard away. Despite that a loud sound was released when the guard hit the crystal prison, Yue Yang calmly opened the shackles with the secret method.

“What's wrong with you all? Aren't you all going to come here this instant!” Mr Feng's voice sounded distant.

“Yue Shan woke up and is struggling. No worries, we're coming right now!” Ning Hai cried out sullenly. He knew he was finished. Even if he escaped, he would be branded a traitor. He even suspected that this was all Yue Yang's intention for him to be unable to turn back and change his mind. The few people rescued were quiet and despite their shock, they moved swiftly upon regaining their freedom. They helped Yue Yu and Liu Ye carry Yue Shan and two comrades who were immobile and followed behind

Ning Hai.

Yue Yang stayed behind for a few more seconds before he slowly made his way outside.

Ning Hai almost kneeled down to beg for help. Yue Yang was really too bold. Working with him, Ning Hai was playing with his life and could be scared to death before being killed.

Yue Yang trapped all armoured elites in ice along the way.

If not, he rendered them unconscious.

The few swiftest prisoners even managed to strip off the armoured elites' armour and divided among themselves. Some had helmets while others, had breastplates. Still, the fastest hands were unable to take the entire armour.

Just like this, the mismatched party of prisoners following behind Yue Yang all recognised Yue Yang as the leader, even if most of them had no idea who he was.

Originally, 2 prisoners with Level 8 [Emperor] skills had wanted to help.

But seeing Yue Yang's ability, they realised their place. Even if it were 100 years old Elders and Hermits, they all obediently helped to lift the bodies.

“Hurry up and bring Yue Shan over here. Here, I said. This side can wait damn it, I need to save Yue Shan first. For the Battle Machine Dolls, the dragon crystals can be extracted later. Get a summoner with healing powers. Damn it, can’t anybody understand my words?” Mr Feng was frantic. It was because the 2 Battle Machine Dolls were already brought over and were ready for removal of the dragon crystals when a group of men came in disorderly, bringing the heavily injured Yue Shan in front of Mr Feng before the dragon crystals could be extracted.

“Can I? I am a summoner with healing powers!” Yue Yu did not hold back and summoned the Grimoire immediately, using her Healing Water Balls to treat her own father.

“There’s no doubt that you’re Yue Yu, this kind of treatment has very good results. Oh god, our healer is just like an uneducated peasant compared to you. Did I say anything wrong? What’s wrong with you all?” Mr Feng praised Yue Yu extensively. He then felt that something was wrong. He lifted his head and found all the prisoners in shock, unable to figure out the situation.

“Mr Feng, I sincerely invite you over to my house. You have to know that it’s my first time having a guest over!” Yue Yang placed the 2 Battle Machine Dolls in the storage space and smiled at Mr Feng. He waved his hands like a gentleman and said: “Please!”

“You look really familiar?” Mr Feng’s first reaction was that this young man with a sickening smile looked familiar.

“That’s what a lot of beauties say when they see me!” Yue Yang replied slyly.

Mr Feng fell to the ground like a log.

The workers around them all looked on speechlessly. They had in fact been like this ever since Yue Yang brought the group in.

Yue Yang flashed a sweet smile at them and asked: “Hi guys, I would like to know where the secret room where Innate Qi is produced is, who can tell me?” It would be tolerable if Yue Yang hadn’t smiled, but, his bright smile caused everyone in the room to shiver. The cowardly ones sunk onto the floor while someone even wetted his pants out of fear.

Half an hour later, War Tiger returned to his base after causing havoc at the Da Xia Palace.

Although the Heavenly Imperial Guardians of Da Xia were pretty skilled, War Tiger’s real target had been Yue Yang. He felt a twinge of regret as it was such a pity that Yue Yang did not appear. However, when he took in the sight of his smoking base, his guards strewn over the floor and his crying maids who claimed to have been bullied by Yue Yang, War Tiger felt a rush of anger. He spurted blood and nearly fainted.

War Tiger had never been taken advantage of like this before.

Never before!

“Fuck! Yue Yang, I’m not done with you!” War Tiger’s roar shook the skies and even unsettled the ferocious winds.

However, Yue Yang was already back at the Yue Clan Castle.

Yue Yang sat boldly on the throne as Jun Wu You insisted on pouring Yue Yang a cup of tea. Jun Wu You held a teapot and disregarded his status as the king to serve tea to Yue Yang simply because Yue Yang had rescued Elder Huang Shi, Jun Wu You’s master who was a father figure to Jun Wu You.

Tears flowed down Elder Yue Hai’s face as he looked at the unconscious Yue Shan.

A son gone, another returned.

This was the greatest gift to the Yue Clan!

Although Yue Qiu and Yue Ling would never return again but at least the house was still functioning. The once scorned Yue Shan had returned with a clean slate, washed with his faith and blood...

Chapter 438 – Longing, Beauty Became Skinner

The Black Hell King's subordinate, War Tiger, led his men and stirred up troubles in the Da Xia Palace arrogantly.

This blow kept Jun Wu You under pressure. This War Tiger was just the one from the Eastern side among the all other War Tigers, namely the Northern, Southern, Western and the Central War Tigers and he was already so strong that even the two Heavenly Imperial Guardians weren't able to defeat him. If all five War Tigers were to come together, Jun Wu You wasn't sure how he would deal with it. Moreover, War Tiger's haughty attitude already proved that the Black Hell King had already gained his footing in the Soaring Dragon Continent, and he possessed considerable influences. Even if he couldn't conquer the whole of Soaring Dragon Continent now, the day he could do so would not be far.

This blow lowered the morale of the people of Da Xia tremendously.

Especially all the City Masters who were thinking of switching sides.

But when Jun Wu You was most troubled, the Third Young Master of Yue Clan came back with a super good news.

“Forget about the few Fake Elders, how did you manage to kill those Fake Innates?” Jun Wu You never thought that Yue Yang

would attack the rival's secret base and destroy all those successfully made Fake Innates together with those still under experimentation, and even managed to rescue Elder Huang Shi, Hermit Black Leaf and Yue Shan. Jun Wu You was so surprised that he couldn't believe it. Undoubtedly, Yue Yang's act served as a tight slap across the faces of the Black Hell King and the War Tigers.

This slap was very impressive.

Elder Yue Hai, Eastern Sky King, Feng Kuang and the substitute clan masters of the Four Great Clans were unbelieving when they heard the news. Their first reactions were all to ask if it was real.

No matter how much Yue Yang explained, together with the appearance of prisoners like Yue Shan and the rest before them, they still found it amazing and unimaginable.

If this wasn't accomplished by Yue Yang, the lot wouldn't have believed it.

Luckily there's a third young master from the Yue Clan who could do everything.

"The living Fake Innates can cause some problems as I only killed five and the remaining two escaped, but those two are still under experimentation, so it will be easy." Yue Yang pointed to Liu Ye standing beside him like an obedient wife. "With her help, all those Fake Innates still under experimentation will go berserk, even without me doing anything, the secret base will become a

bloody killing ground. “

“No, it wasn’t me... “ How would Liu Ye dare to raise up her head in front of Jun Wu You, the State Grandmaster and the Eastern Sky King. She was merely a student. It was just like how a student would greet and bow when she sees her teacher. She blushed when she heard Yue Yang’s words, and was so flustered that she didn’t know where to put her hands.

“What’s your inherent skill? “ The Heavenly Imperial Guardians of Tian Luo asked, feeling genuinely happy that he had such a genius junior.

“My Inherent skill is Purification. I merely followed third young master’s instructions, I didn’t know anything else. “ Liu Ye got even more nervous when she heard the Heavenly Imperial Guardian asking her questions personally.

“Good, what a good young lady, you are so much better than the old guys here! That’s right, just listen to Yue Yang! Haha! “ The Eastern Sky King laughed as he slapped his thighs.

He was bitterly defeated by War Tiger previously. Now that he heard that a young lady from his homeland managed to tear down the rival’s base, his level of happiness was akin to that of having ice water on a warm summer day.

He felt happy thoroughly.

If Liu Ye wasn't a girl, he would have taken her in as his disciple. The Eastern Sky King knew that if Liu Ye didn't have any prospects, Yue Yang would not have brought her back so grandly. To put it bluntly, Yue Yang wanted Liu Ye to switch to his side, because he discovered her potential... Although the Eastern Sky King might seem careless on the outside, he was actually very meticulous. He would have been Tian Luo's emperor if he weren't so laid back and carefree.

Jun Wu You asked about the process again.

Yue Yang would normally touch briefly on these details, but the old folks couldn't get enough of it, so they ordered Yue Yang to sit down and ask Liu Ye to report the details to them instead.

Liu Ye was initially a little scared of Yue Yang as she stole glances at him occasionally, afraid that he'll be angry.

But on seeing that he acted like an obedient child in front of all the seniors, she was much more at ease. From being nervous initially, she gradually became more relaxed, and then she became completely at ease, as she used a cordial voice to explain the entire process once. Especially on the part about Yue Shan's decision to die rather than submitting and crying blood tears while kneeling, even the experienced marshal, Elder Yue Hai, teared secretly. When she was on the part of Feng Jin leaving and Yue Yang using his secret method to rescue those held captivated, everyone held their breath. Only Liu Ye's voice sounded in the entire area, it was as if if there were any other sounds, it would attract Feng Jin's attention in that very moment... When everyone heard Liu Ye speaking about Yue Yang using the Perforate Deer and

teleportation method, then destroying all the experiment rooms one by one, and even burning the entire place down in the end, these shenanigans made them clap and cheer in joy!

“I did not think that the Purification Inherent Skill could kill the Fake Innates so perfectly, the Black Hell King will definitely experience a painful heartache!” The Ascetic Practice Saint was comforted.

“They made those Fake Innates with a success rate of 0.01%, and they were destroyed just like that. Moreover, the destruction of the secret base would be a huge blow to the Black Hell Army. From this, the invasion time of the Black Hell Army will be pushed back, so we’ll have more time to prepare on our side.” Scholar, the Heavenly Imperial Guardian of Tian Luo hated the secret base, because majority of those captured by the Black Hell King were famous or retired people from Tian Luo. The even more inhumane method used to produce Fake Innates in bulk angered him more.

“I suspect that there are still sub bases, but unfortunately we don’t have any leads.” Yue Yang indicated that the lot should not be so optimistic yet.

“The Black Hell King is no fool, he won’t rely solely on Zi Jin Kingdom. But with this good news, it will be sufficient for the demons from the Demonic Palace and the Demon Abyss to be confident in us.” The State Grandmaster laughed out loud.

“We have rescued the hostages, the Black Hell Army has nothing to threaten us with now, let’s see what they will do! Moreover, Yang Er’s actions will make those City Masters and others who

want to abandon Da Xia think twice.” Due to the return of Yue Yang , Elder Yue Hai’s morale was boosted to the maximum.

If his third sons Yue Qiu’s death hurt him the most, then the betrayal of his eldest son, Yue Shan, would be a blemish that he could never erase away.

Now, with Yue Shan’s suicide attempt to show his loyalty and him kneeling and crying blood tears to protect his son and daughter, Elder Yue Hai was extremely touched. He knew that his son did not betray the family, and it was all a misunderstanding previously. Although Yue Shan was heavily injured, for him to be able to return was the greatest blessing to the Yue Family.

Of course, Elder Yue Hai also understood that all these successes stemmed from his obedient grandson Yue Yang.

If not for him, Yue Shan wouldn’t be able to return back home.

Even if he were to be rescued, without Yue Shan’s attempt to commit suicide and kneeling down crying blood tears, he wouldn’t be able to remove the doubts casted on him and his previous mistakes.

“Go and do your own things, leave the war to us, oh, little Luo Hua seems to be back, don’t you wanna meet her?” The Eastern Sky King was the proudest today because his son-in-law and a countryman destroyed the Black Hell Army’s secret base, and rescued back the hostages and even Jun Wu You’s mentor, how could he not be proud?

“Ok, right away.” Yue Yang missed Luo Hua the City Mistress, it had been a long time since he kissed the beauty, he wondered how she has been doing. With a burning desire, he stood up and went for the door.

“I’ll take my leave too.” Liu Ye quickly followed behind Yue Yang after he left. She couldn’t stay any longer in the room filled with the powerful people of the Soaring Dragon Continent.

“I know that you won’t disappoint me, ahaha, it’s a pity that I didn’t go, if there are any chances in the future, bring me along, how can the big boss not be present on such an important occasion!” Fatty Hair and the rest were waiting in the yard.

In the middle stood Ning Hai whose face was bruised and blue back.

When Yue Yang threw Ning Hai into the yard, he instructed Fatty Hai and the rest to look after him, but they mistook him for a super felon like Feng Jin, so everyone became righteously indignant as they crowded around him, raining punches and kicks on him, causing him to cry pitifully. When Ning Hai explained that he was part of the rebellion army, he was already beaten to a pulp.

Yue Yang kicked away Fatty Hai who dashed towards him to bootlick. Pointing to Liu Ye, he introduced her to the lot. “This pretty girl is Liu Ye, she’s Yue Yu’s classmate, please take care of her, she a new member to the team.”

Fatty Hai slapped his chest. With shaking fats, he made a promise.”Rest assured, I’ll definitely take good care of sister Liu Ye... I, Hai Da Fu, an outgoing, genuine, knowledgeable, good-natured person, is the number one choice when you wanna make a friend, and I’m Yue Yang’s boss, yes, you did not hear it wrongly, I’m his boss, if it isn’t me then who will it be? Sister Liu Ye, if you join our team, I will definitely protect you... Wa wa wa, who kicked me?”

Under the speechless gaze of Liu Ye, Fatty Hai was sent flying into mid air.

His fat body formed an arch in the air.

He was thrown out of the fence in his cries.

“Ignore him, he’s the shame of our team, it is a mistake that he’s even born!” Ye Kong said seriously.

Before Liu Ye could reply, she suddenly realised that Prince Tian Luo and Xue Tan Lang were in front of her. “Prince, why are you here too? “ She asked, surprised.

“I have been standing here for a while, don’t tell me that you just realised it. Although I’m not jealous that you only have eyes for Yue Yang , but please notice us too, we are not like Fatty Hai who is an invisible human backdrop.” Prince Tian Luo wiped away his sweat. Normal ladies would be screaming when they see him, or faint from suffocation, he rarely meet people like Liu Ye who could completely ignore the presence of a handsome guy. Liu Ye is one of

a kind.

“Sorry, I really didn’t see you just now, I was too nervous.” Liu Ye apologized respectfully.

“Could it be that we are really invisible? “ Ox Head Fan Lun Tie looked upset.

Forget about human beings, how could she have ignored a three metres tall ox head person?

Moreover, there’s the Golden Elves who are more attractive than the Ox head people!

Does Liu Ye have any problems with her eyes?

Ox Head Fan Lun Tie suspected.

“I’m such a pitiful beautiful girl, this is my first time getting ignored...” Bao Er imitated Yue Yang as she pressed two of her forefingers together. She looked adorable.

“Ah, Ox Head people, and Golden Elves, my God, the Golden Elves actually came to the Soaring Dragon Continent?” Liu Ye’s realization came later than most of the people in the Soaring Dragon Continent. She actually didn’t know about the Golden Elves coming? Her scream made Anna dizzy. There are still people who are unaware about the big news of Golden Elves coming to the Soaring Dragon Continent?

“Hahaha!” Lin En’s facial expression looked as if he had predicted all this.

“...” Only Xue Tan Lang’s perpetual emotionless face remained the same.

When Liu Ye was talking to Fatty Hai, Ye Kong and Prince Tian Luo, Yue Yang had already teleported to the Palace of Tian Luo excitedly, he then proceeded to the Night Empress’ Mirage.

As the maid led him into the Imperial Garden, Yue Yang realised that Yue Yu was embracing Yue Shuang and talking softly to Fourth Mother.

Yue Yu was telling her about Yue Yang ’s mighty attempt in rescuing her father and destroying the enemy’s base. Fourth Mother nodded occasionally, sitting beside them was a beauty in glamorous clothes. She was Luo Hua City Mistress. Because of her longings towards Yue Yang, she became heartbreakingly skinny. According to her wishes, she wanted to see Yue Yang immediately, she longed to embrace him, but was scared that the elders would laugh at her. She knew that Yue Yang would report to Jun Wu You and the rest, so she finally made the decision to go to the Yue Clan Castle.

Although she was sitting beside Fourth Mother and listening about Yue Yang ’s heroic deeds, she looked anxious, as she kept looking in the direction of the entrance and the corridor, hoping for her lover to come and meet her quickly.

After a long while, when Luo Hua City Mistress lifted her head again, she finally saw Yue Yang coming towards her from the aisle. She jumped up in joy.

All her longings dissipated into the air.

Her heart was filled to the brim with happiness.

She didn't care about keeping her cool anymore as she rushed towards him, ignoring the presence of seniors around.

She cheered as she threw herself toward Yue Yang.

She couldn't wait even just for a second...

Chapter 439 – Yue Yu Is Sick?

Their deep kiss lasted for a while, both unwilling to let go.

Yue Shuang, who was watching them for quite a long while at a distance finally clapped her hands and cheered, “Haha, brother and sister Luo Hua sitting on a tree, k-i-s-s-i-n-g!”

Fourth Mother quickly pulled her away, “Yue Shuang, don’t make such a ruckus. What do you know of adult matters? Let’s go, mom will make you a delicious glutinous ball soup...” If it was at normal times, Yue Shuang would definitely cheered out loud. She was someone who would never be able to resist the temptation of food. However, right now, she actually tried to struggle free from her mom and dashed towards her brother, shouting, “Brother, I also want a kiss!”

Luo Hua City Mistress felt a little embarrassed, her face had turned red.

Even Yue Yu turned her head, she didn’t know how to resolve this situation.

Yue Yang, however, had a thick skin and didn’t care so much about Yue Shuang’s words. He carried Yue Shuang up and smacked a kiss on her apple-red cheeks, fulfilling her wish for a kiss.

“Brother, I want a kiss like sister’s, on my mouth!” Yue Shuang puckered up her lips. She felt that her brother’s kiss was lacking and wanted more.

“It’s all your fault!” Luo Hua Cit Mistress was so embarrassed that she wanted to hide inside a hole. She hid behind Yue Yang and pinched his waist, using this as a pretext to hide her embarrassment. If no one had pointed it out, she wouldn’t mind Yue Yang’s hugs and kisses. But after Yue Shuang made a ruckus about it, let alone Fourth Mother and Yue Yu, even the servants who were trying to hide their smiles around her knew about the kiss. This made her so embarrassed that she hung her head low. Yue Yang laughed out loud and smacked a kiss on Yue Shuang’s lips, “Shuang-er, good girl, brother will reward you a big powdered fruit!”

As a piece of powdered fruit appeared from Yue Yang’s storage ring, the little girl’s attention was immediately diverted.

Yue Shuang immediately received it and hugged her brother. She gave Yue Yang a sloppy kiss on his face and then jumped back to show off to her mother, “Mom, look at this, brother gave me a powdered fruit as a reward! Powdered fruit is extremely sweet, if you don’t believe me, you can try a little...”

Seeing her naive and adorable antics, everyone couldn’t help but feel happy.

Yue Yang reached out his hand towards Luo Hua City Mistress. After an embarrassed pout from her, she reached out her hand and placed it on his palm.

Fourth mother nodded when she saw this. Yue Yang and Luo Hua

really suited each other, they were a pair matched in the heavens.

She then looked at Yue Yu who was lowering her head, as if she had something to say to her. However, in the end she stopped herself from saying anything. She carried Yue Shuang and said to Yue Yu, “I have made delicious glutinous rice ball soup today, everyone, let’s eat them together!”

“Sure! Like Yue Shuang, I also love eating glutinous rice ball soup the most!” Yue Yu seemed to be afraid that others would be able to read her thoughts, she immediately took Yue Shuang from Fourth Mother. As she teased her sister and followed Fourth Mother, she sneaked a peek towards Yue Yang and Luo Hua. When their eyes accidentally met, she immediately said, “You guys have just met each other again. Take your time to catch up with each other, I will leave some glutinous rice ball soup for you!”

“If brother doesn’t come soon, I won’t leave a single drop for you, I will finish them all!” Yue Shuang made a face to Yue Yang playfully.

“Isn’t she cute? Do you want to make one of our own?” Yue Yang whispered towards Luo Hua City Mistress.

“You...” Luo Hua City Mistress’ face immediately turned beet-red. She hurriedly looked around to check if anyone had heard Yue Yang. She could only calm herself after making sure that nobody heard him, then she immediately hit her lover, “Big pervert, what are you saying in broad daylight!”

“Great, then we can discuss this at night.” Yue Yang didn’t have “embarrassment” in his dictionary.

Luo Hua City Mistress’s face momentarily reddened alluringly as hot air seemed to rise from her lowered head just like a young wife. She followed beside Yue Yang while counting the grass on the ground. At this moment, her heart beat rapidly. After her previous happy experience, she naturally understood her lover’s words and the secret meaning behind them, so much that her body thirsted for her lover’s embrace. She had continuously thought about him, but right now was not the best time. It would be best if they returned into the Grimoire World first because that place was their love nest... Luo Hua City Mistress half cuddled Yue Yang and pulled him along like gentle water.

Her intoxicated eyes rose steadily from time to time, sneaking a peek at him.

No matter how many time she did this, it was not enough.

The Sickly Beauty, who had received the news, also came out. Naturally, she also gave Luo Hua and Yue Yang the opportunity to be alone. If Princess Qian Qian, Xue Wuxia, Yi Nan and Yue Bing returned, it would be hard for them to find time alone. Sickly Beauty completely understood this point, so she came out from the Grimoire World. On the surface, she pretended to nag at Yue Shuang, saying that she shouldn’t leave her homework halfway. However, the truth was that she wanted to leave Luo Hua City Mistress and Yue Yang in their own world.

Impatient for nightfall, Yue Yang hurriedly freed himself from

Yue Shuang's entanglement and carried Luo Hua City Mistress in her arms.

Luo Hua City Mistress pretended to struggle a bit and in the end complied with Yue Yang and returned inside the Grimoire World.

In their lovers world, they kissed for a long time, again and again, passionately.

It seemed as if they wanted to let out all their longing through their lips. In a passionate moment, she tightly hugged her lover, as if she wanted to merge together with her lover.

Before Yue Yang realized it, Luo Hua City Mistress had become a flawless beauty. Her skin was incomparably white and flushed with pink as if she was about to pass out.

Under Yue Yang's hot kiss, she whispered on his ears: "Scoundrel, I missed you..."

Inside the room, spring filled the air as their love blossomed with burning passion.

The yearning lovers felt each other endlessly.

The Bloody Queen Red, who peeked from faraway, blushed furiously. Her heart jumped like drums and her watery eyes lit up with comprehension. Every time she looked, she secretly nodded her head as if trying to learn and remember something. Moreover,

on the other side, the quietly watching Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man was showing confusion. Her eyes exuded with puzzlement and could not understand what was happening.

She was even not as clever as the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen. If the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen wasn't soundly asleep on her flower bed, she would be the number one of the Guardian Beast who loved to watch Yue Yang make love.

As for the Earth Fire Spirit, she was completely uninterested in this. She completely did not understand Yue Yang's actions.

In the path to evolving into a humanoid form, she was still far from becoming a Holy Beast.

Sometimes, level and strength did not represent everything.

On the second day, Luo Hua City Mistress, who finally released her yearning, had clearly become more beautiful. Her entire person shone with radiance that even made Yue Shuang shout: "Sister is so pretty!". Compared to her, Yue Yu did not know what to do and seemed to be a bit downcast, as if she had not slept well.

"Princess Qian Qian said that she will be a bit late. Bing'er is also currently learning from Grandma Wu Teng. What does San'er plan to do?" Fourth Mother notified Yue Yang: "If you have the time, you should go to the Fifth Floor of the Tong Tian Tower to look for Yue Qiu's inheritance!"

“Okay!” Yue Yang originally planned to research Ghost Genius Yue Gong’s restored battle dolls. However, Yue Qiu’s inheritance was also important.

“You should all go. You don’t need to accompany me. With Shuang-er besides me, I should be fine. Wu Hen, Luo Hua and Yu-er, you should all go with San-er!” as Fourth Mother spoke, Yue Yu was astonished. She looked at Fourth Mother unbelievably and asked: “Do I need to go too?” Her implied that Sickly Beauty and Luo Hua City Mistress were Yue Yang’s wife and they would definitely make love on the way. How could she fit in with them?

“...” Sickly Beauty and Luo Hua City Mistress did not understand. Could there be any deeper meaning in Fourth Mother’s words?

“I shall not be concerned with you young ones’ matters anymore. Do whatever you want!” Fourth Mother glanced at Yue Yu and did not explain anything. She picked up Yue Shuang and left.

She did not say it, but her attitude was very clear. She hoped that Yue Yu would also go find Yue Qiu’s inheritance that he left behind for his son.

Luo Hua City Mistress, Sickly Beauty and Yue Yu were all exceptionally intelligent, but at this moment they could not understand Fourth Mother’s intention. They looked at each other in confusion but didn’t voice it out, then they looked at Yue Yang. At this moment, Yue Yang was also confused, but he was also good at pretending to be confused, so he laughed: “Maybe she meant that if there are treasures, we should split them among us?”

Yue Yu's hands tightly clenched under the desk, showing that she was mentally conflicted.

She bit her lips: "I am feeling a little unwell so I won't go with you guys."

Sickly Beauty and Luo Hua City Mistress looked at each other and tried to advise her at the same time.

Yue Yu's eyes reddened, and she still shook her head. She pretended to smile and waved her hand: "You should not worry about me. I am only a bit sleep deprived because of the Black Hell army's attack against Da Xia. I was only thinking too much, so I did not sleep well. Resting for two days should be enough."

She get up and quickly returned to her room.

Luo Hua City Mistress lightly hit Yue Yang: "This is not good. Quickly think of a plan. If Princess Qian Qian knew about this, she would definitely think that we bullied her!"

When he heard her, Yue Yang perspired profusely: "This matter is not related to that tigress Qian Qian. Don't think too much about it."

"You should go look at her. Since she is not feeling well, you should go check on her." Sickly Beauty suggested.

“...” Yue Yang sweated. As for where Yue Yu was unwell, Yue Yang guaranteed that it was completely unrelated to her body! However, Sickly Beauty’s words did not imply to look at her illness, but to go and comfort Yue Yu. At the very least he should talk to her once and calm her panicked mind.

The question was, Yue Yang felt that the more he talked to Yue Yu the more painful it would be for her.

Luo Hua City Mistress and Sickly Beauty returned inside the Grimoire World to continue finishing the construction for their love nest.

Yue Yang hesitated for a while and in the end walked in front of Yue Yu’s room.

He lightly knocked.

After a while, as if she knew that Yue Yang was outside: “Xiao San, I’m going to sleep. I am fine, so you can go back!”

Yue Yang simply opened the door and entered. Surprised, Yue Yu got up from the bed and angrily shouted: “Why did you come in? I already told you that I am going to sleep. You are not even a kid anymore, why are you always so frivolous? I am really fine now, I am only a bit tired. Everything should be fine if I rest a little, you should go back and accompany Luo Hua more...” She spoke out as she got up to push Yue Yang out of her bedroom.

“You lost weight.” Yue Yang seriously looked at her and noticed that she had lost a lot of weight. Moreover, this was not because of yesterday’s ordeal but it had already been like this for a while now.

“What do you mean “you, you”, you are so disrespectful, call me big sister!” Yue Yu pretended to be angry.

Yue Yang sat himself down on a chair, and Yue Yu unhappily rolled her eyes and lied back down on her bed. She did not say anything for a while, so Yue Yang did not know what she was thinking of.

Yue Yang stood up and Yue Yu slowly looked over: “Are you going to leave? Then, then close the door on your way!”

When she saw that Yue Yang was not about to go out, but approached her and sat down on her bed instead, she immediately panicked and sat up: “Don’t sit here...sigh, you... just obediently sit there, I’m truly fine. Xiao San, I simply don’t want to go... If I go I wouldn’t be of any help and will only be a burden. Moreover, Luo Hua and you had not seen each other for a long time, you should accompany her more.”

Gently, Yue Yang helped Yue Yu to lie down and tucked her in.

Yue Yang reached out and lightly patted her beautiful hair: “Rest well. Don’t think too much about it. The matter is not as bad as you think!”

Yue Yu dodged Yue Yang's gaze and her cheeks flushed.

As if used to his actions, she explained: "No, I did not think too much. Quickly go back, I truly want to rest!"

Yue Yang went out and lightly closed the door.

Listening until the sound of his footsteps disappeared, Yue Yu covered the pit of her stomach and sighed.

Suddenly, she patted her forehead: "Don't think about it, don't think about it anymore!"

Chapter 440 – Furious Xia Yi

Yue Yang didn't head to the Fifth Floor of Tong Tian Tower straight away.

Because he didn't know the exact location, Yue Yang decided to go up to the Sixth Floor and then go back to the Thunder Fortress along the way.

If the Black Hell Army didn't find out that Titan was the third young master of the Yue Clan, then his properties in the Thunder Fortress should remain safe. Or if the Black Hell King didn't gather enough influence in the Soaring Dragon Continent, he also wouldn't act rashfully and acquire Titan's properties. As mines are fixed assets, no matter who acquired it, he would have to deploy manpower to look after it as he couldn't move it away. So they could become the target of enemies anytime. Moreover, the Black Hell King had countless mines in the Tong Tian Tower, if he were to anger 'Titan Brothers', it would be easy for Yue Yang to take revenge.

The Black Hell King was no fool, he wanted to conquer the whole of the Soaring Dragon Continent, not just two mines in the tiny Thunder Fortress of the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower.

Conquering the Soaring Dragon Continent was just the beginning to conquering the whole of Tong Tian Tower.

Whatever mines would be useless in comparison with the Soaring Dragon Continent.

“Woah, master is back! I miss you a lot, please allow me to change your clothes for you! “ The half elf girl with a childish look and big boobs was the happiest when she saw Yue Yang, there was also Jia De the Fat Toad Merchant who was equally overjoyed. Jia De’s position now was no longer just the Chairman of the Titan Merchant Guild, he was also the self appointed second butler. Using his words, he was of even higher rank than Yan Zheng the Butler, he was of the highest rank among all the workers. Of course, Xia Yi and the half elf female slave weren’t included in the list.

While Yue Yang was listening to Yan Zheng the butler’s report, the half elf girl took the opportunity to remove Yue Yang’s jacket, and fetched some clean water as she sat him down and washed his feet.

Jia De wanted to go and help him personally too.

But fortunately he knew that he shouldn’t do it, if not the half elf girl would have hated him to the bones and Yue Yang would have kicked him to his death.

Yue Yang looked at the accounts, with Yan Zhang taking care of it, he did not need to worry at all.

“Jia De, nothing happened recently right?” Yue Yang knew how to make use of his men. Towards those useless but enthusiastic ones, he had to praise them occasionally, if not their morale would plunge. Moreover the Fat Toad was still of some use to him.

“Nope, nothing happened. After you left, everything was fine.” The half elf girl was happily washing his feet, so she did not realise that Yue Yang isn’t talking to her. “How can you say nothing happened? Something happened, and it’s very dire! It is very, very important!” The fat toad felt that her response wasn’t impressive. He then proceeded to describe all the tiny little things that happened in the Thunder Fortress. “Two top quality gems were found in the fifth mine again. This month, we are top in the whole of the Thunder Fortress again. Even Blood River and Mountain Elf are envious, and King Chong Ni planned to throw a welcome party for you. This is so important, how could you say that nothing has happened?”

“I’m not free currently to attend King Chong Ni’s party, help me reject it.” Yue Yang had no time for such parties.

“Ah...” Jia De and the rest acted as if they saw a monster as they looked at Yue Yang who did not even blink his eyes when he said he wanted to reject King Chong Ni’s offer. Did they hear it wrongly?

“I’m really busy now, I’m sure that King Chong Ni will understand.” Yue Yang waved his hands lightly, he then paused for a while and finally decided to release some details. “I have made some enemies recently, so I may have to fight with them, let’s talk about the party after my fight! If anyone comes and find trouble, abide by what they say for the time being, and wait for me to come back before making any decisions, your lives are the top priority!”

“No, I will not follow another owner, if master were to die from

the fight, I will kill myself to guard my loyalty for you.” The half elf girl held on to Yue Yang’s legs. Tears rolled down her face as she cried hysterically.

“I will not be defeated, I’ll just have to use some strategies. The enemies may come here before I defeat them, so be mentally prepared. As for you, after starting the fight, I will bring you away temporarily.” Yue Yang caressed the head of the half elf girl softly as he used his fingers to wipe off her tear gently. He reckoned that the Black Hell King wouldn’t bother to come to find trouble here. It wouldn’t affect Yue Yang very much. Moreover, Chong Ni, the king of Thunder Fortress, wouldn’t allow anyone to invade his place because it would be very embarrassing for him.

“What do you mean? We won’t surrender, we’d rather die than submit to our enemies!” Fat Toad knew that once they surrender, he would no longer have a high position. He would go back to become a pathetic rodent along the streets who had to fight till his death in order to maintain his status.

“Can I ask who your enemy is?” Yan Zheng the butler was more rational.

“Enemy? I have a lot of enemies... as of now they include Zi Jin Emperor Shun Tian and the Black Prince, maybe even the Thousand Globin Sect Leader, but the greatest one would be the Black Hell King. “ Upon hearing what Yue Yang said, Fat Toad Jia De immediately collapsed onto the ground, as he spasmed and vomit white foam.

Yan Zheng broke out into cold sweat too.

Because none of those mentioned were weaklings. Conversely, they WERE powerful Innate Rankers that could shake the whole of Tong Tian Tower just by stomping their foot.

Forget about the Titan Brothers who just came to the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian tower, even Chong Ni, the owner of the Thunder Fortress wouldn't offend any one of these people.

Mr. Chen who had just stepped in was stunned too.

He then broke out into laughter and gave Yue Yang a thumbs up. "Well, well, you live up to your name of being the most outstanding young man of Tong Tian Tower, some guts you have there! Although there are a lot of haughty Innates in the Tong Tian Tower, not many would dare to defy these people, let alone defying them all at once! Titan Jr., I am curious as to how did you manage to offend them all at one go?"

Yue Yang's voice was calm as silky water flowing through rocks. "I have been enemies with Shun Tian and the Black Prince for a long time, we have also fought for a few times. I have some issues with the Thousand Globin Sect Leaders too. As for the Black Hell King, he wants to invade and conquer our Soaring Dragon Continent, so as a citizen of the Soaring Dragon Continent, I definitely have to go against him."

Mr. Chen was startled again. "You have fought for a few times with Shun Tian and the Black Prince?"

“Master, was your mask broken by them?” The half elf girl’s question caused the lot to finally realised that the Gold-ranked Gemini mask was broken. How much strength would that take?

“Not them, it was broken someone more powerful than Shun Tian and the Black Prince.” Upon hearing it, Fat Toad Jia De who just regained his composure had wobbly legs again.

Shun Tian and the Black Prince were top notch players in the Sixth and Seventh Floor, even in the Eighth and Ninth Floor, they were considered strong.

For someone to be even more powerful than Shun tian and the Black Prince, could it be Supreme Elder Zhi Zun?

But Zhi Zun was from the Soaring Dragon Continent too, so it would be impossible for her to fight with Titan Jr... Then who was it exactly? Let alone Fat Toad and Yan Zheng, even Mr Chen couldn’t guess who broke Yue Yang’s golden mask! Yue Yang didn’t do any explanations but proceeded to complete the deal with Mr. Chen and kept the Thunder Beast and Thunder Armour into his storage ring. He looked very relaxed, and not a single bit of nervousness for the imminent war could be sensed from him.

Mr. Chen looked at Yue Yang shockingly. He couldn’t understand why a young man who just came to the Sixth Floor could be so strong.

Shun Tian, the Black Prince and the Black Hell King all couldn’t defeat him?

How strong is Yue Yang exactly?

Yue Yang caressed the head of the half elf girl gently.”Rest assured, you don’t have to worry about me, just wait for me to come back.”

“Okay, I have faith in you, Master!” The half elf girl trusted Yue Yang the most, her faith in him was unremitting.

“If Shun Tian, Black Prince or the Black Hell King’s followers were to come here and occupy our mines, what should we do?” Yan Zheng the butler asked.

“The first choice would be to abide by what they say temporarily, but if you all aren’t willing, the second choice would be to tell them that if they are not afraid of me going to the Zi Wei Palace (Shun Tian is the Great Emperor of Zi Wei) and repay them a hundred times worse, then go ahead with what they want to do. If anyone questions it, just say that I’m Zhi Zun’s disciple, Night Empress’s brother and one of the ten Sky Demons of the Sky Demon Palace, ask them to think if they have sufficient power before finding troubles with me! Actually you all don’t have to worry, my fight with Shun Tian, the Black Prince and the Black Hell King wouldn’t affect you all!” Yue Yang utilised all the contacts he had. Even if the information was false, he had to lie first, especially dragging the Sky Demons into it to prevent Sky Execution from chickening out.

“Cough, cough, cough!” Fat Toad Jia De just picked himself up

and prepared to get himself some water, but on hearing Yue Yang, he choked on water.

Even Mr. Chen was shocked.

He never thought that Titan Jr.'s background was so exaggerated. Being Zhi Zun's disciple, Night Empress's brother and part of the Ten Sky Demons, Yue Yang had gained all the advantages he could apparently. It was no wonder he dared to challenge Shun Tian, the Black Prince and Black Hell King. Compared to Shun Tian and the rest, Zhi Zun, Night Empress and Sky Demon Palace were not any weaker. They might even be stronger!

Fat Toad Jia De held back his cough as he shook his butt and started a toad dance.

With such impressive background, why would they have to worry about some insignificant mines? Even if they offered it to the enemies, they wouldn't dare to accept them!

As for Shun Tian, he was the emperor of Zi Wei, with such a superior status, how would he come to the Thunder Fortress just to get two mines? If he really were to do it, he would become the biggest laughing stock of Tong Tian Tower!

Yan Zheng the butler went silent for a while, as if trying to digest the shock he got from Yue Yang. He then suddenly asked a question. "Has Sky Dragon, one of the ten Sky Demon, died?"

Yue Yang waved his hands and replied casually. “I killed him and the Six Sky Demons of the Sky Demon Palace came after me, after fighting with them, I joined the Sky Demon Palace on the condition of them betrothing Sky Law to me, so I am part of the new Ten Sky Demons now, so this is what happened briefly... If King Chong Ni were to ask, then tell him that! If he didn’t ask, then don’t spread it around, because after all this doesn’t make the Sky Demon Palace look good, and I have to consider the pride of Sky Execution.”

Actually Yue Yang knew that Chong Ni would definitely ask about it.

Once Chong Ni knows about these relations, with his intelligence, he wouldn’t reveal it to Shun Tian and the rest. Conversely, he would instruct his followers secretly.

After all the best decision for his future would be to forge connections with Yue Yang... For him to become the king of the Thunder Fortress, Chong Ni was no fool.

After Mr. Chen heard it, his expression turned into acknowledgement, as if he was mentally saying ‘as expected’.

He had also guessed that Sky Dragon had died that day, but he never thought that Titan Jr. would not receive any punishment for killing Sky Dragon and instead joined the Demonic Palace to become part of the ten Sky Demons.

“Do you need any of my help? Feel free to ask me, we’re friends

after all.“ Mr. Chen asked.

“I will if I need your help in the future, but not now.” Yue Yang waved his hands and thanked Mr. Chen for his good will.

Yue Yang’s act moved Fat Toad Jia De to tears.

His master actually rejected an Innate Ranker like Mr. Chen’s offer to help, he must be very powerful... If he could, Fat Toad Jia De is willing to stand at the highest point of the Thunder Fortress, naked, as he sing praises to his master. Only through this could he let out his burning passion! Of course this was only in his dreams because the highest point of the Thunder Fortress was King Chong Ni’s tower, in which even his concubines were banned from it!

The half elf girl also expressed her admiration for Yue Yang. “You are so strong, master... I’ll wait for you here and I’ll pray for you everyday!”

Behind a door, Xia Yi who was dressed in a policewoman uniform poked out her head.

The expression on her face was an unreadable, it was a complex mixture of worries and longings.

After Mr. Chen, Yan Zheng the butler and Fat Toad left, Yue Yang waved to her. “Come over, speak what’s on your mind!”

“Everyone is pinning their hopes on you, so you must stay safe.”

The cool Xia Yi avoided Yue Yang's gaze as she spoke so softly as if she was a little kitten. But as Yue Yang's gaze continued to wander at her, she flared up and forgot that Yue Yang was her master and an Innate as she grabbed him by the collar, and looked at him eye to eye, nose to nose with her lips just a few centimetres away from Yue Yang's. In a posture like this, she shouted loudly at Yue Yang. "Don't think that I like you just because I fought for you previously, you are wrong, I hate people like you!"

"You like me?" Yue Yang felt that he heard an alien just said hello to him.

"No, i just didn't want you to misunderstand!" Xia Yi blushed as she tried to justify herself, but as she continued, her explanations got less and less convincing.

"Alright, I'm so worried that you'd like me, you probably don't know that as an outstanding young man, this is what troubled me the most. There's always so many boring women liking me, it makes me very passive!" Yue Yang ignored Xia Yi's fiery anger as he shrugged his shoulders, appearing like an annoying dandy.

"You..." Xia Yi exhausted all her might to stop herself from beating up the damned narcissist.

"Lalala~ Lalala~!" Yue Yang used his hands to caress the half elf girl smiling in his arms, as if he was petting an obedient kitten as he sang happily.

"I will get straight to the point, what did you put in my body?"

Why am I so abnormal this few days?” Xia Yi wanted to kill Yue Yang very much, but for the sake of the mysterious energy in her body, she decided to ask him, if not the growing curiosity would kill her someday. She didn’t realise it initially, but gradually, she started to realise that she was possessing stronger power.

“There’s something wrong with you? Are you pregnant, by me?” Yue Yang looked shocked as he behaved as if he was innocent.

“Meowrrrr!” Xia Yi became incensed like a cat whose tail was being stepped on. She first grabbed onto Yue Yang’s arms and bite on it. Upon realising that she couldn’t do it as he was too thick skinned, she started to rain punches on Yue Yang, but as she do so, she started crying. “It was you! Waah, I couldn’t walk, sit or lie these few days, I felt this unexplainable uncomfortable feeling. And this stupid uniform, I couldn’t even remove it after I wore it, you pranked on me deliberately... Waah! I don’t want to be like this, quickly change me back to how i was like before...”

“Th-this is none of my business!” it was too late for Yue Yang to feign ignorance now. He quickly tried to cover up. “Stop crying first, let me think of something!”

Chapter 441 – The Mystery Of Yue Qin

“Can you really make me feel better?” Xia Yi stopped crying upon hearing what Yue Yang said. Her face was still tear streaked, making her look very pitiful as she looked completely different from her usual cool, formidable female warrior self.

“Come to my room first!” Yue Yang acted as if he was a genius doctor.

“What?” Xia Yi was very suspicious.

“It’s alright if you don’t want to go into the room. You can remove your clothes here!” Yue Yang finally revealed his true intentions.

“I have to remove my clothes when you are healing me?” Xia Yi stopped crying as she clenched her fist and puffed up her cheeks.

“No, I can’t just look, I’d have to touch too...” Before Yue Yang could finish his sentence, Xia Yi had already grabbed him by the collar and threw him towards the wall. She then turned around and walked away, waving her fist in the air. “I’d rather die than to be taken advantage of by you, stop dreaming!”

“So fierce!” The half elf girl looked at Xia Yi and shuddered. She then quickly went to find Yue Yang. “Master, master, are you okay?”

“Hahaha!” Yue Yang stood on the wall and he broke into a fit of laughter.

“Is sister Xia Yi sick, it’s a good thing for her to be unable to control her powers right? “ The half elf girl was very smart as she guessed Yue Yang’s intentions instantly. She guessed that Yue Yang didn’t want to heal her deliberately, if not he wouldn’t have teased her and made her angry.

“What a bright girl, I have something on so I’ll leave now, wait for me to come back!” Yue Yang caressed the hair on the forehead of the half elf girl gently.

“Nn!” The half elf girl was the most obedient one as she held onto Yue Yang’s arms intimately and nodded her head adorably.

She actually wanted to hug Yue Yang, but she couldn’t muster up the courage to do so.

After dealing with Mr. Chen and getting the summon crystal of Thunder Beast and large amount of Thunder Armor, Yue Yang left the Thunder Fortress and decided to head down to the Fifth Floor to find Yue Qiu’s Inheritance.

Before that, he went to the Warrior Guild to sell his items.

It was peaceful in the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower.

Continents breaking out in war was common to the higher

managements of Tong Tian Tower as it occurs almost everyday. Although this time round it was the Black Hell King against the Soaring Dragon Continent, it didn't attract a lot of attention because the Demon Abyss had a long history of killing and looting from foreign continents. Powerful Innates like Shun Tian and the Black Prince also had histories of dominating continents, so all these couldn't rouse the attentions of the higher managements of the Tong Tian Tower.

Yue Yang walked around the Adventurer Guild and realised that the Black Hell Army offer only very little rewards to missions that target the warriors of the Soaring Dragon Continent.

It was just like a few stones being thrown into the ocean— it couldn't stir up any ripples.

It couldn't even compare to the bounty offered by the Adventurer Guilds for the heads of the Fallen Warriors in the Black Hell Army!

“Is the Immortal Spring ready?” Yue Yang went to the Glorious Hall to receive his rewards for killing Sky Dragon. As he had already fought with the Six Sky Demons, and they also admitted the fact that Sky Dragon had been killed, Yue Yang didn't mind receiving more rewards.

“Yes, please check the reward.” The different tribe receptionist beauty saw Sky Dragon's head and shuddered out of agitation. It was the head of a Level Six Innate Ranker!

“It's alright, thanks.” Yue Yang received the golden box

containing the Immortal Spring. He didn't even look at it as he covered it up. One's wealth shouldn't be revealed to others. It would be barely okay to show off his other treasures, but for the Immortal Spring, he couldn't be too ostentatious as it was wanted everywhere. Forget about others, even for Yue Yang, if he sees others with it, he would snatch it away at all cost.

Sky Dragon was a Level Six Innate Ranker, if Yue Yang were to exchange his head for gold, they would probably accumulate to form a small mountain.

If it were to be exchanged for the Wisdom Fruits, he could claim hundreds of them.

But for the Immortal Spring, Yue Yang already sensed that there were only five drops.

He first used a protective box weighing over a few hundred kilograms to encase it, then he used Heaven Runes to seal it, making it impenetrable to any weapons. It would also not be destroyed by water or fire. All these for a jade bottle as big as a thumb. No, more accurately speaking, these were for the five drops of Immortal Spring in the jade bottle.

The difference between having the Immortal Spring and not having it would be most apparently exemplified using the Wishing Dutchman's Pipe.

Normal Wishing Dutchman's Pipes were useless, as it would be a pity to make an easily accomplished wish but if one were to be

more greedy with his wish, it would be ineffective. Also, it would be destroyed after using, causing the chances of making a successful wish to be very slim.

Having the Immortal Spring was like, taking the Wishing Dutchman's Pipe for example, having a Wishing Dutchman's Pipe that would never wither. One could use it once in three years, allowing it had surpassed all treasures in the world. Yue Yang exhausted his family Inheritance as he exchanged for it using a mountain of gold. Being able to get this treasure made Yue Yang very proud to this day.

This was actually the indirect reflection of the effect of the Immortal Spring.

If not for the Immortal Spring, then the Wishing Dutchman's Pipe would never not wither, it would remain as a useless treasure forever. It would always make people love and loathe it at the same time!

Of course there were also a lot of other factors that contributed to the growth of the Wishing Dutchman's Pipe. For example, watering with God's Dew, God's Water and the God's Wine.

But the main factor was the Immortal Spring.

Yue Yang went down to the Fifth Floor.

Yue Yang rarely went to the fifth floor, he merely passed by it

most of the time.

When he reached the Fifth Floor, he realised that there were also large amount of active warriors over here. Warriors from Demon Abyss and other foreign continents were everywhere, and they appeared unfriendly towards Yue Yang. Below the Sixth Floor, due to the fierce competition, people took sides more apparently, but this wasn't seen in the Sixth Floor as warriors from hundreds of continents and other regions were mixed together, so they couldn't even take sides.

“I need a map to the Oleander Valley .“ Yue Yang's wish could easily be granted, because the assistant head of the Warrior Guild could recognise him already being the first in a thousand years to bring Golden Elves down the Sixth Floor.

“There's war occurring there! “ Not only did the Assistant Head came to welcome Yue Yang, he also revealed informations to him.

There was indeed war happening in the Oleander Valley, more accurately speaking, there was a massacre going on.

The Oleander Valley was previously conquered by the Demon Abyss. But because of the things that happened in the demon palace and Yue Yang the culprit killing the marshal of the demon palace, the slaves of the Oleander Valley, together with the human beings of Ao Jia and Gu Feng Continent, and the help of the Gold King Beast were able to rebel and massacred all the demons and monsters left to guard them, hence allowing them to acquire Oleander City.

When Yue Yang came to the Oleander City, he realised that although they opened up the Teleportation Circle there again, the guards and mercenaries were wary of a stranger's visit, 'hate' may be an appropriate description of their emotions too.

As if suspecting that Yue Yang was a spy, there were shadows flashing across the corners of the street as they stalked Yue Yang discreetly.

Yue Yang approached a newly opened Adventurer Guild and threw his gold coins.

The receptionist of the Adventurer Guild was indifferent. "Keep your money, there's nothing you need here, go!"

This was the first time Yue Yang met someone from the Adventurer Guild being so biased towards people of a certain continent. He was slightly shocked as he looked around and realised people around him were glaring at him. Yue Yang understood instantly that these people suspected that he was a spy. All these mercenaries took sides with the Oleander Valley, or at least they sympathized with the rebellion army there. Yue Yang smiled as he sat down. "I'm just here to ask a few things, I'll be done with a few questions."

"Scram, this is not where you should come. Others may be scared of you, but I'm not afraid of spies like you! That's merely a Gold-ranked treasure on your face. You think you can scare people away by wearing it on your face?" The tall, buff and coarse looking

mercenary wasn't even a Level Six Elder. He was just a Level Five Master yet he dared to speak up to Yue Yang who was a 'level six Elder'.

"Shut up. " The mercenary leader clad in silver armour sitting in the corner shouted. "This is none of your business, sit down."

"Okay, I'll see what he got up his sleeves! " The coarse mercenary was furious but still sat down as instructed. He almost broke the chair he sat on as he glared at Yue Yang as if wanting to eat him up.

"I want to know more about a man, he appeared here a decade ago. " When Yue Yang spoke, everyone listened up.

"What's the name? " The receptionist was aloof as he gave Yue Yang a perfunctory reply.

"His name is Yue Qiu, he is a human, he was from the Soaring Dragon Continent, his name might not ring a bell, but people probably have heard of his nickname. It is 'Hu Tu', he specialises in using swords, and he has a Gold-ranked Groaning Tiger as his Beast, he also had a dragon in which he sits on. I heard that he massacred thousands of demonic soldiers in the Oleander Valley and even killed two demonic marshals, and this is why people called him Hu Tu. As for his portrait, it looks like this!" Yue Yang showed a portrait drawing of Yue Qiu. Yue Qiu didn't work the same way as Yue Yang, he never tried to disguise his real face. He was a bold man.

"I don't know him." The receptionist's eye glimmered when he

saw Yue Qiu's portrait drawing but he immediately shook his head.

Actually his expression already changed slightly when Yue Yang was describing Yue Qiu.

With his Heaven Eyes Divine Vision, he could definitely notice this tiny change, he could even see the hands of the mercenary leader in the corner shaking after hearing what he said.

If the other party didn't want to say anything, Yue Yang wouldn't force them to.

Yue Qiu is the hero here after all, they wouldn't tell Yue Yang what happened to Yue Qiu in the past without knowing the truth.

Yue Yang guessed that Yue Qiu would probably put his Inheritance in a certain part of the Oleander Valley, because it was where Yue Qiu became famous in the Tong Tian Tower, there might also be other unknown reasons that made Yue Qiu place his asset in some caves for his son.

Or maybe it could be safe kept in a friend's house, anything is possible.

What exactly is his asset?

It would definitely be useful, but Yue Yang have no idea what it is exactly.

“Have you heard of a man called Yue Qiu?” Yue Yang turned his head to ask the mercenary leader sitting in a corner.

“No, even if I have, I won’t tell you!” The coarse mercenary really didn’t know about Yue Qiu. He shouted loudly, wanting to chase Yue Yang away.

“I have heard of this man, but he hasn’t been coming back since a decade ago...” The mercenary leader muttered to himself for a long time before replying.

“Indeed, because he died in a battle fifteen years ago, it’s impossible for him to come back here.” Yue Yang tried to agitate him.

“What?” The mercenary leader exclaimed. “No, impossible!”

“This is the truth! “ Yue Yang decided to agitate him more strongly. “A level seven overlord maybe supreme over here, but compared to an Innate ranker, a Level Seven Overlord is merely just a bigger ant...”

“He was killed by an Innate? “ The mercenary leader asked.

“I don’t know, he was attacked by a group of people, we are looking into it too. “ Yue Yang had been noticing the other party’s expression in an attempt to dredge Yue Qiu’s past secrets.

“Th-this is impossible, it’s impossible for him to be killed by others! “ The mercenary leader calmed down. He firmly believe that Yue Qiu would not be killed.

“What if two demonic marshals and a few general did it together? “ Yue Yang asked.

“In any case, it’s impossible...” The mercenary leader smiled aloofly as he regained his confidence after recalling something. “Sir, no matter what your motive is, I wouldn’t believe you. Hu Tu is the hero of the Oleander Valley. You can ask any kid along the streets about him, you wouldn’t have to make a special trip here. As for what I want to say, he hadn’t come here since a decade ago, if you think that you could dredge any informations or secrets of him, then you thought wrong!”

“Okay, I guess I made a wasted trip. “ Yue Yang took back his gold coins and walked out coolly.

“I have never been to the Soaring Dragon Continent, but I heard that a major war is happening there. You are looking for Mr. Hu Tu for this right?” The receptionist of the Adventurer Guild said. “I have never seen Mr. Hu Tu but I heard from seniors of the previous batch that if you all wish to look for him, you shouldn’t come here, you should head to the Soaring Dragon Continent!”

“He’s already dead. I just want to know about his past, it has got nothing to do with the war.” Yue Yang shrugged his shoulders and left the Adventurer Guild.

“Died? No, impossible!” The Leader of the Adventurer Guild murmured, and then shook his head firmly.

“...” Yue Yang was puzzled. Why did the people here insist on denying Yue Qiu’s death? What secret does Yue Qiu have? What did he do here exactly, and what did he leave behind?

Is Yue Qiu really still alive?

Chapter 442 – Black Hell King Appears

If Yue Qiu was still alive, to Yue Clan, it was good news.

However, for Yue Yang who came from another world, it wasn't exactly good.

Of course, the probability of Yue Qiu being alive was small. If he was still alive, in these ten years, where did he go? Even when the Yue Clan was in the most endangered, most needy times, he did not appear. Thus, Yue Yang believed that the tragic father Yue Qiu would have little chance to still be alive. He was just unable to understand. Why did the people from Oleander Valley believed so strongly that Yue Qiu did not die from war?

After leaving Oleander Valley, Yue Yang went to a few places to scout out. They were all places Yue Qiu once stayed temporarily. He spent an entire day but did not gain much insights.

After all, it's been about ten years. Things may have remained the same but not people.

Yue Yang thought that Yue Qiu's remnants were probably left in the Oleander Valley. It was unlikely to be left anywhere else.

It was just that the Oleander's Valley district just rebelled, the people there were hateful and alert towards outsiders. Even if Yue Qiu's remnants were really left there, finding them within a short time was impossible.

“Nevermind, I’ll deal with this later!” Yue Yang decided to give up for now and headed back to Tong Tian Tower level three. He had a little chat with the general of Da Xia Kingdom who was on duty. He found out that the Black Hell Army was at the tranquil state right before a storm, whether it was towards the Soaring Dragon Continent or the Tong Tian Tower. There were no responses. Perhaps the devastating attack to the secret base cause the Black Hell Army to suffer severe setbacks. Before they were sure that victory was theirs, they would not begin to stir..... Of course, this did not mean they would admit defeat. On contrary, they would definitely build up their strength slowly and wait for the best opportunity and launch their attacks.

If they did not start the war it would still be okay.

Once it starts officially, one of the party, either the Black Hell Army or the Da Xia Kingdom would face utter defeat.

Yue Yang was unable to meddle with the military affairs, and these were also not his strength. Seeing that war had not started at the moment, Yue Yang decided to go to the secret place the Bloody Queen’s mother soars. He wanted to go and see what kind of secrets were hidden there.

Perhaps, the Bloody Queen could level up due to this.

Previously due to his insufficient strength, it was very dangerous for him to go there. Without doubt, this issue no longer applies to him now.

After summoning the Bloody Queen, the two soared in the air shoulder by shoulder.

After a few hours of difficult trekking, going past quite a number of mountains and rivers, they finally reached the secret place referred to by the Bloody Queen Red's mother. It was a rift valley. Due to the earthquakes and volcanic eruptions, the alpine had a long crack that ran at least ten kilometers. The width was less than a few hundred meters. Even the most narrow place could allow a single person to squeeze through.

The rift valley itself was not the destination.

Bloody Queen's mother discovered this secret place because when she was exploring the rift valley, she unexpectedly realised that the rift valley cracked opened. The hidden underground teleportation circle was exposed.

After half an hour of searching, Yue Yang and Bloody Queen finally found the huge teleportation circle.

Certainly, this is an ancient and abandoned teleportation circle. It was deeply buried underground. Due to things like earthquakes and volcanic eruptions, it emerged once again. So, where does this teleportation circle lead to?

And what secrets are hidden within?

After Bloody Queen's Mother flew up, she once left an extremely dangerous warning.

She definitely could not discover all the secrets, but rather, obtained a little amount of things. However, it was enough for her to fly up to Tong Tian Tower's fourth level or perhaps even higher..... The strangest thing was that, Yue Yang and Bloody Queen were unable to find her. Even at the fifth and sixth level, there were no relevant information.

Where did Bloody Queen's Mother fly to?

At that time, what kind of treasure did she receive, allowing her to break through the space barriers and fly freely through different levels?

All secrets were on the other side of the teleportation circle.

Yue Yang used a large amount of magic crystals to restore the teleportation circle that was damaged from the quake. If he had not learnt all this knowledge about teleportation circle from the old fox, he would probably be lost at what to do in front of this teleportation circle. After Bloody Queen's mother entered, many years had passed. In this rift valley where earthquakes were frequent, the teleportation circle was damaged even more. Even after Yue Yang restored the teleportation circle, he was still worried that there would be problems..... Holding onto Bloody Queen's little hand, Yue Yang tried to activate the teleportation circle.

“BUZZZZZZzzzzz!”

The teleportation circle started to buzz with a weird sound after the magic crystals were infused.

Numerous white light ascended upwards.

Energy light pillars bore through the ground, they stood vertically, pointing right at the sky.

The activation of teleportation circle caused an earthquake once again. The entire ground was shaking non-stop, causing rock fragments to fall. The rocks on the ground cracked at the speed the naked eye could capture. Cracks just like spider web spread everywhere.

In the distance, about a few kilometers away, a few volcanic craters were trembling. Black smoke and steam leaked out, as if there would be a new round of eruptions.

Yue Yang and the Bloody Queen were teleported instantly.

The teleportation was successful, but the teleportation circle was unable to withstand the damage. It exploded causing it to be destroyed..... However, due to the destruction of the teleportation circle, energy could no longer be transmitted into the crust. The earthquake ceased slowly, the volcanoes also went into deep sleep, as if nothing had happened. In the sky, there was a trace of black smoke. It was the only evidence showing that Yue Yang and Blood

Queen came here before.

The teleportation was extremely fast. In the blink of an eye, Yue Yang and Bloody Queen had arrived at a new environment.

This, was an island that levitated in the sky.

It was enormous, way bigger than the Thunder Fortress on the sixth floor of the Tong Tian Tower. Even when Yue Yang used his Heaven Eyes Divine Vision, he was still unable to see the boundary of the other end. But at the teleportation circle, he was able to see clearly that a few kilometers away, there was a boundary. A round edge that stretched far far away, until a place his eyes were unable to reach.

Yue Yang and Bloody Queen came over to the island boundary and leaned over to take a look.

They soon realise that they could not see the end. It was extremely deep that they failed to see the ground. Perhaps there was no ground to start with.

Looking upwards, they could see quite a number of damaged buildings, olive green trees as well as high towers that stood on the dangerous cliff.

The third floor of Tong Tian Tower also had sky islands. There were certainly sky islands but it could never be as big as this island, not even the sixth floor of Tong Tian Tower had one this big. The

Thunder Fortress could not be compared to this, furthermore, the Thunder Fortress was not exactly levitating in thin air.

Just what kind of power could allow such a massive island to levitate in the sky?

Where exactly was this place?

It could not be the third floor of Tong Tian Tower. The gravity here was greater than that at the sixth floor of Tong Tian Tower. Moreover, in Tong Tian Tower's third, fourth, fifth and even sixth floor this kind of sky island had never been discovered. The sixth floor of Tong Tian Tower may have secrets that were yet revealed, like the Five Elements Palace. However, it would be impossible that people were unable to discover such a large sky island.

Yue Yang and the Bloody Queen tried to fly downwards. Even after about ten kilometers, they were still unable to reach the bottom.

Until nearly a hundred kilometers then did it become smaller.

At the end, the bottom seemed to be sharp.

Looking down once again, it was not soil, it was the endless sky.

“Oh my goodness, could this place be the legendary Sky City?” Yue Yang learnt about it from the knowledge passed onto him by the tragic guy's mother. He knew that there was a huge Sky City

located at the Heaven Realm. It was humongous, millions of people can reside there without feeling crowded. Many powerful sect or species would dominate such a large sky island, they would lead their clansman or sect disciples to build a “Sky City” which belonged to them. Don’t even mention about the Heaven Realm, how did such a large sky island come about?

This was Heaven Realm?

Impossible. Heaven Realm could not be easily entered.

Perhaps this was a sky island from Heaven Realm and it fell here..... The problem was, who would be so powerful to cause it to fall?

From a longer distance, he looked up at the sky island. Yue Yang realised that he had never been so stunned in his entire life before.

It was too humongous!

Compared to it, humans were so tiny and insignificant.

What were the feelings of witnessing this sky island? It was just like seeing ‘Gui Jian Chou’ and ‘Despair Abyss’ being pulled up from the ground and placed into the sky. Perhaps even more extreme!

Yue Yang found out that there were no humans but beasts still exist, and the types were entirely different from the outside world.

The most terrifying thing was their rankings. Almost all of them were Gold Rank or above, except for young beasts that were Bronze or Silver Ranked. The number of beasts here was not many but they were unusually afraid of people. Once they saw Yue Yang and the Bloody Queen flew near, they immediately moved far away. There were quite a number of buildings, Yue Yang realised that other than the fact that nobody lived here, everything else was present. There were pans, there were beds. It was just like any ordinary room in a city. It was as if the people all left yesterday. The buildings here look entirely different from those in the Soaring Dragon Continent. Be it inside or outside the houses, they were extremely beautiful, with rich ornaments, and vibrant colors. Be it viewing them singly or together, it was filled with the delicate touch of art.

Letters that appeared to be runic letters from the Heaven Realm were everywhere.

Rumble.....

From a long distance away, a loud sound rumbled past. After which such a sound repeated three times, with a rhythm.

Yue Yang quickly let Bloody Queen return back into the grimoire world, and held his breath. He completely imitated a “non-living thing”, by using the Silver Rank War Eagle created by Yue Gong, he travelled all the way to the place where the sound started.

He traveled for a few kilometers and went past a vast stretch of

forest.

At the edge of the forest, Yue Yang stopped in his tracks. In the remote distant, a few kilometers away, stood a huge palace.

It was a dazzlingly sight! It was a mixture of gold and jade in glorious splendor.

Seeing this palace, Yue Yang thought that even if one used all the words in the world, one would still unable to accurately describe its spectacular and magnificent appearance. Compared to this, Jun Wu You's imperial palace seemed like a house made out of grass. Tian Luo Kingdom's palace was the most beautiful in the entire Soaring Dragon Continent, but when compared to this, it was just like a minor magician meeting a great one. It was not even a tenth of this beautiful palace.

What stunned Yue Yang the most was that, over this humongous palace, stood a golden protection barrier.

It looked as if it was a summon grimoire's protection barrier, however it was an eternal existence, there was no time limit. It was huge enough to cover an area that spanned across a few kilometer square..... It was so shocking, Yue Yang stared with his eyes wide open and his tongue tied. He could not believe his own eyes.

Compared to the Night Empress' Mirage, the barrier here was larger by a hundred times!

In the sky, there was an extremely tiny black dot.

The black dot emitted an aura that would deter the entire world. It held a hammer shaped divine weapon which sparkled with splendid light. Using the hammer, the black dot attacked the barrier over and over.

The hammer shaped divine weapon knocked against the protection barrier, causing a terrifying swirling column of wind to form. The swirling wind blasted against the ground.

Every strike caused a loud rumbling, it was a trembling sound that could shake the world.

However, although that was the case, it was entirely useless.

The barrier did not move an inch. After being struck for so long, it did not have any signs of being weakened.

Using the Heaven Eyes Divine Vision, Yue Yang saw a black dot. After which he immediately pulled back in fear and hid behind the trees, afraid the other party would see him.

Oh my god, this tiny black dot that seemed insignificant was actually the Prison Emperor's General six thousand years ago. It was today's Black Hell King!

Why did the Black Hell King appear here?

He seemed to want to break through the barrier and enter this palace. So, what secrets were hidden in this palace?

Chapter 443 – Xiao Wen Li, Level Up!

The Black Hell King swung his hammer shaped Holy-ranked weapon and struck crazily for ten minutes.

It was completely ineffective!

Finally, he changed it back into the axe-shaped Holy-ranked weapon and slashed at the golden barrier madly for another ten minutes. In the end, it was still all in vain.

This barrier was not something that could be broken by brute force alone. Even if it was the Black Hell King's attack, the barrier was left undamaged. Yue Yang was secretly laughing with mockery when he saw that the Black Hell King had to deal with such an awesome protection barrier. Serves him right! The problem was, why must the Black Hell King enter this palace? What kind of incomparable treasures are hidden within to make the Black Hell King so determined to enter? Could it be that this palace was really the legendary "Sky City" from the Heaven's Realm? Did it fell during fight between the Three Great Leaders of Heaven Realm and the Prison King?

If that was the case, why didn't Old Dragon Turtle mention about this palace?

There was another possibility, which was: million years ago, even way before the ancient times, this Sky City fell from the sky. Nobody knew about it, but for some reasons it was discovered by the Black Hell King.....

“Shit!” Black Hell King changed five, six Holy-ranked weapons and was exhausted. His mad attacks were useless. He could not help but to roar looking up at the sky. He had nowhere to vent his fury.

“Idiot, what an idiot!” Yue Yang, who was hiding behind the bushes counting ants all along, was overjoyed.

“One day, Jade Fall Palace would become mine! Hey Prison King, I, Black Hell will definitely surpass you. I will definitely break through this barrier and enter, conquering this Jade Fall Palace that even you were unable to conquer. I will obtain the Divine Grimoire and become the owner here! Divine Grimoire, one day you will belong to me, Black Hell and I would definitely become the strongest in the entire Tong Tian Tower. I will conquer everything, I will conquer the world!” Black Hell King swung his fists in the air madly and shouted until his voice was hoarse, just like when Adolf Hitler delivered his speeches. In the end, no one responded to him. The Black Hell King howled and was at the brink of going berserk. With a Holy-ranked ax and a Holy-ranked hammer in each hand, he violently attacked the golden barrier so as to vent out his fury.

Only after a while, did he deeply inhaled in one breath.

Slowly he calmed down.

His Qi changed and became deep and profound, as if he became someone else.

Using his hands, he slowly caressed the golden barrier. Using a very gentle voice, as if he was talking to his lover, he said, "I know, you still reject me now, because I am still unworthy. But I will prove to you, I will be able to meet your requirements. I will have the ability to be your owner! Wait for me, the next time, I will become even more powerful!"

After Black Hell King left.

After a really, really long time, Yue Yang put his hand to his chest, it was a close call, he almost shouted out in shock just now.

This palace actually had a Divine Grimoire, oh my goodness, that's why the Black Hell King was like a bull in heat, he attacked the barrier with all his might. There was actually a Divine Grimoire within!

Even the Prison King could not enter?

Even the Prison King who was able to seal the Three Great Leaders of Heaven Realm was unable to enter, looks like the Black Hell King was just wasting his energy.

The problem is that, even Black Hell King could not enter. Would he be able to enter?

If he could enter..... the legendary Divine Grimoire; even if he couldn't use it, shifting it back to the Grimoire world would be fine, as long as no one else gets it! There are only ten Divine

Grimoires, one less would mean one less powerful enemy. Even the Holy Grimoire was an existence many could only watch from far, let alone the Divine Grimoire!

Yue Yang thought about it, his heart itching, making him uncomfortable. It was as if a cat was scratching it.

Just as he wanted to stand up, he suddenly felt a sharp chill throughout his entire body.

It was a feeling as if he was being watched from far. In pure fear, Yue Yang hid quickly, lying flat on his stomach between the bushes. He hid his heartbeat and made his Qi invisible, so that he became an existence just like a rock.

The Black Hell King reappeared, covered with Holy-ranked armor and held a Holy-ranked staff in his hand. From time to time, he casted out circular blue light.

It appeared as if he wanted to investigate something.

Could it be that he realised that something was amiss?

The circular blue light began to spread on the ground, all life appeared in the form of red spots, a stark contrast against the blue light. Dependent on the power of the spectre, all life on the ground was obvious at a glance to Black Hell King. Yue Yang grumbled silently. This guy was full of Holy-ranked weapons, even if he wanted to destroy him, it was still out of his abilities. The Black

Hell King was at least a Heaven Tier Level 1 ranker. Furthermore, he was at least ten times stronger than Phoenix Fairy Beauty who had become Heaven Tier Level 1 after her whole body was purified by the Nirvana Flame.

Furthermore, that did not include Black Hell King's hidden strength.

If he gave it his all, Yue Yang believed that Black Hell King would be able to reach Heaven tier Level 2, possibly even higher.

If Black Hell King was a Heaven tier Level 2 with so many Holy-ranked weapons, it was not quite possible for Yue Yang to defeat Black Hell King. He should not think so far for now..... If he could obtain Mother Earth Potion, raise his ability by one level, and ally with Night Empress and Phoenix Fairy Beauty, there might still be a chance.

Despite the benefits of Mother Earth Potion, it was still not the time. Jiang Ying that Hornless Dragon was also very anxious and had previously sent Yue Yang a message for him to get ready.

To level up to a beast, she disregarded everything else.

The current invasion of Soaring Dragon Continent?

She did not care at all!

At the Warrior Guild, Yue Yang had already replied, in the case

that Soaring Dragon Continent had to go to war, he would accompany her to obtain Mother Earth Potion. In return, she would have to lead Spider Army to aid Soaring Dragon Continent. Of course, all of this was according to Yue Yang's plans. Such a superficial condition was simply to dispel the Hornless Dragon's wariness. Jiang Ying that Hornless Dragon was unaware of Yue Yang's motive and had agreed.

The old Yue Yang who had not upgraded his Counterfeit Inherent Skill would not have been able to escape Black Hell King's detection.

Fortunately, the current Yue Yang is able to.

Of course, this had to do with the fact that the light had not detected him directly. If the light had detected him, it would be difficult even if he levelled up his skills.

Black Hell King was just cautious, he did not know that other than himself, Yue Yang had also broke into this mysterious space.

The second time he left, Black Hell King was more at peace because he did not discover the enemy.

He thought that his initial unease was just an illusion.

"Whew!" Yue Yang who escaped with his Counterfeit Inherent Skill wiped his cold sweat, that was a close call!

Since he did not know when Black Hell King would return, Yue Yang did not dare to rush boldly to the Golden Barrier to check the results, but rather returned to the world of Grimoire to rest. This cautious move actually saved his life again.

Before he left, Black Hell King set up runes that functioned as alarms around the place. Once Yue Yang was close, they would have triggered.

Since Yue Yang went back to rest, these runes that have a one hour limit were naturally ineffective.

Seeing the excitement on Yue Yang's face, Luo Hua City Mistress was curious: "You found the treasure? Is that why you are so happy?"

Yue Yang did not reply, and leaned across to lift Luo Hua City Mistress up: "It's still a secret, I'll show it off when I really obtain it. Did you miss me, Luo Hua?" His hands began to roam which made Luo Hua City Mistress weaken at her knees. She rolled her eyes at him playfully: "I am going to faint. You do this once you come home..... Wu hen, save me quick!" Yue Yang bellowed in laughter: "She can't save you, how about you two serve your husband together!"

"Oh my, only you could think of that!" Luo Hua City Mistress was going to faint because of him. Seeing that she was unable to escape, she bit on her lover's shoulder with her teeth: "Who is afraid of you, don't think I can be easily bullied!"

A war broke out afterwards.

The fire of passion spread in the room filled with lust.

As expected, the war ended with a certain City Master and her ally both defeated and begging for mercy.

After a good rest, Yue Yang set out, full of energy.

Unlike Black Hell King who used brutal force to hit the Golden Barrier, he stood before it and contemplated another way.

From afar, this Golden Barrier looked to be a very thin layer. However, upon closer inspection he realised it was one meter thick, such that even his Innate Invisible Sword Qi could not penetrate through.

What else could he do?

Sword Qi + teleportation? Yue Yang shot out a stream of Innate Invisible Sword Qi, and after burning about three inches in, he suddenly stopped. In the moment of teleportation, the Golden Barrier fluctuated slightly and sent Yue Yang flying 100 meters away, crashing into the ground pathetically. It was then did Yue Yang finally realise, why did Black Hell King always use a strange rhythm to hit the barrier? Could it be that he not only had to try to smash open the thick Golden Barrier, but at the same time he had to offset the rebound shock from the barrier?

For every attack, there are two steps. Attack, and then offset it.

Otherwise, the power of the rebound was really too much!

Yue Yang suffered a hidden loss. He did not need to play any more tricks because under this absolute defense, there was no loophole around it.

“Qilin girl, come out, I have something good to show you! Honey, go tell sister Bing Yin that there is a Divine Grimoire in this palace here. If she helps me to retrieve the grimoire, I would heavily reward her!” While Yue Yang was unable to enter, he was not worried because he knows someone who definitely could. That person was the Qilin girl, Bing Yin. The problem was just that this girl was in deep sleep inside the Celestial Grimoire. To summon her, he would need Xiao Wen Li to tell Qilin girl this piece of good news.

“Unn, unn!” Xiao Wen Li, ever so obedient, turned into a rainbow coloured light and disappeared.

About 10 seconds later, there was a reaction.

The nature-like calls of the phoenix resounded through the skies, shaking one’s soul.

He could not see clearly.

Not even with his Divine Vision!

In an instant, the Phoenix Sisters passed through the Golden Barrier. They were so fast that Yue Yang only just saw the colourful ribbon streams on their backs.

If Black Hell King were to see such a sight, he would definitely be in tears.

He had hit the barrier for half an hour with his holy equipment and was completely exhausted, yet the Golden Barrier was totally undamaged. On the other hand, these Phoenix sisters did not even use a thousandth of a second to pass through the Golden Barrier into that magnificent palace. If Black Hell King were to see such a scene, why would he bother conquering Soaring Dragon Continent, conquering Tong Tian Tower? He might as well find a rope and hang himself!

Following was the Qilin girl who carried a sweet fragrance.

Running out, her little face looked like she just woke up, so cute.

Her eyes shone once she saw the palace. She did not even care about Yue Yang and rushed in with delight, just like a female pirate who saw a treasure.

“Hm, the guard here is so strong! It’s okay, I still have a unique skill!” When Qilin girl ran to the middle of the Golden Barrier, she slowed down drastically as if it was very difficult to run. When she ran back in a rush while muttering to herself and her hands in a special position, her whole body was a splendid masterpiece.

Bathed in this multicolour, her two beautiful and cute tiny horns shone even more.

She bowed over and jogged to the barrier, and used her horns to break the Golden Barrier, rushing in.

When he saw this scene, Yue Yang was full of regret.

He regretted informing them. They were all the top-ranked bandits. Now that he allowed them to loot this palace, he might not even get to drink a bowl of soup.

Qilin girl laughed in joy and dashed into the palace.

After a while, she came out contented, and comforted the depressed Yue Yang: “There really is a Divine Grimoire in there, but you can forget about getting it. Divine-ranked equipment choose their owners, if it does not recognise you, it is useless even if I gave it to you. I found many amazing things, and I bet there are even more treasures in those restricted spaces. When I find something good, I will give one or two to you! Don’t cry, wait for sister here obediently!”

How could that be any comfort?

She was adding salt to the wound!

When Yue Yang raged and was ready to spank her, she burst out laughing and ran back in.

“You think that I cannot go in without you, Qilin girl?” Yue Yang brought out his last ‘special treasure’ – Quintet Seeking Golden Mice.

While these five little mice cannot fight, they were still very good at looking for treasure!

At least they have never disappointed Yue Yang!

Once summoned, the Quintet Seeking Golden Mice began to explore around the Golden Barrier. While they could not enter, they will find a secret door! In no time, they had found a huge secret door! Accurately speaking, this was not a door, but a rune figure on the Golden Barrier. Even though it was invisible, the Quintet Seeking Golden Mice still found it.

Yue Yang stretched out his hand to carefully feel the runes.

After carefully reading and studying the runes, he vaguely understood. This was a secret doorway leading in, but in order to enter, one would need the owner’s permission.

It was the same logic as in the Grimoire world, the problem was that if he had no beast to guide him, it was useless even if he found a way to enter the secret door!

Not to mention he hasn’t even found a way to enter the secret door!

“Xiao Wen Li, why don’t you try if you can enter!” Yue Yang suddenly slapped his forehead. He really was dumb, Xiao Wen Li has owed a Diamond Grimoire since she was born, she was at the very least a beast! While she was not as powerful as Immortal beasts like Qilin girl and the Phoenix Sisters, she was still very strong and should be able to enter!

“Unn, unn!” Xiao Wen Li was really the most obedient, she nodded her head cutely at Yue Yang and summoned out her Grimoire.

She walked towards the secret door on the Golden Barrier with much effort, her expression solemn.

Stone Element Medusa, Storm Mermaid, Thunder Na Jia and Cold Frost Serpent Demon the four Guardian beasts have all come out to support Xiao Wen Li. With all their strength, they pointed at a single point on the secret door so as to help Xiao Wen Li move forward. In the end, even Bloody Queen and Barbarian Cow Shadow came out and transferred all their strength onto Xiao Wen Li to support her.

However, even with all of their strength, it only helped Xiao Wen Li move forward by 2 steps.

Less than half a foot.

Compare that to the Golden Barrier that was a metre thick!

Yue Yang reacted resourcefully in this situation and burst out his largest strength, raising his Qi to the maximum and shot out the Supreme Sword Qi.

The sword created a hole of nearly a meter in front of Xiao Wen Li. Even Xiao Wen Li could tell that he meant for her to turn into a stream of light and enter from the tiny hole.

Just then something horrifying happened. That small hole he created on the Golden Barrier suddenly shifted a 100 miles away and formed an absolute defense. Xiao Wen Li was trapped within.

“No, Oh my God!” Yue Yang was scared out of his wits. He was truly worried that Xiao Wen Li would be crushed and die..... Even if Guardian Beasts would not really die, he did not want Xiao Wen Li to undergo such pain. He rushed against the Barrier and used all of his might to try to rescue her, but to no avail. He was instead reflected by the Barrier and thrown some ten metres away.

“She’s alright, she’s fine, don’t worry!” Bloody Queen comforted as she rushed to help up Yue Yang whose heart was going to stop from shock.

“Huh?” It was only then did Yue Yang realise that in the moment the Barrier closed up, Xiao Wen Li had summoned her Grimoire.

Even the barrier formed by her Diamond Grimoire was crushed.

There was only a space barely an inch wide.

That space surrounded Xiao Wen Li, protecting her from being crushed.

Yue Yang Have never seen a barrier distorted to such an extent. Let alone a low level Innate, even if Supreme Innates like Sky Execution, Baruth, Shun Tian and Black Prince all combined their powers and pressed down, the protective Barrier would not be compressed to such an extent.

It was compressed like a small ball which wrapped around Xiao Wen Li tightly.

Xiao Wen Li crouched on top of her Diamond Grimoire, her six small hands pushing against the barrier that was only an inch away.

“Darling, don’t be afraid, don’t be scared, I will save you right now!” Yue Yang prepared to shoot his Supreme Sword Innate Qi again to save Xiao Wen Li.

No matter what kind of treasure, be it the Holy Grimoire or Divine Grimoire, even if he was offered one thousand or even ten thousand of those, Yue Yang would never exchange them for Xiao Wen Li’s life. She was his most important, most treasured darling. When he saw Xiao Wen Li still trying to squeeze out a smile for him, his heart broke. He resented himself for being greedy. Had he not been so greedy, Xiao Wen Li would not be in such a situation.

He clearly knew how dangerous it was and still made her take the risk!

If he could choose again, he definitely would not have done that!

When Yue Yang was ready to shoot out the Supreme Sword Qi again, Xiao Wen Li's eyes burst open.

Her determined stare was shone and shot out like beams. The Golden Barrier that was supposed to seal up immediately after being pricked by Supreme Sword Qi unexpectedly 'froze' her binding skill for a tenth of a second.

Even if it were for a hundredth of a second, that would be enough.

When Yue Yang composed himself and looked again, he realised that Xiao Wen Li that had turned into a multicoloured stream and escaped from the Golden Barrier. Not in front, but she was on the other side of the barrier.

Xiao Wen Li waved excitedly at Yue Yang, she had succeeded!

Her two eyes were overworked, and two streams of bloody tears came down her small face.

Such a sight made Yue Yang's nose sour.

He really wanted to kiss his baby ruthlessly and never let her go.

Stone Element Medusa, Storm Mermaid, Thunder Na Jia and Cold Frost Serpent Demon were exhausted, yet still threw their hands up and celebrated. Seeing their bodies rising slowing bathed in a golden light made them shout even more excitedly. Yue Yang saw with delight that the multicoloured light on Xiao Wen Li's head was blinking, it looked just like a rainbow in dance. A detailed shockwave silently spread. Following that, an especially dazzling Gold Pillar shot towards the sky, breaking through the Golden Barrier and slid to even higher skies..

Finally, after breaking through this Golden Barrier,Xiao Wen Li who had not levelled up for a long time...

She finally levelled up!

Yue Yang was extremely touched.

Definitely, if effort was made, there would be reward!

Even if he did not get that Holy-ranked Grimoire, or any of those treasures, this was all worth it because his biggest supporter, Xiao Wen Li finally levelled up! One must know that this was what Yue Yang was been waiting to happen for a long time. After the battle at Prison Emperor Holy-ranked Palace with the Three huge Xu Kong, Jiu Xiao, all the Guardian Beasts have levelled up,Xiao Wen Li had also levelled up to Level 4 Diamond Level. However, after so many battles after that battle, and even that bitter war with the powerful Scarlet Emperor, Xiao Wen Li had shown no sign of

levelling up...

Until today.

She finally upgraded, finally levelled up!

Without a fierce battle like those before, but it was rather the strongest power she released in that moment deciding life and death and broke through the Golden Barrier that overcame her own limit.

Finally, level up!

She was able to break through the Golden Barrier that even Black Hell King could only sigh helplessly at!

Yue Yang looked up to the skies, and took a deep breath. Only by doing this, would he be able to suppress the overwhelming feelings in his heart.

What in the world could be better than seeing his beloved baby level up and grow?

Chapter 444 – Grooming Lolis Is A Good Habit!

Xiao Wen Li levelled up. She went from being Level Four Diamond rank to becoming Level Five Diamond Rank.

The most impressive thing was that her Binding Chains Inherent Skill levelled up. After the levelling up, Xiao Wen Li acquired the ‘Soul Chains’ skill.

Soul Chains: With mental chains emitted from the skill user’s eyes, the skill user may confine the soul of the opponent. The opponent’s soul can then be withdrawn from his body after using this skill successfully. Prerequisite: There must not be any interruption during the process, and the skill user cannot move his body at all. Soul Chains is applicable to any creatures, the stronger the soul of the opponent, the weaker its effect. No effects on those without a soul.

“With this, it’s enough to make Shun Tian and the Black Prince suffer. “ Yue Yang believed that be it if this skill is able to exert its effect on Super Innates like Shun Tian and the Black Prince, it would at least have some effects on them.

Once they were affected, he could take the opportunity to tackle them.

If Yue Yang were to meet Shun Tian and the Black Prince now, he had the confidence to beat them.

The beasts which Shun Tian and the Black Prince groomed for hundred of years would definitely be so defeated when they go up against Xiao Wen Li. Her Binding Chain Inherent Skill together with Soul Chains skills would defeat even Shun Tian's Golden Emperor that was a Level Nine Diamond-ranked Beast.

The killing power of skills under the soul category had always been terrifyingly strong.

Taking for example, the Barbarian Cow Shadow's Doom's Eyes.

Very little beasts possessed defence against Soul-category skills, most of the Beasts were physically strong but possessed weak souls. It even could be said that they are completely susceptible to attacks targeting their souls.

Xiao Wen Li was still low levelled now, but if she were to be one level higher, Yue Yang would be confident about getting rid of powerful people like Shun Tian and the Black Prince. He would be able to completely imagine the course of battle. As long as Xiao Wen Li is able to 'bind' Shun Tian, then as Yue Yang launch his World Exterminating Wheel, Nirvana Fire and Innate Sword Qi, there would be high chance of Shun Tian getting severely injured or even instant-killed. But of course, without being completely sure, Yue Yang wouldn't launch his strongest attack against Shun Tian. He had to hide his trump card in order to deceive his opponent. Yue Yang would only reveal it when he found the best opportunity to kill his opponent!

Hide his skills and launch the deadliest attack when he strikes!

This was Yue Yang's strategy in tackling Shun Tian and the Black Prince.

When Yue Yang levels up or gets the chance, he would definitely kill the usually stronger opponents just like what he did with Sky Dragon...

Although the Black Prince and Shun Tian might be stronger than Sky Dragon, and even more scheming, all these wouldn't be a problem. Yue Yang's strongest contender now isn't any of them, it's the Scarlet Emperor!

Even the Black Hell King wasn't Yue Yang's target to surpass now.

Compared to the Scarlet Emperor, the Black Hell King possesses at most the power of the Scarlet Concubine. The Black Hell King was simply not on the same level as the Scarlet Emperor!

He wasn't sure about the Scarlet Emperor's Beasts, but Yue Yang saw at least one Divine Equipment in the Scarlet Emperor's possession. As for the Black Hell King, although he had a lot of Holy-ranked Equipment, Yue Yang believed that he doesn't have a single Divine Equipment, if not he would have used it together with the Golden Barrier.

“Divine Equipment, when can I get a Divine Equipment too?”

Yue Yang sighed internally. Amongst Prison Emperor's three Divine Equipment, only the Prison Emperor Divine Sword recognised him as its master, but due to the interference of Prison Emperor's soul, he couldn't use it and instead, Princess Qian Qian had acquired it. Although they were on Yue Yang's side, if these Divine Equipment didn't recognise him as their master, he could only use them as walnut crushers. With regards to the Prison Emperor Divine Staff, the Old Dragon Turtle had stolen it away to recover his strength. Yue Yang thought that he would use it to fight against the Black Hell King to his death. He would definitely not give it to Yue Yang before he killed the Black Hell King.

“You will get one! The Crescent Moon might not become one in the end, but Hui Jin will definitely become a Divine Equipment!” Bloody Queen Red suddenly spoke in an attempt to console Yue Yang. Her words startled Yue Yang.

When did she learn how to comfort people?

If this continues, she would be making huge improvements in personifying!

Bloody Queen Red saw that Yue Yang was looking at her and blushed. She lowered her head and stopped talking. She held on to her hands as she looked a little anxious.

Yue Yang watched her even more intensely. If this continued, forget about her turning into a Holy Beast, she might even become a Divine Beast soon. Could Bloody Queen Red be the next successfully grimoire-contracted Beast after Hui Tai Lang?

The Phoenix sounded again, and before Yue Yang could even react, rainbow light already flashed across the sky.

It then fused into Yue Yang's body instantly, at an uncanny speed. It even ignored the hindrance of the Golden Barrier.

There was a fire Phoenix formed from the Nirvana's Flame behind Yue Yang. It kept spinning and flapping its wings as it passed through all the obstacles and flew above Yue Yang's head before finally fusing with him. Yue Yang didn't know what treasure the Phoenix sisters got as they went back to hibernate in the Celestial Grimoire without saying anything. The Nirvana Flame Phoenix they rode on fused into Yue Yang's body, together with their special abilities, purifying Yue Yang's body slowly.

This was different from the purification the previous three times. Not only did Yue Yang's body get sufficient purification, a pair of Nirvana Fire Wings was formed on it.

This pair of Nirvana Wing was differently shaped from a demon's bat-like wing, a Giant Dragon's dragon wings and an angel's feathery wings.

It didn't take a specific shape, and was formed entirely out of flame.

The flame came from the Nirvana Flame.

Yue Yang's arms, shoulders, back, ribs legs and even down to the ankle were burning with this special fire. Not only were they Nirvana Flame, they brought along with them a sense of immortality as well. More accurately speaking, the Phoenix Sisters made an eternal Fire Phoenix and fused it into Yue Yang's body. It could then act accordingly to the needs of the environment.

So this was what they were giving to Yue Yang?

Yue Yang scratched his head and couldn't come to a conclusion. He really had no clue what treasure they got for them to give him such a Fire phoenix.

If Yue Yang were to do it personally, it wasn't that he couldn't create the fire phoenix, it was just that he wouldn't be able to make one that's so long lasting, or one that's able to respond to its surroundings... Yue Yang could sense that this Fire Phoenix wasn't alive, which means to say it was a permanent existence. Rather than calling it a Beast, naming it a weapon or defense equipment would be more accurate. One could even describe it as a ride, an amazing one that could help purify its owner without the need to feed it!

As the Fire Phoenix fused gradually into Yue Yang's body, it left a veneer of 'fire cloth' on Yue Yang's skin.

When Yue Yang used his will to control it, it would appear instantly, becoming a fire pistol, fire armour, and even a fire bow...

If he were to let it be, it would morph into fire wings or fire cloth.

“Impressive, this is even more useful than a Divine Equipment!” Yue Yang was pleasantly surprised. Looks like the reason why the Phoenix Sisters went back so swiftly was because they wanted to give him their newly made treasure, not because they were two little sneaky thieves. Are there any other treasures that would be more superb and useful than the Fire Phoenix? Yue Yang wouldn’t exchange it for one, no, even ten Divine Equipment.

The best equipment would be the one that suits him the most!

Just when Yue Yang was feeling guilty of accusing the Phoenix sisters, he suddenly saw the Qilin Girl, Bing Yin, running out carrying an enormous Gold Coffin.

As usual, she used her horn to pry open the golden barrier, and within seconds she was out.

If the Black Hell King were to see the Qilin Girl entering and exiting the Golden Barrier so easily, he would have cried!

Yue Yang was overjoyed. “Good girl, is this for me? “

He guessed that the Qilin Girl must have taken lots of treasures from inside. But the fact that she still remembered him was impressive enough.

The Qilin Girl’s tone made Yue Yang speechless. “It’s not very big

inside, and there aren't many treasures, there's almost nothing that's suitable for us to use. I will give this to you. Inform me when you see any treasures the next time. You were planning to make a Puppet Beast that's alive right? The substance contained in this bottle should be of some use... Ah, I'm tired, I'll catch some wink now! “

“Girl, can you bring me in? “ Yue Yang was a greedy man, how could he not swoon at the large amount of treasures in the palace?

“You have a corporeal body, so I can't bring you along, but I can bring Xiao Wen Li in!” Qilin Girl waved her fair hand and rainbow light bloomed from her hand. Bloody Queen Red, Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man and the stoned Medusa, Storm Mermaid, Thunder Naga, Ice Serpent Demon and even the Quintet Seeking Golden Mice all shrunk to the size of a pea and she held all of them with her fist.

She bended over and rushed into the golden barrier again.

It was only until now did Yue Yang realised that compared to Immortal Beasts, Monsters, Beasts, Holy Beasts and Divine Beasts were nothing.

Just with this nameless trick that could shrink several targets all at one go, he could dominate the whole of Tong Tian Tower. Isn't Shun Tian's 500 metres tall Diamond-ranked Level 9 Golden Emperor impressive? It would die when Yue Yang pinches it upon shrinking it to the size of a green bean! So what if Baruth the Great Demon King is superb? He would be the size of an ant after shrinking, and would die just by stepping on with one foot...

After waiting for the Qilin Girl, Bing Yin, to send all the Beasts in and return, Yue Yang caught up with her. “Qilin girl, forget about other treasures, just teach me the trick to shrink a person!”

“You can’t use it now, moreover, this trick requires the aid of a treasure, together with many other pre-requisites, you think it’s so easy?” The Qilin Girl was reluctant to teach Yue Yang this trick, even after Yue Yang tried to coax and threaten her. She came out with an excuse to leave in the end. “I did not have a good sleep yesterday night, I’m losing my voice, my mother asked me not to speak too much!”

And then she went back to the Celestial Grimoire World in the blink of an eye.

Yue Yang couldn’t do anything with her. He wanted to learn, but what could he do if she doesn’t want to teach him?

The only way was to court her and become her man, but she seemed to be too young... It’s okay, grooming lolis is also a good habit!

He was executing his plan to groom lolis, so the Qilin girl will just be one of them!

Yes, he shouldn’t be too anxious, just take things slowly!

Xiao Wen Li went to explore around the palace. With nothing to

do, Yue Yang diverted his attention to the two treasures the Qilin Girl brought him. They were a golden coffin with a crystal bottle placed on top of it. There seemed to be some water in the crystal bottle.

Could it be the God's Water?

Could it be that God's Water is really in the crystal bottle?

God's Water: An energy source that nourishes all life forms. It is pure and non pollutable. It can't be mixed or diluted, it possesses an unique characteristic of self purifying. It has miraculous effectiveness towards regenerating limbs and getting rid of any side effects, it is an important spring of vitality that contributes towards creating lifeform possessing intelligence. It can be is used to create God's Blood and replenish divine energy.

“Ah, my god, Yue Gong's third wish is finally going to be realised!
“ Yue Yang carried the crystal bottle and used his Heaven Eyes Divine Vision to visualise it again. He realised that it was really God's Water in his hand and he wasn't dreaming. He cheered out loud almost immediately!

“I will be energised to do anything if there are good lolis like them everywhere in the house.“ Yue Yang almost teared as he was too touched from the thought of it.

Chapter 445 – Phoenix Fairy Beauty Returns

The golden coffin was sealed by both Heaven Runes and Ancient Runes. Yue Yang couldn't open it immediately.

Yue Yang was also really worried to find a mummy inside when he opened the coffin.

It would still be fine if it was a normal mummy. If it was a Heaven Tier Ranker that was even stronger than the Lich King, for example the legendary Ghost Emperor, he would really be in deep trouble. Putting the problem of whether Yue Yang could defeat the enemy aside, if the mummy escaped the moment it was released, how was Yue Yang going to catch up with it? Yue Yang didn't think that he would be able to handle it if there was an existence as strong as the Prison Emperor's soul inside the golden coffin.

He stored everything into Demon Eye's Platinum Storage Ring. He would open it and investigate them slowly after returning back to the Grimoire world.

Meanwhile, Xiao Wen Li and the rest followed the lead of the Quintet Golden Puppet Mice to explore this mysterious palace. There were many prohibited areas as well as different types of protected and isolated regions. Things and places they could see were only the garden, sculptures, main hall, stairs, hallways, balcony as well as the side rooms. Places such as the study, secret rooms, cellar or halls where the concubines lived in were all protected by small barriers, preventing entry. To put it simply, the places where real treasures were located cannot be entered. However, they found a number of good things outside the main

hall. Scattered weapons and armory could be found easily in the arrow towers and surrounding residence. Even the lowest ranked soldier armors were ranked silver.

However, most of these treasures were broken, they were almost just trash.

It was not as if there were no treasures. There were some precious items such as the Nine Dragon Cauldron or the Zoomorphic Mask Motif Clock etc. However these items were too heavy and bulky!

Xiao Wen Li and the rest did not move them, they were unable to judge if moving them would affect the palace. They hurriedly took a look and returned. In the end, Bloody Queen Red dug up two pots of flower from the garden before she came out. They were not for Yue Yang, instead they were presents for her two female owners, the sickly beauty and the Luo Hua City Mistress.

She remembered that her owner, Luo Hua City Mistress really loved flowers. Giving her a pot of flowers would be much better than giving her treasure.

Entering the gold barrier was difficult, but to exit from it was much easier.

Yue Yang recalled his beasts and Xiao Wen Li, Bloody Queen Red, Ah Man, and Quintet Golden Puppet Mice all returned back to the Grimoire world with a flash of light.

“Got the treasures, time to flee.” Yue Yang did not even have look at what they got and chose to leave first.

The Black Hell King would swear to murder him even if it meant chasing him across the globe if he found out that he went in and got the treasures! Thinking it is best not to fight the Black Hell King at the moment, Yue Yang decided to wait for Jiang Ying, the Hornless Dragon to bring him to search for the Mother Earth Potion. It would not be too late for him to fight the Black Hell King after he gained more strength from consuming the Mother Earth Potion. The most important thing was that if the Black Hell King found out he came here, he would definitely defend the place and not let him enter ever again.

Rather than robbing with force, might as well steal it secretly.

Not only does it waste energy, both parties might also end up heavily wounded and give third parties the chance to reap benefits.

If the Black Hell King could not win at the moment and calls for assistance it would have been troublesome. The secrets here would be in danger of being revealed. In comparison, if he secretly takes, a little each time, the longer the time, the better for him! The Black Hell King cannot enter anyway.

Before being sent away using the teleportation circle that sent them here, Yue Yang checked cautiously.

He realised that this place was extremely well hidden and was not used for a long time, Yue Yang reckoned that the Black Hell King

knew there was such a teleportation circle here.

After leaving, Yue Yang took a good look at his surroundings and looked back at the Bloodrose Map on his Grimoire. He almost fainted.

The reason was because: this place was not Tong Tian Tower Third Floor but the Fourth Floor.

That's why Blood Queen Red's mother said that she could fly up to the Fourth Floor. The reason was due to the exit here, on the Fourth Floor.

Based on this, Yue Yang speculated that Blood Queen Red's mother did not enter the mysterious palace, but went outside. Perhaps she obtained some treasure that was left behind in an abandoned building and gained power. Perhaps she even killed the Gold Rank beasts inside and obtained large amounts of magic crystals and became more powerful. No matter what the reason was, Bloody Queen Red's mother was strengthened and leveled up, which allowed her to fly up beyond the Fourth Floor. This was certain.

"Mommy has her own life, nevermind if we cannot find her." Although Bloody Queen Red missed her mother, she felt that nothing can be done even if they were unable to locate her since Tong Tian Tower was too big.

"If we have the opportunity, we can try again!" Yue Yang felt that it would be better not to search.

What if her mother died in a battle? Even if they found her, won't Blood Queen Red feel sad? If they could not locate her, there would still be hope!

Even if she became stronger, she would not have been able to reach the state of a Holy Beast. The Bloody Queen Red now would definitely have already surpassed her mother. Even if her mother was powerful, even if she did not perish and was still alive and kicking; Seeing her own daughter become a battle beast that belonged to humans, won't she be sad?

That's why, being unable to find would be better. At the very least there was the thought.

Bloody Queen Red suddenly embraced Yue Yang, she hugged him tightly, burying herself into his chest. Only after quite some time did she let out a long sigh, "Actually things are fine now. Although I do not have my mother by my side, I have many good friends, a family and you..."

Her humanity stirred up Yue Yang emotionally.

He held her, giving her comfort. Using his hand, he stroked her hair, letting her feel his solicitude.

Luo Hua City Mistress just ran out, she thought the hug was meant for her, she did not expect to see Bloody Queen Red in Yue Yang's arms. She was stunned slightly.

Hearing footsteps, Bloody Queen Red quickly struggled free from Yue Yang's embrace. She pretended as if nothing has happened between her and Yue Yang, acting as natural as she could. However, her face was flushed red and it did not seem to fade. Seeing the Luo Hua City Mistress stop in her tracks, Bloody Queen Red quickly took out the fresh flowers she got from the garden in the palace, and offered them to her. Bloody Queen Red handed the flowers over in a respectful manner but she still felt uneasy.

“Wow, it is Gold Silk Butterfly, gosh, this is the Gold Silk Butterfly that has the same rank as the Beautiful Demonic Flower and the Starlight Serene Indigo Grass!”

With one look, the Luo Hua City Mistress immediately forgot about the fact that Bloody Queen Red was in Yue Yang's embrace a moment ago.

“Are you tired? I prepared the bath already, you can go bathe!” Nevertheless the sickly beauty was the most gentle, she was the best at fulfilling her duty as his wife.

“Bathing alone is boring, it would be better if we can bathe together!” Yue Yang bent down to pick up the sickly beauty and carried her bridal style. Seeing that Luo Hua City Mistress and Bloody Queen Red were both still there, the sickly beauty was so flustered her face was bright red. She tried to struggle free but failed. She noticed that the Luo Hua City Mistress was busy appreciating the two pots of Gold Silk Butterfly, she did not bother noticing what had happened. The sickly beauty did not feel as embarrassed anymore, moving her lips next to Yue Yang's and

pleaded, “Can we talk about this at night. Later I will give you a message, be a good boy. Let’s not do that kind of things everyday, especially after Bing Er and the rest came back. Do not cause trouble, what if they found out about it?”

“...” The shameless guy pretended that he could not hear. He stripped the beauty and dipped her into the water.

At most she would pretend to be angry and hit him in a playful way.

It is normal for a married couple to bathe together.

Their happy lives just started, if Yue Yang does not enjoy himself then he would be stupid!

On the next day, Yue Yang reached the sixth floor of the Tong Tian Tower.

He came here to leave a message for the Phoenix Fairy Beauty.

Even if Yue Yang used his Heaven Eyes Divine Vision , he was still unable to see clearly what was inside the Gold Coffin. He could not see through this weird Gold Coffin. Qilin girl did not even mention what was inside, Yue Yang was really worried that a monster will jump out. He decided to get a strong and trustable helper, like Phoenix Fairy Beauty. If she was with him, opening the Gold Coffin would be much safer.

Moreover, the day Black Hell King is planning to invade Dragon Soaring Continent was approaching, Yue Yang still wanted to practice [Body Fusion] with her.

So as to improve together.

The Phoenix Fairy Beauty would be one of the main fighters to face Black Hell King. Without her, with the Night Empress alone, Yue Yang thought that they might not successfully defeat the Black Hell King. After all, he was a strong opponent who was Heaven Tier Level 1 or even perhaps Level 2.

Although the Night Empress was known to be extremely powerful, but compared to the Black Hell King, Yue Yang was still unsure of her strength.

Yue Yang was very sure of the Phoenix Fair Beauty's situation. If they could make the most out of the remaining time to practice [Body Fusion], in addition it was highly possible for her to break through and reach Heaven Tier Level 1. Now she is currently Innate Level 10, also known as Earth-rank Level 10. However, reborn with Innate Qi and cleansed using Nirvana, her strength was way beyond an average Innate level 10. If she gets another break through while practicing [Body Fusion] with Yue Yang, then she would definitely reach Heaven Tier level 1... She, might become the second new female Supreme Elder after Zhi Zun, of course if the Night Empress has already become one, she would be the third.

“Girl, come, I miss you!” Yue Yang gave the Phoenix Fairy Beauty a very simple message.

But his emotions of longing were all real.

Because he really missed her. Even in his dreams, she was there. The Phoenix Fairy Beauty who would entice others with a smile.

After settling the meeting to be at the border of the plaza at Tong Tian Tower's Sixth Floor, Yue Yang had to make a move and first, return back to Soaring Dragon Continent. He took out the crystal used to summon his Thunder Beast mount, Thunder Armour as well as the trash picked up by Bloody Queen Red and Ah man from the palace — the Silver ranked weapons and defense equipments, and threw them at the old man Jun Wu You. He did not bother if those things could still be used.

Jun Wu You was stunned, “ Brat, where did you rob? Did you empty my exchequer?”

Old man Yue Hai was secretly pleased but pretended to be serious, “ These weapons and defense equipments are already broken, many can no longer be used. They are considered trash, even fixing would be difficult.”

The old fox was afraid that Yue Yang would be angered so he quickly comforted, “ They could be fixed, I know an old dude who is skilled in fixing things. He is a pretty good tinker. Obedient Yue Yang, now there are nothing else you need to deal with, you can go hook up girls! Oh right, last time I found something useful in the secret room. Do you want to borrow it to study? It is really useful for those who want children!”

Seeing this old dude being so suspicious, he knew straight away it was porn.

The most amazing thing was that, the images could move.

It appeared just like Mr Cai Jing's romance action movies, perhaps even more exciting. After all it was the blood and sweat of a certain lewd master from the Soaring Dragon Continent!

“Do not flip it open here, take it back and study it with your wife.” The old fox could not stand Yue Yang's guts. The room was filled with people and he still dared to flip it open. One should know that it was made with a secret technique, there was audio and visual. After opening it up completely, it could even float and be shown in 3D...

“President, you are teaching kids the wrong things!” Yue Yang kept the book but criticised the old fox's shamelessness in an earnest way, making him explode in anger.

Such good things cannot be found out by Luo Hua City Mistress and the rest, if not it would be confiscated.

Yue Yang pretended to be an obedient child and visited Yue Yu as well as his Fourth Mother at Tian Luo Palace.

On the next day, Yue Yang made his way up to Tong Tian Tower's Sixth Floor to see if Phoenix Fairy Beauty saw his message

and came to meet him. He waited for half a day but he did not even see shadows. He was slightly disappointed, turned and prepared to leave. He had to go back acting as an obedient child.

Suddenly, a sweet smelling scent filled the entire sky and enveloped him.

There were also two jade white arms, so soft and supple as if they had no bones, embraced him from the back. On his back, he felt an extremely splendid sensation pressed right against his back. This sensation could almost melt him, it felt as if his bones went limp. He felt ecstatic. What surprised Yue Yang the most was that, the beauty behind him was wrapped around him just like a beauty serpent. Her sweet lips were right next to his ear, “Bad little boy, did you miss me? How much? Do you want to be touched or kissed?”

Chapter 446 – Bidding Farewell To The Past, To Meet The Future

Upon hearing the Beauty ask whether he preferred to be stroked or to be kiss, Yue Yang nodded his head like a baby bird, expressing desire for both.

“In your dreams!” Pheonix Fairy Beauty softly nipped at Yue Yang’s earlobe.

He felt slight pain.

Beauty then softly, but extremely seductively licked his other earlobe. This flirting was so uniquely arousing that Yue Yang nearly turned into a werewolf – howling with his claws in the earth. Looking behind him, he saw Beauty looking at him calmly with a smile faintly playing on her lips. Those bright eyes, rosy cheeks with those cherry red lips softly panting was enough to bring his wolf blood to a boil. Her extraordinary charm was enough to bring the world to a standstill. In that moment, one could not help but look.

Pheonix Fairy Beauty softly flicked Yue Yang’s forehead and teased playfully: “Bad boy, you’ve seen enough?”

Yue Yang commented: “I never used to believe it when people describe one’s beauty to be a feast for the eyes. Only after today, when I myself have helped myself to such a delectable feast that I really know that it is true!”

Hearing these words, Phoenix Fairy Beauty smiled.

Oh!

Her beautiful fingers pinched Yue Yang's cheek, those ruby lips of her leaned in extremely closely. She whispered to him: "No wonder you have stolen the hearts of so many young maidens, your mouth is so sweet. Bad boy, you can use these antics on Tigresses, Luo Hua girls, but they will not work on me."

"Sister, I too live for a blissful sexual life, don't expose me when the time comes." Yue Yang placed both of his hands behind him, intending to take slight advantage of her. Upon realising that Beauty showed almost no sign of resisting, he instead moved his hands to her butt, gently lifting her up and carrying her entirely on his back. Without the usual coy of other girls, Phoenix Fairy Beauty laughed and smoothly leaned on Yue Yang's back. With her arms looped around his neck, her legs around his waist, she was twisted around his whole body like a beautiful snake.

"I heard that you got into a fight with the 6 Great Demons. How was it? Were you bullied to tears?" With no regards for any of the usual conventions, Phoenix Fairy Beauty slipped her hands into Yue Yang's clothes, and oh, did those hands roam wildly. Not only did Yue Yang almost get consumed by the fire of Passion, he was sweating profusely because of the many warriors openly staring.

With one hand quickly grabbing the naughty hand of Phoenix Fairy Beauty, Yue Yang used the other and brought out 'Heaven's

Fury Fire Lotus’.

The immense pressure caused a sudden explosion.

An invisible pressure even more horrifying than when the Demon King was about to arrive had spread. As a result, the weakest and nearest warriors were all thrown hundred of miles away.

The previously arrogant Guardian Beast was frightened out of its wits. It fell to the ground and do not dare to move an inch.

Those warriors with slow reflexes were all shaken to the ground.

And they did not know what to do!

The few quick thinking warriors immediately realised that this couple that dared to openly display their intimacy were Innate, in fact, they were Super Innate, were frightened to their feet and escaped as quickly as they could, regretting only that they could not grow more legs to leave even quicker.

The thing Innate Rankers usually hated the most was when others pried into their privacy – just like this crowd that only seemed to be enjoying a show, although it was unintentional, it was certainly still taboo.

Luckily they were not looking to kill, otherwise, the power of that Fire just now could have killed all surrounding life in a

second.

Seeing Yue Yang's skill, Phoenix Fairly Beauty kissed him, teasing: "Oh, no wonder you dare to singly challenge the 6 Great Demons, you have a new breakthrough! Even though you are a lustful Bad Boy, your abilities are definitely one of a Genius! This time, you are not simply trying to show off your cultivation right? I can't go fight, my injuries are not completely healed yet!

"Oh, your injuries are still not fully healed?" With concern, Yue Yang chided: "Then why did you leave so fast when they are not healed? I'm not even collecting rent from you!"

"Those exterior injuries are all healed, but those on my heart are not!" Phoenix Fairy Beauty had only said that to tease Yue Yang, to see him worried about her. His reaction made her very contented.

"I'm the best at healing the wounds of the heart." Yue Yang was not angry, and carried Phoenix Fairy Beauty to another place to continue their flirting.

"Bring me to Charm Demon Palace! I'm afraid that the rest of my life will be only to serve you and I will not be managing Charm Demon Palace anymore, I will have to return it to the Charm Demon clan." The words of Phoenix Fairy Beauty rang true.

She knew, Yue Yang would definitely form an alliance with her, because there would be a huge battle upcoming against Dark Prison King.

After the battle with Dark Prison King, there is still the Scarlet Emperor and the Scarlet Empress.

After that battle, they still had to go to the Heaven Realm.

In the Heaven Realm, there's Xu Kong, Jiu Xiao and those 3 big Ming Yue Guang who would be waiting. Aa unavoidable dreaded battle awaits..... If it is like this, how would there be any time to manage Charm Demon Palace? Managing Charm Demon Palace, is because there was free time while training. It was merely an act of looking for something to kill time. But now with dangerous battles on the line, there is a need to train harder than before, how would there be time to care about other things? Phoenix Fairy Beauty didn't say it, but Charm Demon Palace has another rule, it is that when every Charm Demon finds a man they love, they have to bring it back to the clan, to accept the well-wishes of the clan, before leaving Charm Demon Palace to live blissfully after.

Even though it would be a stretch to say that Phoenix Fairy Beauty is in love with Yue Yang to the extent of being unable to live without him, but after that battle of Luan Pan Yu where they fought with their lives on the line, coupled with the training where both body and heart of them two fused as one, it was impossible for feelings to not develop.

No matter how strong she was, she was still a woman.

After they trained together naked, and after they fought life and death together so many times.

Who could forget it all with a smile?

Phoenix Fairy Beauty had never met such a unique man before, nor had she even opened her heart up to accommodate such a man.

However, things changed. Even though she was originally only jealous of her sister, and purely wanted to steal her disciple, but after spending so much time together training and fighting together, Yue Yang had suddenly slipped into her heart without her realisation.

This is why in her heart, Phoenix Fairy Beauty decided to give this little boy a chance.

Even though he was very young, so young that it was almost ridiculous, none of that was the point. The important thing that was that he had capability, he had potential, and he liked her a lot.

To overcome the bottleneck of cultivation, there was a need to push ahead.

Legend had said that the sword could cut through the strings of passion, break six Records and abandon the physical body, to become holy only with pure ability and the soul.

To slowly become Zi Zun, and finally God.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty used to do that, to not date, to not ask of the matters between men and women, devoting herself to

cultivation.

Until she met Yue Yang.

She realised his way of training and hers were entirely different, but yet the effects were much better!

He did not need to cut through the strings of passion, break six senses, abandon his physical body, but yet could still rise quickly, much faster! His way of overcoming the hurdle of emotions was unlike the unmoving meditation of others, but instead genuine and bold. His way of Body Fusion was literally 'God's tactic' having showed obvious effects. And regarding how the physical body was unable to become holy? Yue Yang this boy did not break six senses nor abandoned his physical body. He had his Innate Qi and Nirvana's Flame, and by using those to shed his old body, cleanse it, and then use Nirvana to be reborn, his method was better by hundreds of times, faster by thousand of times!

Since this was the best way, and at the same time she would have the chance to taste the sweetness of love as a blissful little woman, why not?

Of course, before Phoenix Fairy Beauty came to such a decision, she hesitated for very long.

However, when she saw his wife Sick Beauty's blissful smiling face, a never before envy emerged in her heart, and then she realised. That was what she has been missing, love!

“Charm Demon Palace? So many Charm Demons.....” When Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty reached the Charm Demon Palace on the Seventh Floor of Tong Tian Tower, they realised that it was no mistake that this was the one of the ten most dangerous places of Tong Tian Tower. The reason why was because here lived tens of thousands of Charm Demons and tens of thousands of female demon servants, most of which are in human form. While a portion was also in creature form, but even they would at least be in half creature-half human form. Don’t say a single man, even a whole army of men would be immediately sucked to oblivion here!

No wonder men turn pale at the mere mention of Charm Demon Palace, this is the hell of men, without a doubt!

Charm Demons are a specific demonic creature meant to seduce men, their matrilineality is structured, those born are always women, men have no existence.

Apparently, Charm Demons only need to have intercourse once, to suck a man dry.

Suck a man dry!

They were even able to store the seed of men up to a thousand years, and then, like a Queen Ant, freely arrange their times of fertility. Of course, not all Charm Demons are willing to breed, because every time they reproduce, their ability will decrease by half, while the small Charm Demon born will inherit that half, growing up very quickly.....

At Tong Tian Tower, the Charm Demons are a Demon clan that come out lesser, but once they capture strong men, they would use their unique ability to heartlessly suck them dry.

Powerful Charm demons did not need to have intercourse, they just had to open their mouths, and within seconds, they could completely suck a standard Innate dry.

That was why, the mere mention of horrifying creatures like Charm Demons frightened men to no end.

“Don’t sweat, they are not as scary as the legends say, they will only suck dry men who only have the intention of playing with them. If they are truly in love with each other, the Charm Demon will be with her lover for life, and would not do anything that causes harm. In Charm Demon Palace, history records that at least a thousand Charm Demons marry far away, leaving Clan life, and many live very happily. “ Phoenix Fairy Beauty was not a Charm Demon, she was entirely human. Since only the Charm Demon Queen who was at Demon King level to protect Guardian Creatures with her life, Phoenix Fairy Beauty only worshipped as Palace Owner although her status was even higher than the Queen among the Charm Demons.

“Tian Fa Palace Owner, we wish you happiness!” The Charm Demon Queen welcomed them in front of the palace. She had extremely seductive looks and was about 2 meters in height. She wore a crown on her head, donned in the Queen’s cloak, and wished for Phoenix Fairy Beauty happiness with sincerity.

“A few hundred years ago, you have always been the one taking

care of me, and it has been me who has only done so little for Charm Demon Palace. Nai Nai, I am very happy to have met you!" Phoenix Fairy Beauty and Charm Demon Queen shared a hug. Charm Demon Queen was both mentor and friend, it was exactly her who always taught Phoenix Fairy Beauty how to use her life to protect Warrior Creatures. The creatures Phoenix Fairy Beauty used her life to protect used to only be ordinary level one, but finally rose to Diamond Level ten, setting precedent since the oldest days to have become Great Demon King level Charm Demon Queen.

"The clan of Charm Demon forever welcomes you, this is your home, you are the pride of our tribe, we will always welcome you to come back to our Maiden home." Charm Demon Queen silently praised how her own sister found a good partner when she saw Yue Yang carrying out Innate greetings to her.

She has heard of the matters of Yue family's Third Master.

He is very young, but he was enough to shock the entire high levels of Tong Tian Tower.

Today, he was perhaps still unable to face Shun Tian and Black Prince, unable to defeat Black Prison King, but tomorrow? Who could say it was impossible?

A disciple handpicked by the one top of humans, how would he be wrong? Zhi Zun's innate skill, if to use that to judge a person, would never be wrong!

“Please make her happy, Tian Fa is a very unfortunate child, you have to make her happy, I believe, you can do it, so, I entrust her to you!” Charm Demon Queen smiled but passed on this message to Yue Yang secretly. At the same time, while Yue Yang returned the greeting, she swiftly passed Yue Yang a small box with her right hand.

This action startled Yue Yang slightly, could it be, this has to do with him? This action of hers seemed to have a deeper meaning?

Phoenix Fairy Beauty was busy hugging the 4 ancestors of Charm Demon Clan goodbye, and did not see this small box. Seeing Yue Yang accept it, Charm Demon Queen smiled and looked at Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty leave.

Tens of thousands of Charm Demons, sang a beautiful song in chorus and sent off another one of their Charm Demons who found love successfully!

Yue Yang then understood, Phoenix Fairy Beauty brought him here to bid her past good bye!

Could it be, in that small box, was her past?

Her true identity?

With this, was it be possible to find out any information about Zhi Zun?

Chapter 447 – The Cards Of Fate

Having bid the tens of thousands of frightening Charm Demons goodbye, only after leaving this Charm Demon Palace that has been widely agreed as one of the 10 most dangerous places in Tong Tian Tower, did Yue Yang wiped his cold sweat secretly.

A single Charm Demon is nothing, but when tens of thousands appear together, they are really quite terrifying.

If Black Prison Army and Charm Demon Palace went to war, Yue Yang would place his bet on Charm Demon Palace, even if Black Prison King and his 5 underling leaders are at an advantage, but on the army foundation of general and soldiers, they would definitely suffer the defeat of the whole army without a single survivor. Besides, each of them would perhaps die in the most horrific way, being sucked dry, left with only the bones of the dead. It is said that in Tong Tian Tower, only the Eastern Demon Clan ruled by Dragon King is truly able to suppress Charm Demon Palace.

Yue Yang did not immediately open the small white jade box that Charm Demon Queen gave him secretly.

Since Charm Demon Queen wished to keep it a secret, and keep Phoenix Fairy Beauty in the dark, Yue Yang would find a time to secretly open it.

Besides bidding goodbye at Charm Demon Palace, Phoenix Fairy Beauty transferred numerous areas of governance, various mines and forests, and many scenic private land to each of the 6

Major Sky Demons, especially Sky Disaster, who received the most.

Each of them gave their blessings to Phoenix Fairy Beauty .

Especially Sky Disaster, who sweetly called out Brother in law, stretching her hand out for a reward, not even being contented with Dragon Crystal, only accepting Holy treasures.

“Go go, little kids go play at the side.” Yue Yang almost wanted to hit her, he himself doesn’t even have any Sacred Treasures, how would he give her?

“You still don’t have a title since joining us 10 Major Sky Demons, we should think of one for you today.” Sky Disaster this little brat is revengeful, upon seeing Yue Yang being stingy with his treasures, immediately suggested: “Since brother-in-law is a pauper, how about we call him Sky Penniless! The meaning is the most miserly most stingy pauper in the whole world.”

“How about Sky Punch, I was born to hit you!” Yue Yang erupted, wanting to catch this little girl to harass her, and let her witness his anger.

“Pick a Card of Fate!” Sky Crime was always the good person and tried to alleviate the tension.

“I agree.” Sky Assassinate, who Yue Yang admired the most, nodded his head in agreement.

“I agree too.” Sky Sword also agreed, he does not admire Yue Yang at all. But rather, he was afraid. He was afraid that Yue Yang this youngster is going to steal his Saint-ranked Ancient Sword.

Tian Jue did not make any sound, while Sky Fury who is carrying Thunder Drum stood far away and made no indication.

They are neutral, not agreeing, not against.

Only Sky Disaster insisted that Sky Penniless is the most suitable nickname for Yue Yang.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty was all smiles, with rare good temper. She pinched Yue Yang’s arm softly.

Her meaning was for Yue Yang to not be too stingy, and take something out to please Sky Disaster this little girl, and not let her keep making noise, making it awkward for Phoenix Fairy Beauty.

Since it was like this, Yue Yang hit his chest, meaning that he will definitely complete this mission. He summoned ‘Green’ out of five coloured god light, and passed it to Sky Disaster: “Brat, have you seen this kind of treasure before?” Seeing it, Sky Disaster was so happy her two eye balls almost became hearts. She loudly ranted brother in law, I want it. But how could Yue Yang possibly give that to her, he was just teasing. Without waiting for Sky Disaster to start snatching it away, he immediately kept it: “I am just the most stingy brother in law, I think this treasure cannot be given.”

“No, you are the most generous brother in law in the world, I like brother in law, here, take the treasure out again for me to take a look, put it in the palm of my hand, let me take a closer look, I assure you I won’t take it!” Sky Disaster this little brat tried her best to flatter Yue Yang. Five-coloured Divine Light this level of treasure, simply blinded her eyes.

“Looking is ok..... Oops, took the wrong one!” Yue Yang took ‘black light’ out.

‘Wow!’ Seeing it, Sky Disaster liked it as much as a kitten who just saw a ball of yarn, her heart itching, crazily waving her hands, wanting to snatch it over.

Even though Black light is a counterfeit Five-coloured Divine Light, it is still a holy treasure Jiu Xiao left for Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty after killing Thunder God. It’s use, is more for fighting and killing, unlike the real Five-coloured Divine Light which has special abilities. Simply put, Black Light’s destructive power, is still more than one fifth of ‘Green’ of five-coloured Divine Light.

Sky Disaster was almost brought to tears under Yue Yang’s teasing.

He kept ‘Black Light’, and brought out a treasured bottle containing God Dew. Once Sky Disaster screamed in delight, he kept it, and brought out Hell King’s Godly Seal.

Yue Yang wickedly lured: “Brat, have you seen this before? Look

look, this is the treasure of legends!”

Sky Disaster was the brink of insanity. This guy had so many treasures, yet was simply unwilling to give one to her.

She desperately wanted to snatch it over, yet was unable to snatch it from him.

Neither could the 5 Major Sky Demons stand Yue Yang’s flaunting, was it really necessary to bring out such treasures to lure a kid he was just teasing her? Really!

“Have you ever seen the eternal Wishing Dutchman’s Pipe? I, your brother in law has it! Have you ever seen Godly water and Stream of eternity? I also have it, call me brother in law sweetly, it could be that if I am happy, I will bestow upon you poor little thing one of it!” Yue Yang was more sinister than Guai Li Shu who used candy to lure a little girl by a hundred times. He knew clearly that Sky Disaster could not stand the lure of the treasures, yet showed off deliberately. Yue Yang really deserved a beating.

“Miser!” Sky Disaster was very smart, she knew that it was impossible to get a single treasure from this brother-in-law when he was merely teasing her on purpose.

Fiercely, she grabbed Yue Yang’s arm and bit it with hate.

Yue Yang flung his hand many times in pain, yet was still unable to get Sky Disaster off.

Upon such a sight. , Phoenix Fairy Beauty was almost in headaches. Two little kids, even a small grudge could become like such!

Sky Crime on the other hand was rolling with laughter.

He opened the secretive large box slightly.

In a moment, countless golden rays spilled out.

A particularly mysterious energy flooded heaven and earth, Yue Yang and Sky Disaster are no longer concerned with fighting. They both dashed over, wanting to see what was really collected in Sky Crime's large box. This was one of the biggest secrets of Charm Demon Palace: the contents of the big box that apparently only Sky Execution knows about. Others, even Sky Wrath and Sky Calamity who had the best relationships with Sky Crime do not know.

Yue Yang did not have the chance to use All-Seeing eye to take a clear look before Sky Crime fished out more than ten dark golden unusual cards out.

The big box closed up again.

The mysterious energy, immediately disappeared without a trace.

Sky Crime placed the dark golden cards in front of Yue Yang, and indicated for him to randomly pick one.

The titling process of Demonic Palace has three ways, one was self-redeeming, upon arriving in Demonic realm, one could abandon his previous title, choosing for oneself one that is better. Just like Sky Dragon who was originally called Xie Long Mang Jun, upon reaching Innate Level 6 peak, he entered Demonic palace, becoming the weakest tenth Sky Demon and gave himself the title of Sky Dragon. Besides titling oneself, there is another one where the title was publicly agreed upon. For example, Sky Fury, his temper, voice and Thunder Drum, these three were all like thunder. When they were sounded it was as if the Heavens were enraged, so he was publicly agreed as Sky Fury.

Sky Assassinate and Sky Sword were also Sky Demons with publicly agreed upon titles!

The last kind, was for the Sky Demons who accepted the test of the Cards of Fate.

Only the strongest Sky Demons have this qualification. Those such as Sky Execution, Sky Law, Sky Wrath, Sky Calamity, Sky Disaster, Sky Crime have all gone through such a test.

Once the test of the cards of Fate has been administered, this title followed one forever. That was not the point, the most important thing was that treasures like the Cards of Fate stored a ruling power, once successfully titled, a specific ability would be bestowed.

This kind of testing could be said as extremely rare, and could only be administered once a century.

Such as Sky Fury, Sky Sword all desired to receive the test of the Cards of Fate and a special ability.

But when Yue Yang joined the Sky Demons, they indicated that they were willing to give this opportunity to Yue Yang. In addition to being modest towards one that is stronger, it was also clear acknowledgment of one's own inadequateness, if they were strong enough, Sky Crime would certainly not have given the chance to take the test of the Cards of Fate to Yue Yang. After all, it was a test of a century. It was Sky Crime's willingness to give the chance to this newbie that proved Yue Yang as the superior Sky Demon!

“Do I randomly pick?” In his heart, Yue Yang was also slightly nervous, he only pretended to be indifferent on the surface.

There were 100 cards among the cards of Fate, but one could only choose one card from 36 during every test. These Cards of Fate were all different, some names were good while others were bad, while the abilities bestowed upon could be big or small.

To pick a good one, was of course excellent.

If one were to choose a name that is bad, and receive a very tasteless ability, it could only be said as embarrassing.

“Calm down, choose randomly, you will definitely choose one that is most suitable for you.” The Dark Gold chains in Sky Crime’s hand began to ring with a crashing sound and the Cards to Fate started to shuffle. The dark gold Cards of Fate exude a special energy, which gradually diffused and enveloped Sky Crime’s hands.

“Alright!” Yue Yang closed his eyes, randomly picked one.

An irregularity happened.

Thousands of dark golden beams emerged from the card in Yue Yang’s hands, intense as the sun. It was so dazzling that one could not even look at it directly.

An invisible power has appeared.

That power was beginning to spread on Yue Yang’s body.

In an instant, when it reached the extreme, the whole world seemed to have been shaken by this power.

A dark golden Giant that bore his image grew from Yue Yang’s body within seconds. It had the existence of a mountain. Even if one looked all the way up to the large body that was kilometres tall, one could not see the head of this Giant. Sky Crime, Sky Fury, Sky Assassinate, Sky Sword’s faces changed drastically. Phoenix Fairy Beauty and Sky Disaster were dumbfounded. Historically in the records of Demonic Palace, there have only been

3 appearances of such Images that are over 100 meters. Those Images belong to the most powerful Sky Execution, the most talented Sky Law and Sky Disaster with the most potential.

Sky Execution's Image was almost 200 metres. And that was a event that has prided the Demonic Palace since its time. .

Sky Law and Sky Disaster were similar.

However, here comes the difference between them. Sky Wrath who was the third strongest, his Image of fate was less than 100 meters.

Arrogant Sky Calamity was less than 80 meters, while Sky Crime who bore the Cards of Fate was only 60 meters.

They all knew Yue Yang this boy was a pervert, and had already mentally prepared for him to be as strong as Sky Execution. They have even accepted that that he might be even stronger. However, what no one would have ever imagined that the Image of Fate of Yue Yang this boy would exceed Sky Execution by so much..... Yue Yang's Image of Fate was almost a 1000 meters. It could have been compared to a mountain, a mountain that one was unable to see the entire body of. A mountain able to support the heaven and earth.

This was definitely the most unfathomable test in the entire history of Demonic Palace.

So perverted, it was truly difficult to accept!

Not only that, the two hands of the golden Image seemed to hold something, but because the Image of Fate was too tall and too large and too dazzling, Sky Law, Sky Disaster, Sky Crime among others could not even see beyond the toe of the golden image.

“Howl.....”

A terrifying thunder roared through the clouds and shook the earth.

A strange event has happened again. A dark golden huge wolf almost 200 meters tall emerged from between the knees of the Golden Giant. It stood on its claws and arched its back, howling towards the sky. Its appearance completely overshadowed the situation above Golden Giant. Sky Crime and the rest vaguely saw something appear from the top of the Giant, but it blocked by the image of the Dark Golden Giant Wolf on the ground, which made it impossible to see what was happening above.

Chapter 448 – New Title, Sky Wolf!

Phoenix Fairy Beauty, Sky Disaster, Sky Crime, Sky Fury and the others all wanted to fly up and find out what had happened at the top top of this Dark Golden Giant image.

The power of the Rule from the Cards of Fate however kept everyone rooted to the ground.

In that moment, not a single person could move.

Aside from this Dark Golden Giant Wolf, there were also countless Purple Golden flames and Platinum lightning, that burned and roamed the surface of the image of the Dark Golden Giant. Unknowingly, in the sky, flaming red lotuses had begun to fly accompanied with the pressure from the Fire Lotus, coupled with the cold terror of the frost, snow-like and numerous falling.

At the same time, there countless silver currents spread snake-like between the ice and fire, crackling.

This sight was suffocating to look at. Never before had an individual's Image of Fate brought about so much change.

Neither has anyone's Image of Fate seemed been so realistic.

Even Sky Execution's Image of Fate was for a mere few ten seconds, before it disappeared quickly.

However, Yue Yang this kid's Image of Fate, had already existed for more than a minute, and was not even showing any sign of disappearing. In fact, it still growing, developing more and more changes in its presentation.

Even for a pervert, wasn't this too much?

Sky Calamity who was the most envious of Yue Yang, almost wanted to end his life by hitting his head on the ground.

In comparison to Yue Yang, his Image of Fate that was 80 meters could not even be considered a dwarf. It completely paled even in comparison to the 200 meter Giant Wolf at the feet of Yue Yang's Image of Fate!

Comparing oneself against others really was infuriating!

Sky Calamity was brought to tears.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty on the other hand was beyond excited. Her jade face was crimson and crying tears of joy. She felt that Yue Yang was really amazing.

Yue Yang had killed Sky Dragon for his own personal reasons. Although everyone did not blame him, he was still always a little embarrassed. This was why she suggested Sky Execution to let Yue Yang join Demonic Palace as one of the new 10 Major Sky Demons as a form of repaying Demonic Palace a Sky Demon. However, she never would have thought that Yue Yang would exceed her

expectations. Not only did he singled out 6 Major Sky Demons to be undefeated, even when he received the Test of Fate, he easily beat the record of Sky Execution to become an ultimate existence. He had become an existence that never appeared before and could most likely never be defeated!

In the words of Yue Yang, this was too supportive!

Sky Disaster was also excited with his face flushed. She clenched her little fists, as if to show support for Yue Yang.

The image of Dark Golden Giant Wolf covered the sky above, coupled with the Fire Lotus, Frost and Current, Sky Disaster and Sky Crime, the people on the ground could not see anything, but everyone knew – there were many changes above.

Yue Yang's mind and the Card of Fate had become one.

With his eyes tightly closed, his entire mind was immersed in the Ruling World of the Card of Fate.

Immersed, intoxicated, completely unaware of the outside world.

He was gaining the power of the law, understanding the realm of the special ability. With the Card of Fate blazing to its limit, Yue Yang suddenly howled to the sky. The biting energy spread across his body in a earth-shattering way that shook even the hard ground and mountain peaks. That earthquake like tremor caused numerous cracks in the ground, spreading like a spider web.

The hills in the distance were collapsing.

The boulders originally on the top of the mountain were all rumbling down.

When Yue Yang unconsciously waved his arm, that Dark Golden Giant Image did the same.

Even more frightening was how the sky had split open. The East and West sky had strangely split into two halves.

The sunny sky inexplicably turned dark.

The dark clouds rolled.

Blood red moonlight sinisterly peeked out and flashed with chilling light.

Among the rolling clouds, Phoenix Fairy Beauty, Sky Disaster saw bright stars falling down one after another. They drew flames of light, and rumbled the earth upon crashing..... The collapse of the Heavens and Earth, the meteor-like wave, was destroying the world.....

In comparison to the Images of Fate of those like Sky Execution, Sky Law, Sky Wrath, Sky Calamity, Sky Crime, Sky Disaster, Yue Yang's Image of Fate was more terrifying by tens of millions of

times.

Even if one knew this was clearly fake. This was all a mere image, an illusion.

But even the strong like Phoenix Fairy Beauty and Sky Disaster such Sky demons were beyond frightened. Because it was all too real, these Images appeared so alike reality. Seeing the meteors falling, even the calm Sky Crime was also secretly swallowing his saliva to resist the fear growing in his heart. Even Sky Fury, Sky Assassinate and Sky Sword almost could not help but jump away and flee.

In reality, they could not do anything.

The Ruling power of the Cards of Fate bounded everyone.

“These scenes: the wolf howling to the moon, the stars falling to the ground, the sky and ground collapsing, the calamity of destruction. This scene is a reflection of our generation of Sky Demons, but everyone is only a small section. Only Yue family’s third Master is the real reflection.” Sky Crime murmured, the dark Golden chain tightly locking his arm, neck and body, almost to the point of choking him to death. In the suffocating redemption of his original crime, Sky Crime’s eyes were glowing in pain, and using his special ability, he saw only a little of what fate had to reveal.

But because his level was not enough, he only had a few seconds of insight before collapsing.

The dark Golden chains caused his bones to creak; the redemption of the origin sin of the soul was also causing large damage to his body.

Pfft!

A mouthful of blood sprayed from Sky Crime's mouth onto the ground.

Only when Sky Crime gave up trying to gain an insight did the Dark Golden chains loosen up, allowing him to breath in relief.

In only those few seconds, Sky Crime's skin was already deeply shattered by the strangling, his flesh rolling on the outside. Fortunately, he was a strong Sky Demon, otherwise, the punishment by the Law for attempting to gain an insight would have cost him his life.

“Unfortunately, we still cannot see the truth. However, the future of Demonic Palace is certainly connected to Yue family's third master, this I am certain of.” Sky Crime felt a little apologetic, but also extremely relieved. With regards to the future of Demonic Palace, Sky Crime was one of the most valued, even more so than Sky Execution. The 10 Major Sky Demons can die, but the Demonic Palace must not. This mission was passed down to Sky Crime from the previous generation of Sky Demons, and only Sky Crime, with his ability and talent was able to accomplish that.

In fact, even if Sky Crime did not say a word, everyone still knew.

Yue Yang this kid has such a great Image of Fate with so many changes that were all-encompassing. It indicated several hidden meanings, and for the future of Demonic Palace to be unrelated to him? That would be strange!

Phoenix Fairy Beauty was obviously relieved. Her recommendation for Yue Yang to join Demonic Palace was the right choice.

This was not only beneficial to Demonic Palace, but even to Yue Yang himself, this was extremely helpful.

If there really existed fate in the world.

Then he was the choice of fate!

Unfortunately, Yue Yang simply did not know any of this. He did not know the Card of Fate he randomly picked would have led to such chaos. When he finally did open his eyes, three minutes have passed. Yue Yang did not remember a thing about what happened, he only knew that a special force had entered his body very mysteriously and merged with the energy he himself had devoured.

Before he opened his eyes, all the images faded away.

The only thing he saw was the card in his hands.

What card did Yue Yang pick?

Everyone was curious.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty, Sky Disaster, Sky Assassinate, Sky Sword and the others gathered, except for Sky Crime who smiled bitterly.

He knew which card Yue Yang picked..... “Sky Wolf”. Among all the cards, the only card that represented the destruction of the world, but also the fiercest of all the cards in the deck! Compared to cards such as God of Death, Massacre, Judgment, Destruction, Aurora, Hell, Tower of Blood, this card was the most terrifying. This was because that card represented the end of the world, it represented the fall of the Gods.

That was also what the vision showed.

A wolf howling to the moon, the stars falling to the ground, the sky and ground collapsing, the calamity of destruction.

“What card is that? It is not the world, it is not fate, it is not like Sky Wolf?” Sky Disaster was alarmed, she did not recognise the card in Yue Yang’s hands.

“Is there a mutation?” Phoenix Fairy Beauty was also startled.

The Dark Golden card in Yue Yang’s hands had many mysterious ornamentations on it. Just like the card representing ‘World’, there was a big tree, but also like the card representing ‘Fate’, there was a giant Gold hand. There was even an extremely bright

star with a wolf swallowing everything in the background , like on the card representing 'Sky Wolf'!

Huh?

Even Sky Crime was confused. He first stared at the card in Yue Yang's hand for a long time, then bowed his head to count the Cards of Fate in his hands.

What was strange was, there were still 36 Cards of Fate in his hands.

Not a single one was missing!

How could there be an extra card?

He clearly saw Yue Yang picked one out.

Upon closer inspection, he flipped through the Cards of Fate in his hands, the cards originally representing World, Fate and Sky Wolf have all disappeared, as if they have never appeared. The 3 new cards that appeared were 'World tree', 'The Wheel of Fate' and 'Sirius'. Sky Crime was shocked. These 3 new cards, not only have he himself never seen them before, the explanation and levels displayed on them were also miles away from the original.

Taking World Tree as an example.

World Tree: Middle ranking, representing the extraordinary wisdom and long life. The one who picked it would obtain the ability to develop Beasts of Nature, sharing life with them.

This card was completely different from the previous. The original 'World' was an amazing card, the one who picked it would have a perfect ability of creation, being able to create all things of the world, the only check and balances was the success rate.

World and World Tree, one was top grade, the other was middle.

While they look alike, but World Tree could not even be considered top grade.

Fate and Wheel of Fate were the same. Fate was completely free, with the ability to irreversibly control fate; the Wheel of Fate, was merely a small curse, giving bad luck in a short period of time. As for Sky Wolf and Sirius, the difference was huge, Sky World represented the Destruction of the world. It was related to the legend in which World Destroying Demon Wolf swallowed the world. The one who picked it would obtain the power of destruction, even the strongest Innate would be forever destroyed if attacked, unable to survive in the state of the soul. In comparison to Sky Execution, Sky Law, this power of destruction was more terrible.

Sirius, was a lower ranked Card of Fate. The ability obtained was that each time the brightest Sirius Star appears in the sky, the ability of the one who picked the card multiplied. The power of all Star Beasts also increases by 5 times.

“How can this be?” Not talking about outsiders, even Sky Crime himself found this inexplicable. He was unable to believe his eyes.

“An extra card? Ah, this, this is a good thing!” Phoenix Fairy Beauty had the fastest response, and quickly stuffed Yue Yang’s card in his pocket. This card would be his from now on. And those ancient characters on the card that even Yue Yang would never be able to understand, she chose to disregard it. How 100 cards that have always been such suddenly turned into 101 cards, she would not investigate, its existence was its own explanation!

“Ah, in the future here in Demonic Palace, you shall be called ‘Sky Wolf’!” Since even Sky Crime is unable to decipher those words on Yue Yang’s card which are ancient characters, this card shall be the precedent, and Yue Yang shall be officially titled ‘Sky Wolf’.”

“Well, this name is fitting, the born perverted wolf, he will be the born perverted wolf, calling him Sky Wolf is the most suitable!” Sky Disaster clapped her little hands together in celebration.

“Is your little butt itchy?” Yue Yang looked at Sky Disaster’s pert butt sinisterly.

“Tian Fa sister, brother-in-law is bullying me, flirting with me in front of you. If you are not here, he that natural perverted wolf would have molested me! Sister, you have to protect the weak Sky Disaster, I am scared!” Sky Disaster hid behind Phoenix Fairy Beauty while complaining, and pretended to be a small rabbit

being bullied by a big grey wolf.

“.....” Yue Yang would like to say it was obviously the little brat who was trying to seduce me, but he swallowed those words down. He kept scores in his mind. When the opportunity comes, he would definitely have his revenge on this brat!

Flirting?

Flirting was nothing, Brother-in-law flirting with sister-in-law, that was the glorious tradition of the Dragon history!

Finally escaping the pestering of the pestering of Sky Disaster that brat, Yue Yang quickly brought Phoenix Fairy Beauty home. Having met her family, received the agreement of everyone, yet they have not consummated, how could Yue Yang not be urgent? As for Sky Disaster, forget it for now, the little brat was very smart, it would not be easy to bring her down. Forget about flirting with her, the priority now was to win over Phoenix Fairy Beauty.

Chapter 449 – Accepting The Blessings Of All, Enjoying The Gentleness

To follow the procedure of consummation in Demon Abyss, first use a sedan to bring the bride home, and then worship heaven and earth, pick open the red cap, share the nuptial cup, and then to begin that thing.

Yue Yang skipped all these steps.

Sedan?

Where could he find one now, he might as well carry his wife back home, just like how Zhu Ba Jie carried his wife home.

Worshipping heaven and earth are all fleeting clouds.

If husband and wife were in love, happiness would come regardless of whether they worshipped. If man or woman, just one of them had a problem with their body that they were unable to confess, that worship would not be of any use.

Going straight to the point, to push down was to push down, one should not just use their imagination and have no action. To do that would simply be worse than a beast. Yue Yang also felt that between a ‘beast’ and ‘worse than a beast’, the former was better. To be scolded by a woman as a beast was at most shameful, but to be scolded as worse than a beast was absolutely incompetent!

“Don’t pull me so quickly!” Phoenix Fairy Beauty could tell that this kid was a little impatient. He had something up his sleeve.

At that thought, a heat that could reduce one to jelly spreaded throughout her.

It was a little difficult to take her steps forward.

She was aware that she had feelings for Yue Yang. She also knew that sooner or later, her perfect body would be his. The problem was, this all happened so fast so she was still a little unprepared. How about having a buffer period? There was no need to pledge their undying love to the Gods, but the atmosphere should at least be created right?

With her jade white hands in Yue Yang’s, Phoenix Fairy Beauty only felt that his large hands had electricity of their own.

The continuous bursts of electricity were unsettling.

“Let us go back to Demon Abyss first to gauge the situation, if war breaks out, wouldn’t that be terrible?” Phoenix Fairy Beauty knew, when they have actually done the deed that they would not be able to separate for at least two or three days. The world of only two people was indeed romantic and pleasurable, the problem however was if Black Prison King launched an attack just then, Yue Yang’s absence would have had severe consequences. Besides, Phoenix Fairy Beauty also wanted to meet Yue Yang’s family. Without the usual wedding, she would at least have to meet them to really be considered part of his household. Otherwise, if his

parents and seniors refused to acknowledge her, her relationship with Yue Yang would only be considered adultery.

If this were in the past, Phoenix Fairy Beauty would definitely not care about any of this.

But now, she has decided to follow him from here on.

Now things are different, she has started to always be thinking for his sake. After all, she would have to count on this little bad guy from now on, naturally she would wish for everything to be smooth for him.

Yue Yang also felt that he should give Phoenix Fairy Beauty status. To consummate without marriage was already shameless. If he did not even give her status, that would really be unjustified. He brought Phoenix Fairy Beauty home to Yue Clan and cheekily introduced her to Elder Yue Yang: “This is Demonic Palace’s Sky Law, our ally, she is my good friend, but maybe we can develop further in the future.....”

Jun Wu You and Elder Yue Yang hurriedly pretended to drink their tea, pretending to hear nothing.

Actually, they were all her juniors. When Sky Law gained her title, they were still clad in open pants playing with mud!

They had long known such a day would come that Sky Law would want to marry Yue Yang, and they have always encouraged

Yue Yang to marry her. But then again, now that this boy suddenly brought Sky Law back to do her greetings, they were still embarrassed.

On one hand, they were not qualified to accept this greeting.

But on the other hand, to not accept this greeting was also unjustifiable. Besides, Sky Law had the heart to follow Yue Yang this boy, how could they not agree? Did they even dare to disagree?

“Cough, this is a good thing. I say Xiao-san, we will not control your matters, everyone should just do what they want! Cough, Brother Hai, do you agree?” Jun Wu You was still an Emperor in the end, his reaction time was indeed fast. His underlying meaning was that: We completely understand, it’s okay that you guys are not celebrating your wedding, we’ll agree to that. But it would be best not to spread the news so as to prevent the great confusion of seniority. If the seniority was confused, all the titles would be difficult to sort out. We wouldn’t know how to call each other.

“Yes, exactly.” Elder Yue Hai was secretly delighted that Sky Law wanted to be his granddaughter-in-law. The ancestors have blessed them, Yue Yang really was amazing to be able to have Demonic Palace’s second strongest, Sky Law, as his wife. He could now die without regrets!

“Boy, you are really amazing!” Old Fox secretly gave Yue Yang a big thumbs up.

However, he quickly returned her greeting. In reality, as only a

Level One Innate, the Old Fox actually had no right to even raise his heads in front of Sky Law. This was because Sky Law not only represented the ally of Demonic Palace, she was also an Elder Innate.

If not for the fact that he was Yue Yang's mentor, Sky Law would not even look at him in the eye, let alone return his greeting.

The warriors present were also glorified, Sky Law was greeting them because of Yue Yang! This was definitely unprecedented! Everyone rushed to return Sky Law's greeting, with humble words on their lips. Sky Law was only greeting them for Yue Yang's sake. Just because she greeted them did not mean that they could really treat her as a junior. Even their masters would have to respectfully greet Sky Law, how could they dare to sit there with no worry?

The next place would be to visit Fourth Mother at Tian Luo Palace.

Fourth Mother was much more gracious than Jun Wu You. In her heart, it did not matter if it was Xue Wu Xia, Qian Qian Princess or Luo Hua City Master. As long as she was married to her Xiao-san, she was her daughter-in-law.

Unlike the others, she was not stressed over Sky Law's greeting, but was delighted instead.

After helping Phoenix Fairy Beauty up, Fourth Mother pulled her to the side and carefully asked many questions. She went to such details almost to the point of finding out all there was about even

the three generation of Phoenix Fairy Beauty's family.

“Brother!” Miss Yue Bing's appearance meant bad news for Yue Yang.

His sexually blissful life would have to be delayed even longer. Now that little sister was back, she would no doubt pester him to no end. At this time, it would be very difficult to enjoy a romantic couple's world with Phoenix Fairy Beauty. Yue Yang gritted his teeth, nevermind about the day, he decided to sneak out in the night and push Phoenix Fairy Beauty down in the night when Yue Bing fell asleep. Thanks to his practice of Body Fusion technique, he was already used to sneaking already in the middle of the night anyway.

Yue Shuang also rushed over to him quickly. Since her older sister was already in brother's arms, she used both hands to grab onto brother's thigh and asked for candy.

It is very easy to dismiss Yue Shuang, he just had to give her something delicious.

Yue Bing however, was not so easy to dismiss, this pure girl did not even know she had disturbed her brother's sexual bliss.

She happily reported to brother the knowledge she acquired at Grandma Wu Teng's place. She also talked about how she achieved enlightenment, and even displayed the progress of her cultivation, asking brother to examine to prove her hard work. Of course, this little girl was just craving for brother's praise now that she has put

in hard work and made improvement.

“Wow, Bing-er’s progress is pretty impressive, your martial arts skills has also improved tremendously. Later, I’ll think of ways to upgrade your Green Light Tree Demoness and Thousand Year Old Treant General. If Thousand Year Old Treant General can become Ten Thousand Years Ancient Tree King, then you are close to becoming Innate! A sixteen year old Innate, Bing-er, you are more impressive than Big Brother, keep working hard!” At Yue Yang’s praise, Yue Bing’s rosy face turned red, fidgeting in Brother’s arms blushing. She liked to hear brother’s phrase, but then again when he really praised her, she gets embarrassed.

This was because her own efforts were not enough, she could only improve with her brother’s help.

If she did not have her brother, how could she possibly have been able to ascend to Innate at just sixteen years old?

Bing-er felt that it was a form of disrespect to surpass her older brother. If not for brother forcing her to ascend, she would rather ascend to Innate much later and preserve his record of ascending to Innate at twenty years old!

Upon seeing Yue Yang bring Phoenix Fairy Beauty home, Luo Hua City Master and Sickly Beauty were bittersweet, this guy has really done it!

They already knew such a day would come.

Long before Yue Yang and Sky Law practiced Body Fusion together, they knew that this Sky Law would not be able to escape from him. Besides, Phoenix Fairy Beauty protected Yue Yang many times and also saved the other girls, Luo Hua City Master and Sickly Beauty were not against her joining then. Even though she was a Super Innate, her temper was unlike others and she had no airs of arrogance. She was uninterested in managing matters, only interested in cultivating and not in wanting to become the head of the harem, which was why Luo Hua City Master and Sickly Beauty felt that she was no threat.

Besides, talking about entering the household, the two of them entered before she did!

When night fell, Yue Yang finally coaxed the excited Yue Bing who chatted on and on about her new skill levels. He was ready to give Phoenix Fairy Beauty a ‘night attack’.

But before he even slipped out of Yue Bing’s room, he saw Luo Hua City Master clad in veil standing in front of him.

Luo Hua City Master fell into his arms and wrapped her arms around Yue Yang’s neck, panting and like a mewling kitten said: “Scoundrel, I... I want it... that pose you talked about the other time, I want to try it tonight!”

Obviously aware that this girl was creating trouble, but when a beauty enter his arms with seductive eyes, stealing his soul, how could he not make a move on her?

Sickly Beauty peeked over from the door behind, but at the sight of Yue Yang, quickly hid again.

Seemingly very shy.

A threesome?

On one hand was two of his wives serving him together while the other was the big matter of consummation with Phoenix Fairy Beauty, how could he choose?

Yue Yang gave up caring. He would first enjoy a threesome, and then consummation. Anyway Phoenix Fairy Beauty was not going to run away, she could wait a little earlier. As for Luo Hua City Master and Sickly Beauty, if he did not make them beg, they would not know what was called a dominant husband!

“Scoundrel, no wonder this Master loves you dearly, tonight I will let you enjoy my gentleness to no end.” Seeing Yue Yang choosing a threesome without a moment of hesitation, Luo Hua City Master was delighted. She embraced Yue Yang and kissed him fiercely, deciding to give her all that night so that Yue Yang would not be able to leave her bed for the whole night. He wanted to launch a ‘night attack’ on Sky Law? No way, at least not tonight. Tonight, he belongs to her!

In the fight, Luo Hua City Master really dedicated herself to serving him.

One to not usually take the initiative, she specially went the extra mile.

Furthermore, Luo Hua City Mistress, who would usually be reserved in front of the Sickly Beauty and would only be wanton when there were the only her and Yue Yang, went as far as doing bolder actions that she never did before. She even moaned loudly on purpose in order to agitate Phoenix Fairy Beauty who was eavesdropping from the room next door.

Luo Hua City Master and Sickly Beauty took turns to go to battle, fighting for the entire night, exhausted.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty was upset.

If she did not have such superior self-control, she might have already walked into Luo Hua City Master and participated in the war.

The next day, Luo Hua City Master was glowing with radiance. Even though her body was a little sore, she was in excellent spirits. The first reason was that she made a gratifying victory before her rival in love, and the second reason was that she proved that a reunion after a short separation was more important than a newlywed consummation. Yue Yang's amazing performance made her happy to no end. She knew she could not control Yue Yang, but she was clever, and deliberately sought to chat with Phoenix Fairy Beauty. In the end, due to her intentional and Yue Bing's unintentional disturbance, Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty could only sneakily hold hands, as if they were having an affair.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty also found it funny and interesting.

Although it was not an affair, it was still stimulating.

When Yue Yang sneaked his hand under the table to stroke her, she did not refuse, but rather calmly spoke to Luo Hua City Master while letting Yue Yang's naughty hand take advantage of her.

Luo Hua City Master saw it, and immediately caught Yue Yang's ankle, then pulled his hand over to place on her thigh.

On her side, Phoenix Fairy Beauty also did the same.

Both were completely unwilling to concede.

Chapter 450 – Desire

Yue Yang had enjoyed all the joy having several partners. His only regret, was that he had to do the deeds secretly.

This was because Yue Bing and Yue Shuang, those two girls were around, and they did not understand, not even have any idea about these things. No matter how thick-skinned he was, Yue Yang was still embarrassed to openly take advantage of his wives in front of his younger sisters.

Yue Bing was completely unaware that her two sister-in-laws were engaged in such an infighting under the table, and was still happily in discussion with her brother over beasts and war tactics.

She would also humbly ask advice from Luo Hua City Mistress and Phoenix Fairy Beauty.

If one were to strictly consider it, she was the one truly benefitting from this situation.

When night fell, Luo Hua City Mistress would once again resort to ‘Honey Trap’ and used sexual entrapment to seduce Yue Yang into a threesome.

After a night of suffering, Phoenix Fairy Beauty had long already thought of a good way to deal with it, which was to close off six records. Those sounds that she cannot stand, it will be enough to not listen right?

She bet that Luo Hua City Mistress was forcing herself. Such wars like that were definitely exhausting. She laughed silently in her heart, let us wait and see how long you can last for!

If I myself am not worried, you think you can dominate?

As a virgin, Phoenix Fairy Beauty had some expectations and also some worry. She was worried that if she cannot stand it, and ruined the first time, then Luo Huo that woman will definitely make fun of her. She might as well have a little affair with Yue Yang first. This feeling was really not bad, although it was a little sneaky, it was very exciting and the mood was not bad. Most importantly, this would make him like her even more!

To let Yue Yang suddenly do that thing, Phoenix Fairy Beauty was not entirely prepared mentally.

To be able to flirt a little to develop their relationship, was still the best.

Yue Yu could tell that she was anxious. In the day she tries her best to help smooth things over, and would go to bed early at night. Now, she did not dare to listen to those kind of sounds.

She even resisted entering the Grimoire World, afraid of seeing something not suitable for the young or even hearing the kind of sounds that will confuse one's heart, and not be able to fall asleep at night!

Fourth mother on the other hand was very tolerant, and would coax Little Shuang-er to sleep early.

As for the matters between men and women, she only cared about the bigger matters.

The small details of life, she knew that everyone could do it well. A little jealousy was in fact harmless. Moreover, this kind of small grudges only served to improve the relationship between everyone, if they were all to ignore each other coldly, that would be bad!

Three days, passed by like so.

Luo Hua City Mistress fought lustily with Yue Yang for three consecutive nights, using all her power to serve him. She made herself exhausted.

Finally, she realised that the rival in love was nonchalant.

She was suddenly discouraged.

“Forget it, you can have him tonight. I am exhausted.” Luo Hua City Mistress temporarily admitted defeat. She felt that she herself was being slightly rash – if Yue Yang had already done the deed with Sky Law, she would already know the feeling of being a woman. If that was the case, she would not be able to control herself in such a situation. Now? She was still a virgin, she still had

the reservations and fear of a young maiden. Even though the sounds were extremely tempting, once she closed her six records and did not listen, she was still able to resist.

Luo Hua City Mistress now felt that to fight with Sky Law was not logical. She would have to wait for Yue Yang to do the deed with Phoenix Fairy Beauty, then, that would be the time for the decisive battle.

But then again.

If even Sky Law was tempted by Yue Yang that bad boy, she would become the same as herself, what would be the point in fighting with her?

Calming down, Luo Hua City Mistress was already discouraged. She felt that she was on the losing end after wrongfully tiring herself out these past 3 days! This Sky Law girl would sooner or later be pushed down, her ways of blocking were truly foolish. Not only was she exhausted, there was also no effect! Only Yue Yang that pervert had truly benefitted.

Thankfully the wake-up call came early, if she had to persevere for ten days to half a month, she would have fallen ill without a doubt.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty was a little surprised at Luo Hua City Mistress' surrender.

She had originally thought Luo Hua that girl would at least push on for more than a week, who knew she would give up after 3 days.

It seems that her opponent was still a smart woman. Phoenix Fairy Beauty never had any hostility to Luo Hua and upon hearing her throw in the towel like a peeved cute little girl, her impression of Luo Hua actually improved. She laughed silently, ridiculing herself her heart that she too had lowered herself to be like Luo Hua.

Seeing Luo Hua City Mistress admit defeat so readily, Phoenix Fairy Beauty's heart fluttered.

Maybe if she spoke to her, her own sore point could be relieved.

Even though she was still young, she was still very experienced!

“Actually I really do not mind, you two can still have him tonight! As for that, I, it is actually my first time, so I don't really know how to do it. So, I am also a little conflicted. Let things take their course, I never thought of vying for it, I just thought it was fun, which was why I was deliberately teasing you two in the day! If you are not happy, I will apologize. “ It was rare for Phoenix Fairy Beauty to express what she really feels. If this were another matter, she would win against countless women. Only this matter, she was truly inexperienced. It is not that she had never seen Yue Yang that boy's body, after all when he was doing it with Luo Hua City Mistress, she had actually sneaked a peek a night. She felt that if it were her, she would definitely exhaust him to the point of dying. But exactly because of this mentality, she would rather Yue Yang come attack her in the night.

“This mentality of yours, I used to be like that too. The first time is indeed a little scary. Your mind will be confused, you really want to give yourself to him, but you are also a little afraid that you will not be good enough, that you will disappoint him. “ Seeing Phoenix Fairy Beauty actually asking for advice in such a roundabout way, Luo Hua City Mistress could not help but pity her.

Poor Sky Law that girl has already attained her title for hundreds of years, yet she has never felt the sweetness of love.

Fortunately, she met Yue Yang early.

Now that she thought of things this way.

In a moment, Luo Hua City Mistress was happy again.

She felt that she was still considered lucky, she did not have to wait for a few hundred years to find the best lover!

“Is the first time very painful?” Phoenix Fairy Beauty wanted to mend their relationship, and at the same time ask for advice since she felt very much lacking in this aspect.

“Yes, it is painful.” Luo Hua City Mistress was even more pleased. She adopted the position of a mentor and began to explain: “The first time is really painful, it is not like you have never seen it, Yue Yang is literally the Dragon among humans! Have you never

touched it? Really? Then has it touched you there before? Isn't it very hot? Not even grazed it? Is he obedient during Body Fusion? That cannot be..... Anyway, let us not discuss this first, let us talk about our own body. You never know until you try, but actually our body is very strong..... At that moment it would be very painful, but you could definitely stand it, why would I lie to you! You are fortunate since I am explaining this to you. You will be prepared mentally, unlike how nobody told me anything back then! No one, I figured it out all on my own slowly, but the first time was very successful. Yes, just be brave! After the first success, things will be much easier and you can be rest assured that he will be very gentle..... Anyway it is like what I have said, it is not as scary as you imagine!”

“Thank you very much!” Hearing Luo Hua City Mistress describe her first time, Phoenix Fairy Beauty had a peace of mind.

“No need, who knows, we might have to fight together in the future! Oh right, Xue Wu Xia and Qian Qian Princess are still unaware, I need to tell them the next time!” Luo Hua City Mistress had truly become addicted to teaching such matters.

That night, Luo Hua City Mistress was not standing at the door waiting for Yue Yang.

When Yue Yang sneaked into her room, he was surprised to find that she had already fallen asleep.

Lightly touching her, she turned around in a daze, her mouth like a fish blowing bubbles, she sleep-talked: “I'm sleepy, I want to rest, I have not had rested well at all these few nights!”

Sick Beauty was around the same, she was not sound asleep, yet still waved Yue Yang away, indicating that she needed rest and would not be serving Yue Yang.

One must know, she has been Luo Hua City Mistress' ally for the last three nights.

In fact, she was more tired than Luo Hua City Mistress, because Luo Hua City Mistress was extremely sensitive and had poor endurance, she was always very quickly defeated. In the end, it was always Sick Beauty who was dedicated to serving her husband.....

Night attack begins!

By the time Yue Yang crept to Phoenix Fairy Beauty's room, she had already gone to bed, however her eyes were still open – she was waiting for him silently. The soft light fell on her devastatingly beautiful and exceptionally alluring jade face, with such an indescribable beauty in front of him, he was simply stifled. Yue Yang stared in awe. He had never seen Phoenix Fairy Beauty in such a serene and peaceful state, in such a tender and soft state..

“Sleep here tonight, but let us not do the deed tonight. Tomorrow, let me take it slowly, I am a little nervous.” Phoenix Fairy Beauty waved her hand, asking Yue Yang to come over. She gently open the quilt, revealing her flawless naked body that was as perfect as white jade, hinting him to lie beside her. Once Yue Yang came in, she turned her body over, rested her head on Yue Yang's arm, and leaned on his chest. On one side she was feeling

the pleasure from his big hands gentle massage, on the other she was gently caressing his body with her jade hands.

From his brow, cheeks, lips to his neck. Then to his shoulders, chest and lower abdomen.

She was gently caressing.

Almost as if she wanted to understand this man who was going to become her husband in the quickest time, she was trying to love him as fast as she could.

Despite that falling in love to the depths of her soul seemed to not be realistic.

At the very least, she will try hard to accept him, open her heart, and allow him to walk into her life. For him to stay there, till forever, eternally.

Yue Yang hugged her body that was shaking in nervousness, a desire to protect spreading in his heart. In this moment, she was no longer Sky Law, no longer a Super Innate, she was just a woman, a timid woman who still desired love.

If he takes her now, she would most likely not refuse.

However, when Yue Yang sees the woman who was shaking because of her nervousness, what filled his heart was not desire, but rather love and affection..... What she needed most was his

care. She had an immense need for gentle comforting rather than reckless possession. Yue Yang kissed her forehead, kissed her brow, and softly kissed her cheeks. He used his hands to stroke her back that was as smooth as jade, soothing her soul, calming her down amidst the tension.

“It is in fact not that scary, liking someone and doing happy things with your lover, are all like this. “ Yue Yang gently kissed her lips that were like petals, softly, allowing her to feel the joy of kissing.

When her lips were happy and desiring, they opened slightly. Yue Yang then kissed her properly.

To let her try the wonders of kissing.

As a result, Phoenix Fairy Beauty who had tasted the sweetness learned by herself. Kissing him repeatedly, learning faster and faster, the more they kiss, the more she was unwilling to part. Only until their lips were slightly sore, did she reluctantly let go.

Unconsciously, she realised she was no longer nervous.

Her legs, without her being aware, were already wrapped around his thigh. She felt the heat from his body, especially the sensitive and private area. Even though there was no direct contact, there was already a special feeling, resulting in a foreign yet familiar desire. This desire was extremely similar to the pleasure she felt when she accidentally brushed against him during Body Fusion, but much more intense.

To be more accurate, it was the desire to be possessed by him.

With her breath quickened slightly, Phoenix Fairy Beauty looked at Yue Yang, embarrassed.

She not only did not feel nervousness, there was a yearning. However she was still embarrassed because she had just said that she did not want to do the deed tonight.

“Bad things are so scary!” Her little hands were unexpectedly bold. Her intention was not as such, she merely wanted to test the waters, but she was unwilling to let go. Since she was ashamed to the point of not daring to show her face, the only thing left to do was to act coquettishly.

The current her, other than being slightly shocked by how majestic it was, she was not afraid at all.

In fact, she felt a little joy.

She felt that the man she had chosen, was indeed the most powerful man, regardless of strength or body, he was the cream of the crop among all!

“Don’t you like them, do you want to kiss them?” Phoenix Fairy Beauty remembered that night when she peeked, she saw the way he kissed Luo Hua’s chest. It seemed that he liked to play tricks that way. With excitement, she gently raised her body, pulling his

big hands over to tightly press on her full and incomparably grand breasts. She swallowed her nervousness and softly nibbled on his ear lobes: “Last night, I saw the way you kissed Luo Hua, kiss me like that too.....”

Chapter 451 – The Legendary “Woman On Top”?

Deep into the night.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty woke up from her dream. She noticed something different below her body. In a daze, she moved her hand downwards and then realized that she was lying on Yue Yang's body.

Her sleepiness receded like a tide and her mind became completely awake.

She opened her eyes and looked at her sleeping lover, looked at his handsome face, that was softly illuminated by the light. She couldn't help but sigh. When she looked at him like this, this brat was truly handsome. Without his mischievous smile during day time, he was quietly sleeping. His handsome face and perfect body emitted an indescribable charm. His current appearance could probably be that of the legendary sleeping gods.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty had always thought that a man's sleeping posture would never look good. However, tonight, her solid thought had finally been overturned.

Looking at him during the day and looking at him while sleeping carried two completely different types of charm.

During day time, he was very mischievous and energetic.

His smile carried a hint of naughtiness. No matter how you look at him all you could see was a bad boy, but you could never get angry at him. When he looks at his enemies, his eyes would always be filled with ridicule. When he looks at his relatives, he would also be like a fox and never reveal his true side. However, when it comes to women, he was completely tyrannic, as if he could peer through their hearts, even when he looks at their clothes, he would stare as if he must see through them. He was this kind of aggressive villain. If others provoked him, the results would be ugly.

However, while sleeping, he was completely different.

He was extremely peaceful.

He was completely different from Sky Fury who could sleep anytime and anywhere with a snore that could shake the heavens.

Yue Yang was different. He could not easily fall asleep unless it was at a safe place. Moreover, while he was sleeping, he was abnormally peaceful. If others saw this, they would have thought that the evil and perverted daytime Yue Yang was an illusion!

This kind of deep sleep carried a peculiar kind of loneliness.

He would always want to embrace someone to fall asleep. It was as if he would be left behind by everyone if he did not do this.

Although he was very rampant and tyrannical during the day, Phoenix Fairy Beauty was very certain that he was a very scared loner, with a very low sense of security. Moreover, he was a boy who needed to be comforted.

Nobody knows his inner most secret.

His cover up during the day was very thorough and no one could sense it. He would also never show it until he peacefully falls asleep at night. Only then will he show his weakness. It's no wonder that he depended on Fourth Mother very much. This was because Fourth Mother emitted a motherly aura, which was the spiritual comfort that he needed the most. It's also no wonder that the Sickly Beauty and the others would do whatever it takes to at least leave one person behind to accompany him.

In this world, only his woman could know his true weakness, which is also them and the comfort that they gave him, making him lonely no more!

“Bad boy. In the future, I will also take care of you. I think that I could never replace Fourth Mother, but I can become your little mother. I will love you dearly forever!” Phoenix Fairy Beauty tenderly and lovingly kissed Yue Yang on the forehead and then lightly kissed his lips.

Afterwards, she looked down perfectly satisfied and continued to lie on his chest as their previous memories echoed in her heart.

From the beginning, when they met, and then their countless life

and death battles. There was also the [Body Fusion] training and returning to her foundations when she leveled up. She also remembered saying goodbye to the Charm Demon Palace and the scenes from the test of the Cards of Fate, all of them flashed in her mind. The most recent was the warring atmosphere between her and Luo Hua City Mistress. At night, she had peeked at them making love and saw Luo Hua on his body as if she was riding a horse rocking and moaning. There was also daytime's small affair with him. Thinking about this, she felt it was extremely sweet.

The thing that made the Phoenix Fairy blush the most was his touch.

She was nervous at the start and then she relaxed.

After that her body thirsted uncontrollably as she passively and bashfully accepted Yue Yang's kiss. She then bravely placed his hands on her chest, letting him play with her big treasures. Afterwards, she had excitedly placed her flower bud in his mouth and letting him suck on it, letting him feel her gentleness, like a mother feeding her baby.

When he moved his evil hands towards her small flower garden to play tricks, her entire body trembled.

She had never imagined that such a thing could make her this happy. His evil hands simply made her hover between life and death!

He was also very brazen and actually dared to bend down and kiss

her place...It was the first time she had felt that kind of soaring feeling of happiness. This kind of feeling was hard to forget and this was something he gave her.

After tonight, she finally understood.

Doing those kind of things was not scary at all, but instead extremely pleasurable.

It's no wonder that Luo Hua would moan happily like that. Let alone Luo Hua, she also couldn't endure moaning!

She clearly knew that everyone would hear it, but she could not endure it because it was just too pleasurable!

Phoenix Fairy Beauty had recalled the previous act and her face blushed crimson red and her body gradually heated up.

Originally she wanted to give it to him, but she was afraid that the fierce reaction would wake up Yue Bing and the others. Her originally tired body quickly filled with energy. Her tiredness disappeared without a trace and a weird feeling of wanting to exercise appeared. Only the final step remained and she had not given it to him. He had already kissed her entire body, even her most personal flower garden had already been marked by his kiss. Only the final step remained for him to become the true owner.

Based on Wu Hen and Luo Hua's situations, she had deduced that making love with him had extraordinary benefits and could even

allow them to level up.

The first time Luo Hua made love with him she had leveled up to Innate Rank. If it was her, maybe she could surpass Innate Rank 10 and reach Supreme Innate Rank 1.

“Bad boy, how many secrets are you actually hiding!” Phoenix Fairy Beauty kissed her lover. The more she looked at him the more she wanted to kiss him. This kind of bastard attracts other people’s affection and inevitable have lots of girls surround him! It seems that in the future, she must also be like Luo Hua and entice him at night and serve him until he could not find the chance to run away and go womanize anymore

Her small hands continued downwards and discovered that even though he was deep asleep his evil thing was still as high-spirited as a gun.

Maybe this bad boy was dreaming of those kind of things...

Phoenix Fairy Beauty felt that her body was burning. On one hand she endured her shame and on the other endured her thirst. She seemed to have lost control over her body as her small hands grabbed onto his evil thing reluctant to let go.

He was very gentle and afraid that he would hurt her, so he did not demand it.

However, it was certain that he truly wanted it, but he cherished

her body so he endured.

Since it was like this, then she should just be a bit more active like he said and simply push him down! He would definitely be happy!

Phoenix Fairy Beauty's mind suddenly flashed a bold idea that even surprised herself... Could it be that she received influence from her Guardian Beast, Charm Demon Queen? However, she should not be able to influence her thoughts.

The plan of pushing down was very strong, but needed specific work. Phoenix Fairy Beauty did not have the confidence to complete it.

She gradually removed the quilt and looked for a long while.

She kept feeling that there was a slight difficulty.

When she saw Luo Hua sit on top of his body, she felt that it was not that hard. First thing to do was kiss him and then sit on him like riding a horse. She planned to try it, maybe she could also do it! Phoenix Fairy Beauty strengthened her resolve. If Luo Hua could do it, why couldn't her? Moreover, she had already observed and studied the process. The only problem was that she was not familiar with the actual thing, this was not the same as a test in school after all, being able to do it smoothly should be enough.

Previously, Luo Hua also seemed to suck on it for a while, Wu

Hen also serviced him like that. Maybe it needed to be moist!

Phoenix Fairy Beauty steeled herself and mimicked Luo Hua's position. After she tried it for a few times, she discovered that it was quite hard. Her lips and tongue felt very awkward. She never imagined that she would become so clumsy and her movements were completely stiff. Moreover, Yue Yang this villain was also quite big...

"Ah, what are you doing?" Yue Yang was awoken by Phoenix Fairy Beauty's clumsy movement.

"Nothing!" Phoenix Fairy Beauty was ashamed and unable to show her face as she hid under the quilt.

Yue Yang burst into laughter. After a long while, she finally dug out of the quilt but did not dare look at him: "I only wanted to try it. It seems that I am truly inferior to Luo Hua!"

Yue Yang endured laughing: "Don't mind it. At the start Luo Hua was much clumsier than you!"

Phoenix Fairy Beauty buried herself in his chest. In an extremely small voice, she spoke the bravest words in her entire lifetime: "The previous agreement has been dissolved, I, I want to ... with you..."

Yue Yang stared blankly. Wow, how could this girl get over the idea?

She was not afraid of pain?

Extremely embarrassed, Phoenix Fairy Beauty lightly bit Yue Yang's chest and used her white fists to lightly hit his shoulders: "This place is no good. Let's go to my Grimoire World. Only two of us will be there, okay?"

The sweet and charming beauty with alluring red lips. Her desire carried kindness, how could he not be happy?

How could Yue Yang let down a beauty's good intentions. He carried Phoenix Fairy Beauty's snow white and soft body. Phoenix Fairy Beauty's Guardian Beast Charm Demon received them as they entered Phoenix Fairy Beauty's Grimoire World. Regarding this space that looked like the Charm Demon Palace, Yue Yang did not look around too much as he also did not have the time to distract himself. He wholeheartedly kissed the beauty in front of him.

Their love lingered continuously as flames of passion burned.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty laid on the bed. Her hands shyly covered her own eyes.

She actually wanted to look, but she was truly too embarrassed to look at it. Moreover, she also did not know what to do.

Yue Yang continued to kiss downwards. When he reached her

scarlet flower buds, he lightly sucked on them causing Phoenix Fairy Beauty to moan. She could not help but tightly hug his head, making him clearly feel how fine her most beautiful, most bountiful treasures are.

This was the legendary ‘Suffocation of Happiness’!

Yue Yang was so excited that he almost smiled from ear to ear. Compared to Luo Hua City Mistress’ and Sickly Beauty’s, Phoenix Fairy Beauty’s big treasures were much more impressive!

The Suffocation of Happiness that he dreamed of actually appeared, how could he regret his life?

The thing that attracted Yue yang the most was that the Charm Demon Queen actually courageously helped her owner and waited upon him with her. The Charm Demon Queen really put out energy and sucked below him. Although it was the first time she was doing it, her skill was undoubtedly better than her master by a lot. This was because she was born as a Charm Demon, that had this kind of innate ability. She did not need to learn it nor did she need to practice it. Once the opportunity appeared, she would reveal her innate instinct that surpassed all.

When the Charm Demon Queen received pleasure, it will naturally be passed onto her linked owner, Phoenix Fairy Beauty.

This kind of double pleasure quickly made Phoenix Fairy Beauty reach her limits.

“No, I am so lonely...” Phoenix Fairy beauty tightly embraced her lover and tremble from the passion. The Charm Demon Queen also continued to convey her pleasure and made her climax in extreme bliss for a long time. She was not able to immediately recover.

Yue Yang took this great opportunity to use [Double Body Fusion].

Phoenix Fairy Beauty was now an Innate Rank 10.

Could she break through Heaven Rank and become second or third female Supreme Innate?

Chapter 452 – Level Up, The Birth Of A New Female Supreme Innate!

Yue Yang truly hoped that he could help Phoenix Fairy Beauty to level up. She had the natural talent to do it but it was just that her state of mind wasn't there yet.

Now was the best opportunity for her to level up.

Countless runes flashed brilliantly.

The runes formed various images.

The images appeared on their bodies and the more Phoenix Fairy Beauty lost herself in happiness, the more diverse and wonderful the images were.

The purest Innate Qi flowed endlessly from Yue Yang's mouth into Phoenix Fairy Beauty's mouth and flowed through her body.

Yue Yang's right hand burned with Nirvana Flame, which he pressed gently on Phoenix Fairy Beauty's blood channel acupoint on her back.

Refining the body and levelling up happened together!

With Phoenix Fairy Beauty's current power, it wasn't enough to make a breakthrough into the Supreme Realm.

But Yue Yang had a plan.

Each time Phoenix Fairy Beauty's energy was exhausted, Yue Yang would drip God's Dew and even God's Water into her mouth to allow her body to recover to its best condition. He would then use Nirvana Flame and Innate Qi to refine her body so that she could have a breakthrough in her cultivation and be reborn. The channels in her body were already opened but what Yue Yang wanted wasn't just channels but also Phoenix Fairy Beauty's entire body to be in the purest state of cultivation. If her body reached its most perfect condition and further remodelled with God's Water and Nirvana Flames, she would be able to reach the legendary indestructible 'Divine Body'.

This was Yue Yang's true intention.

Of course, what mattered most was that they cultivated [Body Fusion] at the same time.

That was the key needed to achieve a breakthrough. Phoenix Fairy Beauty needed to refine her body to its limits and complemented it with her breakthrough to a Supreme Innate. Just as Phoenix Fairy Beauty was about to breakthrough, Charm Demon Queen immediately melded into her body and used all her strength to help her master in her breakthrough. As a strengthening type Guardian Beast, the Charm Demon Queen's help could be said to be the greatest assistance to Phoenix Fairy Beauty growth.

The union of Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty was the

beginning of the true [Body Fusion] done by lovers.

It was also the first step of Phoenix Fairy Beauty in breaking through to Heaven Rank.

The powerful Dragon Spear rose up in delight.

When it's owner reached the outside of the mysterious garden, it mightily announced the new master of the land and proceeded to conquer it with an overbearing attitude. When it's owner rode forward to claim the new territory, there was nothing in the world which could stop it.

Also, the delicate dewy petals did not remain obstinately guarding the door.

It welcomed its new master with passion.

There was no resistance nor rejection whatsoever even if they were too delicate to withstand everything.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty's delicate cry proved her chastity. She had given everything to the love of her life, the new conqueror.

The flower bloomed beautifully.

It was the best gift to her lover, representing purity and devotedness.

“I’m not hurt, I’m not!” Phoenix Fairy Beauty shuddered from the pain as a teardrop fell on her cheeks silently. Still, she strongly embraced Yue Yang, hinting him to continue. She didn’t want him to stop because of her delicateness.

“Love you, forever!” Yue Yang kissed the teardrop, trying to soothe her pain with his gentle kiss.

They carried on, until they were one.

The most important union ceremony of couple’s [Body Fusion] was successfully completed.

Innate Qi, Nirvana Flame, God’s Dew and God’s Water had completely remodelled Phoenix Fairy Beauty’s perfect body, making her infinitely closer to reaching the legendary indestructible ‘Divine Body’. At the same time [Body Fusion] had also reached extremity as the runic circle had assembled to its best combination. The Phoenix Fairy Beauty’s Summoning Grimoire floated out and shone brightly. The sky lit up with brilliant colors and a new fragrance filled the air.

A large pillar of light from levelling up, shot up into the sky.

Originally, Phoenix Fairy Beauty’s light pillar when she became a normal Innate did not even reach 200 meters.

Now, after much help from Yue Yang, Phoenix Fairy Beauty

achieved a new breakthrough. Phoenix Fairy Beauty, originally an Innate Level 10, had taken a large step, entering the Supreme Innate Realm that only Supremes can enter! This was also the so called Heaven Rank by Rankers of the Heaven Realm! The light pillar that was originally less than 200 meters had broken through to more than 300 meters. Countless colorful lights came out from the grimoire and slowly enveloped Phoenix Fairy Beauty's body. As for her Guardian Beast, Charm Demon Queen, she was also quickly upgrading as she basked in the break through light. It was not an upgrade in level but a fundamental change. The wings and tail behind Phoenix Fairy Beauty as well as the two cute horns on her head were continuously changing.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty successfully leveled-up into a female supreme, Level 1 Supreme Innate, which was the same as Heaven Rank Level 1.

Charm Demon Queen was still evolving.

To achieve fundamental change, one had to go through a process.

What can be confirmed was that there will be unlimited possibilities for Charm Demon Queen in the future as she continues to upgrade along with Phoenix Fairy Beauty. Instead of simply leveling up to be a Divine Beast, someday, she may even level up to become the first Charm Demon Goddess in the world.....

When Phoenix Fairy Beauty had finished leveling up, Yue Yang, who had not leveled up in a long time, was rewarded by Phoenix Fairy Beauty's powers and his energy soared, charging towards a

higher realm. His Summoning Grimoire appeared automatically and a gold light pillar shot into the sky. Yue Yang's whole body was instantly bathed in the golden level up light.

The Grimoire flipped open to the first page where his rank was displayed. From his original Innate Level 3, he leveled up to Level 4.

Considering that Yue Yang had skills equaled to a Level 6 Innate when he was a Level 1 Innate.

Yue Yang at Innate Rank 4, would have skills equal to a Level 9 Innate.

After the breakthrough, Yue Yang had enough confidence and skills to deal a devastating attack to Super Innates like Shun Tian or Black Prince. If he ever met them, he could even kill them under special circumstances.

Yue Yang did not plan to level up to a Level 4 Innate when he helped Phoenix Fairy Beauty to level up.

However, it was not a bad thing.

To Yue Yang, the returned favor from Phoenix Fairy Beauty was a hint.

Before this, Yue Yang must have also received similar help from Sickly Beauty and Luo Hua City Mistress. It must have been less

intense than what he received from Phoenix Fairy Beauty thus he hadn't felt it at that time. If this were true, wouldn't Yue Yang benefit much more when he pushes down Yi Nan, Princess Qian Qian and Xue Wu Xia?

Most importantly, Yue Yang found out that his Devour Inherent Skill was able to benefit the most from such pure energies.

Maybe on the day when he could control the Devour Inherent Skill, it would be the day that he would be able to defeat formidable opponents like the super powerful Scarlet Emperor as well as Xu Kong and Jiu Xiao of the Three Great Leaders of Heaven Realm!

Even though Yue Yang had levelled up very slowly previously, it was not because of his lack of talents. It was because Yue Yang had received guidance from Heavenly Sword Goddess that he should secure his foundations in the Innate Rank and complete all the requirements of an Innate Ranker. If Yue Yang had not taken the initiative to level down and repeat his cultivation many times, if he had followed how normal Innates breakthrough, he would have already been a Level 9 Innate.

Since the skills were the same, Yue Yang would obviously choose to be a Level 4 Innate as compared to other Level 9 Innates. It was because it meant that Yue Yang had greater opportunities to breakthrough and level up, while a Level 9 Innate would have already missed out on the 5 levels in between.

The wonderful night passed by.

Yue Yang felt an itch on his nose while dreaming and opened his eyes, only to find that it was Phoenix Fairy Beauty playfully brushing her hair over his face.

“Pervert. You even play dirty when you’re asleep!” Phoenix Fairy Beauty had woken up to Yue Yang rubbing his hands on her chest. Getting up immediately, she disturbed him with her hair and then burst out laughing when she saw confusion on his face upon waking up.

Already charming enough when she was not laughing, her chest shook as she laughed.

What a sight to behold.

Unsurpassable!

Yue Yang’s blood boiled at the sight of Phoenix Fairy Beauty’s charming laughter and her alluring bosom.

Yue Yang wanted to subdue her again and was about to reach out to push her down.

Suddenly, Phoenix Fairy Beauty looked at him coquettishly and brought her breast to his mouth. “Last night was not counted. Now, I want to take control of you little brat. I must achieve what Luo Hua couldn’t do! Are you ready? Let mummy love you! ”

Charm Demon Queen appeared out of nowhere, and used her mouth to serve him with all her might.

As expected from the powerful race that easily sucked men dry. Luckily, Yue Yang had his Yang ability to protect himself. If it were someone else, they would not have been her match and would be sucked dry by her...

Since Phoenix Fairy Beauty had declared war, there was no reason for Yue Yang to decline...

When Phoenix Fairy Beauty appeared gracefully, clutching Yue Yang's arm, in front of everyone, they realised her temperament had changed. There was a new imposing aura which they found hard to look at and her skin had become even whiter and more perfect, with a unique radiance. She looked like a goddess. Fourth Mother was the happiest. She even corrected Yue Bing to call Phoenix Fairy Beauty sister-in-law from now on instead of sister.

Yue Bing was confused, why had Phoenix Fairy Beauty turned into her sister-in-law overnight?

They were after all not married.

After a while, Yue Bing figured it out and her face reddened. She looked at Yue Yang and at Phoenix Fairy Beauty then nodded her head surreptitiously.

Phoenix Fairy Beauty was elated. She got Charm Demon Queen to

gift everyone with precious treasures, stones and quality jewelry. Everyone, even the maids waiting on Fourth Mother in the Tian Luo Palace, received the gifts. As for Fourth Mother, Yue Bing and Yue Shuang, they obviously received the best. Luo Hua Mistress and Sickly Beauty too, received precious gifts. To Phoenix Fairy Beauty, these material goods were no longer important. After being taken by Yue Yang and also leveling up, she realised that what was most important was that she had found someone to love and protect her in life.

“Charm Demon Queen has evolved into a Divine Beast? You did it to her too? You pervert!” Luo Hua City Mistress found the situation fishy and questioned Yue Yang. Yue Yang maintained his composure to the end as she fumed. “You big pervert, that was a Beast..... Even if she had evolved to attain a human form, isn’t it too...? Okay, I will not believe your explanation about unifying the bodies. It must have been your preposterous request, further considering that she was the Charm Demon Queen... Seriously, how could Sky Law do this to me, buy 1 get 1 for free is so unfair. Bastard, the two of them would be against one of me, I would be defeated like this!”

“Don’t think too much, I really did not mean for it to happen like this... For her to become a Divine Beast was not my idea. After she strengthened her body with Phoenix Fairy Beauty, she just levelled up to be a Divine Beast.” Yue Yang never had any ideas on Charm Demon Queen. He simply did not expect her to be so awesome, to help Phoenix Fairy Beauty and to perform so well with her astonishing talents!”

“She was originally a Platinum-ranked Level 10 Holy Beast so it was no surprise for her to have transformed into a Divine Beast!”

Sickly Beauty did not find anything wrong.

“Why don’t I have a Holy Beast...” Luo Hua Mistress felt that Phoenix Fairy Beauty had too much of an advantage over herself. Sky Law’s breasts were already such a threat and she also had a Charm Demon Queen who was superb at serving people, Luo Hua Mistress was just so far behind.

“Luo Hua don’t be discouraged, you too, have an advantage they don’t!” Before Yue Yang could finish, Luo Hua Mistress slapped him lightly: “Don’t you dare say it, it must be our secret forever!”

Three more blissful days passed by.

There was no move from the Black Hell King. He was probably still hammering ferociously on the golden shield of the Mysterious Palace.

On the other hand, Zi Jin Kingdom was gradually gathering an army at their borders. Since there were many logistical issues, Elder Yue Hai reckoned that the army would only be ready to attack after at least a month. There was still time. Moreover, when Zi Jin Kingdom had declared war, they had sent a special envoy to propose a “Three way Battle”.

The first was to leave the normal soldiers out, to have a battle of Innates.

Innates from both sides could only fight with others of their

level. They were prohibited from interfering with the battle between normal soldiers otherwise, there would be a massacre of civilians as revenge.

The second was the battle for Warriors ranking from Level Six Elders to Lesser Innates. They too, were prohibited from fighting with normal warriors.

The third was the attack by normal soldiers. This, was the real war. The number of casualties depended on the quality of the soldiers as well as the strategic decision and tactics made by their marshals and generals. They could use Beasts, Puppets, poison, fires, floods and stones as means to attack but just not Innates. The appearance of an Innate would have caused great casualty to the soldiers and civilians, they could even destroy the entire army. Conquering a country does not necessarily mean to destroy it.

The backup for the normal soldiers were composed of millions or even more farmers.

Both Jun Wu You and Elder Yue Hai had agreed to these three conditions presented by the Zi Jin Kingdom. There was no reason for a massacre since the people of Zi Jin Kingdom were only following orders and had done no wrong.

As for Innates to not be involved with the battle of normal soldiers, it would only prove to be a problem with Yue Yang. Chances were that Yue Yang would be shameless enough to disregard his status and fight in all battles. The reason Zi Jin Kingdom even mentioned such a condition was obviously because of Yue Yang, since other Innates would never do such acts. Of

course, this restriction benefited the Black Hell Army in another way.

It was because their Innate Rankers were much more powerful.

The Black Prince aside, just any one of their 5 Leaders would be able to suppress the Heavenly Imperial Guardians. On top of that, they even had help from Western Lion Pagoda, Shun Tian as well as Black Prince.

Still, Zi Jin Kingdom and the Black Hell King never expected Yue Yang to form an alliance with the Great Demon King Baruth, and to become a member of the Demonic Palace. What was even more unexpected was that Yue Yang had successfully helped Phoenix Fairy Beauty aka Sky Law, to level up into a new female Supreme. Phoenix Fairy Beauty would be the third female Ranker to reach the Supreme Rank after Zhi Zun and Night Empress.

With her by his side, Yue Yang was practically two times stronger.

Black Hell King?

Yue Yang and Phoenix Fairy Beauty by themselves, had the confidence to win in their fight against Black Hell King. With extra help from Night Empress, how could Black Hell King be cocky at all?

What worried Yue Yang was no longer Black Hell King.

But Scarlet Emperor.

If Scarlet Emperor had regained his full strength, it would be really difficult to handle!

Another day passed. Just as Yue Yang was preparing to bring Yue Bing to train at the Five Elements Palace A top-secret letter then suddenly arrived for him from the Thief Guild. There was one line on it: The time is near, hurry to Level 7, Tong Tian Tower, Plaza, Jiang Ying!

Finally, the Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying had sent a top-secret letter.

Truthfully, Yue Yang was waiting these few days. He knew that the Ancient Mother Earth Potion was near completion so he was only waiting for a letter from the Hornless Dragon.

Chapter 453 – Fire Island, Hai Yingwu

Tong Tian Tower, the Seventh Floor, Plaza.

Jiang Ying stood at a corner of the plaza, still clad in the valuable black dragon armor. Her fluttering violet hair coupled with her expressive eyes was enough to make the world seem eclipsed. If one were to not mention her exceptionally alluring little face, just her sexy demonic body wrapped under that black leather, those wonderful curves shaped by her full chest and butt under the contrast of her soft arms and slender legs were hot enough to induce a nosebleed. There was no word other than perfect that could be used to describe this Hornless Dragon who possessed both looks and temperament.

Who could have imagined that she was the same Spider Empress in Spider Valley who killed without batting an eye?

Anyone who saw her would have thought she was some the princess of some king.

Two expressionless female guards stood behind silently, alert of the surroundings.

If an ordinary person saw her two female guards, they would have thought that they were ordinary Level 6 Elders. In reality, their true identity were Spider Queens of ranking as high as Platinum Level 7 who had turned into human form successfully. Even though they were lacking a little in intelligence, they could be said to only be a step away from the level of Divine Beast.

Usually, the Spider Empress that the mercenaries saw in Spider Valley was most likely one of these two and not Jiang Ying.

To Jiang Ying who had attained the power of a Level 7 Innate, the normal mercenaries meant nothing to her. Her greatest wish was not to level up but to turn into a Divine Beast!

“Come here, why are you still dressed like that?” Seeing the way Yue Yang was dressed, Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying could not help but be stunned. Yue Yang had made a pair of sunglasses for himself using Dragon Jade and pasted a moustache above his mouth. At a quick glance, it really was difficult to recognise that he was Yue Yang. In addition to hiding his presence, Yue Yang shed his usual Wyvern Armor for the embroidered gown usually worn by the royalty of Tian Luo. Rather than a warrior, he looked more like a merchant.

Other than his close acquaintances, no one would be able to recognise him as Yue Yang.

Tong Tian Tower was full of spies under Black Hell Army, Yue Yang’s disguise was to reduce his problems.

This was because once someone recognised him to be the Yue Clan’s third young master, even if Black Hell Army made the decision not to kill, they would still be suspicious of his actions and trail him. Yue Yang would naturally avoid increasing his troubles like this.

“Fine, anyway we are disguised as wealthy merchants on our way to attend the annual auction for deep sea treasures. The Fire Island is the territory of the Ocean Emperor, we must not attract his attention.” Jiang Ying’s pale green eyes shined and immediately devised a plan. Yue Yang on the other hand was completely confused, why were they going to Fire Island when they are looking for Mother Earth Potion?

Yue Yang had heard of the Ocean Emperor.

He was among the top 10 strongest within the first nine floors of Tong Tian Tower, and could be ranked among the top 5 Supreme Rankers.

If the human Zhi Zun was the unsurpassable top, then those ranked behind would not differ too much from each other, except for ‘Dragon King’ ranked second who might be considered slightly superior. After all he was the emperor of the Eastern Demon Clan that other clans were incomparable to, even the most solid Demon Abyss would not dare to boast of defeating the Eastern Demon Clan. If it were not for the infighting of Eastern Demon Clan that caused the clan to often be torn apart and not unite as one, they would definitely be the strongest clan of Tong Tian Tower if they were as disciplined as Demon Abyss or as united as the Elves.

There was no dispute about Dragon Emperor being ranked second.

But the third rank was another story.

The three emperors ranked behind are [‘Sky Emperor’](#), [‘Ocean Emperor’](#) and [‘Emperor of the Underworld’](#). They refused to give in to each other and even though they have not formally fought hand to hand, their power and influence was on par with each other.

(Last: Zeus, Poseidon and Hades)

Ocean Emperor was called Guan Lan, of the Deep Sea Clan.

He owned limitless oceans on the seventh, eighth and ninth floors of Tong Tian Tower, essentially having conquered almost all of the seabed.

If this was a number game, he owned even more troops than the Great Demon King Baruth. The number of shrimp soldiers and crab generals are in the billions, so in terms of naval warfare and water battles, he was invincible. His only drawback was that he could only develop his forces in the sea and on islands. If it were official wars on the land, Ocean Emperor’s men were unable to challenge Dragon Emperor, Sky Emperor nor Emperor of the Underworld’s clans. Ocean Emperor could be described as the most depressed among the five Emperors. Even though he was obviously extremely strong, he was unable to display it.

Fire Island, one of Ocean Emperor’s many territories, its existence was just like a grain of sand on a beach.

Could it be that Mother Earth Potion was on Fire Island?

When Jiang Ying saw the doubt in Yue Yang’s eyes, she waved

her hands, whispering into Yue Yang's ears: "No, we are just passing by Fire Island. The place we are really going is the Deep Sea Abyss. In Deep Sea Abyss, there's an ancient teleportation circle that will bring us to the only entrance of the Graveyard of the Sea. Passing through the ancient teleportation circle, there are five underwater whirlpools. One of them can send us to the Crystal Canyon on the seabed. The Mother Earth Potion will be born in the Crystal Canyon. We still have 3 days, however, we need to pass the first hurdle which is Fire Island and find a chance to slip into the Deep Sea Abyss. Deep Sea Abyss has always been a restricted area defined by Ocean Emperor, the teleportation circle that was supposed to bring us there was sealed so it will be impossible for us to enter. The first step to our objective is to get to Fire Island. "

"It's this troublesome?" Yue Yang was sweating.

It seemed that the Mother Earth Potion was not easy to obtain. Fortunately, no one else knew about it, otherwise it would be even more difficult.

Most annoying was that the ocean was Ocean Emperor's empire.

Fortunately, this was the seventh floor of the Tong Tian Tower. They would be finished if this was the ninth floor as Ocean Emperor would definitely be suspicious. Ocean Emperor would most likely not come to Fire Island on the Seventh Floor of Tong Tian Tower, so it was still barely safe.

Jiang Ying rolled her eyes at Yue Yang playfully: "Idiot, if it was not hidden, we would long have been discovered. If I could simply walk over there and obtain it, why would I be working with you.

Let alone the Deep Sea Beasts of the Deep Sea Abyss or the scary monsters of the Graveyard of the Sea, just the hundred Ancient Defenders of the Crystal Canyon would be hard to deal with. Each of them are Platinum Level 10 and share the same lifeline, and can even repair their damaged bodies by absorbing energy from the crystals. In Crystal Canyon, they are simply unkillable.

Yue Yang was even more nervous: “Girl, you should have told me earlier how difficult this mission was, I would have brought some helpers!”

“It doesn’t matter how many helpers, at most only five people can enter the Canyon, including Beasts.” Once Jiang Ying said that, Yue Yang wanted to faint.

“Fine, for Mother Earth Potion, I will go all out.” Yue Yang felt that if it was easy to obtain, it would be trash.

Would the Fruit of Wisdom grow on a fruit tree on the street?

Impossible!

Similarly, Mother Earth Potion, would not be born on an ordinary mountain top.

Even if Crystal Canyon was a tiger’s den, Yue Yang decided to obtain it no matter how difficult. With Mother Earth Potion, he would most likely be able to reach a new realm and level up again. To the current Yue Yang, time was a little pressing because Scarlet

Emperor was only a year away from recovery and Black Hell King was still not yet defeated, so for him to not quickly level up would be worrying.

Besides, Mother Earth Potion was a chance that only comes once in ten thousand years. If he gave it up, he would be the world's biggest fool!

Ten minutes later, Fire Island,

Once Jiang Ying and Yue Yang teleported, they heard the oriole-like feminine voice welcoming them sweetly: "Welcome to Fire Island, our distinguished guests. If you need a guide, please me know, Hai Yingwu is willing to provide the most sincere yet free service."

A beauty dressed in bikini-like swimwear walked out from her companions and bowed towards Yue Yang and Jiang Ying.

She had a head of charming blond hair, blue eyes as deep as the sea, sexy lips that were plump and moist like two pieces of peach that people could almost not resist taking a bite out of.

That bronze body that had been tanned under the sun, looked particularly healthy.

Full of vitality.

Her full breasts that perked exaggeratedly were covered by two

small scallop shells, and this pair of 'big coconuts' were linked by a fine strand of seaweed that look as if it would break anytime. Yue Yang shifted his gaze down to see that the clothing below was only seaweed in the shape of a leaf, while covering her land of secrets it could not cover its bulging full shape. A vaguely visible curve gave others a particularly strong visual impact, it was extremely tempting.

The woman who called herself Hai Yingwu did not care about Yue Yang's stares at all.

She even arched her back proudly.

She walked ahead, leading the way.

Her round and full buttocks were in full display, the fine as string seagrass between the butt cheeks were enough to boil one's blood at the thought that just a gentle touch with the finger, it would snap..... That deadly temptation, nipped at the heart and itched unbearably.

Other than impotent men, normal people would undoubtedly want to stretch a hand out wickedly.

"Don't be so immature, this is the characteristic of the Fire Island. There might not be much, but it is full of women. Don't go weak at the sight of a single woman, what if you were to go to a Naked Beach where all women were naked?" When Jiang Ying saw the perverted look on Yue Yang's face, she could not help but pinch him secretly. Actually she misunderstood Yue Yang this time, no

matter how perverted he was, he would not be distracted as to pick up a girl in this critical moment. Moreover, right beside him was a Hornless Dragon Lady who was prettier by N times, how could Yue Yang abandon what was right beside him?

In fact, Yue Yang did not like women like Hai Yingwu whose body was like a western horse.

Even though a western horse was had sexy curves and a plump butt, their skin was not delicate enough. Their pores were on the larger side and the texture was not like white jade. While it may look amazing from afar, upon closer look, one would be disappointed.

What Yue Yang liked was still women who looked like they were made from water, and not Westerners who had bigger skeletons and curvy silhouettes.

He was only looking at her pervertedly to better fit the role of a wealthy merchant.

If that fatty toad Jia De were to come, how could he even resist not looking at this Hai Yingwu?

Those who were not tempted would probably those Innates that have a specially strong willpower. If such an unusual guest came, how could the people of Fire Island ignore them? On the contrary, a pervert would give them a peace of mind. They would feel that they were just unimportant perverts. Also, the way Yue Yang looked was mainly to use his Heaven Eyes Divine Vision to observe

her characteristics.

Do not think that this [Hai Yingwu](#) fulfilling the role of a guide was only an ordinary Level six elder. In fact, she was a Lesser Innate who had hidden her combat power.

If you look down on her, you would most likely be eaten in one mouthful.

The [Sea Parrot](#) Clan who lived in the shallow sea, be it Parrot Fish Clan or Nautilus Clan, all of them eat meat.

(Last: Hai Yingwu means Sea Parrot, used former for the name and latter for the clan)

Even though Yue Yang did not know what clan this Hai Yingwu belonged to, Yue Yang could be a hundred percent sure that she was the one in the legends, the “Sea Demon Assassin” personally trained by Ocean Emperor, a beautiful spy specialising in intelligence spying.

Perhaps seeing how Jiang Ying stood out from the masses, she deliberately came forward to be the guide.

“Where do the 4 distinguished guests wish to go? We have the beautiful Volcanic Island bath, not only is the hot spring famous, the volcano mud bath that can whiten the skin is also our specialty; We also have the Ten Mile Silver Beach, to enjoy the seabreeze and surf there is the best sport in life; Of course, how can we forget our coral reefs, the most famous coral reef on Tong Tian Tower’s seventh floor, to dive there is said to be one of the

experience all guests must have; If you wish to gamble, we have a luxurious casino; If you wish to run, we have a nude beach with gold sand and soft breezes; If you wish to rest, we have the most comfortable Starfish Hotel comparable to a King's Palace where our guests can enjoy the treatment of a king." Hai Yingwu's beautiful voice introduced the tourist attractions on Fire Island, while she tried to deduce the identity of Yue Yang and Jiang Ying's group.

"Bring us to Treasure Pavillion, we want to see what is being sold at the auction house." Jiang Ying made a statement, she was now a princess. Yue Yang was now only a housekeeper responsible of the finances.

"Yes, distinguished guests please follow me this way. We have a customized Lobster speedboat, this way please!" Hai Yingwu was very respectful, her voice was very sweet.

When she bowed, she frowned slightly.

As for these four guests, she instinctively knew they were strange. The two female guards were very normal, the guy too, even if he had hidden his ability, at most he was below a Lesser Innate since he could not resist her temptation, he could not be a Supreme Innate. But that girl, she was very powerful, no matter how much she tried to hide it, she still seemed to be an Innate.

A female Innate, who seems to have a special noble status, why must she come to Fire Island at this time?

Was she here for that treasure?

Suspicious!

They rode the waves on the lobster speedboat.

Hai Yingwu introduced the attractions along the way.

While she talked, she secretly observed them. The more she looked, the more confused she was.

After a few minutes, Hai Yingwu suddenly began a new topic: “Recently we found an ancient shipwreck, near the bottom of Deep Sea Abyss. The place has become a paradise for divers. Apparently, someone found an ancient treasure there, but it has not been made public, what the treasure is, was not very clear.”

“I am not very interested in diving, I enjoy soaking in hot springs and tanning in the sun.” Yue Yang looked at Hai Yingwu’s full breasts with perverted eyes.

“Is that so, then you have to try them.” Hai Yingwu faced the sea breeze, letting the sea breeze blow through her blonde hair, and deliberately swayed her body to the slight shaking of the lobster speedboat. Even though she could just stay still, but in order to tempt Yue Yang, she used her ‘Breasts Shaking Tactic’ to bring him to his knees.

“Wow, this wave..... This wave is really big.” Yue Yang sneaked

a peek at Jiang Ying, as if worrying about her status.

But very quickly, when Jiang Ying was not paying attention, he reached out and grabbed Hai Yingwu's buttocks.

Hai Yingwu acted shy, her acting was at the level of a top actress.

Jiang Ying found it infuriating yet funny. She finally understood, this kid was deliberately doing all this. To think she was still worried that he had become enchanted by her.

They reached the treasure house.

Hai Yingwu's tour was over, yet Yue Yang stuffed a few gold coins into her hands to continue hiring her as a guide. Jiang Ying did not object, she remained bewildered. Just now Hai Yingwu's words was actually a hint, to try to test if she and Yue Yang wanted to go to Deep Sea Abyss. Could it be, the secret of Mother Earth Potion that she thought only she knew had actually reached the ears of Ocean Emperor?

Despite their calm exterior, both Jiang Ying and Yue Yang were secretly shocked.

They would continue hiring Hai Yingwu, to see if they could make use of her to find out more secrets..... nothing must go wrong when obtaining Mother Earth Potion, even if Ocean Emperor knew this secret, Yue Yang and Jiang Ying must still take it!

Chapter 454 – A Pretense, The Most Believable Swindler

Treasure Pavillion.

All kinds of treasures were being auctioned here, Beast eggs, exotic fruits, gold-level weapons and armor, luxury goods like pearls, rubies, black diamonds, rare items like antiques with the calligraphy of famous people, fur, skin, teeth, claws, and countless female slaves, male slaves, there was everything. There are 4 hours of action daily, 2 hours in the morning and 2 in the afternoon.

The rest of the time was for guests to rest or observe privately.

Not far from Treasure Pavillion was the most luxurious Starfish Hotel, fit for royalty. It was said that that any of the female attendants there was a beauty picked among thousands.

After resting, one could ride on the lobster speedboat to go to a gambling ship to play a few rounds. The bets ranged from one to ten thousand gold coins, and there will always be someone ready to gamble with you on that ship. In reality, half of Fire Island's entire income comes from this huge gambling ship that has never moved.

Yue Yang and Jiang Ying stayed there for half an hour, and participated in the bid of more than ten items.

Other than the Fruits of Wisdom, Yue Yang was interested in nothing.

Many of the items there were rubbish!

He owned an entire dragon corpse, why would he care about a Flying Dragon's tooth, the claw of a Fire Lion or the tail of a Wind Panther? Yue Yang did not lack raw materials now, what he lacked were Holy-ranked and Mythical-ranked equipment!

Jiang Ying was the same, she was not interested in the auctioned items. However, she acted like a princess that liked small animals and she would raise the placard to bid for those useless pet eggs. Hai Yingwu could tell that the two of them were not really interested. The man was obviously a pervert, he kept sneaking peeks at beauties. He was thirstier than prisoners who had been locked up for ten odd years, and would even attack a [sow](#). She had already disregarded this guy's danger, because she felt that the existence of such a man was entirely dispensable. Other than managing the princess' wallet, he was useless.

(Last: sow, literally a female pig)

Originally, Hai Yingwu had even planned to look for two of her sisters to play with this guy to gain some intelligence.

Now it seems, it would really have been a waste if she had actually sent them.

Totally not worth it!

He seemed to know nothing, what else could be in his head other

than women? Pig-headed pervert!

Hai Yingwu evaluated Yue Yang in her heart in this way. However, she not only did not reject Yue Yang's perverted hands that reached over, her face still showed a bright smile..... In reality, she hated him to death!

“Beautiful Princess Ying, today's auction is over. Would you like to go out diving, or to soak in the hot springs?” Hai Yingwu asked, totally disregarding Yue Yang.

She was testing the waters.

If Jiang Ying said she wanted to go diving, she would bring Jiang Ying to Deep Sea Abyss to further test her.

Unfortunately, Jiang Ying, who got Yue Yang's hint, already knew that Hai Yingwu was a beautiful spy and did not fall into her trap. Furthermore, even if she did not know, Jiang Ying would never suggest diving at Deep Sea Abyss, wouldn't that be telling them that she had other intentions for coming here?

“I'm tired, bring me to the Starfish Hotel to rest. Give me a map of the entire island, I will consider where to explore when I am free.” Jiang Ying long had a map, but she said it deliberately to test Hai Yingwu's reaction. Sure enough, something shifted deep in Hai Yingwu's eyes, even though she nodded respectfully on the surface: “Yes, beautiful Princess Ying, as you wish!”

“Her Royal highness, I am not very tired, I wish to go out and enjoy the sea breeze!” Yue Yang suddenly requested of Jiang Ying.

“Go, you do not have to ask me, just show up before me during tomorrow’s auction.” Hai Yingwu caught Jiang Ying’s reaction and expression.

Hai Yingwu fully understood this reaction.

This housekeeper was simply a distraction. The one to look out for was the beautiful Princess Ying.

As for this horny man, he was definitely a target to attract the attention of others. It was precisely because this lecher was so perverted that he would be noticed. Once he attracted the attention of others, this beautiful Princess Ying would carry out what was necessary. She could be sure that this Princess Ying was here for that treasure in Deep Sea Abyss.

To be careful, Hai Yingwu still sent two people to follow Yue Yang, just in case he was out to scout news, or to make contact with someone else.

About two hours later.

The two people who were following Yue Yang came back, their faces painful, as though if Hai Yingwu were to send them to follow Yue Yang again, they would rather commit suicide.

Hai Yingwu was curious and asked: “What exactly happened?”

“We have never met such a pervert in our entire lives, one who would not budge when he sees women. Moreover, he was incredibly reckless, as long as it was a woman, regardless of whether she was married, or what her background was, he would hit on them. He was lucky that we walked behind and hurriedly explained that he was mentally ill, otherwise someone might have already beat him to death. Fortunately, he does not know the way to the nude beach, otherwise, he would have definitely been thrown to feed the sharks! If not, he would have been hung up to dry as human jerky! Really, we sisters have never seen such a lousy man in our lives!” At the mention of Yue Yang, the two looked as if they were ready to chew on Yue Yang’s meat.

“Forget it, he is just a chess piece that other people are using. He does not even know that death was before him!” Hai Yingwu sneered.

“Do we still have to follow him? Really, I would rather have a 400 kg fat man flatten me to death than to clean up his mess behind him, he is a natural troublemaker! To make up for the actions of such a scum, was really unbearable!” One of the female attendants rejected frantically.

“How about we dig a pit and bury him, the more I look at him the more annoyed I get!” The other female attendant suggested.

“No, on the contrary, we not only cannot touch him, we have to let him roam freely to show that we are not wary of Princess Ying and her group. As for getting into trouble, even if we do not care, I

believe Princess Ying knows what kind of person her housekeeper is. Perhaps he is not even her housekeeper and just a temporary hire. He is not powerful at all and maybe only a Level 7 Overlord. At first I thought he might have hidden his ability, but now, it seems that he was only a chess piece Princess Ying found at the last minute. Our real rival is that beautiful Princess Ying. She gives me the feeling that she is very powerful. She is surely an Innate..... Gather all the sisters to be on shift round the clock and monitor her every move. However, make sure that they look like they are working, and not let her realise anything. I have already followed her for too long, to continue would definitely make her suspicious. I can only appear when she hires me.” Hai Yingwu paused, and waved her hand: “You guys report to Shark King, tell him that a person like Princess Ying was here, and describe her looks and appearance to find out who she really is! As for that vulgar man, forget it, ignore this person, in a few days, he will become the food of fishes!”

Just like this, Yue Yang was free to roam.

He whistled as he walked, flirting with any beauty he meets on the streets, picking fights with the ability of a Level 7 Overlord, and fleeing in front of those stronger.

Hai Yingwu continued to receive countless reports of such things. She could only remain speechless.

Fortunately, this kind of person was rare. Fire Island was famous for its beauties and often attracted perverts like this but they all ended up as fish food!

For the time being she will remain patient, if she killed him now, that Princess Ying would notice immediately.

Maybe that Princess Ying originally intended to find a fake housekeeper, between them, it did not look like a master-servant relationship, he was simply a temporary hire. He lacked the natural respect for her. Maybe they are not familiar, but which housekeeper would not attend to the living arrangement of a princess, but rather leave the princess to do it all on her own?

Night fell.

Hai Yingwu heard Princess Ying throw a tantrum, reprimanding the housekeeper: “Look at the time, it’s already after twelve, do you even look like a housekeeper?”

Only to hear the pervert explain with grievance: “Didn’t you say to be back just before tomorrow’s auction? Fine, I was wrong, I will work hard tomorrow..... Fine, I will get out, goodnight princess!”

Have you ever seen a housekeeper like that?

Upon hearing this, Hai Yingwu dismissed the need to investigate their master-servant relationship, they definitely were not.

In other words, there was no need to care about that pervert, he was simply a temporarily hired scum! He was only a distraction!

In less than ten minutes, Hai Yingwu heard news from her sisters that the pervert was on the prowl again, this time creeping out of his room to go downstairs, in the direction of Eternal Morning to go drinking. Hai Yingwu sneered, and waved: "Leave him. You can ignore him from now on and focus on Princess Ying's room, whenever she leaves, report it immediately."

Yue Yang staggered onto the side of the Eternal Morning's luxury ship after an hour of drinking, burping and hiccuping.

While walking, he gulped alcohol.

Along the way, guests dodged such a drunkard.

A crew member looked, and looked again. Seeing that he was the scum that was just mentioned, he ignored him.

There was no one on the deck, when the sea wind blew strongly, Yue Yang staggered and fell.

Perhaps hearing a splash, that crew member came out to see, and realised that the one who fell overboard was that drunk scum, shrugged: "I did not see anything, I did not hear anything, the world is so peaceful!"

After an hour or so.

Yue Yang swam like a fish over numerous underwater cordons, and went past the lookout post guarded by dozens of Fish Tribe

men.

At an unguarded corner, he slowly slipped through, a hundred times more agile than a fish. He swam from Eternal Morning's luxury cruiseship, along the Ten Miles Silver Beach, even past the nude beach, Volcanic Island and the ringed coral reefs, to arrive at the Deep Sea Abyss that was guarded by thousands of patrolling Fish tribe men. For ordinary people, to swim in would be almost impossible, but to Yue Yang who owns the Tidal Pearl and was able to 'breathe underwater', this was not impossible!

Sliding to an unguarded corner of the Deep Sea Abyss, Yue Yang rapidly summoned out his Grimoire and released the Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying, whom he had put into the Grimoire World.

To confuse outsiders, they had deliberately quarreled .

With Yue Yang and Jiang Ying's power, how could they not have known that Hai Yingwu was eavesdropping!

"How do we get there? I have explored the land, but I leave underwater to you. Oh right, are you good at swimming?" Yue Yang suddenly remembered that his Tidal Pearl could only be used to breathe underwater for three times. If this Hornless Dragon was not able to hold her breath long enough to explore, he would have to waste it once.

"Fool, have you ever seen a Hornless Dragon that cannot swim?" Jiang Ying smiled.

Her swimming skills, were better than Yue Yang by more than ten times.

Her movements, were more beautiful by a hundred times.

Jiang Ying this Hornless Dragon's swimming was an art performance that stole the breath of others. She was born to live in the water. Once underwater, she was stronger than on dry land by several times.

Chapter 455 – Want To Touch My Woman? Kill Without Mercy!

Yue Yang tailed the graceful Hornless Dragon and swam for another half an hour.

Occasionally, they had to avoid the deep sea beasts who were hunting for food. To an ordinary warrior, these powerful and huge deep sea monsters were an almost invincible existence.

To Yue Yang and the Hornless Dragon, they were not really a great threat.

The only troublesome matter was having to avoid them, since killing them would mean alarming Ocean Emperor.

Finally, Jiang Ying stopped at a cliff that was miles beneath the ocean surface. Ahead, they found an entrance to a small rock cave, unnoticeable to the extent that it might be mistaken as the home of a deep sea electric eel or even the nest of a deep sea octopus. Hornless Dragon blew out a string of bubbles, and communicated to Yue Yang: “This is the place. There is a big cave inside, and there is an ancient teleportation circle. Let us go in to explore today, if Ocean Emperor has already discovered the secret of Mother Earth Potion, then we do not have to come out. We will hide, and snatch it by force in two days! Let us hope that he has not found it, otherwise it would be troublesome…….”

“Perhaps there is another treasure at Deep Sea Abyss, if it is Mother Earth Potion, Ocean Emperor would be a fool to tell

others.” Yue Yang disagreed with her deduction.

“That makes sense, since Fire Island attracts so many treasure hunters, Ocean Emperor should not be the one to leak the information that there is such a treasure on his territory. Maybe it really is a coincidence that there is another treasure about to be born in the Deep Sea Abyss, or maybe it is Ocean Emperor’s promotional tactic that he is saying deliberately to attract more tourists. However, to us, it was not good that that Sea Parrot was on guard and paying attention to me. Luckily, you thought of such a good plan to sneak me out, otherwise, I would have to sleep up there for two days!” Hornless Dragon communicated while she led the way into the small cave.

At first, the cave was very narrow and deep.

The channel of the cave was a few kilometers long, winding like intestines.

At the end, there was a round cave entrance. It looked as if it had been abandoned by the sea creatures that used to live here.

After carefully searching, Jiang Ying found a crack of the entrance under a huge boulder.

The boulder weighed hundreds of thousands of pounds.

With it blocking the way, there was no way to enter the cave.

Of course, this was only a challenge for ordinary people and not for Innates. Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying and Yue Yang evaluated suitable positions and used short distance teleportation to enter the cave. Only after they entered the cave did they realise that there was another cave within this one. This place was really secretive. Even though they were on Fire Island, in Ocean Emperor's territory, and under the patrol of countless shrimp soldiers and crab generals, this was still a no man's land. They moved ahead another 2 kilometers, and found another large cave. In this cave, there was a stone wall. It was on the stone wall that the ancient teleportation circle was gently shining with splendor.....

This place was the only entrance to the Graveyard of the Sea.

The Graveyard of the Sea was originally a sealed space that was linked to a place in the Tong Tian Tower called the Aquamarine Palace.

As a result of a large-scale naval warfare in the ancient times, at least a hundred Supreme Innates and hundreds of thousands of ships were buried here. This entire space collapsed because of that war, the island and all the buildings sank to the bottom of the sea. All life ceased, and with it, the link to Tong Tian Tower.

That was why, this place is called 'Graveyard of the Sea' in historical records!

No one knew, that Deep Sea Abyss at Fire Island had retained an ancient teleportation circle that linked to the Graveyard of the Sea.

“God, there really is a graveyard here!” Once sent in, Jiang Ying realised that the sky was dark. Without any waves, not even a ripple, the vast sea seemed like a pool of stagnant water. There were no islands nor the existence of man-made constructions. All they could see were a few huge yet broken ships, sticking out from the surface of the sea, destroyed. This was a reminder of the grave circumstances of the war in those years.

There was no living creature as far as their eyes could see.

The lifeless atmosphere was terrifying.

“We have to be careful, my grandfather mentioned that this is not only a graveyard, it is also a slaughterhouse. During the war, some of strongest beasts did not die during the spacial collapse. They took refuge beneath the ocean and in the end they turned into monsters. When my grandfather came here, they experienced a violent battle and they were almost wiped out.” Back then, Jiang Ying was not strong enough and had only arrived at the Deep Sea Abyss to confirm the position of the entrance. She did not truly enter the Graveyard of the Sea at that time. While she did not know the specific combat power of those monsters, she knew that even though it had been hundreds of years since her grandfather’s explorations, those deep sea monsters have not all perished but were hidden somewhere, awaiting for a chance to attack.

“.....” If Yue Yang had not entered Prison Emperor Divine Palace, he would never have been able to guess the reason for why these deep sea monsters were able to survive since the ancient times.

However, after the battle of Prison Emperor Divine Palace, he already knew a secret.

All life within a space was supposed to die when the space collapsed.

When the Prison Emperor forcefully tried to seal the Prison Emperor Divine Palace, the space had also collapsed. However, only a few of the Heaven Realm Warriors died. Many avoided the collapse. The reason was that they used an extremely shameless secret technique. They fused their body with Beasts, and survived by relying on the characteristics of the beasts.

Yue Yang believed that the same technique was used in the Graveyard of the Sea.

Rather than calling them deep sea monsters, it would have been more accurate to call them the Innates who died on the battlefield! In order to preserve their lives, they had fused with the beasts to become one. With the form of a beast, they survived.

The sea was without a single wave, silent and calm as a mirror.

However, Yue Yang felt a murderous intent break out from the bottom of his feet. He reacted quickly and shot to the sky with Jiang Ying in his arms.

Beneath his feet, at almost the same instant, a fish shaped monster with ten meter long body, shot out from the surface of the

water.

It opened its huge mouth and began to viciously chase after Yue Yang and Jiang Ying!

It moved extremely quickly. It broke the surface of the sea and chased after them like a giant shark out of the water.

Its terrifying mouth was filled with dense rows of sharp teeth, there were hundreds of them, each longer than a meter. The consequences of being swallowed by it in a mouthful were unthinkable, maybe one would end up buried in the stomach of the fish. Jiang Ying was shocked, she would never have thought that there was such a terrifying ambush in the dead silence. If it was not for Yue Yang's quick reaction, she would have been dead! At the sight of the deep sea monster right on their heels, Jiang Ying smirked. Her jade hands condensed a dazzling beam and turned into the head of a dragon.

It shot down like an arrow, straight at the deep sea monster, biting it in reverse.

A red light flashed in the deep sea monster's eyes. It was terrified of this lethal beam of light. It opened its mouth and sprayed a column of water in an attempt to resist the bite of this giant dragon.

Its body that was in mid-leap turned around immediately and fell back into the sea. Its nimbleness was incredible!

Bang!

A loud noise broke out above the sea.

The shock stirred up waves of up to 100 meters high and set off a storm on the calm sea surface. The wind blew across the sea surface and formed enormous ripples that quickly dissipated.

“I hit it, but it seems unharmed.” Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying frowned, her ‘Hornless Dragon Bite’ was extremely powerful, any creature below Level three Innate would die in a second if hit. To think that even with a direct hit, it was unharmed!

“That in fact is not a monster, but an Innate from back then. He seized the body of a fish-shaped beast and fused to become a monster. I do not know what power he used to have previously, but he is at least a Level 6 Innate now. Not only so, he has an extremely durable body. Do not be discouraged, your attack was actually enough to injure him. It is just that his injuries were very light, and coupled with his fast recovery speed....” Yue Yang observed with Heaven Eyes Divine Vision, and confirmed his previous deductions. This monster was the same as An Ge, who was initially an Innate turned into a hybrid of man and monster.

After the change to a hybrid, there would generally be a loss in strength.

This guy was no exception!

Seeing that this monster still retained the ability of a Level 6 Innate, it was certain that he was extremely powerful before, at least stronger than a Level 8 Innate, perhaps a Supreme Innate!

It was no wonder he had such quick reactions, that at the turn of events, it escaped back to the sea.

“Oh no, the impact just now disturbed the entire sea area.” Jiang Ying realised that the previously dead quiet sea, after the regrettable exchange with the sea monster, had been awoken by that shock wave, that spread extremely far, even beyond the horizon. It broke through the silence so sharply, let alone the Rankers, even the slow island whales and mountain turtles would have woken up from their deep slumber.

“Let us first take a look, do not panic!” Yue Yang also noticed that peculiar change, the entire sea brimmed with the atmosphere of the awakening of the Rankers.

Or perhaps, these guys have never been in deep sleep.

Maybe they were just in ambush nearby, and would awaken at the first movement.

One, two, three.....

Dark shadows of weird shapes and sizes floated to the surface of the water. There were fish-shaped, animal-shaped and unshapely monsters. Some were as big as a hill, while some as slender as a

human being, some even seemed to be a huge warship with no life, yet also seemed to be alive.

When they noticed Yue Yang and Jiang Ying who were in the air, they migrated towards them, surrounding the two.

The fish-shaped monster that Jiang Ying regrettably exchanged blows with, also floated out, and viciously spurt a mouthful of blood, spitting out the words: “Ha ha ha, I have long predicted, when the Mother Earth Potion is born, those who did not die would definitely not miss out on this chance, and compete over it. These two, I’m afraid are the descendants of those. They are afraid of death and so sent these two to find a path..... Hehehe, this chick is not bad, boss, leave this chick to me, I love this kind of chick with a bit of an attitude!”

“Even if I left her for you, can you use it? Look at what you look like now, you are a shark and yet you still think of women? Pah, think of female sharks!” A guy who was half man half sea snake sneered.

“Xu, what are you talking about? Even if I became a shark, are you better off? As long as I can get out, I will naturally be able to become human again. As for you, You look neither like a human, nor like a snake, you are done for! Boss, I don’t need the Mother Earth Potion, just leave the chick to me!” Shark man was rather smart, he knew that he would never have any part of Mother Earth Potion so he settled for a woman.

“Neo, while I may not be sure, maybe this little boy has a different opinion!” A man that possessed the most human-like

body spoke. With an upper half that was human and a bottom half that was octopus, this monster seemed to be the leader of this group of monsters.

He held a glittering holy halberd and stood at the very front of the troop. He stared at Yue Yang, as if he realised Yue Yang to be his true rival.

When Sharkman said he wanted the woman, he paid extra attention to Yue Yang's expression.

Finally, he laughed and retorted Sharkman, and shouted at Yue Yang: "This human boy, you seem to have something to say?"

Hearing that, Yue Yang suddenly laughed.

With his eyes full of mockery, he swept a look at the Sharkman called Neo: "I'll just say one thing. Those who want to touch my woman, I'll kill without mercy!"

"....." Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying blushed, even though she was aware she was not Yue Yang's woman, when she heard him protect her with such determination, her heart felt like it was going to burst. The denial at her lips was forgotten and left with only her face burning with bashfulness.

Chapter 456 – Idiot, You Are Already Dead!

“Hahaha! Hahaha.....”

More than thirty monsters laughed at Yue Yang’s words. They felt that it was more of a joke than a threat.

In front of dozens of enemies, was there any point in saying that?

Kill without mercy?

This was not child’s play, even though Sharkman Neo may not be the strongest in the group of hybrids, but to kill him in the water was easier said than done. The hybrids ruled the water. It was because they had such an advantage that they were able to survive when the space collapsed.

Was it even possible for a young human to kill a transformed fishman or even a sharkman, with their superiority in water?

Sharkman Neo laughed to the point of tears.

He used his tail to slap the water.

He laughed and provoked Yue Yang: “Haha, brat, you think this is your back garden? Do not think that just because you have your family as your support, you can be so reckless. How old are you this year? I bet you were still peeing your bed last year right? Now

you actually want to show off in front of a woman, do you have the ability? Do you understand what a war on water is? Sure, come on, aren't you the cocky one? Come kill me! With your standard, you want to kill me, you will make me die from laughter! This is the funniest joke I have heard in these 4000 years, ah haha, this is hilarious!"

That octopus man boss frowned upon hearing that.

He felt that Yue Yang was not a simple man. If he was an ordinary hedonistic son of rich parents, he would not dare to speak outrageously in front of so many enemies.

What was most unsettling was how harmless this young human seemed, yet behind that harmlessness was a faint killing intent. It was very strange, and difficult to make sense of.

He concluded that this young man's hidden power was stronger than what he could imagine.

Without the battle beginning, the boss, the Octopus Man, already realised that something was wrong.

However, he decided to let the situation develop.

If he could use this opportunity to understand his opponent without injuring himself, why not?

"Whale Zhang, why are you not laughing?" Among the hybrids, a

hideous fishman who looked like a mudskipper turned and asked the largest comrade beside him.

“This was not funny at all!” That giant whale-like black shadow hummingly replied.

“Oh well, I forgot you have no sense of humour! Oh right, Blast, what do you mean by that expression? Do you really think that Sharkman Neo cannot beat that brat?” Mudskipper-man asked the Swordfish-man on his other side.

“Let’s make a bet. Bet a hundred deep sea gems.” That Swordfish-man was most likely an ex-killer.

Even though he had been silent all along, the first words out of his mouth were powerful.

His words were extremely simple.

Mudskipper-man was startled: “Do you bet that the young human will lose or to win? If you bet for his defeat, I will not bet with you. You can only bet that he will win!”

Swordfish-man sneered: “Only a fool would bet he will lose!”

Mudskipper-man exploded in anger, his face flushed red, and the huge black spot on his face turned purple. He shouted: “Fine! If I win, that bottle of red sand that you treasure will belong to me!”

Swordfish-man nodded, indicating agreement.

He snorted, his face was calm as if the ending was in his favour. Mudskipper-man was furious.

While they conversed, Yue Yang had already whispered and instructed Jiang Ying on what to do. Jiang Ying nodded her head in agreement. Without realising it, Jiang Ying who used to be extremely assertive started to listen to Yue Yang's arrangements. She had started to depend on him. Jiang Ying raised her aura. Upon seeing her ability grow from a Lesser Innate all the way to a Level five Innate with a lot more leeway, the hybrid fishmen could not help but shiver in terror.

At first, they thought Jiang Ying and Yue Yang would stay together to defeat Sharkman Neo.

They would never have expected that Jiang Ying did not even have to lift a finger.

Instead, she floated higher into the sky and pulled out of the battlefield.

These were Yue Yang's instructions. On the sea surface and underwater, hybrid fishmen are definitely at an advantage. In the air, however, they are at a great disadvantage.

Only if Jiang Ying was safe, would Yue Yang be able to fight with

peace of mind.

Not only did Yue Yang want to fight, he wanted to push these hybrid fishmen off their high horses. Since they knew about the Mother Earth Potion, things were very simple, they should speak with their fists. The strongest would have the final say. As for the arrogant Sharkman Neo, he was just the first sacrifice that Yue Yang was going to use to make an example, of the consequences of daring to challenge him.

The Level 6 Sharkman Neo was incomparable to a Level 6 Peak Innate Sky Dragon.

Despite the advantage of the sea, to Yue Yang, water battles were not the biggest problem, Xiao Wen Li, Stone Element Medusa and Storm Mermaid, as well as the Thunder Naga and the Ice Serpent Demon were all underwater killers.

The important thing was that after the battle at Prison Emperor Divine Palace, Yue Yang knew the fatal weakness of the hybrids.

Sharkman Neo would definitely die a horrible death!

Let alone him flirting with Jiang Ying, even if he had not, Yue Yang was prepared to single him out.

“Come on, come and kill me. I cannot wait to die. Go ahead, what are you going to use to kill me with? How about a knife to stab at my throat and slit off my fin? Hahaha, if you thought I am only a

shark, you are wrong!” Sharkman Neo first mocked Yue Yang and then summoned a strange jet-black grimoire. The grimoire was covered with sinister engravings. It was even more suspicious than the grimoires obtained by Lich Kings by sacrificing Innates and stealing their power. The grimoire screamed of danger and chaos.

In an instant, Yue Yang observed the grimoire with Heaven Eyes Divine Vision. It turned out that Sharkman’s jet-black grimoire was no longer a Summoning Grimoire.

It was a ‘Fallen Grimoire’.

In it, were not Guardian Beasts and skills, but only a portrait of Sharkman and a few contracted beasts. Moreover, those beasts that could be summoned were deformed monsters that were extremely unintelligent and only able to fight.

No wonder this guy’s ability had been deteriorating so drastically from Innate Level 8 to an Innate Level 6, poor guy.

The Law had abandoned Sharkman Neo. Not only did his grimoire not disappear, it was no longer a Summoning Grimoire. Barrier, Innate Skills and Guardian Beasts have all disappeared, leaving a Fallen Grimoire that only looked like a Summoning Grimoire. Even the Grimoire had abandoned its owner..... This proved the evilness of the secret technique that was used to murder Guardian Beasts and normal beasts to steal their body just for self-preservation. This was the first time Yue Yang had seen such a tragic situation.

In the Prison Emperor Divine Palace, many Heaven Realm Warriors had done the same, but they had not gone to such an extent.

Even though their appearance had changed, those people still had their grimoires.

Sharkman Neo had most likely killed too many beasts when the space collapsed to save his own life. So many that even his grimoire was unable to keep up, reducing him to the pathetic Fallen Warrior he was now.....

“Scums like you deserve to die!” Yue Yang did not use his Summoning Grimoire, but took out his Hui Jin Magic Blade and Crescent Blade.

The air exploded.

The entire sky seemed to be cut into two halves.

On one side was the burning fiery hell, the other was the frost biting ice hell.

Yue Yang had lifted his powers to a Level 1 Innate. His presence rose a hundred-fold. As if a demon king had descended, the entire sea was shrouded in a suppressive power. On the sky, to Yue Yang’s left, countless frost particles and snowflakes fluttered down. Those destroyed ships floating on the surface of the sea began to freeze over. Even the sea turned gray and almost froze

over.

That was still not the most terrifying thing. On Yue Yang's right, many blossoming fire lotuses slowly danced in the air as if they were alive.

When these fire lotuses appeared, not only did the entire sea burn like hell, terror loomed.

Mudskipper-man was the weakest, and was unable to resist such power. He was forced underwater, and no matter how hard he struggled, he was unable to resurface.

All of the hybrid fishmen's faces ashened. None of them would have ever imagined that their opponent, just after unlocking the power of an Innate Level One, could already be so overbearing.

How could this suffocating pressure come from a youngster who was only a Level 1 Innate?

This was simply too unbelievable!

"Admit defeat, you cannot beat him!" Whale Zhang, the biggest among all the Hybrids suddenly hummed to Sharkman Neo: "It is not too late to stop now, Neo, he is not an enemy you can provoke!"

"No, never!" Actually, Sharkman Neo was already regretting it, but he still cared too much about his pride. To protect his pride, he

must not admit defeat to Yue Yang.

He, was a ranker who had lived for thousands of years. He, was one of those who survived the spatial collapse.

Could it be that he really had to surrender to such a young human being?

No matter how strong a Level 1 Innate was, it was impossible to kill a Level 6 Innate like him!

Sharkman Neo refused to give in. He decided to fight to the end. Even though this battle might be tragic, but he did not think he would lose. Even he if lost, there was glory in fighting. Which Innate would surrender without a fight? Even if he was no longer one, he still used to be a Supreme Innate. How would he be able to raise his head in front of his friends, if today, he surrendered to a kid who just stopped wearing diapers?

“Kill! Come on, let us fight!” Sharkman Neo reinforced his body with all of his beasts. His deformed body was no longer the body of only a shark, but a giant made from bodies of snakes and fishes. His upper body looked both like fish and man, his lower body was still like a shark. He grew many snake like arms and two pincers, and his back was full of poisonous spikes similar to a Stone Tiger.

This was already Sharkman Neo’s strongest form that he had not used since hundreds of years ago.

But even so.

Octopus-man boss was still frowning.

Two hybrid fishmen who were the closest to Sharkman Neo stepped forward, ready to provide support at any time.

Yue Yang suddenly disappeared. In the instant that Octopus Boss and Swordfish Blasts were shocked, Yue Yang flashed past Sharkman Neo's body. It was only when Yue Yang resurfaced did the Hybrid Fishmen realise that Yue Yang had already attacked.

“What did you do that for?” Sharkman Neo looked at Yue Yang who was standing in front of him, puzzled. He already attacked? Why didn't Yue Yang attack his body?

“Idiot, you are already dead!” Yue Yang was speechless.

He turned away from Sharkman Neo.

Under the stares of all the shocked Hybrid Fishmen and Sharkman Neo's moment of shock, two red lines appeared on Sharkman Neo's body like a cross..... Immediately, in Neo's screams of horror, his arms fell. His body began to slant, and in the slanting, the red lines split open. His body split into bloodied red chunks and fell into the sea.

Octopus-man boss did not look at Yue Yang, and instead stared at Swordfish man in horror.

On Swordfish Blast's forehead, a single drop of cold sweat expressed his inner horror in a murmur: "World Exterminating, World Exterminating Wheel....."

Chapter 457 – Can You Not Force Me To Kill You?

“You actually killed Neo?”, the two hybrid fishmen who were close friends with Neo roared. They were both surprised and furious.

“I will say it again.” Beneath Yue Yang’s feet, the sea had been dyed blood red. The fragments of Sharkman Neo’s body bobbed up and down the water. Fresh blood dyed the black sea water as the sea seemed to have turned into a slaughterhouse. Yue Yang’s beheading was very impressive, in one swift move, Sharkman Neo died without leaving behind any last words as he died in shock. Yue Yang became extremely serious. Hui Jin Magic Blade and the Crescent Blade in Yue Yang’s hands carried with them an aura of death, that terrified the hybrids. He looked at the Innate Rankers who had been reduced to Hybrid fishmen, with his voice soft yet unusually clear, “Everyone, I do not wish to give a talk on life’s principles. I believe that you all, too, know that this world bows down to the strongest. That is why I am making it clear that the ‘Mother Earth Potion’ will belong to me. You should not try to block my path; Otherwise, I will definitely not hesitate to turn this place into a slaughterhouse!”

If such arrogant words had come out of the mouth of an Innate Level One other than Yue Yang, that Innate would have long drowned from the spit of the Hybrid Fishmen.

It so happened that when Yue Yang claimed Mother Earth Potion in front of all of the hybrids, the entire sea was deathly silent.

No one dared to refute.

Everyone was shocked by his imposing manner!

Having seen Yue Yang, so bold and powerful, Jiang Ying's heart began to beat extremely fast, her face blushed pink in excitement.

It could not be denied that this man's words and actions were very cocky, but he also had the strength to back it up!

Once he said he would kill without mercy, he immediately beheaded his opponent!

Other than him, who else in this world would dare to be so bold?

Moreover, he did all of this to protect her dignity. He had attacked in anger after she was insulted by the enemy..... At the thought of that, Jiang Ying's stomach was filled with butterflies, she was delighted. It felt really good to feel protected!

She had already known he was not weak, after fighting him before.

The rumours surrounding Yue Clan's Third Young Master were legendary.

A twenty year old Innate, Zhi Zun's disciple, pushing back Shun Tian and the Black Prince, charging into the Demon Palace alone.

These stories were not only spread around Soaring Dragon Continent but also spread in the entire Tong Tian Tower. People have even received verification from the Warrior's Guild, confirming that those stories were true, and not just empty words of exaggeration. What was most shocking was that, the 'Dragon Emperor' that no one has ever met, as one of the Five Emperors of Tong Tian Tower, straightforwardly said that Yue Clan's Third Young Master would be the next Zhi Zun, and the Eastern Demon Clan would always be his ally.

These sort of statements have never been made in the entire Tong Tian Tower!

Even though Jiang Ying knew that Yue Yang was very strong, she realised that she had still underestimated him.

Even though she knew he once fought against the joint forces of Shun Tian and Back Prince, barged into Demon Palace to fight the Demon King alone, she never could have imagined that Yue Yang was able to kill a Level Six Innate like Sharkman Neo in one blow.

Even though her 'Hornless Dragon Bite' had also hit Sharkman Neo just now, he had been totally unhurt.

With just one move, Yue Yang killed him in a second!

The difference in ability between them was huge.

"Killing Sharkman Neo does not mean you have the capability to

obtain the Mother Earth Potion. You must know that he was one of the weakest among us.” A Giant Crab-man carefully said after mulling over his choice of words, terrified that Yue Yang would be provoked.

“Yes, Yes! The Mother Earth Potion is very important to us. Whether we are able to return to our original bodies or not depends on it! If you take it away, you might as well kill us all!” Mudskipper-man jumped out and shouted loudly.

Actually he knew that he had no share of the Mother Earth Potion, he was only unhappy that he just lost a hundred deep sea gems in the bet.

What was still the most annoying was that the bet was like a slap on his face from Yue Yang.

Among all of the Fishmen, he was one of the weakest. In comparison to Sharkman Neo, he was miles inferior but he still argued noisily, “We have thirty seven people, while there are only two of you. So what if you are very good at fighting? We refuse to be duel with you and rather attack together. Do you think that a Level 1 Innate like you will be able to stand against all thirty seven of us? So what if you have magic weapons, it does not mean that we don’t have them. Our boss has a holy-ranked weapon! Blast, you should also bring out your holy-ranked weapon! Show him that we are not easy to mess with!”

“.....” Swordfish-man Blast was very speechless. He thought that if this fool wanted to create trouble, there should be a right time for it right?

“Ahem, young man, if you wish to obtain the Mother Earth Potion, you still need to prove that you are strong enough.” Octopus-man boss hesitated slightly, but still decided to speak. He disapproved of Yue Yang’s arrogant behaviour, when he said he wanted the Mother Earth Potion.

They had accidentally discovered signs of the Mother Earth Potion’s appearance and waited for hundreds of years already.

And now, this youngster in front of them was demanding it.

If he was asking about an ordinary treasure, so be it. However, what he was asking for was the Mother Earth Potion, the best treasure to help them be reborn into human bodies. How could they just let him have such a treasure?

Yue Yang’s eyes flashed, he seemed to have long known that they would say that.

He slowly put back Hui Jin Magic Blade and Crescent Blade. With empty-hands, he took a deep breath.

Seeing him make such a move, Jiang Ying moved higher up into the skies, and looked at the situation from afar. Her departure left many of the Hybrid Fishmen confused, what was this girl doing? Was she leaving the battlefield to let this guy fight to the death with everyone? Swordfish-man Blast’s eyes froze over. He grabbed Mudskipper man’s neck and threw him far away and fled quickly from the encirclement.

Octopus-man boss also quickly reacted, waving his hand and shouting for everyone to leave.

However, the two Hybrid Fishmen who had the closest relationship to Sharkman Neo thought that Octopus-man Boss wanted to attack, that everyone should attack Yue Yang together.

They began to shout crazily, and then with the strength of Level Six Innates, threw themselves at Yue Yang.

As a result of their misjudgment, they did not even hear Octopus-man Boss shouting for everyone to leave together..... On this side, Yue Yang was already unlocking the second level of Innate power. A frightening shockwave erupted like a volcano and shook the whole sea. Waves hundreds of meters tall formed a great wall and pushed away from Yue Yang. At the centre of the storm was Yue Yang. His aura had already reduced his robes to fine powder, revealing a muscular and perfectly sculpted body that was incomparable to any man's.

The raging flames, icy storm and thunder and lighting seemed as if they were going to destroy the entire space.

A terrifying tornado in the air met with the whirlpool on the sea, presenting an astronomical phenomenon that could only be created by nature.

“If you thought I was not impressive enough, how about now?” After unlocking the power of Innate Level Two, Yue Yang had

stretched out and grabbed the two Hybrid Fishmen who were rushing at him. Like a giant who was grabbing two small mudskippers with his hands, Yue Yang held the two Level 6 Innate Hybrid Fishmen in his hands in a death grip.

“Together, die, die!” The two Hybrid Fishmen knew they would not be spared, and decided to commit suicide, wanting to die with the enemy.

“Stop!” By the time Octopus-man Boss shouted, it was already too late.

“They were really seeking a death wish!” Yue Yang had only meant to humiliate them. He only wanted to give them a beating after he caught them, and never wanted to kill. However, his enemies not only did not struggle, they even drew closer in an attempt to self-destruct. Yue Yang shouted loudly in a thundering rage. It defeaned the other fishmen as it exploded towards the sea surface.

Countless fire lotuses formed, turning into blossoms of Heaven’s Fury Fire Lotus.

Nirvana Flame, on the other hand, formed a pillar of fire and shot directly into the sky.

In an instant, Yue Yang who just unlocked the power of a Level Three Innate was now as strong as a Level Eight Innate.

Seeing how the two Level 6 Innate Hybrid Fishmen wanted to self-destruct, Yue Yang first smashed the two of their heads together in fury, and then crushed their heads as if they were rotten melons. He stretched out his hand as a small mysterious beast transformed into a sword and slashed the two hybrids by the waist. He then used his left hand, burning with Nirvana Flame, to search for their orbs in their abdomen and forcibly pulled them out. Furthermore he quickly purified and refined them...With the loss of their orb, there was no way they could explode!

Yue Yang summoned out his Grimoire. His ring-shaped 'World' had expanded from the original fifty meters to sixty meters.

All of the energy had been absorbed by it and completely changed into the fundamental energy it needed to grow.....

Octopus-man Boss's face was deathly pale. He now understood that this young man was an undefeatable existence.

If his opponent dared to come snatch the Mother Earth Potion with only the power of two people, they were not trying to steal it by a fluke, but instead, they were really strong.

All of the Hybrid Fishmen were terrified.

Even though they were slightly stronger than Sharkman Neo, they were not that different. Only the strongest Octopus-man Boss, Swordfish-man Blast and Whale Zhang had the power of Level Eight Innates, while the rest were Level Seven or Level Six Innates, some were even Level Five Innates. In front of such a powerful

enemy, they had no shot at victory!

Even though the opponent was only a Level Three Innate, he had the ability to overwhelm Octopus-man Boss.

He even owned both World Exterminating Wheel and Nirvana Flames. Even if those two weapons that could destroy all living beings in an instant did not count, that guy still had the Tong Tian Beast, which sliced their two companions in half with one chop..... Furthermore, he had an extremely weird Grimoire, it was larger and heavier than any other Grimoire, and had many heavenly runes and a special aura. If the Holy Grimoire did not look like this, everyone would have mistaken it as a Holy Grimoire!

If they really fought, they might not win even if they all attacked together!

Moreover, who would be willing throw away their life and go forth? At least he would not send himself to die!

The Hybrid Fishmen looked around and noticed that the strongest Octopus-man Boss, Swordfish Blast and Whale Zhang had no plans to move and stood silently.

Only Mudskipper-man, who was battered by the shock wave, jumped out and shrieked: “Wait, I bet you do not know that before obtaining Mother Earth Potion, you have to go through the Five Large Whirlpools of the Deep Sea. Those Whirlpools are all underwater. So what if you are good at air battles, how about water battles? Do you think you can defeat us in a water battle? We

are the natural experts of water warfare! Also, only five people can enter the whirlpools. If we send five people to enter and block the way, you guys will never be able to enter in your lifetime! If you still do not cooperate with us, you might never obtain the Mother Earth Potion. If you want to cooperate, apologize to me first. How should I say it, little boy, I am still considered your senior!”

“Do you truly want me to apologize? Are you sure?” With a reply as cool as ice, Mudskipper fishman could not help but shiver.

Xiao Wen Li emerged from the Grimoire World.

Right behind her were, Stone Element Medusa, Storm Mermaid, Thunder Naga and Ice Serpent Demon.....

This sight stunned all of the Hybrid Fishmen. How could things have turned out this way, this guy was not the best in air battles, but rather water battles! Seeing the Storm Conch in Stone Element Medusa’s hands, Storm Mermaid’s Golden Bow, Thunder Naga’s Thunder Sphere and Cold Frost Serpent Demon’s cold sharp blade, all of the Hybrid Fishmen trembled in terror.

Even ten lifetimes would not be enough to fight water battles with this guy!

Mudskipper-man was already reduced to a pool of jelly at this moment. His teeth were chattering as hard as a man with typhoid who was soaked in freezing waters!

Seeing the Mudskipper-man before him, who was trembling in fear, Yue Yang spoke with sincerity, “Senior, please don’t force me to kill you okay? I will not repeat myself, I will obtain the Mother Earth Potion.”

Chapter 458 – Who Is The One That Approaches?

Even Innates who survived the huge water war thousands of years of ago could not help but shiver from Yue Yang's display of power.

How could such a young human being be so powerful?

This was unbelievable.

“Maybe we can discuss this?” Octopus Man Boss finally made a decision. There was no point in even obtaining Mother Earth Potion anymore. Even if they did turn back to human form, this youngster would kill everyone. Rather than go through a struggle between life and death, it would be best to work together with him.

“We wish to be free. “ Whale Zhang opened his mouth and hummed: “If you can break the seal and take us away from here, Mother Earth Potion is yours. “

“Where is the seal?” Yue Yang asked without hesitation.

“At the bottom of the sea. “ Swordfish man Blast was first to dive into the water to guide the way for Yue Yang and Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying.

Once Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying entered the water, she immediately displayed her extremely elegant form, not losing to beasts like Stone Element Medusa, Storm Mermaid and the other beasts who were matchless in water battles. In the water, she was even more powerful, like a fish who has just returned to the waters. She looked even more at home than even the Hybrid Fishmen. The Hybrid Fishmen were stunned. They realised they had made the extremely right decision earlier. When it came to water war, the ability of these two was not beneath them at all. If they had really started fighting, the consequences would have been devastating.

In the deep sea, countless sunken ships and sunken islands appeared before Yue Yang's eyes.

Such a scene displays the horror and scale of that horrible war back in the day.

In even deeper waters, there were countless rune circles that had congregated into a single whole. Some were blood red, some were golden, some dark green, some silver. The rune circles were all different. Some were big while others were small, they were all in strange shapes. However, the rune circles were all linked up together and kept absorbing the energy of the sea.

At the same time, it radiated a special ripple.

While this ripple had no effect on Yue Yang and Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying, it was extremely effective in binding the Hybrid Fishmen.

It seemed like an invisible lock that imprisoned all of the Hybrid Fishmen in this collapsed space.

Even though they could move freely in this vast sea, there was no way they could leave this 'Graveyard of the Sea'. They were prisoners imprisoned here forever, with their freedom deprived as long as the rune circles were not unsealed. Yue Yang could even sense another seal within the bodies of the Hybrid Fishmen. This seal that was created by an Innate of an unknown level of skill prevented them from leaving water for their entire lives. Even if they did leave the water, it would only be temporary and not in any way similar to a normal human who could stay on land for a long time.

Mother Earth Potion might be able to turn these Hybrid Fishmen back into their original human bodies.

However, it would only be a ridiculous dream for them to ever leave the water.

Unless they unlocked the seal within them..... Yue Yang used Heaven Eyes Divine Vision and realised that the seal was very tightly intertwined with their Hybrid body. It would be difficult to return to their human form, but it would be even harder to release the seal.

It could be said that the Innate who placed this seal on their bodies had almost blocked any way for them to return to land in their human bodies.

“There are so many runes circles here and they cover the whole seabed. Is there anyway to unlock them?” Octopus Man Boss was actually not very optimistic. Even with the knowledge and power of more than thirty Innates, and after thousands of years of investigating they had still not found a way to unlock these runes. Was it really reasonable to depend on this young human who was only about twenty years of age?”

“Don’t worry, let him take a look first. “ When Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying saw the commotion among the Hybrid Fishmen, she immediately started comforting them to calm them down.

“.....” While the Hybrid Fishmen were hoping for Yue Yang to be able to unlock the seal, they were also afraid that the higher their expectations, the more disappointed they would be. They were very anxious.

“Can you even do anything?! Do you want us to die from anxiousness by just looking and not saying anything?” Mudskipper Man could not stand it any longer.

“Shut up!” Swordfish Man Blast roared. Mudskipper Man was terrified and shut up immediately.

Only after staring for a long while did Yue Yang open his mouth casually: “This underwater seal is not complicated, it is just tedious and would take a long time to unlock. Rather it is the seal within your bodies that would be very troublesome. Even if you all got out, it is very likely that you will all have to live underwater for the

rest of your lives. Even if you all returned to your human forms, you will have to live underwater. “

Actually all the Hybrid Fishmen were well aware of the latter outcome.

If that was not the case, they would also not have chosen to become Fishmen monsters and hibernate under the sea for thousand of years.

The only thing they desired was to leave the Graveyard of the Sea.

Freedom, was more important than anything else.

When they heard that Yue Yang knew how to unlock the underwater seal, these Hybrid Fishmen were disbelieving at first. When they saw Yue Yang's serious expression, they realised he did not looked like he was lying and were beyond excited. After hibernating for thousand of years, they had lived in indescribable loneliness and pain even though they have survived that terrible war. They did not even dare dream of leaving the Graveyard of the Sea because of the seal on them. They had only been able to hibernate and await an opportunity.

Since both sides have a foundation for cooperation, things have become much easier.

Octopus Man Boss introduced himself to Yue Yang and Jiang

Ying and told them he called himself “Pan Chan”. Yue Yang almost wanted to tell him that it would actually be much cooler if he called himself ‘Paul’.

Other than the strongest being Octopus Man Boss, the second strongest had to be Swordfish Man Blast, followed by Whale Zhang.

The three of them decided to accompany Yue Yang and Jiang Ying to enter the underwater whirlpool and head to Crystal Canyon.

Mudskipper Man also looked like he wanted to go.

He kept murmuring to himself.

He wanted to go, yet he was too embarrassed to request to go.

A Level Five Innate, he was actually one of the weakest among the Hybrid Fishmen. Since Yue Yang had just ignored him, he was going crazy!

Crystal Canyon.

After entering the underwater whirlpool, they have landed in Crystal Canyon.

Yue Yang realised that this place was very strange. It was

extremely similar to the Canyon of Despair, but there was no water here. All of the seawater were floating high in the sky, forming a weird dome underwater. In front of his eyes, there were giant formations of crystal sparkling. All of the surfaces, stone mountains, anything that the eye could see were made of crystal. Tiny crystals covered the ground, while large crystals formed hills and there were countless crystal pillars, forming all sorts of impressive sights.

The middle of the canyon was sunken in, forming a path that was scattered with countless crystals.

This place not only brimmed with the power from the crystals, there was also a rule of restriction. There could only be five people here at the same time, once the maximum was reached, not even beasts could be summoned.

The Crystal Canyon was huge, and most likely at least a few kilometers long from the start to the end.

Crystals covered everything as far as the eye could see.

Even though Yue Yang had seen countless rare treasures, he could not help but sigh at the sight of the Crystal Canyon.

If one had time to cultivate here and absorb the power of the crystals, the power from the crystals would most likely make the whole process a lot smoother and much easier. Sickly Beauty would most likely benefit the most, she was born compatible with crystals. If he brought her here to cultivate, she would most likely

progress rapidly and breakthrough again and again. Just when Yue Yang was thinking, Swordfish Man Blast suddenly hinted: “There, that is the Ancient Guard.”

When Yue Yang raised his head to take a look, he saw a Crystal man that was a Platinum Level 10.

The Crystal man climbed the walls of the canyon as if they were flying. He was so fast and agile as an ape. It looked like it was walking on ground instead of climbing the walls.

This ‘Crystal Man’ had a body that was transparent like crystal, similar to Battle Dolls like Rock Golem, but it definitely had a life and was not a machine. Yue Yang stared blankly at it. It was somewhat similar to a human, but on its back were crystal-shaped barbs. It had no hair, but instead on its head was crystal-shaped sharp squarish beams that were arranged in a very unique manner. Its facial features were not significantly different from a human although made of crystal. It had a tall nose and deep set eyes, but there was nothing where his mouth was meant to be, making it clear that it did not have to eat like ordinary living things.

“What would happen if I killed it?” Yue Yang did not really want to kill it, but wanted to capture one to study it.

“It is impossible to kill it. Once it dies, it will be resurrected immediately here. Since it is made of crystal, unless the whole Crystal Canyon is destroyed, it can not die.” Octopus Man Boss Pan Chan explained.

As they talked, more Ancient Guards appeared.

They should not be intelligent.

But even with only their instinct, they were already very outstanding.

The first Crystal Man who realised the presence of intruders did not attack immediately, but instead, waited a short distance away for its companions.

If Mother Earth Potion were to be born now, Yue Yang would not be so courteous and showed off his skills to attack all these Ancient Guards. But for now, there were still two more days until the Mother Earth Potion will be born. Yue Yang did not wish to create unnecessary trouble at this time. After he used Heaven Eyes Divine Vision to observe the canyon to confirm the possible places the Mother Earth Potion will be born, he immediately waved his hand and said: “Let us go back for now. We will come back when it is the right time.”

Jiang Ying looked at Yue Yang. She really wanted to ask him whether he found the place where Mother Earth Potion would be born.

He knew at a glance?

He did not have to look carefully?

Since it was Yue Yang, she still chose to believe him.

Even she herself could not explain why she trusted Yue Yang, maybe it was the feeling that he gave others, that he was absolutely trustworthy.

Octopus Man Boss Pan Chan, Swordfish Man Blast and Whale Zhang were all confused, they were just going back like this? If it was so simple, why did the three of them even come?

They had thought that there was going to be a bitter war.

They had not even imagined that they did not even have to do anything and could go back just after one look.

“We will come back in two days, as long as we get Mother Earth Potion, I will unlock the seal for all if you to leave Graveyard of the Sea! If anyone comes here before us, you have to stop them at any cost. If you cannot beat the enemy, just let five people block them from entering by positioning themselves here in Crystal Canyon. The Mother Earth Potion must not fall into the hands of other people. This is the first condition of our alliance. If I successfully obtain the Mother Earth Potion, I will then consider thinking of ways to help you all turn back into human form. “ Yue Yang offered more than sufficient bait by offering to solve all of their problems.

“No problem, we have decided to choose freedom and our human bodies.” Representing all Hybrid Fishmen, Octopus Man Boss made the final call.

Fire Island, Starfish Hotel.

Hai Yingwu saw a drenched man walking through the entrance.

Stunned for a moment, she then realised that this guy was the drowned scum.

Princess Ying's extremely perverted housekeeper!

This man was said been drinking at Eternal Morning till he was dead drunk and in the end fell into the ocean to become fish food. He actually did not die and survived like a tenacious cockroach. Thinking again, Hai Yingwu felt that this was actually normal, even though this man was so perverted, he must have a certain level of ability since, he did not meet any Underwater Beasts and normal fish and shrimp would never eat him.

Seeing him stagger like he would fall any time, Hai Yingwu had to force herself to go forward to help him with a charming smile.

Puke!

Who would have thought that this guy would suddenly vomit. A mouth of liquid that was a mixture of seawater and alcoholic acid sprayed all over Hai Yingwu's majestic breasts. Hai Yingwu hated the vomit that was all over the body, and was so close to strangling him to death on the spot.

“You should drink less, this is not good for your health.” Hai Yingwu used all of her patience to maintain her smile and elegant tone.

“Leave me alone! I, I am not drunk! Puke!” The drunk Yue Yang was going to puke on Hai Yingwu’s chest again. This time, she could not stand it anymore. Seeing that there was no one around, she threw him into the storeroom in disgust. She even kicked him twice ruthlessly before rushing off to take a shower. She no longer bothered to care about this kind of scum.

“.....” After she left, the drunk Yue Yang immediately sobbered up. He laughed silently, his eyes full of mockery.

Back in the room, he let Jiang Ying out from the Grimoire World.

Jiang Ying laughed secretly, even though she had not seen the process of Yue Yang teasing Hai Yingwu, she could imagine it. That was why she could not help but laugh, and could not even stop.

Outside, there was a sudden knock on the door.

Yue Yang and Jiang Ying’s faces turned pale at the knock. Neither of them had sensed that someone had come.....

Who was it really, that had such terrifying stealth ability to conceal himself from Yue Yang and Jiang Ying’s perception? Could it be that it was Ocean Emperor?

Chapter 459 – Hemp-Clothed Old Man

Yue Yang and Jiang Ying looked at each other and nodded.

The two Spider Queens raised their vigilance as they pulled out the knives on their waist, preparing to kill at anytime. Actually, this was only a type of instinctual response. If their intelligence was a bit more higher, they would understand that someone capable of hiding from Yue Yang and Jiang Ying's perception was not normal. Moreover, they wouldn't even be able to touch that person.

The knocking sound had a rhythm to it, unlike the hotel maid's polite knock.

Moreover, it was impossible for it to be a maid because that person was able to hide from Yue Yang and Jiang Ying's acute perception.

Yue Yang opened the door.

Only ten seconds had passed by and Yue Yang had already prepared dozens of plans to respond. However, when he opened the door, he discovered that his plans were meaningless.

"It's you?" Yue Yang was very surprised.

The person who stood in front of Yue Yang was not an unknown person. Moreover, this person was someone Yue Yang knew but he

could never imagine him coming here.

He was [the person Yue Yang first met](#) when he went to the Assassin Guild, the hemp-clothed old man.

(Shiro: Refer to chapter 17. Previously translated as simply old man coz hemp-clothed old man sounded funny)

At that time, the old man was taking a nap.

He appeared to be a senile old man with a withered and bony body. If Yue Yang did not possess Heaven Eyes Divine Vision, he would not even know that he was a Ranker.

It was also the old man who gave Yue Yang the test to get the Soaring Dragon Continent's Blood Rose Map.

Tonight, he once again saw the old man.

With Heaven Eyes Divine Vision, Yue Yang discovered that the old man's power remained deep and unmeasurable. He was simply unable to gauge his power. From the very beginning, the old man already gave Yue Yang a feeling that he was a sleeping dragon. Now, this feeling was even clearer. In the beginning, Yue Yang thought that this old man was just a level 7 [Overlord] or a level 8 [Emperor]. Afterwards, although Yue Yang met many other rankers from the Soaring Dragon Continent, he never met an existence like this hemp-clothed old man. Previously, he had felt that this was strange but the amount of hermits in the Soaring Dragon Continent was uncountable so he decided to not pay too much attention to it.

Only today did Yue Yang discover that he was completely mistaken.

The old man was definitely a Supreme Innate. The feeling he gave Yue Yang was similar to the mystery that Night Empress gave him. He estimated that they were probably in the same level.

It can be said that, even if the Phoenix Fairy Beauty, who was an Elder Innate, might not be able to win against this old man.

“Boy, what are you standing around for aren’t you going to invite this old man to come in and take a seat?” The old man boldly entered.

“May I know senior’s name?” Yue Yang respectfully ask.

When Yue Yang called the mudskipper man ‘senior’ before, he meant it to be a little sarcastic. However, now, when he called the old man ‘senior’, it was his heartfelt intention. Yue Yang recalled their first meeting and felt that this old man was truly not simple. It was only that he did not see through it at that time. Moreover, at that time when he leveled up into an Innate, the light pillar shot through the sky and all the people in White Stone City, especially the thieves’ guild should have been alarmed.

In the end, it was hidden.

Nobody knew anything.

No one had seen the Innate Light Pillar. Now that he remembered it, Yue Yang was shocked: Could it be that his old man secretly helped him?

Jiang Ying was also unable to gauge the opposite party's strength and only felt that this person was very powerful, even more powerful than her grandfather. She quickly respectfully invited him to sit down and personally steeped him a cup of tea. Although she could not discern his purpose, it seemed that he had no evil intention so Jiang Ying did not dare disrespect him. The old man magnanimously received the tea and spoke: "Boy, your wife ain't bad. Youths who respect their elders are hard to find!"

The Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying blushed when she heard this.

She looked at Yue Yang. Originally she wanted to explain that she was no his wife but in the end she did not say it.

Afterwards, she looked at Yue Yang again and saw that he did not correct anything. So, her face blushed redder.

With trembling fingers, she also poured Yue Yang a cup of tea but did not pass it over to him, instead she placed it in front of him and quickly withdrew her hands. It seemed that she was afraid of hitting Yue Yang's hands. Yue Yang laughed and patted the seat besides him: "Wifey, come sit down!"

When Jiang Ying heard this, she protested coquettishly and rolled her eyes at him.

Her meaning was that he should not push his luck. However, this kind of shy girl made Yue Yang secretly happy.

“My name...” The old man placed down the tea cup and indifferently said: “Perhaps you have heard about me before and, you might even feel that I am extremely frightening. However, I am just an ordinary old man who spread these rumors and most of them are fake. My name is An Xi. The rumored An Xi who killed millions of people!”

“What?” Yue Yang was speechless.

“Ah!” The Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying was also stunned and involuntarily cried out in fear as if she was about to be frightened to death.

What did this name represent?

It represented death.

The rumored An Xi was a Level 10 Innate who once slaughtered the continent's warriors all by himself. The number of person he had killed were in the millions. His acts became Tong Tian Tower's legend and that people could only look at his unattainable record. In the Sixth Floor of the Tong Tian Tower, the only person who could truly beat him was Zhi Zun. He was ranked fifth along with Sky Execution.

If it was only the Sixth Floor of Tong Tian Tower, the only people ranked in front of him were first ranked Zhi Zun, second ranked Ocean Emperor Guan Lan, third ranked Wraith Emperor Hai and fourth ranked Great Demon King Baruth.

The ranking placements for the Ninth Floor of Tong Tian Tower was different. Zhi Zun and Ocean Emperor were still placed higher than An Xi. However Hai and Baruth were surpassed by Sky Execution, An Xi and Night Empress, who was ranked lower in the sixth floor. An Xi, Sky Execution and Night Empress did not stay too long in the Sixth Floor of the Tong Tian Tower so their prestige was lower than Hai and Baruth. If their powers were compared, An Xi, Sky Execution and Night Empress had far surpassed Hai and Baruth. This was especially true for the Night Empress. Her goal was to reach Zhi Zun's level and she was quickly catching up. Dragon Emperor, Ske Emperor, Ocean Emperor and Emperor of the Underworld were feeling an enormous pressure.

In terms of reputation, An Xi had the most evil reputation and no one could surpass it.

The record of slaughtering a million warriors would probably be unreachable even if the records of all homicidal maniacs added up.

There is a rumor that spread within the Tong Tian Tower: If you offended a Supreme Innate, you are definitely dead and you cannot take it back. This Supreme Innate was An Xi!

Never in his dreams would Yue Yang have thought that the hemp-clothed old man was An Xi.

This old man is truly the one who slaughtered a million people?

Frightening!

“I have indeed killed many people but I am not a homicidal maniac in the rumors. I am only getting revenge.” When the old man said this, Yue Yang almost fainted.

Killing a million people for revenge? How much enmity did he have?

The old man did not pay attention to Yue yang’s exaggerated expression and slowly spoke: “I still lack one person before my revenge is complete.”

Light flashed in Yue Yang’s mind. Who could be able to force this old man to personally chase after him? Yue Yang thought and immediately shouted in realization: “Ocean Emperor!”

The old man satisfyingly nodded his head and praised: “Not bad. A youngster’s brain is still better. Solving the puzzle with just one hint!”

Seeing Yue yang had guessed it, Jiang Ying was also a bit elated.

Although she was unable to guess it, when she saw Yue Yang’s cleverness and excellence, she could not help but feel happy for

him.

“You came here to invite us to work together against him... Wait, let me guess again... Ocean Emperor... the news that some treasure is about to be born in the Fire Island’s Deep Sea Abyss was something you spread right? Then, why do you want to kill the Ocean Emperor? Let me guess, is it because... is it because of the Mother Earth Potion? You are prepared to let the Ocean Emperor know this news and then take this chance to assassinate him.” The more Yue Yang thought the more he felt that he was closer to the truth. It’s no wonder that the news about a treasure about to be born in the Fire Island was spread. It seems that it was this old man was trying to cause trouble for Ocean Emperor.

“Not bad, boy! Although your guess was not entirely correct, you are very close.” Towards Yue Yang’s intelligent deduction, the old man generously praised.

“Please drink some tea!” Jiang Ying peek at Yue Yang and felt very happy as she immediately poured tea for the old man.

And then she also poured some for Yue Yang without returning back to her original position.

She unconsciously sat besides Yue Yang.

Her actions were completely done involuntarily. Unconsciously, she had thoroughly let go of her reservations and wariness and sat besides Yue Yang. She carefully listened on the conversation between them and every time the old man praised Yue Yang, she

would be especially happy as if she was the one being praised.

The old man glanced at her, just like a grandfather looking at his cute and obedient granddaughter, filled with kindness.

He picked up his tea cup and slightly muttered and spoke: “Actually, I was comrades with this lady’s grandfather and we were best friends. At that time Ocean Emperor was also one of us. In the end, Ocean Emperor betrayed us so our thousand man group was almost wiped out. At that time, the most united Iron Fist Mercenary Group in the entire Tong Tian Tower crumbled in a single night. The commander and the team leaders all died in battle. The only ones who remained were the lady’s grandfather, Old Hornless, me, Ocean Emperor Guan Lan and the last person was Guan Lan’s faithful friend Tai Hu. Old Hornless received serious injuries and died. Tai Hu also received heavy injuries and went back to live in seclusion. I predict that Ocean Emperor had also killed him so my goal is only the Ocean Emperor Guan Lan. Once I kill him, my dream will be fulfilled.”

Jiang Ying was stunned. An Xi was grandfather’s comrade?

How come she had never heard of him speak about it?

The old man smiled as if he saw Jiang Ying’s thoughts: “Your grandfather was older than me by a lot. He was already an old uncle and I was still a child. At that time, I was not called An Xi. My name back then was [Sa Shen](#) and your grandfather used to call me Mischievous Sa Shen.”

(Last: If it became Sha Shen then it would be equivalent to death

god which is what he is now.)

Hearing this, Jiang Ying immediately recalled that her grandfather had mentioned many names. Among them was 'Mischievous Sa Shen'.

In her grandfather's last years, he had mentioned this many times.

Naturally, it also included his grievances of the betrayal and the group's annihilation. These were her grandfather's greatest regret.

It was because of this that Jiang Ying knew the news of the Mother Earth Potion; Otherwise, she would not have invited Yue Yang over to search for treasures.

"How do we kill the Ocean Emperor?" Yue Yang asked the main point.

Yue yang already confirmed that the old man was not here for the Mother Earth Potion. The old man only wanted revenge and to kill Ocean Emperor. Since he intended to eliminate Ocean Emperor, Yue Yang had no reason to stand back and watch. He must definitely think of a plan to help the old man kill the Ocean Emperor. The question was, how do they do it? How were they gonna kill one of the five emperors, Ocean Emperor Guan Lan?

Chapter 460 – Scram As Far As Your Perverted Thoughts Go

Regarding Yue Yang's question, the hemp-clothed old man mulled over it for a long time too.

“It will be extremely hard to kill Ocean Emperor. Although we are all level Ten Innates, he is much more powerful than I am. Although he hasn't surpass Zhi Zun yet, the skills he has accumulated over these thousands of years are unfathomable. And in the ocean, his strength will double, so killing him would be very problematic. The only thing we can make use of is the Crystal Canyon which is the place the Mother Earth Potion will be born. I believe you are here for that too.”

“Years ago Old Hornless Dragon and I, together with Tai Hu and Ocean Emperor went to the Graveyard of the Sea and found the Crystal Canyon. We also discovered the place the Mother Earth Potion will be born. At that time we also fought with the Hybrids in a battle of desperation. The Hybrids had forty people on their side with two super strong Innates. At that time we were still quite weak so we were completely defeated. In the last moment, Ocean Emperor abandoned us and ran away. That was when we finally realised the traitor, who wiped out the entire group, was him, and he even got the cheeks to feign innocence by leading us to take revenge... He wanted to reach the Zhi Zun Level, so he had to get the Mother Earth Potion. That will be our best chance. You guessed right, I spread the rumour regarding the Mother Earth Potion. The Ocean Emperor knew that it was me too, so he spread the rumour about treasures in Deep Sea Abyss. He did this to divert everyone's attention.” It was only until the hemp-clothed old man's explanation did Yue Yang and Jiang Ying became more

aware of the current situation.

“So Ocean Emperor knows that you are going to kill him?” Yue Yang felt that it wasn’t a good thing for their plan to be exposed prematurely.

“The truth is I’ve been trying to kill him every year for the past hundreds of years. He is currently stronger than me so I wasn’t able to kill him, but he also has no way to kill me. We have been in this deadlock since that time. The only person that could disrupt this equilibrium is you.” hemp-clothed old man told Yue Yang firmly.

“Me?” Yue Yang did not feel that he could kill Ocean Emperor.

Although Ocean Emperor still wasn’t a Level Ten Innate, his skills were unfathomable and perhaps even stronger than Phoenix Fairy Beauty, who was now an Elder Innate.

Together with other factors such as Beasts, Holy Equipments and favourable geographic location, how could it be easy to kill Ocean Emperor?!

The hemp-clothed old man nodded. “Yes you. We can’t kill him without your Nirvana Flame and World Exterminating Wheel. Although you are still not on par to him in terms of rank, you are at an advantage in terms of killing power. It’s highly possible to kill Ocean Emperor if you were to come out at the last moment when I’m fighting with him. Of course the chances will be higher if you were to snatch the Mother Earth Potion and rank up by a

level!“

Yue Yang became silent.

He finally made his mind after a long time and drafted a plan with the hemp-clothed old man to kill Ocean Emperor.

After repeated discussions and adding in finer details, Project Sea Burial which aimed to assassinate Ocean Emperor was finalized after an hour.

The hemp-clothed old man bid farewell and teleported off. He will head to the Graveyard of the Sea followed by the Crystal Canyon where he will patiently wait to ambush Ocean Emperor.

As for Yue Yang, he was still fretting over how he's going to level up tremendously within two days. He couldn't alert Ocean Emperor if he wanted to kill him. Yue Yang had to keep this plan between himself and the hemp-clothed old man. Although the Phoenix Beauty was already a female Elder Innate, Ocean Emperor will immediately escape if she were to go to the Fire Island or the Crystal Canyon. He mustn't know that there are other people who wanted him dead other than the hemp-clothed old man.

Moreover, if Phoenix beauty were to get injured during the fight, the consequence would be much more dire. This was because they were going up against the Black Hell King next, and he is even stronger than Ocean Emperor. Without Phoenix Beauty's strong support, it would be harder to win. The Phoenix Beauty can't come for this battle, she had to continue her cultivation and make

improvements at her current Elder Innate level.

Xue Wu Xia and Princess Qian Qian weren't back yet, if not they could have been part of the fighting force.

Actually the Sickly Beauty, Luo Hua City Mistress, Yue Bing and Yue Yu weren't strong enough. Although they could kill others, for them to assassinate Ocean Emperor would be no easy feat. If they were to be instant-killed, it would be too late for Yue Yang to have regrets. Yue Yang would rather the assassination plan to fail than to see them get hurt. As for levelling up the Innate Realm, the best way is to practise Body Fusion, but the problem is no matter how fast the progress would be, he wouldn't be able to level up within two days, the duration is too short.

Just when Yue Yang was fretting over it, Jiang Ying's words made Yue Yang see the light.

"If only I am more powerful, then maybe I'll be of some help," Jiang Ying said.

She was a Level Seven Innate, a Holy Beast.

She was very close to becoming a Divine Beast, but she's not one yet.

Of course it wasn't possible for Yue Yang to level up within two days, he was already cultivating at the maximum speed. He had been training with the big loli in his dream everyday. It could be

said that he wouldn't be able to level up faster unless he encounters rare treasures like the Mother Earth Potion.

But, for Yue Yang, it was much more possible to help Jiang Ying level up.

After all he had already succeeded the difficulty of helping Phoenix Beauty breakthrough the Elder Innate Realm, helping Jiang Ying the Hornless Dragon now wouldn't be much of a challenge.

“You really want to level up? I have a way that can help you level up all the way to a Divine Beast...”

At this point, Jiang Ying was already jumping around in excitement.

Becoming a Divine Beast was her dream.

The kind of levelling up she had been dreaming of!

Seeing that Yue Yang isn't continuing, Jiang Ying thought that there are still unfulfilled criteria. She spoke impatiently. “Tell me, what do you need, what are you lacking, say it, I will get them immediately!”

Yue Yang waved to her, gesturing for her come over.

After waiting for her uneasy arrival, Yue Yang went close to her ear and uttered a few words.

Jiang Ying's fair face blushed upon hearing his words.

Even her neck and ear became red, making her entire face looked as if she had been in a steamer. She didn't dare to raise her head to look at Yue Yang for a long time. Her hands shook as she struggled to find a right place for them. She stood there mindlessly for a long time before she peered at Yue Yang. Upon realizing that he was staring at her, she became even more anxious as she ran into a room, knocking down two vases and one chair in the process...

Just when Yue Yang was thinking that he revealed his idea too early and was preparing to turn in, she peered out from behind the door and spoke in a weak voice. "Wait, let me think about it."

Eh?

There's a door!

Yue Yang was euphoric. Since when did this girl become so open-minded?

If this continues, then maybe he could take this opportunity to contract her? If he could really make her his Guardian Beast, and then his Divine Beast, then he would be more confident about assassinating Ocean Emperor. Most importantly, there might be a chance that he could use this opportunity to practise Body Fusion

and make some improvements. Even if he doesn't level up, it would be nice if he could rank up his inherent skills. Moreover, his Heaven Eyes Divine Vision is in need of a ranking up now. Maybe with a rank up, he could see through all of Ocean Emperor's weaknesses. His Innate Sword Qi was in need of a ranking up too. If this could occur before he consumes the Mother Earth Potion, there might be chances of consecutive ranking ups.

Yue Yang thought through it beautifully, but he didn't expect Jiang Yue to reject him.

An hour had passed and Jiang Ying still had not come out.

That was when he thought that she must have felt too shy. They just got to know each other and now they would have to cultivate together in naked bodies. Even if this Hornless Dragon girl liked and trusted him a lot, she would still be reluctant to take this step!

Yue Yang went over and knocked on the door. He tried to suppress giving off the vibe of a big bad wolf wanting to engulf a little lamb as he spoke softly. "You rest first, we'll talk again tomorrow!"

He said this with the intention of giving Jiang Ying a buffering time.

Just as he turned, the door suddenly opened a little with Jiang Ying hiding behind, speaking in a voice tiny as a mosquito. "Can I... Can I not remove my clothes? We can try, if we really can't level up it's fine, I... I can't do it here, let's go back to my place. If

we leave Fire Island, we can also let down their guard this way. Hai Yingwu had been keeping an eye on us, if we leave now, she won't suspect us anymore. Let's go, we'll return the day after!"

Jiang Ying lowered her head and came out from behind the door.

It was apparent that her cheeks were burning red.

Yue Yang was a little startled. He felt that this Hornless Dragon girl was braver than he thought and she was very decisive, unlike many others who were hesitant and draggy!

Starfish Hotel.

Hai Yingwu who was resting got a shock when she received reports from her subordinate that their target, Princess Ying, was leaving the hotel together with her subordinates.

She was surprised as it seems that her target was going to start acting.

When she was preparing to follow behind, she realised to her shock that Princess Ying wasn't heading towards the targeted Deep Sea Abyss but towards the Teleportation Circle instead. She's leaving? That can't be it, isn't she here for the treasure? Why would she leave? Could it be that all of Hai Yingwu's previous guesses were false?

"Beautiful Princess Ying, could it be that the service of the Fire

Island was unsatisfactory? Why are you leaving now?“ Hai Yingwu quickly acted as if she met Jiang Ying coincidentally as she bowed and greeted her.

“Nope, I’m just a little agitated, I’ll return another time!“ Jiang Ying looked at Yue Yang the drunkard and looked extremely unhappy.

Her acting wasn’t bad too. Women are born with this inherent skill, they don’t even need to learn it.

Hai Yingwu could totally understand Princess Ying’s troubles.

What could be even more annoying than a useless butler getting drunk in the midnight and subsequently falling into the sea and then getting out before entering the wrong room? Jiang Ying is a princess, not a slave. Could it be that she had to serve this drunk butler? Of course not! Hai Yingwu saw that the princess’s hidden anger accumulating like a volcano, she guessed that this useless guy would definitely be granted death penalty once he leaves the Fire Island!

If Princess Ying were to leave now, she wasn’t an enemy who’s here for the treasures but a true guest.

Hai Yingwu bowed apologetically as she felt guilty about her unnecessary doubts. She also felt sorry about wasting the time of others. There were so many people who were coming for the treasures in the first place and they were already experiencing shortage of manpower. With her targeting the wrong person, she

aggravated the issue of manpower shortage. She must have been blind to treat a good man as a thief!

“We wil welcome you back to Fire Island again...”

When Hai Yingwu was bowing, she realised that the perverted Butler actually lifted his hand and pinched her butt secretly. Although she was still smiling on the outside, she wanted to kick him and burst all his testicles. She genuinely welcomed Jiang Ying and hoped that she could visit again. But towards the extremely perverted and annoying butler, she wished to never have to see him again. At the moment when Jiang Ying teleported off, her smile froze as she gritted her teeth and shouted.”Get lost, scam as far as your perverted thoughts go!”

“What did you say?” Yue Yang pretended not to hear. Before teleporting, he looked left and right and realised there’s not a lot of people around. He quickly raised his hands and grabbed onto Hai Yingwu’s huge chest before running to the Teleportation Circle and teleported off with the help of the officer who pretended to not see anything.

“I haven’t met such a scumbag ever in my life!” Hai Yingwu was so angry that she almost cried.

Chapter 461 – Orphan

Once Yue Yang teleported away, he heard Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying snicker under her breath.

She had seen Yue Yang grope Hai Yingwu.

She just pretended that she didn't.

She knew that Yue Yang did not intentionally molest Hai Yingwu, but had only done it out of the need to confuse the enemy. The only thing was that this drama was too realistic, she could not help but find it funny when she recalled Hai Yingwu's pitiful look of having to force out a smile while being groped. At the same time, she was pleased because Hai Yingwu saw her as an enemy and kept tight surveillance of her so this was the perfect revenge!

Tong Tian Tower, Seventh Floor, Old Dragon Residence.

Old Dragon Residence was a scenic hidden territory, a safe area.

There were extremely little carnivorous beasts and only a few herbivorous small animals. These little deers and bunnies have all grown accustomed to the peaceful life in the mountain woods and were not afraid of people at all.

After travelling more than ten miles through the teleportation portal, they arrived in Old Dragon Residence.

This place was where Old Hornless Dragon chose to live in seclusion in his older years. The scenery was beautiful, butterflies flew in pairs and the whole earth was covered in fresh flowers, their fragrance assailing one's nose. Wurm Clan maids and a dozen Spider Witches who had stayed behind to take care of the place hurriedly approached Jiang Ying to greet her when they saw that their mistress was back.

They also saw a human, Yue Yang, who had come along.

While they did their greetings, they could not help but look at Yue Yang to try to figure out his relationship with their mistress.

“When I was young, I lived here with my Grandfather for a very long time. However, most of my time was spent with my maternal grandmother at Spider Valley. Sometimes, she would bring me to play in the human world. Even though I have not been to Soaring Dragon Continent, I have already been to Qi Lan Continent, Ao Jia Continent and also Gu Feng Continent. Those continents are unlike Soaring Dragon Continent and would never allow outsiders to enter, so we faked our identities. I was very happy living with my grandfather and maternal grandmother because they did not care about my cultivation. If I had to live with my mother, that would have been painful, the training would have been extremely strict..... Unfortunately, Mother and Father had gone to the Tenth Floor of the Tong Tian Tower together to uncover the secret of Heaven Realm's Gate. I have not seen them for more than ten years and have no idea how they are now!”

Back at Old Dragon Residence, Jiang Ying led Yue Yang to explore her previous residence, and told him about her previous

experiences.

Yue Yang was secretly delighted.

If a girl was willing to share the secrets of her past with a man, it proved that she had some feelings for him. Otherwise, she would not do so.

He could tell that Jiang Ying this Hornless Dragon was very lonely.

Old Hornless Dragon had passed away early because he could not recover from the heavy injury, which was coupled with poor health and aging. At that time, Jiang Ying was still a young child.

After that, Jiang Ying went to live with her maternal grandmother Spider Empress and had a happy childhood.

Those happy days ended when Spider Empress went missing.

Young Hornless Dragon was only left with the option of returning to Old Dragon Residence to live with her parents and undergo the extremely vigorous training. However, not long after, her Mother and Father went to explore Heaven Realm's Gate together, and had not come back in more than ten years. Jiang Ying had to live with her aunt. When her aunt got married ten years ago, she had to live alone while constantly travelling between Old Dragon Residence and Spider Valley, fulfilling the duties of Spider Empress for her maternal Grandmother and also

the role of Hornless Dragon here.

In her lonely days, she cultivated diligently to achieve her goal of becoming a Divine Beast.

Until she met Yue Yang.

She had just made her first male friend, who was not even the same dragon species as her, but a human!

“Your parents look very powerful, you do not have to worry about their safety.” Based on three points, he could tell the Jiang Ying’s parents were remarkable. One, was their bloodline. Jiang Ying’s father was the son of Old Hornless Dragon and Golden Dragon Queen, while her mother was the descendant of Silver Dragon Lord and Spider Empress. All of these 4 bloodlines were impressive. Second, the place they have chosen to go to was the Tenth Floor of the Tong Tian Tower. Unless you had the ability Stronger than a Level 9 Innate, you would definitely die. Furthermore, even their daughter was a Level Seven Innate which only means that Jiang Ying’s parents were definitely amazing people who had ability beyond Innate Level Nine. Third, was the special treasure, the Black Dragon Armor, that her parents made for her. The Black Dragon Armor was very heavy, it could strengthen the body and increase the speed of cultivation without harming the body. The fact that even Yue Yang wanted to study this Black Dragon Armor after he had obtained the knowledge passed onto him by the tragic guy’s mother and Ghost Genius Yue Gong’s Puppet Encyclopedia proved its value.

Taking a thousand steps back to talk about it.

Let alone the secret law contained in the Black Dragon Armor, this was made of authentic black dragon skin. In this world, how many Innates could wear a real Black Dragon Armor?

Even though there were many 'Black Dragon Armor' sold in the Treasure Store, they were fakes made from Wurm skins and not the black dragon skins. They were simply black armor made from dragon skin. While they had the same name, they were two different things.

When Jiang Ying reached the front of a room, she suddenly blushed and stopped moving.

Her pale green eyes peeked at Yue Yang from under her violet hair and said shyly: "This, this is my room. There is nothing much to see....." While her mouth said that, in actual fact she really wanted Yue Yang to go in and have a look. Due to a maiden's reservation, she was too embarrassed to openly invite him in and instead could only hint implicitly in hopes that she could arouse Yue Yang's curiosity.

Of course Yue Yang knew what she was thinking. He laughed and deliberately teased: "Since there is nothing much to see, let us look around elsewhere!"

This statement made Jiang Ying's heart drop.

Why was this guy like this.....

Just when she was stomped her foot silently, she suddenly saw Yue Yang quickly reach out and pushed the door to enter her room. When she realised that he was teasing her deliberately, the anger in her heart turned into surprise and shyness immediately. While she was embarrassed by how well he could see through her, she was also quite happy about his ‘deceptive behaviour’. He was very clever and understood her hint, completely unlike a dense blockhead. Jiang Ying stretched her hand out to stop him slightly out of embarrassment, as if she did not want Yue Yang to go it. In actual fact she was just acting coy to indicate that she did not actively invite him, but rather it was him that broke in like an uncivilised man.

“Do not enter, how can you be like this! There is nothing to see inside!” Of course Jiang Ying could not stop Yue Yang, she was just trying to slightly protect her pride.

“It smells so good!” Once Yue Yang entered, he smelled the delicate fragrance of a virgin.

Actually even on Hornless Dragon’s body there was this sort of faint delicate fragrance. It was just concealed by the Black Dragon Armor that had the special function of being able to suppress presence. If it was anyone other than Yue Yang, that person would not have been able to smell that fragrance. It seemed that such as a way Jiang Ying’s parents was protecting her. One must know, many beasts track someone down based on their smell. Since that Black Dragon Armor was able to completely conceal smell, this suppressed presence was the best defense against monsters a superior sense of smell.

It was precisely because of this that Jiang Ying's Innate ability could be hidden so well that an ordinary warrior would not be able to tell.

Hearing Yue Yang's sincere praises, Jiang Ying's jade face turned red.

She ran in quickly in front of Yue Yang and quickly hid all of the items she did not want Yue Yang to see into the cupboard.

Actually they were nothing more than her soft toys such as teddy bears, long eared rabbits and some childish clothings, pink pajamas. Yue Yang could see that she was still a child inside. While she has grown up, she still missed her childhood.

Maybe it was because she had been too lonely and too short of her family's pampering!

Yue Yang did not practice Body Fusion with Jiang Ying immediately, but instead played with her for the whole day.

Childish games such as the swing were Jiang Ying's favourite. She loved being on the swings even though she could already fly. Even so, when Yue Yang pushed her into the skies while she was seated on the swing, she would still shout excitedly in delight. She also particularly enjoyed cooking, but most part she was only making trouble. With Yue Yang accompanying her, she even wanted to make a giant flatbread. Regrettably she failed, and had to split it into a dozen of them. This made her regretful for the

entire morning.

In the afternoon, Yue Yang accompanied her swimming.

She was most proud of her victory over Yue Yang in a race, and having stood on the shore leaning over and saying to Yue Yang who had just came out of the water: “I am about to doze off from the wait, can you be a little slower?”

That night, she could not bear to go to sleep.

Even though she did not say it, she really wanted Yue Yang to accompany her longer. She averted her eyes and did not dare to look at Yue Yang directly.

“Bedtime stories? I do not do such foolish things, I even want to look for someone to tell them to me!” Yue Yang was smart enough to be the one who gave her an option.

“Fine, then you have to act as the child, I will be the parent and tell you bedtime stories!” Sure enough, hearing that made Jiang Ying full of zeal. She pulled Yue Yang and pushed him onto her bed before pulling out a book from the bookshelf. She pretended to be serious in telling Yue Yang a bedtime story to coax him to sleep. She did not realise what she had done. Maybe it was unconsciously, but she did not mind Yue Yang lying on her bed.

“Snore.....” Yue Yang fell asleep immediately after laying down, holding a sign that said ‘Please do not talk to someone who is

asleep'. This move made Jiang Ying breathless from laughter. She fell on Yue Yang's body and hit his chest with her small fists, crying from laughter.

Only after a while did she realise how flirtatious their position was.

She looked up at Yue Yang, slightly embarrassed.

When she realised that he had his eyes closed, thinking of who knows what, she lowered her head to listen to his heartbeat.

Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying suddenly sighed, and said extremely softly: "In the future, after we defeat Ocean Emperor, there will be no one to talk to me again. I will go back to how I was before this, a lonely and helpless orphan..... Even though I have parents, they do not care about me anymore....."

Yue Yang reached out and stroked her purple hair: "I am actually just like you. I am too an orphan!"

Jiang Ying jolted, and raised her head. She looked at Yue Yang with her pale green eyes, just like a wandering little kitten who found a companion.

She did not say anything, but only hugged Yue Yang tightly.

Two huge drops of tears rolled down between her eyelashes silently.

They seemed like tears of joy, but also seemed like tears of empathy..... Even Jiang Ying could not explain her own confused emotions. She only knew that what she felt was like she had finally seen a little light in the darkness of her loneliness. A companion had appeared before her – Yue Yang. She was never going to be alone again.

The orphan finally had a companion.

Since they were both orphans, why not accompany each other?

Jiang Ying cried silently for a while, and then suddenly smiled through her tears. Her tear-stained face was beautiful, and her cherry lips could not help but curve up in a smile: “I see, turns out you are an orphan! Fine, I will take care of you from now on! I am very good at taking care of others, you will be great if you just listen to me!”

Yue Yang was not quick enough to take back the hand that was stroking her hair.

Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying suddenly grabbed his hand boldly and placed it on her waist such that he was also hugging her.

Perhaps it is because they were separated by the quilt, it did not feel real. She then slipped into the bed, and her hands were just like baby octopuses, hugging Yue Yang. Her body was tightly pressed against his, her breasts pushing against his chest. Yet she was not shy at all, her heart was filled with happiness. Since her

childhood, she has not experienced such a warm embrace in so long.

This embrace gave her a sense of security that was unlike the warm embraces of her family in her memory.

The masculinity that she has never felt before saturated his body. In his embrace, there was an indescribable feeling of joy in her heart.

Maybe this was the legendary happiness!

Chapter 462 – To Be Born Anew, With A New Body

Jiang Ying never would have thought she would ever hug a man to sleep. Moreover, it was felt so natural that she was not even embarrassed.

Even her body and mind were at ease.

After a night of sleep.

She still could not understand why, but she only knew that hugging him and letting him hug her had made her body develop dependence on him. She could not bear to let go.

Slowly, she felt a natural, comfortable and comforting feeling that she had never felt before.

Oh right, she also felt blessed!

Her heart was no longer lonely because he was by her side. A never before felt contentment filled her heart.

“Hm.....”

Jiang Ying yawned and was about to go back to sleep, she suddenly realise that a passionate hand had slipped into her clothes and was massaging her breasts without a care in the world.

This hand was extremely skilled, and had no regard for Jiang Ying's reaction. Only now did Hornless Dragon realise that sleeping in his arms was totally different from how she slept in the parent's and grandparents' arms when when she was young. She initially had wanted to jump up from her breasts being touched, but this touch felt a bit strange. This was not a sinister kind of touching, but a natural caressing..... When Jiang Ying looked up, she saw that Yue Yang was still deep in sleep. She grumbled: "Even if he is sound asleep, this guy is still a huge pervert!"

Jiang Ying was about to melt from the touches, and quickly pulled that naughty hand out.

If he touched her any further, she would not be able to stand it.

It was unbearable.....

Her breath was still uneven.

She then realised that the hand was creeping towards her butt, and had began exploring her bottoms.

Hornless Dragon would not stand such an attack. She quickly grabbed the hand in hers and intended to push it back to his side. On second thought, she felt that her body was not melting anymore and felt strangely empty. Instead she rested that hand on her lower back. It felt better that she still laid in his embrace!

As for him touching her breasts in his sleep, Jiang Ying felt that

even Yue Yang himself was unaware. It was his natural instinct.

Who knew how many naughty things he must have done to develop such an instinct.

Jiang Ying wanted to bite Yue Yang's sleeping handsome face to release the pent up anger in her heart.

“Xiao Luo Hua, let me have another touch. “ Yue Yang was having intimate time with Luo Hua City Mistress in his dreams. He even pinned Hornless Dragon under him as he turned over. Hornless Dragon was shocked. She felt a strange thing hitting against her privates. It was burning. She was in torture. Most frustrating of all was that even though this guy was pinning her, he was still calling the name of his woman.

“You are so heavy, go to the side!” Jiang Ying was about to melt from the intensity, and was only able to push Yue Yang away with all of her strength.

“Hmm.....” Yue Yang's breath was calm, he was still sound asleep.

“Sleeping with this guy is not safe at all, so unbearable!” Even though Jiang Ying was complaining, she was unwilling to let go. She only reached out to gently pinch him, but because she was worried about waking him up, she did not even bear to use strength. After that even Jiang Ying felt that she was too forgiving to him.

Her breath was still uneven.

Jiang Ying suppressed her beating heart, and brought her hand down to explore.

Secretly, she slipped her hand into his pants. She closed her eyes in embarrassment and began to touch around in curiosity..... Her whole body was shaking, her thighs closed together and her calf muscles tightened, her toes were so nervous that they almost cramped up.

After quite some time did she pull her hand back.

She then turned around and hid into the blanket extremely shyly. Even though she was not a hundred percent clear nor did she see it with her own eyes, she already learned of many secrets.

In that moment, even without anyone telling her, she had understood many things that she had not before. The thing that her aunt told her about last time could be his thing entering for a woman to have children. However, his thing might really be too big, could it even go in? If they really did the deed, maybe he would know what to do. Jiang Ying's imagination ran wild. She brought the hand that touched him to her nose and took a whiff. There was a strange smell left on her hand. It was very faint but it was very unique as it gave off the feeling of manliness and attraction.

That was the smell of his thing?

Jiang Ying was very embarrassed and hid under the blanket. Her head was a mess.

That burning sensation she felt when touching him flashed through her mind again and again.

Huge, burning, manly, high-spirited, that kind of feeling was really strange. Thinking back on it now only made her even more shy.

The Body Fusion he mentioned, the last step, it could not be that they have to do that thing?

Not good!

Hornless Dragon suddenly remember something and her whole body shook. There was only few ten hours now to the birth of Mother Earth Potion, but she and Yue Yang have not started training at all. In the day, they had spent too much time playing while at night they had spent all their time sleeping. They have wasted too much time. If they were to wait till they woke up the next morning, they would only have a few hours left, how were they going to train? How could they be able to upgrade fast enough to face Ocean Emperor?

At this thought, Jiang Ying immediately sat up.

Yue Yang woke up from his sleep and asked her: “What’s wrong?”

“I did not touch you, ah no no..... I’m saying, we have to start training immediately, otherwise we will run out of time!” Jiang Ying pulled Yue Yang up urgently: “Get up quickly, now is not the time to be sleeping!”

“Oh?” Yue Yang did not understand, didn’t they already waste dozens of hours in the day? Why was it that she suddenly thought of training?

She was just like a primary school student who played for the whole summer vacation, to only end up rushing her holiday homework on the last few days.

Seeing Jiang Ying’s urgent look, Yue Yang wanted to laugh.

Of course, he was rather delighted to see such a change in the Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying.

Since she requested it herself, it would be much more effective that him thinking of ways to encourage her to train. Now that she had relieved the burden in her heart, success was in sight. Yue Yang bundled Jiang Ying up in the blanket and carried her: “We should go my Grimoire World. If you levelled up, there would be many strange sights that would not be suitable for others to see. “ His words effectively dispelled the distress in her heart. Being away from the eyes of others was definitely preferred to alarming the servants. Even though the maids had seen her grow up, it was still better to keep such matters under wraps and not let them know.

The Grimoire World.

There was no one there since Luo Hua City Mistress , Sickly Beauty and Phoenix Fairy Beauty were all at Tian Luo Palace's Mirage accompanying Fourth Mother.

However, even though there was no one, the beasts were still here.

Bloody Queen and Barbarian Cow Shadow were still here!

Jiang Ying who was already dizzy and numb from nervousness had no mind to sense them, and did not realise that the beasts were present. In fact she did not even think about them.

Her heart was palpitating because she thought that they would have to take off their clothing to do the deed to train for Body Fusion.

Yue Yang then explained to her the cultivation method and how she could cooperate.

Only then did Jiang Ying know that there was no need to do that thing for the first part. That reduced the majority of the tension in the instant. She nodded her head to let him know she understood. Actually the way for her to cooperate was very simple. Jiang Ying mainly had to relax and let Yue Yang lead in the whole process of cultivation. She cannot be scared and back out halfway in order to

avoid affecting the results of the cultivation.

She also had to use energy to control her spirit gate, which was simple.

That was a piece of cake for a Hornless Dragon who had reached Innate Level Seven. Moreover, someone else was leading the process.

“Understood!” Jiang Ying felt really dumb, if she knew it was like this earlier she would have started training once they got back, her awkwardness was such a waste of time!

It began with the touching of palms and Yue Yang transferred energy into her body.

The energy then flowed back to him. In this cycle, Innate Qi continued to expand her blood channels. Since her blood channels has already been linked, this process of Body Fusion led to impressive results quickly, and entered the second stage in no time. Now it was getting more intimate, their bodies were in an embrace. As for this, Jiang Ying was not pressured in any way since she has already slept with him in his arms.

Even more Innate Qi flowed into her body. She felt her energy change and continued to upgrade.

She was delighted.

Ah the end of the second stage, she readily coordinated her moves with him. When he kissed her, she did not hesitate at all. Instead, she stood on her tiptoes and received his kiss..... only until he kissed her lips did she realise that they were kissing and that was her first kiss. However, that wonderful feeling and the Innate Qi that was delivered from his mouth made her unable to resist. Rather Jiang Ying hugged him and sucked with her might, and kissed him intensely by instinct..... other than Innate Qi, the Nirvana Flame also burned in Yue Yang's palms, purifying her energy while purifying her body!

Immense pain made Jiang Ying almost cry out.

However, she knew that in order for the body to be reborn, it must undergo this fierce purification. The pain was in fact part of the process.

Their clothes have already disappeared, their two bodies were skin to skin. Yue Yang's body continued to refine the energy in Jiang Ying's body while Nirvana Flame continued to purify it.

Jiang Ying was suffering terribly as if hovering between life and death. Her body could not take it, and returned to her original form.

While her upper body stayed the same, but from her torso downwards had turned into the body of a Hornless Dragon, on her back were also a pair of gold wings.

Below her butt, her two legs have turned into a small and

exquisite silver dragon's tail. It extended slowly to a several meters long. The black fins on her tail, her gold wings and silver scales all melted from the Nirvana Flame and were all instantly reborn.

The immense pain caused Jiang Ying to wrap her tail around Yue Yang's body tightly. Her dragon wings were also powerlessly trembling.

If Yue Yang had not supplemented her with his Innate Qi, she would most likely have died in a few minutes. Under Nirvana Flame's refining, she might have been reduced to her soul and the Dragon Crystal in her body. However Yue Yang's Innate Qi replenished her energy immediately so that the potential in her body was continuously stimulated. Each time Jiang Ying was at the hardest part, Yue Yang dripped Holy Dew into her mouth so that she could instantly recover.

After an unknown period of time.

Jiang Ying realised the pain was getting lighter and lighter. Finally, there was no pain at all. She instead felt a enlightening refreshness from being reborn.

When she opened her eyes, she realised her skin had become whiter and tender by ten times, just like jade.

Her entire dragon tail looked as if it was carved from white jade. It was beautiful.

Her wings had become crystal-like. Other than the slight dark grey outlining the skeleton in the wings, it looked completely different from before. Filled with energy and with a perfect body, Jiang Ying immediately realised – she has been reborn. Even though she had not levelled up to Innate Level Eight, she was only a fine line away from breaking through. If she trained, she would most likely breakthrough immediately.

“Is this really me? My new tail is so beautiful, just like jade!” Jiang Ying could not suppress her excitement and kissed Yue Yang repeatedly to thank him for giving her a new and perfect body. Her dragon tail swung in delight, just like a child who received her most beloved toy.

“Let us continue and breakthrough to Innate Level Eight in one go!” Actually when Jiang Ying was in pain, Yue Yang could have tried to seize her with his shadow with a high success rate, but when he thought about it, he realised that such matters should not be rushed. In the future, if she truly did not want to leave his side, she would take the initiative to ask for a contract. There is no need to leave a shadow in her heart.

“Okay!” Jiang Ying nodded her head in agreement readily. She then immediately understood to go a step further would mean even more intimate contact.

Maybe, they would even do that.....

Although she was shy, she did not have any regrets.

Instead she bravely changed back to her human body, turning her dragon tail back into those slender long legs.

Chapter 463 – Hornless Dragon Levelled Up To A Divine Beast

As they moved on to the next step of cultivation, let alone Jiang Ying, even Yue Yang who was skilled in the Body Fusion process, was very serious.

What Yue Yang wanted was not only for the Hornless Dragon to breakthrough to Innate Level 8.

But also, for her to first level down to Innate Level 6 or even Level 5 before breaking through to Level 8 directly. Jiang Ying would then receive the maximum benefit from levelling up multiple levels. If she did not do this, she would only level up a single level and not have gained much benefit.

With this method, her powers would increase tremendously after levelling up.

Her Inherent Skills would advance by leaps and bounds.

She might even successfully contract a Summoning Grimoire to level up directly to become a Divine Beast.

Yue Yang guessed that there would be a limited amount of the Mother Earth Potion. If Jiang Ying could level up to become a Divine Beast, she would no longer need the potion as she would have enough energy to help herself breakthrough.

Innate Invisible Sword Qi Level 6.

It was the realm Yue Yang wanted to breakthrough to. However, it was definitely not what he ultimately longed for. With the Mother Earth Potion, he wanted to level up to Level 7 Innate Invisible Sword Qi, or even higher.

Yue Yang would have already achieved Level 6 Innate Invisible Sword Qi a long time ago if he hadn't cultivated the Nirvana Flames repeatedly multiple times.

Now, as he cultivated, Yue Yang felt himself getting closer to Level 6. It was like his energy had pooled and could erupt anytime.

The longer he cultivated at lower levels, the better his foundations were and the more things he mastered. But at times when he must level up, Yue Yang would also not let it slip by. Whenever he makes a breakthrough, he would achieve a new enlightenment. To breakthrough to the new realm, Yue Yang would not hesitate to cultivate the same level over again. Moreover, as he was preparing to attack and kill the Super Ranker Ocean Emperor, it would be best if he could breakthrough to a new Realm.

Yue Yang knew that he would receive much more in return if he helped Jiang Ying breakthrough to Innate Level 8 and level up into a Divine Beast.

Her dragon energy would help him achieve a deeper enlightenment in his Level 6 Innate Invisible Sword Qi during

Body Fusion.

Kiss, caress.

Yue Yang did the same things to Jiang Ying as he had done with Xue Wu Xia, Princess Qian Qian, Sickly Beauty and Luo Hua Mistress during Body Fusion. Despite having helped Yue Yang cultivate Body Fusion for months, Yue Yu had not yet progressed to this stage. At least, she would never allow Yue Yang to do it as long as she was in her right mind.

Jiang Ying remained passive in her actions.

She felt shy, happy, embarrassed and afraid at the same time. Although she did not resist Yue Yang's advancements, she stood by, not knowing what to do and could only accept everything passively.

This was also not what she wanted but she was just totally clueless, as it was her first time experiencing all these.

Luckily, the Body Fusion process, which was entirely led by Yue Yang, could be carried out even with minimal cooperation so long as there is no intent to resist.

At the start, Jiang Ying felt really embarrassed.

She looked on as Yue Yang kissed a path down her body from her breasts, at a total loss... Pleasure and excitement coursed through

her veins and she desperately wanted to fondle and kiss Yue Yang but her nerves and shame stopped her. While Yue Yang kissed her gently and laid her down on the bed, all Jiang Ying could do was to cover her face and to clamp her thighs tightly together. Her legs were awkwardly stiff as she laid still, submitting her whole body to him.

“Relax, empty your mind, feel the flow of energy...” Yue Yang could gobble Jiang Ying up right now and she would not resist him.

However, possessing Jiang Ying was not the most important thing at the moment.

Instead, the crucial thing was for her to level up.

To cultivate with the pure body of a young maiden was the fastest way. There was still a long way to go before her breakthrough and to take her at such a early time would cause her to be only able to level up once.

Since she would eventually be his, why should he rush?

After Yue Yang’s reassurance, Jiang Ying visibly relaxed. Her stiff body softened and she drowned in pleasure and happiness as Yue Yang kissed her body. She let Yue Yang kiss and caress her burning naked body as she passionately hugged him. She trembled and let out a sweet whimper at Yue Yang’s every movement. Her ragged breath and moans turned into an incomparably moving song...

After 10 minutes, she totally lost herself as she embraced Yue Yang passionately.

She only responded to all the love he showed her body, her previous reservations and nervousness were tossed far away.

Her body was entirely under Yue Yang's control as she single-mindedly focused on the pleasure he gave her, the world long forgotten.

Unconsciously, her powers gradually condensed and her level continuously reduced under the suppression of the Nirvana Flame and Innate Qi. From Level 7 she levelled down to Level 6. Another 10 minutes and she further levelled down to Level 5... If this happened ordinarily, she would have been extremely shocked, however, she had complete faith in Yue Yang and had since submitted herself completely to him.

Heaven's Fury Fire Lotus, Arctic Ice Frost and Deathly Purple Lightning emitted from Yue Yang's body and formed a giant force field.

The Summoning Grimoire floated out by itself and the light halo shaped of the beast 'World' expanded to a 60 metre radius.

Innate Qi flowed from Yue Yang's mouth to Jiang Ying's and it coursed through her body before returning to Yue Yang's body from her dantian. Contrarily, the Nirvana Flame entered at her tailbone and flowed up her body before it flowed back to Yue Yang

at her chest area. The Nirvana Flame morphed into a incomparably magnificent fire phoenix which flew through their bodies repeatedly. Jiang Ying's body trembled violently at every passing as her powers and realm broke through multiple levels.

Her powers exploded from an Innate Level 5 to a Level 6 and then to her original Level 7.

Finally, mysterious lights shimmered like a rainbow.

A pair of dragon wings and a dragon tail appeared on Jiang Ying's body. They held onto Yue Yang's body tightly as she cried out from the pain and happiness of her breakthrough through multiple levels to a new Realm.

In the moment, Yue Yang could not locate the Bronze Grimoire so he conjured a Silver Grimoire urgently and pressed Jiang Ying's small hand on it, using his Innate Qi to help her contract a Summoning Grimoire. When the contracting failed to succeed as her breakthrough was ending, Yue Yang bit his tongue in desperation and blood splattered on the Silver Grimoire.

He had no idea why he did what he did. Maybe, it was to increase the chances of success.

Perhaps, it was knowledge inherited from his mother that allowed him to act subconsciously in that moment.

Or perhaps it was the Heavenly Sword Goddess commanding Yue

Yang's subconscious... He felt these were all possible explanations but he did not spend much time pondering it. Instead, he focused wholeheartedly on transferring Innate Qi to Jiang Ying in order to help her contract a Summoning Grimoire.

This was the best opportunity.

If she failed to contract today, it would then be such a pity.

Finally, bright light rose from where Jiang Ying's hand touched the Grimoire. The piercing gold light blossomed and formed an image of a Female Hornless Dragon in the sky. The pillar of light shot up into the sky, circled around, before it returned and entered Jiang Ying's body in a flash. The tail that was originally coiled around Yue Yang suddenly disappeared into bright lights and once again transformed into her flawless white legs, clasped on Yue Yang's waist.

The dragon wings on her back shrunk rapidly and grew delicate.

They became a pair of gorgeous crystal dragon wings that continued to wrap around Yue Yang.

Jiang Ying hugged Yue Yang tightly as she fled in and out of consciousness while levelling up. The new Divine Beast Realm affected her wisdom but what scared her more was the realisation that she had some sort of life connection to Yue Yang. Countless information popped up in her head and she could not sort out the muddle in her mind.

The pleasure she felt in her body was also one reason she could not think clearly.

She felt Yue Yang's spear pushing against her tender petal. That kind of feeling made her shudder from head to toe. It felt unbearable but it felt pleasurable at the same time.

It was as if her body sought that feeling automatically as her hands, feet and wings held onto Yue Yang tightly. It was like her body wanted Yue Yang inside her immediately, to truly become one with her...

Yue Yang felt the same way. He could feel that all that was in his way was a thin veil.

That, signifies the chastity of the body.

All Yue Yang had to do was to move forward and Jiang Ying would truly become his woman... Robbing her of her chastity like that, she would probably not be able to level up like Luo Hua Mistress and the rest had, since she had just levelled up. Moreover, he no longer had enough Innate Qi to help her level up... Forget it, none of this matters at this stage!

Yue Yang could not hold it back anymore and decided to take this Hornless Dragon.

As Yue Yang was about to attack, Jiang Ying's body became a ball of light and floated into his Summoning Grimoire.

Light emanated from the Grimoire.

The pages flipped.

The naked Yue Yang jumped up at the sight and sweated profusely.

Turns out that he had unknowingly contracted Jiang Ying... What made him most anxious was that this was unlike anything he had seen before when he contracted Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man, Bloody Queen Red and Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen Duo Duo... Could it be that his blood that had splattered onto the Summoning Grimoire when Jiang Ying was contracting it, had this effect?

Still, having settled this Hornless Dragon allowed Yue Yang to breathe a sigh of relief.

Of course, this did not refer to making her his woman. That would need at least a few more seconds to work. This, referred to his Guardian Beasts. Yue Yang realised that his Guardian Beasts had all appeared carelessly and were inexplicably contracted. Without warning, they all end up as his Guardian Beasts under the circumstances when he was totally unprepared. Jiang Ying was also contracted successfully, without any mental preparations, she had become his Guardian Beast.

Yue Yang couldn't understand.

Forget it, whatever it was, it was a good thing. He could always ask the Heavenly Sword Goddess. Maybe she had been helping him all this while.

Yue Yang decided to that he did not want to go in depth into this problem right now.

On a closer look, he noticed that the Hornless Dragon was still asleep. She looked to be still confused yet her energy continued to rise as her powers of Divine Beast and Level 8 Innate were still in the process of merging. At the same time, she had to deal with the changes as a Guardian Beast. All the power she received after breaking through had placed her into the muddled state she is in now. He reckoned that she would not be ready to fight until some time after.

Being able to contract her was the biggest satisfaction to Yue Yang and whether she participated in battle or not was not what he cared about.

The question of killing the Ocean Emperor was never Yue Yang's greatest concern.

At the most, the Ocean Emperor could be killed some other time.

The only thing that troubled Yue Yang now was that he had almost broke through to Level 6 Innate Invisible Sword Qi. But unfortunately, Jiang Ying had fallen into slumber right at that moment.

What should he do since Phoenix Fairy Beauty and Luo Hua Mistress were both not by his side?

In a flash, a shadow glided down from the sky and Bloody Queen Red flung herself into Yue Yang's embrace. Her face burned: "Let Red help master level up to a new Realm, Red has learnt how..."

Chapter 464 – Breakthrough, Yue Yang Levelled Up To A New Realm!

Yue Yang was shocked by Bloody Queen Red's forwardness.

When did she become so human-like?

Yue Yang thought that she would require a period of time for her humanization to completely mature. He never expected both her body and mind to have already fully matured. Yue Yang examined her with his Heaven Eyes Divine Vision and saw that Bloody Queen Red was practically, and possibly, even more perfect than an ordinary woman. Bloody Queen Red had made rapid progress and improved by leaps and bounds in her humanization.

The rapid development of her body was explainable but what about her mind?

One had to be aware that other Beasts usually needed more than dozens to two hundred years to develop a human body: the development of their minds would have further required a few more hundreds of years before they could be truly humanised.

How long had Bloody Queen Red only been contracted for?

Yue Yang could not understand how she improved at such a shocking speed. Compared to Barbarian Cow Shadow, she humanised much faster so much that she had surpassed Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen.

“Master and Mistress has taught Red a lot...” Bloody Queen Red lowered her head shyly. In fact, the first reason for her rapid improvement were Yue Yang’s abnormal powers; also, it was the competition with her peers which allowed her intelligence to increase greatly. There had been competition from Barbarian Cow Shadow followed by Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen and then Spirit of Earth Fire. With all this competition that levelled up rapidly around her, there was no way for Bloody Queen Red to not work harder and mature faster so that she will not fall behind.

The greatest influence was Yue Yang’s Body Fusion skill.

First, when he did it with the other women, Bloody Queen Red was able to learn the emotions and techniques of a human female. This resulted in her rapid progress.

After that, it had been the appearance of Phoenix Fairy Beauty’s Guardian Beast, Charm Demon Queen, and the appearance of the Hornless Dragon.

Charm Demon Queen was not only powerful but had also served Yue Yang together with Phoenix Fairy Beauty. Her actions were the best enlightenment for Bloody Queen Red and they opened up a door of possibilities for Bloody Queen Red.

Also, this made her realise that she could also do it.

Bloody Queen Red was further threatened by the presence of the Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying.

At the very least, Charm Demon Queen was still Phoenix Fairy Beauty's Guardian Beast. Jiang Ying however, had become Yue Yang's Guardian Beast and will now always be with Yue Yang. If Jiang Ying was able to walk ahead of Bloody Queen Red, then Bloody Queen Red would have a lowered status in Yue Yang's heart... Competitiveness, demonstration and feeling threatened, these three caused an earth-shattering revolution in Bloody Queen Red's mind, allowing her to attain unbelievable progress.

From a being a Beast, Bloody Queen Red took a sudden, huge step towards becoming a human.

It was a step that hundreds of millions of Beasts could not achieve in their entire lifetime. To Bloody Queen Red, it had only taken her a few short days to step out.

"Don't worry, Red, you'll always be my irreplaceable and beloved Bloody Queen." Yue Yang had sensed Bloody Queen Red's feelings and he lifted her face to land a soft kiss on her lips.

"Yes." Tears flowed down Bloody Queen Red's face upon hearing Yue Yang's words.

All her worries these few days disappeared instantly.

The burden in her heart was lightened and lifted. In that moment, she felt blessed to know that she had a special place in Yue Yang's heart. Even if Yue Yang had many different Beasts around him, there was the favoured Lamia Loli, the loyalest

Barbarian Cow Shadow and Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen with all her transformations, Bloody Queen Red still remained special to him...

Bloody Queen Red was touched and embraced Yue Yang emotionally, burying her face in his chest.

Hot tears flowed down her face.

She then suddenly lifted her tear-stained face, looked at Yue Yang and nodded her head determinedly: “Red will definitely work hard in future!”

She went on to kiss Yue Yang passionately, Returning his love with a passionate kiss.

They continued with Body Fusion.

Indeed, the same method of simultaneous cultivation when used on Red, produced totally different results.

Jiang Ying had been passive, afraid to move and scared that she would affect Yue Yang since she was clueless about opposite sex relationships. She had been very nervous and did not loosen up until she lost herself in the moment. Red was different, she had seen Yue Yang cultivating Body Fusion with Luo Hua Mistress and Phoenix Fairy Beauty many times before and had even seen him in bed with them, as such, she knew how to complement Yue Yang's Body Fusion cultivation.

There was a complete difference between cooperation and non-cooperation.

Although the end could be reached without cooperation, with mutual understanding, the effects of the cultivation of Body Fusion would be doubled.

It was just like the difference between Xue Wu Xia and Yue Yu. Xue Wu Xia levelled up quickly since she was able to coordinate perfectly with Yue Yang when they practiced. When Princess Qian Qian saw them she was also envious. On the other hand, Yue Yu only cultivated Body Fusion with Yue Yang since she knew that her gentle energy was helpful to him. She had to help him level up but she remained passive during cultivation and held back whenever there were extreme movements involved, thus, she levelled up at a slower rate than Xue Wu Xia.

Although Yue Yu seemed like she was improving rapidly to the outside world, her progress was really still considered to be slow when compared to that of Xue Wu Xia.

Red completely opened up to Yue Yang.

Although their bodies were not joined, she was already at the final stage of the couples' cultivation with Yue Yang.

Yue Yang did not push Red down immediately because he felt that he was just about to level up. If he had levelled up during the process, there was no way to predict how it might affect Bloody

Queen Red and he did not want to take the risk.

Moreover, if the union of the bodies to happen while he makes a breakthrough, there may be unthinkable effects to him. For example, the Hornless Dragon was reduced to her current muddled state because she had levelled up too much and the impact of breaking through Realms had forced her to hibernate. If the same thing were to happen to Yue Yang, his plan to kill the Emperor of the Ocean would fail.

Also, what Yue Yang wanted the most was for Bloody Queen Red to enjoy the process when he pushes her down. He had wanted it to be a beautiful moment for her instead of it just being a tool for him to improve himself.

It would be the greatest reward to Bloody Queen Red for her humanisation.

Bloody Queen Red hung upside down and imitated her mistress, sucking on Yue Yang's spear.

Yue Yang was drawing support from her powers and combining it with his nearly exploding Innate Qi to rush towards Level 6 of Innate Invisible Sword Qi!

The shockwaves from the soundless explosion blasted Bloody Queen Red away in an instant. She was miraculously unhurt while everything within a 5 metre radius around Yue Yang had become dust, even the space had shattered. The Nirvana Flame on Yue Yang's body formed a giant flame pillar that shot high into the sky

while the Nirvana Flame Wings on his back carried him up through the heart of the fire pillar.

The Sword Qi shooting out from Yue Yang's fingers covered the sky and every sword cut through space.

The strongest of them all could even cut through the void.

A magnificent fire phoenix took shape from the Nirvana Flames and swooped down from the sky with Yue Yang on its back. In a split second, the entire Grimoire World shook and everything trembled.

Boom.

The fire phoenix brought Yue Yang down to the ground with an explosion and returned into Yue Yang's body immediately. However, Yue Yang remained rooted to the deep hole in the ground. He bent over and his Nirvana Flame Wings shot 10 metres into the sky.

Yue Yang then straightened up, raised his hands and shouted 'ha'.

The entire Grimoire World rocked violently.

A thousand metre tall image of a golden giant that was the splitting image of Yue Yang grew from his body. It mimicked Yue Yang's actions and the sky of the Grimoire World felt as if it was

bursting under the pressure while deep footprints appeared on the ground. Bright light emitted from Yue Yang's body and the Summoning Grimoire floated out. 'World' continued to absorb the energy which Yue Yang radiated, the halo of light then expanded from 60 meters to 80 meters.

Bloody Queen Red screamed as her body was also bathed in the bright light and her energy continued to increase, making her body more perfect.

Only a little more was needed for her to breakthrough.

At the latest, Bloody Queen Red would breakthrough the next time they cultivated together.

Yue Yang wanted to continue his punches but Xiao Wen Li suddenly appeared out of nowhere.

Her six tiny hands held on to his fist.

She looked at him pleadingly with her big black eyes.

Instead of using her Binding Chains Inherent Skills on Yue Yang, Xiao Wen Li faced the still delirious Yue Yang who was still engulfed in the new Realm. She would rather get hurt than to hurt him.

"Howl!" Yue Yang reacted instinctively and a hand shot out to grab Xiao Wen Li by her throat while the other hand prepared to

punch. Xiao Wen Li was not intimidated and still held onto his arm tightly. In an instant, the golden light in Yue Yang's eyes subsided and his eyes became clear once again. A sweet smile broke out on Xiao Wen Li's face at the sight, her eyes curved into a crescent moon shape.

“Hehe!” She did it. She successfully called out to Yue Yang's consciousness with her soul.

“Precious darling, don't ever do that again, what if I had hurt you!” Yue Yang released his grip hurriedly after he regained consciousness. He pulled her in for a hug and kissed her fiercely, caressing her tiny head as pain tugged at his heartstrings. It was such a close call, he had almost lost control and hurt her.

“Ah...” Xiao Wen Li shook her to to show that it was no big deal. Grabbing Yue Yang's face, she showered kisses on him adorably.

Feelings of jealousy rose within Bloody Queen Red but she did not fight with Xiao Wen Li over Yue Yang's embrace.

Instead, she gave Yue Yang a back hug and embraced both him and Xiao Wen Li.

Her happy face stuck onto Yue Yang's robust back.

Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man rushed over as well and in her excitement, her brute strength exploded and she lifted Yue Yang, Xiao Wen Li and Bloody Queen Red up, and spun them around in

circles. A distance away, the Reaper Mantis was also flying about in the air happily, equally excited at Yue Yang's level up. Only the Spirit of Earth Fire hiding in the lava pool of a far off volcano could not understand these things.

Feelings were still too complicated for her to comprehend.

She glanced at Yue Yang then looked at the happy Bloody Queen Red and Barbarian Cow Shadow puzzledly. It was like she couldn't understand what was so happy about what had happened or perhaps, she just could not comprehend the human concept of happiness.

What is happiness?

Everything had to go through a process. The Spirit of Earth Fire was just like how Barbarian Cow Shadow used to be.

However, Barbarian Cow Shadow had since gotten closer to humans and was no longer the ignorant barbarian cow she used to be!

Luckily Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen had not awakened yet.

If not, the Grimoire World would have been more lively. Since she had gobbled up so many Innate Rankers before, and Yue Yang had continuously transferred Innate Qi to her, she must probably be able to grow into a devastatingly beautiful imperial queen when

she woke up right? What was confirmed was that she would definitely be more perfect than before because her human body was the most perfectly developed among them all.

Her level would soar every time she was reborn!

Two hours later.

After a little rest, because there's not enough time, Yue Yang hurried to Fire Island even before he could fully take in all the energy he had gained from the Level 6 Innate Invisible Sword Qi.

It was because the Ancient Mother Earth Potion would be born in another 5 hours. If Yue Yang did not prepare himself early, he would miss it.

After his powers have become stronger, Yue Yang was very confident that he could defeat the Ocean Emperor.

At the very least, Yue Yang was sure that he could seize the Mother Earth Potion. If he consumed the Mother Earth Potion, his powers would grow stronger, how could the Ocean Emperor not die then? After he got rid of the Ocean Emperor, it would then be time to send the Black Hell King, the traitor from 6000 years ago, to hell...

Chapter 465 – Do You Want My Treasures?

This time when Yue Yang arrived at Fire Island he naturally couldn't use the worthless butler identity but used Titan's identity.

His face was covered by the Golden Gemini Mask, while he carried the wrapped-up Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear behind him.

He arrived at Fire Island just like how he entered the Thunder Fortress.

Titan's name had already spread throughout the entire Thunder Fortress.

Yue Yang was different from most Innates who would arrogantly hire someone to spread the news when he did something. As a result, only the nearby region knew about the Legend of the Titan Brothers. In the Seventh floor of the Tong Tian Tower no one knew about the existence of the Titan Brothers, other than a few merchants who were working with the Titan Guild and knew about how he killed Demon Eye.

Apart from this, only a small amount of people knew about the Titan Brothers in the ranks of Innates.

As for Titan Jr.'s appearance, only an extremely few amount of people had personally seen him even in the Thunder Fortress.

Their existence was only a rumor...

“Welcome honored guest to Fire Island!” Just as Yue Yang walked out from the teleportation circle, an incomparably sexy tour guide immediately bowed, showing that she was willing to be of service and guide the way for Yue Yang. She was Hai Yingwu, but she already did not recognize Yue Yang.

“So noisy, what is happening?” Yue Yang intentionally asked like this.

“It’s like this, honored guest. You probably don’t know but a treasure had appeared under the Deep Sea Abyss of Fire Island. The mysterious treasure emits light and came from the Deep Sea Abyss. Afterwards a ranker noticed it and the news spread calling everyone to search for it. The Ocean Emperor is very generous and especially tasked the members of Fire Island to serve the heroes, helping everyone complete this epic adventure and leave majestic battle poems.” Hai Yingwu respectfully answered but secretly sized up this guest. She saw that his strength was only a Level 7 [Overlord]. However, he was wearing a gold-ranked mask and carrying a wrapped up treasure behind him, wasn’t he afraid of being robbed with his strength?

“Stop blabbering. You only need to answer the question as to why it’s so noisy around here.” Yue Yang ruthlessly interrupted her without even looking at her.

“Ah, I apologize. Honored guest, it’s like this, many brave heroes went to find the treasures and after battling for one day and one night, out of hundreds of heroes, three have emerged as winners.

One of the fortunate heroes obtained the best “Sea Controlling Pearl” unfortunately he rejected our congratulation and already left the island. As for the other two, they obtained gold-ranked treasures. One of them obtained the Lion Stone Fish’s summon crystal while the other obtained the Spiked Sea Parting Fork. They are currently accepting our congratulations and protection. In order to celebrate, the entire Fire Island is now preparing to have a night party. That is the reason why there are lanterns and colored banners and why it’s so noisy. If it disturbed honored guest, please allow Hai Yingwu to represent the entire Fire Island Staff to sincerely apologize.” Hai Yingwu was probing Yue Yang. She was suspicious that he was also here to treasure hunt but he was too late.

“The most annoying thing in the world is that other people have good treasures, too displeasing!” Yue Yang groaned, pushed Hai Yingwu aside and left with huge steps.

Hai Yingwu was stunned.

In her entire lifetime, she had never met a male that was completely immune to her charms. If he was from a different tribe and disliked human females, then it’s fine. However, he was a human, how was he able to ignored her?

When Yue Yang pushed her aside, she felt shock and shame at the same time.

It was a feeling of shame from her self-esteem being lowered. When was it that she had become less charming?

She thought that it was perhaps he was too jealous of other people's treasures.

That must be it!

If the feeling that the perverted butler gave her when he was touching her breast and butt was disgust, then the feeling that this man gave her was rage. For good or bad, that perverted butler still liked her big breasts and her round bottom. But this masked man made her deeply feel shame and completely ignored her... Hai Yingwu wanted to just charge over and angrily scream at him, but in the end, she still endured it.

For the sake of Ocean Emperor's grand plan, she had to endure it.

Hai Yingwu gritted her teeth.

"Eh, the mask on this masked person is a gold-ranked treasure!" A few mercenaries walked over. They were already drunk and were probably prepared to leave because they did not obtain any treasures. When the man leading them saw Yue Yang, his greed rose and excitedly pointed at Yue Yang.

"This is bad..." When Hai Yingwu saw the greed in the mercenaries' eyes, she knew that a fight was unavoidable.

"Leave behind the gold-ranked mask and kneel before me, then this granddaddy will let you live." When the few men noticed that

the masked man in front of them was just a level 7 [Overlord] their confidence boosted. In their five man group, two were level 7 [Overlord]'s, two were level 8 [Emperor]'s and only one with a weaker level, a level 6 [Elder]. According to strength, they felt that they could overwhelm Yue Yang so their attitude became increasingly arrogant.

“You should also leave the wrapped treasure behind you!” added the other level 8 [Overlord] as he felt the fluctuation of the wrapped treasure.

Hai Yingwu secretly panicked.

If she exposed her Lesser Innate strength and went up to block them, then there would be no problems.

However, for the Ocean Emperor's grand plan, how could she just expose her strength?

She looked helplessly at the two sides and knew that it was a bad situation. The masked man had so many treasures yet his strength was not enough, so he must have a powerful backer and is probably the son of an Innate. If he was killed here then the power behind him would be furious. Now that only a few hours remained for the Ocean Emperor's grand plan and the Ocean Emperor was about to arrive, this situation was very bad.

They had a hard time protect the true secret treasure and even used the plan of using a fraud to shift the eyes of those who came to seek adventure.

Now, it would be best if no more issues arise.

Just as Hai Yingwu was very anxious, she suddenly saw three figures moving through the skies.

When Hai Yingwu saw it, she immediately used a secret hand signal to ask for help.

Although they were unwilling, the three figures still came down.

It was the secret hand signal that the Ocean Emperor set. In case someone used this to ask for help, as long as one is from the aquatic race, they cannot ignore it.

The three people landed. On the left was big headed small bodied ugly fatty; in the middle was an imposingly cold fish race general wearing scale armor; on the right was a skinny man with a tall height, small eyes wearing a dark green satin covered with gold marks and sticky liquid that made others lose their appetites.

“What happened? I am currently preparing to welcome His Majesty Ocean Emperor. Your disturbance has affected the overall situation. You small fish using a ‘sea peril level’ signal to call us as you wish, you truly don’t know your position!” The ugly yet comical fatty loudly berated Hai Yingwu.

“Reporting to the three Ocean Generals, it’s like this...” Hai Yingwu quickly reported the situation between Yue Yang and the

mercenaries.

Not far away, Yue Yang was slowly unwrapping the wrapped treasure.

The mercenaries estimated that he would not easily surrender the treasures and a fight was unavoidable. They immediately surrounded Yue Yang to oppress him in the middle.

A fight was about to erupt.

The three generals also saw the situation and the strong general wearing the scale armor waved his hands showing that he did not care. The skinny one also laughed evilly showing that he did not care. However, he was going to kill the mercenaries once they obtained the treasure. This way he would be able to say that Yue Yang was avenged and at the same time he could obtain treasures. However, the fatty who berated Hai Yingwu stood up and shouted at the mercenaries: “What are you doing?”

The mercenaries were caught unprepared of the Fat-head Fish General’s intervention.

Could it be that this masked man was from the aquatic race?

Luckily, the level 8 [Emperor] responded, on one side he quibbled and on the other he probed: “General Da Tou, I am Bai Zu the grandson-in-law of the Hermit Crab Clan General, Lang Ye. During the wedding reception, I had even toasted with sir, could it be that

you have forgotten me? Today, it was not us who wanted to break the rules of Fire Island but it is because the masked person is my enemy. He killed brothers of my race and even raped a sister of my race. Since we met today, how could I let him get away with it? General Da Tou, please give justice!”

The ugly Fat-head General scratched his bald head and mumbled: “Is that right? We had toasted together? Why don’t I remember... Fine, since it’s like this, I don’t care anymore!”

When Hai Yingwu heard this she almost sweat to death.

Wasn’t this fatty too easy to fool? Why was he even a general?

Those who believed this Bai Zu’s bullshit were idiots. However, this idiot Fat-head General actually believed him. Hai Yingwu was speechless!

If she did not worry about her identity, Hai Yingwu would have exposed Bai Zu’s lie.

However, she endured in the end...

In order to not affect Ocean Emperor’s grand plan...sigh, this masked man did not have any relationship with her anyways. Even if he died, only one guest died at most there would be a few problems in the future. She would just endure it since there was only a few hours left before the Ocean Emperor’s grand plan! Hai Yingwu lowered her head and remained silent. She felt that the

masked man was screwed. Even if he was not killed by the mercenaries, the Leech General would not let him go. It seems that Leech General was watching him like a tiger watching his prey as he was also drooling for his treasures. Perhaps he would make his move at the most crucial point in the name of vengeance.

That means that this masked man was truly screwed!

Hai Yingwu continuously sighed and gradually could not bear it.

Despite the arrogant masked man completely ignoring her existence earlier, she still did not wish to see him die just as he arrived at Fire Island.

“Hey bastard, you are guilty of terrible crimes. The guilty will not escape and today we will definitely catch you. Your time of death is near!” Seeing that the three generals did not care, the mercenaries pleasingly laughed out loud at this masked man’s death.

“Do you want my treasures? I’ll gift it to you!” Yue Yang slowly unveiled the wrapping.

With a speed faster than light, he instantly moved.

One mercenary was currently laughing loudly.

Suddenly, the laughter was cut off as the spear point already pierced through his throat...

Hai Yingwu's pupils quickly shrunk. She was shocked because she could not even clearly see how the gold-ranked spear was brandished, even a single image was not seen and she could only see that the spear had pierced through the mercenary's throat.

The remaining mercenaries were petrified. The one who was just killed was a level 8 [Emperor] and was the strongest among them.

He was actually killed by the opponent in an instant?

Then what kind of strength did this masked man actually possess?

Chapter 466 – Shark King, One Of The Four Kings

“Impossible.....” One mercenary was beyond terrified. He pointed at Yue Yang with a shaking finger, unable to accept the fact that his buddy was killed in an instant. Right in the next second however, he clearly felt an ice-cold spear force through his lips, prying open his jaw and piercing his tongue all the way to his throat..... He felt a slight pain at the back of his head, and then he lost all consciousness.

“Is there still anyone who wants my treasure? If you think the Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear is too big, there is still the Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Dagger, anyone of you want it?”

Yue Yang threw the Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear and nailed an escaping mercenary to the ground, killing him instantly. He then pulled out the Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Dagger from his waist, dodged behind a mercenary and kicked him down before holding his head with his hand. Yue Yang pushed the dagger into the mercenary’s temple bit by bit..... the whole process was extremely slow. The mercenary was both in shock and in pain. He cried out in fear, pissed his pants in terror and desperately struggled.

However, no matter what he did, he simply was unable to escape the advent of death.

The last one left was Bai Zu who claimed to be the grandson-in-law of the Hermit Crab Clan’s Leader, Lang Ye.

He was terror-stricken and stumbled to where the Big-headed Carp General was. He cried with his face distorted: “Help, save me!”

Yue Yang put away the Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Dagger and lightly extracted the Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear from the corpse of the mercenary that he had nailed through before catching up unhurriedly. As for his skill in killing the four men continuously, all three Sea Generals were shaken after they saw it. In terms of ability, the ability this masked man displayed was not even Innate leveled nor was it Lesser Innate leveled but only an ordinary level 7 [Overlord]’s ability.

There were two reasons why he could easily kill four people in an instant.

First was speed.

They assumed that Yue Yang was using a beast to increase his speed, but they did not know what kind of beast could increase his speed to the point that it was even faster than an Innate.

It was so fast that people did not even have time to react!

Second, was that he owned magic weapons. Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear itself was a magic weapon that could kill in a second. Combined with the extreme speed of this masked man, the power Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear exhibits power that a warrior of the same standard could not even compete with. Not even

mentioning a Level 7 [Overlord] or Level 8 [Emperor], even a Lesser Innate might have difficulty taking on such a fatal hit.

Big-headed Carp General secretly swallowed his saliva.

He was not afraid of those who were strong, but because of his relatively slower speed, he found those who moved quickly, like this opponent, the most troubling.

Even the Sea General donned in scale armor and looked the strongest found this situation troubling.

Even though the scale armor had high defense, it was also a Gold-ranked treasure, but could it withstand a hit of the Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear? The answer was no. Although scale armor could withstand normal weapons, the Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear could not even be stopped by Giant Dragon, so naturally his scale armor would definitely not be able to. This was why Tuna General who was the strongest and of highest status ignored the cries of help from Bai Zu. He chose to turn a blind eye and refused to rescue him. Only by staying out of the vendetta between the two sides could he save his own life.

Only the skinny Leech General who wore a wet leather suit was still hesitant.

He did not seem to be too afraid of the Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear in Yue Yang's hands, but rather he was only a little fearful of Yue Yang's extremely fast attacks since speed was the basic foundation of attacking.

Hai Yingwu however had a strange feeling. Based on a woman's natural sixth sense, she had begun to realise that this masked man was not simple.

Perhaps, he has only displayed a small fraction of his full ability.

This man could very likely be an Innate Ranker!

“Could you spare his life for me? It is inevitable for grudges to form when everyone is training at Tong Tian Tower, but grudges do not mean they cannot be resolved. If you are willing, I will help you get the ransom from him so that he can buy back his life. Just give a price!” Big-headed Carp General stood out and tried to mediate the situation.

“I, I, I am willing to use all my assets as atonement. I will give you Deep Sea Pearl, Magic Cores! Just spare me, please spare my lowly life, I was only confused for that moment, I should not have coveted after your treasure. I am wrong, please spare my life, please!” Bai Zu's face was covered with tears and mucus. He hid behind the Big-headed Carp General and threw himself on the floor. He kow-towed again and again on his knees, both begging for Yue Yang's mercy and for Big-headed Carp General's help to say a few words for him to protect his life.

“.....” Hai Yingwu despised this sort of people to no end.

If he was useless, then he should just be well-behaved. Learning to rob from other people even when he did not have the ability,

was that not a death wish?

Too late for regrets now!

Big-headed Carp General allowed Bai Zu to hold onto his abnormally-shaped legs and cry. In that instant his heart softened, and even thought they were friends.

Yue Yang walked over leisurely and spun the Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear gracefully to indicate that Big-headed Carp General did not need to open his mouth to plead: “Today, this young master’s mood is very bad. You all better leave immediately and not meddle. If no one rebels, young master will at most kill around a hundred people on this island to appease my anger. Otherwise, this young master will kill without mercy..... As for the ransom, this young master is not short of money. Poor Ghost, keep your money to pay for your coffin!”

These words caused the three Sea Generals to choke and almost choked to death.

Hai Yingwu also felt that these words were slightly exaggerated.

Where is Fire Island?

It was under the control of the Ocean Emperor. Even if the Emperor himself did not come regularly, Fire Island still represented a challenge that could not be overcome.

Those words were really too much, who did he think the Ocean Emperor was? the Ocean Emperor was one of the Five Emperors, does he think that Fire Island which was under the Ocean Emperor's control is a place he can kill people recklessly?

One can be arrogant, but one must have the ability to be arrogant!

If he could defeat the Ocean Emperor, then people would have to listen no matter how arrogant his words were.

The problem was that he currently did not have this ability..... Big-headed Carp General was agitated, his ugly big face flushed red: "Shut up, you words have challenged the Ocean Emperor's dignity. For this one time, we can treat it as unintentional but the next time, we will definitely defend the Ocean Emperor's dignity! Please do not treat me words as words only meant to scare you, youngster, this is my biggest advice!"

"You, leave Fire Island immediately, we no longer welcome you!" The strongest Sea General who was donned in scale armor finally spoke and made his stand.

"Hehe, if you are not convinced, I can accompany you in a fight and show you that this is not a place for you to behave atrociously!" Skinny laughed sinisterly: "While other people may be afraid of your Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear, but I can tell you that it has no effect at all on my body!"

"....." Bai Zu realised that the two sides have broke into conflict.

He was secretly delighted, if they started fighting, that would mean an opportunity for him to sneak away.

However, Hai Yingwu felt that the three Sea Generals were very foolish.

The opponent's words did not mean anything, neither was it against the Ocean Emperor. If Big-headed Carp General's words still had reason, then Tuna General's words were a little excessive. It was best for Fire Island to remain neutral. To forcibly be on terrible terms with the opponent for the liar Bai Zu was really stupid.

As for Leech General, Hai Yingwu could understand why he was provoking the opponent.

In his heart, this guy had no regard for the interests of Fire Island and the Ocean Emperor's image. Instead, he was using the Ocean Emperor's name and his ability to bully others.

His purpose, was most likely because he had his eyes on the opponent's treasure.

Simply put, Leech General was the same as Bai Zu and greed had begun to dominate his mind.....

Hai Yingwu secretly crushed 'Cry of the Sea Pearl'.

This was a cry for assistance that was even higher than that of a sea

disaster. As long as a Cry of the Sea Pearl was crushed, the headquarter of Fire Island would immediately send out a highly-skilled master to deal with the crisis. Hai Yingwu felt that the situation now was not being handled well and would affect the Ocean Emperor's grand plans. She did not know that Yue Yang was intentionally making trouble, otherwise he would not have been so arrogant and would not let go of the issue about the mercenaries. Usually, he would kill in an instant and leave, who would want to seek for trouble with Sea Generals?

He was doing all this deliberately!

the Ocean Emperor was very cunning and used a fraud to shift the eyes of those who came to seek adventure. He made everyone think that the treasure had already been dug out.

Even if the event had quieted down, Yue Yang could not let Fire Island be peaceful. He had to create trouble.

The more chaotic Fire Island was the more the Ocean Emperor would be distracted. That way the success of An Xi assassinating the Ocean Emperor would increase. Anyway, Yue Yang would do whatever could make the Ocean Emperor unhappy. This was just like hitting a person who was down and pushing him to his death.....

“Accompany me in a fight? Sure let's play, play your sister!” By the time Yue Yang finished saying that he had already teleported behind Leech General.

The leech in the wet leather suit immediately shot up into the sky.

His reaction was extremely fast.

Seeing the opponent attack, Tuna General also blasted a thunderous hit.

Big-headed Carp General who had the slowest reaction did not have the time to react. Hai Yingwu on the other hand had the chance to attack. However, she remained motionless and was unwilling to participate in such an pointless battle.

A bloody human head was flew in the sky. Bai Zu who was preparing to run away had his head cut off as his neck sprayed a fountain of blood.

While she could not see clearly, Hai Yingwu knew that this was the work of the masked man. In the sky, when Leech General prepared to dive back down, he suddenly realised a hand pushing down on his head. He twisted his body into a spiral, wanting to escape from the attack. Just when he was proud of himself from avoiding the fatal attack of the opponent, he realised countless flaming punches rained down on him like a meteor shower. He could do nothing but scream in terror.....

“Oh!” Tuna General wanted to fly in the air to receive the leech, but when he leaned to the side, he fell on the floor while covering his left ribs in pain.

“Oh my!” Hai Yingwu realised that the left side of Tuna General’s scale armor had turned into ice. When he was throwing punches at the enemy earlier, he never would have thought that not only did he not land any hits, but instead he was hit by the opponent on his left ribs. That attack was so fast that he did not even realise it. He became unable to support himself when the power of the punch exploded and froze over.

Leech who fell through the sky like a meteor landed on the ground in pain.

His skinny body created a pit in the ground.

He groaned in pain.

He was no longer arrogant.

If he was attacked by the Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear, his unique body and smooth leather suit allowed him to be fearless of any sharp blades. However, Yue Yang did not even use the Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear to attack, but instead used the Purple Yin Flame. While Leech General could disregard any swords, his special body was extremely incompatible with fire. When he was burnt, his life immediately hovered between life and death.

Yue Yang lightly floated to the ground and pierced through the Leech’s body using Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear. He then lifted him up at spearpoint: “Do you still want to show off your skills? Hmph, the thing this young master hates the most is someone else being more arrogant than me. Even a lousy leech like

you dares to? Who do you think you are?”

Leech twisted his body in pain. He was not afraid of being speared through, but he was terrified of the flame.

Just when he opened his mouth to plead for mercy, the flames poured into his throat. He was unable to make any sound at all.

A man with a huge body fell to the ground loudly. He was five metres high, clad in silver Shark Armour. At his waist was a Platinum-ranked Split Wave Blade. The ten fingers on his huge arm wore rings made from extremely sharp shark tooth. His powerful body was streamlined, and his face was fierce-looking with devil like eyes. He was imposing, bold and powerful. If Tuna general was compared to him, Tuna would seem like a small child.

This man, was the Overlord of Fire Island. However it was not only that, the Shark King was also in charge of the whole sea territory of the Seventh Floor of Tong Tian Tower!

He was one of the four kings under the Ocean Emperor.

Chapter 467 – Mutual Deception, Plotting Against Each Other

The appearance of Shark King delighted Tuna General and Big-headed Carp General.

Even Hai Yingwu was secretly relieved that Shark King made it in time. If that masked man had killed Leech, things would become irreversible. The masked man was extremely arrogant even here at Fire Island. Even though he was clearly aware that this was the territory of the Ocean Emperor, he dared to kill, and even attack the three Sea Generals. His actions proved that he was actually extremely powerful, and might not even be beneath the Ocean Emperor.

To have conflict with him would be very unwise.

There was only a few hours left before the Ocean Emperor's grand plan begun, there was no time for side issues to arise anymore.

“Shark King, this man insulted our Majesty's dignity. He also attacked us. His attitude has been arrogant, despotic and condenscending. Subordinate has been useless to have allowed our Majesty's dignity to have been undermined, please punish me Shark King.” Tuna General and Big-headed Carp General rushed to plead for the sins, half-kneeling before Shark King. As for Hai Yingwu, she too rushed to greet him on her knees.

“All of you get up!” Shark King did not look at Tuna General and

Big-headed Carp, not even Leech who was burning in pain on the spear.

He looked to Yue Yang.

According to the opinions of Tuna General and Big-headed Carp General, let alone the Innate Level 8 Shark King, even the Eight Major Sea Marshals could overpower this masked man. That was because the Sea Marshals were Innate Level Five, or even Innate Level Six. To defeat this single masked man with that level of skill was more than enough.

No one expected that Shark King did not rage.

Instead he was rather modest.

Shark King cupped his hands to Yue Yang, greeting him amiably: "Welcome to Fire Island. Although I am not clear about what happened, I believe that everything has been a misunderstanding, they were definitely all a misunderstanding!"

These words almost caused Tuna General and Big-headed Carp General to choke to death on their saliva.

They thought Shark King would use his finger to crush that masked man to death, just like killing an ant. No one expected such a reaction from him.

To have said those words, is that really Shark King who's terrible

temper was infamous throughout the entire Tong Tian Tower? This was really inconceivable... Could he be an impostor?

On the other hand, Hai Yingwu was sweating from those words.

Someone who even Shark King had to be polite to, how could this masked man be a simple character?

Rethinking his words and actions, Hai Yingwu could only silently call herself a fool. If the masked man was not a Supreme Ranker, how could his attitude be so arrogant? If he was arrogant without ability, how could he have survived till now? He would most likely have already been slaughtered!

“You know me?” Yue Yang of course knew that Shark King recognised him. While ordinary warriors may not look past his Titan attire, but the news of him has spread around among the Supreme Innates. As the one who was in charge of all the seas in the Seventh Floor of the Tong Tian Tower, if he had not even heard of the Titan Brothers, then he should not be called Shark King but rather Deaf. Moreover, Shark King and Chong Ni of Thunder Castle were good friends, how could he have not heard of the things Yue Yang this Titan Jr. had been up to!

He had killed Nightmare and Tiger Nian, Demon Eye, Sky Dragon.

Titan Jr. had already killed so many Innate Rankers, if Shark King was unaware of him, what was he even doing?

Although he was not entirely sure, but when he saw Yue Yang's calmness and indifference to the arrival of a highly-skilled ally, Shark King knew what kind of character has arrived.

It could be said that of the entire Tong Tian Tower, there was no Innate more troubling than the one who was here.

Even though he was young, his ability was superior.

Even Shun Tian, Black Prince who were higher in ability than him were made dejected. Great Demon King Baruth allowed him to barge into his Demon Palace and could do nothing even though he lost all face. As a result of his appearance, Black Hell King could not help but push forward his plans of conquering Soaring Dragon continent. Shark King was aware of all of these matters. He even knew that among the Eastern Demon Clan, this youngster's name has spread widely. Both the rebelling Southern Goblin King and Dragon Emperor were fighting for this man's favour, even though this man had killed Southern Goblin King's reliable subordinate the Nine-Headed Goblin Marshal.

A youngster who owned Nirvana Flame and World Exterminating Wheel, an abnormal genius who had ascended to Innate by himself at twenty years old.

Since his birth, he had been invincible.

Those who belittled him, no matter who, would fall at his feet and become history.....

“Titan Jr. has a renowned reputation, how could Old Shark, I, not know who you are. Your arrival to Fire Island this time, Old Shark, I, regret not welcoming you immediately because I had been busy attending to our Majesty’s reception. If not, I would not have dared to show such neglect. Titan Jr., please come to Five Star Emperor Residence to take a rest and have a small drink. When our Majesty arrives, this Old Shark will bring you to him. I believe our Majesty would be delighted to hear about your arrival. He has always treasured talents, ha ha. Come servant’s, guide Titan Jr. to Five Star Emperor Residence and receive him with the highest etiquette.” Shark King’s words made everyone have an headache.

They had really never heard of the name of Titan Jr. before.

However, seeing Shark Kind’s attitude, this Titan Jr. was an unprecedented VIP. Even when Chong Ni King, Southern Goblin King, Northern Goblin King came, they were not treated with the highest etiquette.

“Do not do all these, I am afraid of trouble and just need a place to sit.” Yue Yang pretended to be unaware of the news of Mother Earth Potion, and openly asked: “Senior Shark King, I never pretend to have other motives. This time I have heard of a strange treasure on Fire Island, is it true? Do not say there isn’t, I have received top secret information that the treasure was at least higher than a Grade 8 Holy Treasure. Do not try to use some Gold-ranked treasure to fool me, only a child would believe those antics.”

“Haha, brother Titan Jr. you really are as straightforward as the

legends say. There really is a treasure, but..." Shark King was extremely troubled, he was 100% sure that An Xi that old guy went around spreading top secret information. With his name and the lure of Grade 8 Holy Treasure, how could the Titan Jr. not be tempted! The problem was just that they could not let him take away the Mother Earth Potion. His Majesty must have it to breakthrough to become an Elder Innate. Actually when Shark King first laid eyes on the young man, he already knew that he was coming for the Mother Earth Potion. What Shark King had been doing was trying to devise a plan to make use of him.

If they made use of him well, it would be excellent if he could assist the Ocean Emperor in killing An Xi.

However on the other hand if they did not make use of him well, they are bringing trouble onto themselves.

Shark King was troubled for quite a while, and said with a bitter smile: "Titan Jr., I am sure you know that this Old Shark's words do not hold weight. You should tell all these to His Majesty. I believe even if there is a problem with the treasure, His Majesty will make it up to you. Come come, have a drink at the Emperor Residence first. I, Old Shark, will first go and receive His Majesty, we can continue our discussion after that. Actually we can all work together first, and worry about who it belongs to when we get the treasure."

As part of higher management for a long time, Shark King's way of dismissing people was indeed skilled.

He could lie to anyone but he could not lie to Yue Yang about the

presence of the treasure, it was definitely out of the question.

Neither could he say that they won't give him the treasure. Even if this guy acts as if he was giving in, he would still snatch it with force. This man was the classic stubborn bull, he was not afraid of threats at all! Your status, ability, name and face all did not matter to him!

The best thing to do now was to drag things out.

Anyway this guy did not know the exact time of birth of the Mother Earth Potion, he could be left here at Emperor Residence waiting with some women to play with for the time being. Once the Ocean Emperor obtains the Mother Earth Potion and becomes much stronger, even if this guy wanted to rage, he would not be able to. Maybe they could even ally with BLack Hell King to defeat this guy together..... of course, if they could avoid provoking this guy, it would still be best not to. That was because if their attack were to fail, and this lad were to escape, the Human Zhi Zun would most likely come. The Human Zhi Zun was not a joke!

“Come and attend to Titan Jr. with your best service.” Shark King suddenly remembered something and transmitted to Hai Yingwu: “If I remember correctly, you have royal blood in you? I cannot recall if you are the daughter of slave 168 or 188..... Anyway, if you service Titan Jr. well, I will advice His Majesty to give you the status of princess and to marry you off to Titan Jr. to create marriage alliance so do your best!”

“Yes. “ Hai Yingwu's heart beat rapidly. Princess status? Wasn't that what she had always dreamed of? And to marry him?

He is called Titan Jr..... even though he was not very famous, but his nonchalant attitude towards Shark King made it obvious that he was not a simple character. Could it be that he was a Supreme Innate?

In the future she could marry a Supreme Innate?

At such a thought Hai Yingwu's face burned in embarrassment, and she was unable to raise her head for a long time.

Shark King exchanged more pleasantries with Yue Yang, and used the excuse of having to welcome the Ocean Emperor and left through the teleportation circle. Hai Yingwu was left behind to use her beauty to 'handle' Yue Yang. His plan was to drag things out, as long as he could drag things out for a few hours, he would have succeeded. Of course, it was very necessary to report to the Ocean Emperor His Majesty immediately since the Ocean Emperor might have a better plan.

Yue Yang naturally went with the flow and acted to the plan, working with An Xi that old guy.

An Xi had long entered the Crystal Canyon.

As for Yue Yang, if the Ocean Emperor did not bring him to the Crystal Canyon, he would kill his way in. If the Ocean Emperor brought him there, then he would work with An Xi to defeat the Ocean Emperor together!

Shark King had plotted against him, why would he not plot against Shark King?

This was just mutual deception, plotting against each other!

Let's see who will be the last man laughing!

“Ta, Titan Jr. sir, this, this, this way please!” Hai Yingwu was very nervous that she had trouble even talking. As for Tuna and Big-headed Carp, they were close to fainting from fear and did not dare to move from their kneeling position by an inch. Leech, who had been swallowing his pain and pretended to have fainted raised his head slightly and waited for Yue Yang to go far then looked at him with an evil glint in his eyes.

In Five Star Emperor Residence , Yue Yang assessed everything. He tsked and sighed. It was hard to tell whether he was mocking the place to be too extravagant, or that he enjoyed such royal treatment.

Hai Yingwu's mission was to serve this 'future husband'.

She was going to use all the methods in the world.

The Shark King had even secretly ordered that no matter what, they must please Titan Jr. no matter what. It would be best if he could be so indulgent in his bliss that he forgot about other things.

At first, Hai Yingwu had also thought this was an opportunity.

What made her at a loss was the Titan Jr. was not interested in any play. He had looked around for half an hour, and had seen countless beauties. The issue was that he treated these beauties as if they were sardines in the sea, and ignored them. When they found a room, Hai Yingwu had intended to go in and attend to him the best she could to give him the taste of being seduced by a beauty. Yet she did not expect him to invite her out very politely and coldly, closing the door to train alone.

Three hours later.

In one more hour, the Mother Earth Potion would be born.

Yue Yang who was in the room did not make any sound. There was no sign that he was done with training.

“Is he really still training?” Shark King was a little worried. It really was troublesome that this Titan Jr. was not interested in beautiful women. Luckily, it seemed that Titan Jr. did not know the Mother Earth Potion’s exact time of birth which was why he was training so calmly.

Chapter 468 – The Distance From Happiness

“He has been in there training the whole time. Even when I secretly went in a few times, he seemed to be very deep in training. Looks like he might not wake up for hours and even days.” Hai Yingwu reported the situation.

She did not dare raise her head, since there was a man wearing a cloak that covered his face besides Shark King.

He, was one of the Five Emperors of Tong Tian Tower.

That means he was the ruler of most of the seas of the Seventh, Eighth and Ninth Floor of Tong Tian Tower, the birth father of Hai Yingwu, the Ocean Emperor!

An existence like Hai Yingwu, while there may not be a thousand, there are at least eight hundred daughters who were born to female slaves. Hai Yingwu had relied on her royal blood that was not recognised to avoid the tragedy of becoming a female slave. Instead she was one of the Beautiful Assassins under the Ocean Emperor's control who were specialised in spying. Among all of the daughters of the female slaves, Hai Yingwu was not the best, nor was she the worse.

Her performance had always been ordinary and unimpressive.

This was because she knew, since a young age, that the sisters that were too outstanding would all die wordlessly.

Other than a few hundred daughters of female slaves and almost a thousand similarly unrecognized sons, there were more than a hundred princes and princesses born to the Empress and concubines. As long as someone performed better than these princes and princesses of dignified lineage, they would disappear.

Hai Yingwu was not kneeling on the floor solely out of respect for this father.

It was also because she was deeply terrified of those men and women who were clad in the same cloak that covered their faces.

She believed that if she performed slightly more outstandingly, one of those princes or princesses would be jealous. She would then disappear from the surface of this earth silently.

“If you can let him stay inside for one more hour, I will recognise you who is a daughter of a slave. I will grant you the status of princess, and marry you to Titan Jr. in a marriage alliance.” the Ocean Emperor concealed all of his presence and looked like an ordinary person. However, his natural majesty still made Hai Yingwu tremble all over. Of course, other than being due to her excitement, it was also partly because of a fear of her sisters’ and brothers’ murderous intents.

“Yes, your Majesty.” Hai Yingwu respectfully bowed her head, feeling pins and needles from the viper-like stares of those princes and princesses.

“Such a beautiful younger sister, if she married Titan Jr. in a marriage alliance, that would be a godsend. Emperor Father’s decision is too wise.” When one of the princes spoke, it was just like spring warmth. It seemed as if he was as excited as a brother who just found his long lost sister. He seemed to even want to take something out to give Hai Yingwu as a gift, but a princess was faster.

“How could the present of men like you suit younger sister? Older Sister has a necklace here made from East Sea’s Pearls, it matches the swan-like long neck of sister.” Princess Sister removed the warm necklace from her neck, and personally placed it around Hai Yingwu’s neck.

Despite the warmth of the necklace, Hai Yingwu’s heart shivered.

The same sister, the same gentle voice.

When she was eight, to another sister who was also born to a female slave, she had said the same words and done the same action. However not long later, she used this priceless East Sea Pearls Necklace to strangle the intelligent sister who loved to laugh..... All of that, Hai Yingwu remembered from that time, and she believed she would never forget it.

Hai Yingwu squeezed out her tears to look grateful, thanking her sister and brother repeatedly.

Of course, she did not dare call them brother and sister, she had to call them prince and princess!

No matter how polite they were, how would she dare to call them brother and sister. If she had really called them brother and sister, she would really be not far from death!

She sent the Ocean Emperor, Prince and Princess and the Four Kings which included Shark King away on her knees.

Hai Yingwu shivered, and returned to the Emperor Residence quickly.

She quietly opened the door to see Yue Yang still seated cross-legged on the bed.

Only after she saw him still focusing on training with all his focus, did she relax.

If she did not do this one thing, she would die. Those princes and princesses would not spare her, and would most likely personally kill such a useless bastard like herself.

Fortunately, His Majesty the Ocean Emperor's grand plan had not been greatly affected by the arrival of this Titan Jr. Things were going unexpectedly smooth, but this was a good thing, right? If he really did not wake up after an hour, the Ocean Emperor would really bestow her princess status? Would she really marry Titan Jr. in a marriage alliance?

In that case, wasn't he her future husband?

His ability and identity did not have to be doubted, but as for his looks, she wondered what he looked like.....

At such a thought, Hai Yingwu felt butterflies in her stomach. The arrival of Titan Jr. was not a bad thing. Even without the princess status, if she really married him, she would not have to worry about the persecution of the princes and princesses. She would be able to display her ability that she had always kept hidden, and help him accomplish many things. Perhaps, this was Heaven's will. Hai Yingwu peeked in through a narrow slit to see that he was still inside. Even after ten minutes, he did not move an inch. She was suddenly filled with joy, and could only hope for time to pass faster.

As long as an hour passed and the Ocean Emperor obtains the treasure, this would be a huge success.

Unfortunately he seemed totally uninterested in her. If only he was, all of this would be perfect!

What could she do to make him like her?

Hai Yingwu gently sighed.

"What is troubling you?" This question made Hai Yingwu jump because Yue Yang was the one who asked.

"Why are you awake? Were you not training?" Hai Yingwu was

stunned.

“Smartie, do you think I am a fool who would be deceived by anyone?” Yue Yang stood in front of Hai Yingwu. He stared at her in the eyes such that her entire body was shaking. Hai Yingwu suddenly came to a realisation. Yue Yang had never been fooled from the beginning, or rather, it would be more accurate to say that he had been going with the flow to use their misconception to fool everyone. In fact, he knew everything. He just did not say anything, and was secretly sneering at the foolishness of others.

Hai Yingwu’s whole body shivered.

She felt that the earth shattered.

The time limit of one hour was impossible. He was going to vie over the treasure with the Ocean Emperor, and the Ocean Emperor would be furious at her failure. Those princes and princesses who were intimately calling her younger sister would most likely command people to bring her to them, destroy her, and throw her in the dreadful insect cave for devil insects to feed on her body. Or she might be thrown into prostitute camp to be humiliated to death.

The happiness that she had just begun to look forward to, and her hope for the future were all over.

Fate had teased herself.

It had brought her beautiful hope of the future. Right then in the face of reality, it was destroyed mercilessly. It had even given her a future of death.

Hai Yingwu immediately wanted to commit suicide. If she waited for the princes and princesses to come back, she would not be able to die even if she wanted to. She would only live a life worse than being dead!

However, when she looked into the black gem-like eyes of the man in front of her, Hai Yingwu made her last struggle.

She went on her knees and hugged Yue Yang's leg, her tears fell like rain: "I beg you, please give me happiness..... Did you know, I was so close to obtaining happiness. As long as you stay here for an hour, just an hour, I can be happy forever. I am the daughter of a female slave, I never had a father. In just one hour however, I will be able to get something I have never had before. I would be able to have a father that other people had the moment they were born, and I would even become a princess. I can forfeit being princess, if you wish I can even be your female slave and serve you forever. I will do all I can to help you progress in your toil to become the master of the universe. I know many things, and will learn very humbly. I am willing to become your capable assistant as long as you give me a chance. I beg you, I am only a little bit away from happiness. As long as you nod your head slightly, I can obtain happiness. I beg you to pity me. I have been waiting for so many years, and this day has finally arrived. Even if this was all a dream can you not destroy it immediately? Please let me dream for another hour, just one more hour!"

“I understand, I did not intend to break your dream.” Yue Yang bent over and carried the crying Hai Yingwu on his shoulder.

Hai Yingwu found it ridiculous, and was unable to understand what he was thinking. She just knew that things were at the point of no return.

Her fingernails gradually became sharper, forming sharp knives.

She used her greatest strength to dig out her heart.

Instead of waking up from such a beautiful dream so cruelly, it would be better to die. At least she would not have to become the meal of devil insects, nor would she have to become a prostitute that would be abused by anyone.

Yue Yang stretched out his hand, and transferred Innate Qi into her body which then made her weak. He said: “There is no need to commit suicide. You are indeed an outstanding daughter. I will bring you to the Ocean Emperor to discuss. He will definitely give you princess status. As for your marriage alliance to me, I am very sorry. I think that would be a little difficult. Do you think the Ocean Emperor’s daughter will marry the killer of her father? Smart Sea Parrot, it is not wrong to seek happiness. It is never wrong, but you have to become stronger and persevere, because happiness is not easy to obtain!”

He left via teleportation with Hai Yingwu.

He appeared in a flash on the sea surface of the Deep Sea Abyss.

When teleporting to the sea surface, Hai Yingwu screamed urgently: “Why? You can all obviously live in peace, why must you do this? You can prevent being enemies with His Majesty Ocean Emperor, why must you kill him?”

“If I do not kill him, he will kill me because I am his rival. If he becomes the new Elder Innate, he would not be content with just being the Ocean Emperor. I am afraid he will have greater ambition and make more conquests. He will never leave me alone since I am a young man who has the potential to surpass him. Even if he did marry you to me, that would only be a temporary honey trap. There are many stars in the sky, but as long as there is one that shines the brightest he would fight to be that brightest star. If he really wants to be the brightest star, he is destined to fall!” Yue Yang stopped to explain. Hai Yingwu went silent.

The Ocean Emperor was her father so she knew him better than anyone else.

He was right.

He was totally right!

The problem was, did she have to watch him kill her own father with her own eyes?

Chapter 469 – Battle Between Old Enemies

Entering the Graveyard of the Sea, even into the Crystal Canyon, the Ocean Emperor did not encounter anything strange.

Everything was going smoothly.

Such an uneventful situation gave him an indescribably strange feeling.

Actually, he was already prepared to fight. He was like a boxer, who had sworn to slay his opponents in the boxing ring, and trained his body to its pinnacle. His blood was boiling, morale was boosted and his accumulated energy was like a volcano. This situation was as if right before a competition, the opponent suddenly admitted defeat without even a fight and left him alone in the boxing ring depressed with no place to vent.

That was the exact feeling the Ocean Emperor felt, the feeling of having no place to display his ability when he was powerful.

“Come out, An Xi, I know you are here.” Even though the Ocean Emperor did not see An Xi, he knew that this old rival of his, for hundreds of years, would not miss such an opportunity.

He also believed that An Xi would not show his hand so easily.

The best time to attack was the instant of time when the Mother Earth Potion will be born. When he is absorbing it, An Xi will

launch the strongest attack.

Even though the Ocean Emperor was aware of such a result, he had to take the risk. If he could not defeat An Xi, he should just forget about ever reaching Elder Innate. Today, no matter what, he must obtain the Mother Earth Potion. This was his best and last chance. His potential of leveling up had already been used up. If he wanted to make a breakthrough, he must use outside assistance. There are many treasures in the world but there were only three types of treasures that can level up people to Innate Elder Level.

First, was the legendary God's Blood;

Second, was the legendary Martial Soul;

Third, is the Mother Earth Potion that was about to be born in front of him.

As for God's Blood and Martial Soul, those could not be found in Tong Tian Tower. Those can only be found in one place in this universe, and that was inside God's Ruins at the Soaring Dragon Continent.

However, entering God's Ruins could be said as ultra-impossible. Since ancient times, the interior of God's Ruins was a mystery among mysteries. Even though everyone knew there were treasures inside, no one has been able to enter, and no one has been able to get those treasures.

In comparison, the Mother Earth Potion was a worldly treasure that is only born every ten thousand years and considered to be easiest to obtain.

The Ocean Emperor felt very lucky because this long wait for the birth of Mother Earth Potion was finally over.

For hundreds of years, his bitter wait was finally reciprocated.

The only problem was that he still had to deal with his old enemy.

His close friend back then, An Xi!

The hemp-clothed old man slowly appeared from crystal pillar. When the hemp-clothed old man appeared, the Crown Prince and Crown Princess who were accompanying the Ocean Emperor turned pale with fright. It turned out that the Ultimate Killer An Xi, whom according to the legends slaughtered millions, had been so near to them. Even though he was less than twenty meters away, they had been unable to detect him at all. If An Xi had attacked just now, wouldn't they have.....When they thought about it, cold sweat poured out as they shivered. Even though Sea Dragon Crown Prince and Sea Anemone Crown Princess were both Innate Level Seven, they would definitely be killed in a flash when up against Peak Innate Level Ten An Xi.

“Ocean Emperor, you are here early. There is still forty five minutes until the birth of the Mother Earth Potion.” hemp-clothed old man's tone was very light. The energy in his body was like a

hidden dragon, his appearance was that of a frail old man with one foot in the grave. However, the Ocean Emperor did not dare to belittle him.

“How could I not be earlier when I came to see an old friend?” the Ocean Emperor laughed boldly: “After Old Hornless Dragon left, you are my last old friend.”

“If only you remembered that we were old friends when you chose to betray us back then.” hemp-clothed old man sighed slightly.

“There was no other choice, if I didn’t choose to betray you, I would be killed..... You also know how talented I am. I really did not want to resign to dying so young. Even though I was only a Level One Innate back then, I had potential to rise to Innate Level Ten. How could I be willing to die! In order to survive, I had no choice but to yield to them. If it were you, you would most certainly have given in under those desperate circumstances. They captured me and tortured me relentlessly. They used all of the torture methods thinkable. If they had killed me right away, and not given me the chance to surrender and betray, I would not have betrayed in that way. The thing was that I really could not withstand the kind of never-ending torture..... In the end, I survived, and even secretly trained hard to be able to level up and kill them all, to avenge everyone. An Xi, no, my brother, that cannot be considered as betrayal. That was suffering in silence. Even the team leader back then did not blame me. When I held him in my arms and repented, he who was on the brink of death used his hand that was covered with his blood to stroke my head. You did not know, but he had already forgiven me.” the Ocean Emperor slowly went through the events of that year, his voice was

calm with no hint of agitation.

“Team Leader was born kind-hearted. He would rather blame himself for not doing enough, and would never blame his comrade. Maybe Team Leader forgave you, but Ocean Emperor Guan Lan, just know that I have not forgiven you. It does not matter what beautiful language you use to defend your past, it cannot soothe the hatred in my heart. That year, dozens of sisters died in front me, killed in humiliation by the enemy. Before they died, they cried in pain. And the bloody scene I saw where they had to witness their babies being picked out from their bodies to be eaten alive by the enemy, the despair that filled their eyes , I will never forget them!” the hemp-clothed old man sat on the crystal. Anger flashed past his dull grey eyes, but quickly disappear.

However, even with only less than a tenth of a second of murderous intent being released, it was enough to make Sea Dragon Crown Prince and Sea Anemone take three steps back in shock.

Even the most loyal Shark King felt chills over his body.

An Xi.

The aura of death of this Ultimate Killer was really horrifying.

If it was an ordinary warrior, he would most likely have been scared to death by the sudden burst of terrifying murderous intent. Even Shark King who was Innate Level Eight was overwhelmed with shock.

“Isn’t this great? Old friend, a year has gone past and your cultivation has increased again.” The cloaked Ocean Emperor was unaffected, and was even laughing.

“You too, you too.” the hemp-clothed old man slowly stood up and prepared to attack.

“The four of you should leave. Crown Prince, outside of the sea, you all have to listen to Shark. If anyone enters the Graveyard of the Sea, kill them. If Hybrid Fishmen make trouble, you just have to defend with your all for forty-five minutes.” the Ocean Emperor waved his hand. He has decided to face the hemp-clothed old man An Xi. When he raised his hand, Shark King, Sea Dragon Crown Prince and Sea Anemone Princess all retreated respectfully.

“Ocean Emperor, if I kill you, I will leave either one of your son or one of your daughter alive. To be honest however, your sons and daughters are all trash, not one are of use.” the hemp-clothed old man assessed the Ocean Emperor’s most outstanding Sea Dragon Crown Prince and Sea Anemone Princess with disdain.

“There are also those that are not bad, but they always die young. That really is the saddest part of being Emperor.” the Ocean Emperor showed a bitter smile, it looked like he was aware of many things.

“Let us begin. Tonight it is either you or me that will be left, we should end things here.” the hemp-clothed old man’s aura exploded like a volcano. The ancient guards that were originally

surrounding the outside immediately retreated. Although they had no intelligence, they had excellent instinct, and were extremely sensitive to danger.

On one side, the hemp-clothed old man An Xi summoned a Diamond Level Ten Hell Black Dragon King.

On the other side, the Ocean Emperor Guan Lan also summoned a Diamond Level Ten Three-Headed Gold Dragon.

The decisive battle began.

At the Graveyard of the Sea, the four kings led by Shark King and assisted by the Eight Big Sea Marshal stood guard outside those Five Big Whirlpools.

At the same time there were a dozen prince and princesses, that were led by Sea Dragon Crown Prince and Sea Anemone Princess into two large camps. On the outside, a hundred and eight Sea Generals and more than three thousand of the Ocean Emperor's Army were protecting them.

The Sea Generals and the Ocean Emperor's Army were mostly from Tong Tian Tower Level Nine. Each of them were at least oLesser Innates, and some of the Sea Generals were already at the level of Innates, just that they did not have any grimoires. At the higher levels of Tong Tian Tower, there were many strong clans. They have been born with an extreme advantage, but they all had a natural flaw, it was almost impossible for them to reach a grimoire contract.

At first, they were the powerful clans that had a natural advantage. However when those clans such as humans, elves, all cultivated to higher levels, they were left behind.

This was especially true for those living in the higher levels of Tong Tian Tower.

“Have I missed anything?” When Yue Yang appeared, the Four Kings lost colour in their faces, even Shark King. This guy still made it.

“Titan Jr., if you are willing to cooperate, the Ocean Emperor will repay you with two Holy-ranked items.” Even though Shark King knew it was impossible, he still had to try. If he could use two Holy-ranked items to let the opponent give up, that was still a good thing.

“Shark King, please help me pass a message to the Ocean Emperor. I wish to enter Crystal Canyon to personally thank him for his goodwill, I hope for him to be willing to meet me. Moreover, didn’t he intend to have some princess marry me in an alliance? As his future son-in-law, how could I not thank this father-in-law personally? If such news spread, other people would say that I was not taught well at home.” Yue Yang’s eyes were taunting. He only looked at the Four Kings, and ignored the Eight Sea Marshals and dozens of princes and princesses.

“.....” Shark King was bitter, today was not going to be good.

“Yue Clan’s Third Young Master, even if you have made some name for yourself, do you think you can put on airs in front of me? Then you are wrong!” Sea Dragon Crown Prince could not stand Yue Yang ignore him. He stood out and retorted coldly: “If your eyes are working, you can count for yourself the number of strong people in our Sea Clan. Anyone can makes a mess in Tong Tian Tower! Moreover, Yue Clan’s Third Young Master, Black Hell King is currently attacking your home, why are you not even defending back there, and here causing trouble with us Sea Clan? Can you be more arrogant, more reckless?”

“Who is this speaking? With looks of a dog, can you grow more deformed to make people puke more?” Yue Yang replied without restraints.

“You.....” Sea Dragon Crown Prince’s face twisted.

“Even when your are dressed in the Dragon’s Robe, you do not look like a crown prince. If I were you, I would hit myself against the wall in shame and commit suicide.” Yue Yang’s mouth was definitely sharper than knives.

“As for the name of Yue Clan’s Third Young Master, I have heard of it before, but I would have never have imagined that he was more reckless than the legends say by a hundred times. Maybe you have never heard of this famous saying: To be reckless without ability, is to be both ignorant and idiotic!” Sea Anemone Crown Princess laughed.

“Excellent, this famous saying is perfectly exemplified by you.” Yue Yang proudly clapped his hands.

Chapter 470 – Show Off!

“Do you really intend to attack? Titan Jr., we can actually cooperate. We can send out Sea Clan’s elite to assist you in facing the Black Hell Army. Why must things become like this when we can actually become family? Even if you enter the Crystal Canyon, you might not get the Mother Earth Potion. Even though you are outstanding, you are still too weak in comparison to His Majesty, the Ocean Emperor. His Majesty has trained for a thousand years when you have just begun. “ Shark King gave one last try.

“Even though what you said makes sense, I still want to try.” Yue Yang was not going to give up on the Mother Earth Potion.

He would rather depend on himself than to beg other people.

If the Ocean Emperor obtained the Mother Earth Potion, broke through to become an Elder Innate, would he would send out Sea Clan’s elites to go against Black Hell Army? Impossible, he would only cooperate with the Black Hell King and destroy Soaring Dragon Continent’s Da Xia and Tian Luo before going against Zhi Zun and Night Empress!

To Yue Yang, the Mother Earth Potion was also a treasure that he had to obtain.

He would never let the Ocean Emperor have it.

What was rarer was that this was the best opportunity to kill the Ocean Emperor when An Xi was prepared to put his life on the line

against the Ocean Emperor. Yue Yang would be a fool if he did not take this opportunity to obtain the Mother Earth Potion! As a man from another world, people like the Ocean Emperor are just living NPCs, how would he just give them any treasure? Even in RPGs, people don't play like this, moreover he was trying to survive in another world!

“Go, kill him!” Sea Dragon Crown Prince hated Yue Yang to his bones.

Big crowds of Sea Generals and the Ocean Emperor's elites swarmed up to Yue Yang and surrounded him.

Shark King exchanged looks with the other three Kings. Since things are no longer salvageable, they could only act according to the Ocean Emperor's orders to protect the five large whirlpools and kill anyone who comes by. As for whether Zhi Zun would be furious over them killing the Yue Clan's Third Young Master and come to find the culprit, they can no longer concern themselves with that.

Squid King, Jellyfish King and Manta Ray King of the Four Kings eyed their surroundings cautiously.

This was because they knew that unless he was extremely confident, this Yue Clan's Third Young Master would not come seeking for his death.

The opponent must have a helper!

The Eight Sea Marshals have begun to increase their power.

They were going to be the main force of this battle. They were prepared to use encirclement and human wave tactic to kill this young human who came here to seek trouble. They were unlike the Four Kings who each had a sea territory of their own to govern and are able to obtain the latest news of all events. The Sea Generals have always accompanied the Ocean Emperor and have stayed in the higher levels of Tong Tian Tower for a long time. Therefore, their knowledge of Yue Clan's Third Young Master can be said to be very little. If it were not for the concerns of Shark King, they would have long killed this reckless young human.

Seeing countless Sea Generals slowly surround him, Yue Yang calmly asked Sea Dragon Crown Prince: "Is this what the rumored 'bullying with numbers'?"

Sea Dragon Crown Prince sneered: "So what if we are bullying you? This is the sea, the territory of Sea Clan!"

Yue Yang raised his hand.

He raised his hands in surrender: "Alright, I have to admit that I am aghast over your idiocy!"

As Yue Yang raised his hands, countless Hybrid Fishmen floated up from the Deep Sea Abyss.

They appeared beside Yue Yang.

Among the Hybrid Fishmen, Octopus Man Boss's deep and calm voice rang out: "Crown Prince, if I remembered correctly, this place has not been conquered by the Ocean Emperor. This place is still our territory. It is not that you all cannot fight here for treasures, but it is better to ask us beforehand. Just like this young man beside me who was more polite, a few days ago he had already came and informed us. Unfortunately, you all did not. Crown Prince, I have to say that we were a little disappointed. "

"Bullying with numbers, I, Old Zhang cannot sit and watch!" A buzzing voice followed.

"....." Swordfish man did not say anything, but his eyes were filled with intent to fight.

"We will just make it clear that we are here to help Yue Clan's Third Young Master. Why? We have already decided to cooperate , so you all can just regret that you didn't come to seek cooperation with us earlier! However, even if you all wanted to work with us, we might not agree. We will not work with all of you fools, all useless fools! What Sea Dragon Crown Prince, I hate you, how dare you spit on my boat, damn it, didn't your parents teach you anything? I spent so much time and energy cleaning it after retrieving it from the bottom of the sea, yet you spit on it? You are truly disgusting. Go and die, you uneducated bug! Blast, you have to help me beat him until he is crippled. I want to hold down his ugly head and make him stick out his tongue to lick up that mouth of spit, and then to lick clean my whole ship..... damn it, how dare you attack before I finished talking, I hate you bunch of trash with no manners! " Mudskipper Man's mouth was undoubtedly the most annoying. Even Yue Yang himself have wanted to tear off

that guy's mouth, but when he thought again, this was what made Mudskipper unique, and started to ignore it.

“Kill, chop off his fish head to make soup for me!” Sea Dragon Crown Prince was angered by Mudskipper man to the point that he was shaking with fury.

Shark King saw that things were not going well.

Even though their side had more people, the opponent had more than thirty Innates.

Moreover, even the weakest Mudskipper Man was a Level Five Innante.

Even though these Hybrid Fishmen had been trapped here for as long as a thousand years, their ability could not be undermined. Even the Ocean Emperor himself did not wish to cause trouble with them. Just now that Octopus Man Boss had even came to an agreement with the Ocean Emperor to stay out of all matters, now that they were going back on their word, it must have something to do with Yue Clan's Third Young Master. Yue Clan's Third Young Master must have used something to persuade the Hybrid Fishmen and came to a secret agreement with them.

He quickly bowed towards the man hidden in a cloak: “Mr. Tai Hu, please make the move now. Only you are able to bring down Yue Clan's Third Young Master. “

The hood of the cloak slowly slid down.

It revealed a Fox Clan Old man with silver hair. He looked kind and a smile that could clear all animosity hung on the lips of this old man.

That light blue eyes looked just like blue gems, unexpectedly clear and calm.

He wore a fitting silk garment that was fiery red and held a silver staff in his hand. He looked just like a virtuous elder with a wealth of knowledge. Of course, if anyone had tried to identify him, they would know that this seemingly kind old man was the 'Ghost Eyed Devil Fox' that specialised in raping and killing young girls five hundred years ago. His name had been the most infamous out of all the killers.

A peak Level Nine Innate, in Yue Yang's Heaven Eyes Divine Vision, this old fox man's ability was a little higher than Shun Tian and the Black Prince.

The difference between the three was, other than Shun Tian's Five Transformation's Power, Shun Tian concealed his ability and never showed it to anyone.

Black Prince too hid his ability.

The difference was that this Old Fox Man did not, his potential has been reached and he had cultivated to his maximum potential.

The highest level he could reach was the Peak of Innate Level Nine .

An Xi had once chased Tai Hu for thousands of miles, but at the brink of death Tai Hu managed to escape. An Xi had thought that this Tai Hu was already dead. He never would have thought that the Ocean Emperor not only spared Tai Hu's life, he had even saved him..... maybe, it was because he knew that it was impossible to reach Innate Level Ten, Tai Zhu chose to cooperate with the Ocean Emperor as his dog.

“Young man, do not be too arrogant. When I made my name know, your grandfather's grandfather was still a baby. “ Tai Hu smiled condescendingly.

“You are right, but when I make my name, you are already rotting in your coffin!” Yue Yang gave Tai Zhu the middle finger, and then released the power of Level One Innate in an instant. It was just like a hurricane and sent a shockwave that shook the entire sea surface.

In an instant, huge waves reached the sky.

Even though he was only a Level One Innate, his power was stronger than a Level Six Innate.

the Ocean Emperor's army and the Sea Generals were blown off their feet by the hurricane. This was only a fragment of Yue Yang's power. If Yue Yang really made his move, none of them would be

his opponent. Anyone of them would be killed immediately. Seeing such, Shark King's face paled slightly. He waved his hand for his men to surround Yue Yang closer. The three Kings and Eight Sea Marshals around him also quickly raised their power.

Following the release of power from many Innates, the entire sea was in chaos, the waves rose thousands of meters high.

Tai Hu slowly retrieved a jewel out.

When he threw it into the whirlpool on the sea surface, a bright light appeared and all of the waves and turbulences strangely calmed down. The sea surface returned to its original dead calmness, no matter what shockwaves the Innates produced, there was no wave but only slight ripples.

Settling Sea Pearl!

Yue Yang understood now, why the Ocean Emperor was so unafraid of the Hybrid Fishmen. It was because he owned Settling Sea Pearl!

An existence that seemed to be able to turn the sea surface into land-like existence. To Sea Clan, it only means a lack of support for their power, for the Hybrid Fishmen it was undoubtedly their greatest weakness.

After taking out the Settling Sea Pearl, Tai Hu quickly rose to Innate Level Eight.

His entire body was surrounded by a flame that was as terrifying as a dragon's flame, while the silver staff in his hand combined with a summoned Electric Snake to become a Thunder Snake Staff, temporarily upgrading it from Gold-ranked to Holy-ranked treasure. His eyes were indistinct, as if Ghost Eyes, anyone who made contact would become dizzy and lose their sense. This, was the domain power of Tai Hu's Ghost Eyes. Once anyone enters his domain, they would lose control of their body and be under the control of Tai Hu.

Tai Hu also summoned a Platinum Level Ten Nine-Headed Demon Fox.

Even though it was not a Guardian Beast, nor a Holy Beast, it was extremely fast and could even fly in the sky. No other Beast could compare to it.

Tai Hu then swiftly summoned five Platinum Level 10 Lava Devil King . All of them were beasts that could restrain the Hybrid Fishmen. When the Settling Sea Pearl was in use, the sea surface was like a mirror. The shortest among the five Lava Devil Kings that was as high as 60 metres, stepped on the mirrored sea surface and headed towards the Hybrid Fishmen to kill them.....

As for Yue Yang, Tai Hu believed he would be able to have a complete victory with the Thunder Snake Staff in his hands.

The current Thunder Snake staff had the power of a Holy ranked Treasure. Even though it was temporary, it was extremely

powerful.

“Showing off Beasts now? Interesting!” Yue Yang laughed and loudly shouted: “Damned dog, come out and tell this guy what a real beast is!”

Hui Tai Lang who had always been bored in Yue Clan’s Castle had not fought beside his owner for a really long time. Right now, he was extremely bored.

Yue Yang had gone back and specially brought him here to train.

Such a golden opportunity, how could he not do his best in front of his owner?

He immediately wagged his tail to curry favor with his owner. He then extended his paws and a high-leveled Bronze Grimoire appeared. Even though this Grimoire had yet to level up to Platinum level, it was at least a high leveled Bronze level. After this battle, this Grimoire was likely to rise to Platinum Level.

When Hui Tai Lang’s Grimoire appeared, countless opponent revealed their jealousy.

Divine Beast?

Fuck, even his watch dog was a divine beast?

Chapter 471 – Yue Yang's Display Of Power

Hui Tai Lang's cool performance induced a sea of jealousy from the opponent.

Especially Sea Dragon Crown Prince, his eyes were blood shot and almost dripped blood. Even though Hui Tai Lang was not yet contracted, the Crown Prince knew he had no hope. This was because beasts above Holy rank all had extremely strong wills and chose their own masters.

If Holy Beasts and Divine Beasts did not belong to you, no matter how much you want them, they were all wasted efforts!

Now, Sea Dragon Crown Prince only wanted to kill Hui Tai Lang before it grew up. Hui Tai Lang owned a high leveled Bronze Grimoire and was only in the initial stages of growth as a Divine Beast. Now was the best time to kill it. If he were to wait for Hui Tai Lang to grow up to become a Peak Level Divine Beast, let alone Sea Dragon Crown Prince, even the Ocean Emperor would not be able to take it down.

“Ah woo!” Hui Tai Lang howled to summon his Guardian Beasts and used his Innate Skill as two Hui Tai Lang jumped into the sky.

They looked exactly the same.

They both exuded the same presence, their eyes shone with the same killing intent.

Even the flapping of the wings on their back were on the exact same frequency.

Tai Hu thought that this Hui Tai Lang would attack his Nine-headed Devil Fox. Based on the Nine-headed Devil Fox's speed, no matter how strong this Divine Beast was, it would not be able to defeat it immediately. As long as things dragged out for half an hour, the Mother Earth Potion would be born and things would be a success, everything would be perfect.

He never would have imagined that Hui Tai Lang that was in the sky had no intent of attacking the Nine-headed Devil Fox at all, but instead pounced towards the Ocean Emperor's Army and Sea Generals.

In that instant, it was like a tiger attacking a flock of sheep.

Blood splashed and filled the sky. the Ocean Emperor's Army and Sea Generals that were surrounding Yue Yang filled the air with their screams.

Yue Yang already seized the opportunity to unleash the power of Innate Level Two, and before Tai Hu could attack using his Thunder Snake Staff, Yue Yang had already released Innate Level Three. A terrifying presence soared into the sky, a giant that was almost a hundred metres tall rose from Yue Yang's head. This giant was formed from the energy he deliberately released. There was no shock wave around him at all. All of the energy had condensed to form a Giant. This Giant then spared no effort in

dropping down..... the entire sea surface shook. What was strange however, was that it was just like a mirror, it did not break, nor were there any splash.

The Settling Sea Pearl had stilled the entire sea surface like a mirror.

The attack of the energy Giant created a dent in the sea surface. However the sea surface bounced back like jelly and continuously shook.

Those Lava Devil Kings who were covered all over in lava lost their footing, and fell one by one on the sea surface.

“Break!”

Yue Yang held Crescent Blade in his left hand and Hui Jin Magic Blade in his right, and displayed the first slash of Yue Qiu’s ‘Armageddon Slash’, Earth Splitting Slash!

A long scar split the sea surface.

One of the Lava Devil Kings unfortunately fell down on the edge, slid in and fell into the sea.

When the lava on his body touched the water, steam was immediately produced as the water evaporated. The white steam looked just like a the scene of a volcano’s lava entering the sea..... The Lava Devil King was in intense pain. Water was its greatest

enemy, even if no one attacked it, just falling into the sea would make it drown to death. Moreover, he would even cool into a stone statue, the consequences were unthinkable. If there was no Settling Sea Pearl, it would never have been able to walk on the sea surface. Now that it fell into the crack, it was screaming in pain, those cries shook heaven and earth.

It tried very hard to climb out.

However, before it could climb out, it had to ask one person for permission. That person was Yue Yang.

Yue Yang stretched out his leg and kicked it down.....

After falling into the bottomless Deep Sea Abyss, only death was waiting!

Tai Hu's Thunder Snake Staff gathered the lightning and thunder in the sky to attack Yue Yang. However, Yue Yang swam like a graceful fish. The Mysterious Three Styles was elegantly executed, in his newly understood realm, Yue Yang's control was more mysterious, his execution was even more perfect.

Each strike from the Thunder Snake Staff missed Yue Yang by a hair's breadth. Each attack just brushed past Yue Yang, none of them hitting him.

Tai Hu was beyond furious at such a situation.

Not only did he attack faster, he used the power of his domain to pressure Yue Yang. He was attempting to affect Yue Yang mentally so that he could not move his body easily.

His Ghost eyes constantly maintained eye contact with Yue Yang.

“You prick? I poke!” Yue Yang pretended to be hit so that Tai Hu would move closer in glee. When Tai Hu moved closer, Yue Yang moved at lightning speed towards him. He put away Crescent Blade and formed [Two Dragons Vying for Pearls](#) with his hand, fiercely poking into Tai Hu’s Ghost Eye. Even though Tai Hu closed his eyes in time, Yue Yang’s poke caused him great pain. It was only now did he realise that this guy’s speed was in fact faster than what he imagined by 10 times, it almost exceeded the speed of light!

(Last: Two Dragons Vying for Pearls, two dragons = two fingers, pearls = eyes)

“I’ll hit, I’ll hit, I’ll hit again!” Yue Yang was not going to go easy.

He took out Crescent Blade to push away the Thunder Snake Staff. Hui Jin Magic Blade scarred Tai Hu’s body and broke past his protective qi, forming multiple wounds on his smooth fur, splashing blood into the air.

When Tai Hu was urgently escaping, Yue Yang continued his attack.

He threw out his Flame Whip.

His Flame Whip had already upgraded to become Whip of Agony.

With a scream, Yue Yang fiercely whipped Tai Hu's head.

The Whip of Agony had swallowed Scarlet Empress' Scarlet Lotus Fire and Blood of Hatred, and further underwent the refining with Yue Yang's Heaven's Fury Fire Lotus and Yue Yang's wrathful energy. Combined with its original form, it could be said to have formidable power. Compared to treasures of the same power, it was at least the level of a Platinum-ranked Treasure Whip! This hit almost took away Tai Hu's old life, the pain was able to cause a skilled senior to groan in pain..... His silver hair flew loose and the lash mark went deep into his skull. The flesh on his face was also whipped to the point of laceration.

When Tai Hu had only just shook off this whip, another similar whip came down from the sky.

The whip first hit Tai Hu's heart before quickly tightening up..

Flame Whip wrapped tightly around his neck, almost suffocating Tai Hu.

This was Blood Queen who had just flown out to attack the enemy! If Shark King did not save him in time, Tai Hu most likely would have become a dead cat, because Yue Yang's Hui Jin Magic Blade struck again with his self-invented Great Totem Pole Battle Technique!

Blood Prison Totem Pole!

Even Shark King who came up to support Tai Hu felt that he was within a bloodbath hell, and was afraid of being hit by Yue Yang directly. Using his natural agility, he grabbed Tai Hu and jumped into the sky, fleeing from the battle. Shark King also summoned a Sea Cucumber Beast and spit out a large amount of energy to help Tai Hu heal. The other three Kings hurriedly rush over to fight against Yue Yang.

“Scram!” Yue Yang put away Crescent Blade and Hui Jin Magic Blade. He then raised his hand, and the Flame Whip made from Nirvana Flame began to spin very fast, throwing out thousands of fire works.

“Ahhhhhhh.....”

Even though the Three Kings escaped in time, all of the Sea Generals and the Ocean Emperor’s army whom Yue Yang’s gunfire was aimed at had all been shot.

One would be in unbearable pain if they were to be even hit by one sliver of Nirvana Flame.

If one of their limbs were hit, they could save their own life by cruelly amputating that limb off. However, if Yue Yang shot at one of the crucial parts of their body or their head, one would only be left to face death. No one can save them, and no one dared to. Once burnt by Nirvana Flame, no power in the world could stop its

purification and destruction.

Even though Sea Dragon Crown Prince had the ability of a Level Seven Innate, he still did not dare to face Yue Yang on a fight.

Once Yue Yang took out Nirvana Flame, his heart froze over.

His war spirit had long turned into cold sweat!

The Eight Sea Marshals on the other hand were very loyal, even in the face of such a strong enemy like Yue Yang, all of them rushed forward to attack together.

“You are seeking death!” Yue Yang suddenly crouched down, when the Eight Sea Marshals reached his body, he suddenly stood up. The Nirvana Flame on his body formed a pillar of fire, shooting into the sky.

Six of the Sea Marshals with fast reactions escaped in time.

The two Sea Marshals with a slower reaction had already run into the Pillar of Nirvana Flame.

Even though they knew they would most likely die, they did not struggle to escape. Instead, they suicidally rushed towards Yue Yang, intending to hug Yue Yang and self-destruct.

After secretly learning super speed and explosion of power from

the battle with Scarlet Emperor, those skills could finally be put to use. The instant when the two Sea Marshals threw themselves at Yue Yang, in that thousandth of a second, an energy geyser exploded from the bottom of Yue Yang's feet. The energy first hit one of the Sea Marshals, throwing him into the sky. The other Sea Marshal realised Yue Yang's right hand was shining from the condensing of countless runes, forming the World-Exterminating Wheel.

Shit!

Before this Sea Marshal had the time to even form a second thought in his head, he realised the World-Exterminating Wheel had sliced over his body.

The Sea Marshals who had been thrown into the sky was still in pain.

“Die!” With Nirvana Flame in his left hand, Yue Yang cruelly pressed down on his face and threw him against the sea surface that had been turned into a hard mirrored surface by Settling Sea Pearl.

At the same time, the Sea Marshal that was chopped into two halves fell from the sky, the blood only just then splashed out.

Countless flower stems rose from the sea surface, the biggest of them formed a giant Thorny Flower Demon. The Thorny Flower Demon opened its huge mouth and swallowed the two pieces of the Sea Marshal.

The Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen had finally woken up from her slumber.

Her appearance caused another wave of anguished wail from everyone.

Dead or alive, these Thorny Flowers did not care. These Thorny Flowers that were like the ocean waved their long stems, twisting around to catch anyone which it would then swallow. If the Thorny Flowers could not swallow them, the prey would be strangled to death and then forcibly swallowed, forcibly digested..... Hui Tai Lang would also eat his enemies during battle, but Hui Tai Lang still lost to the sea of Thorny Flowers controlled by the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen, not even a hundred Hui Tai Lang could win a sea of Thorny Flowers in eating.

Other than the Lava Devil King who sunk to the bottom of the sea, the four remaining Lava Devil Kings were pathetically beaten by the Hybrid Fishmen.

This was because the Hybrids not only had the ability of Innates, they were also good at water skills.

Many Beasts are able to spray out pillars of water. If the sea did not become as hard as a mirror, the four of them would have been long dead.

“Oh no, the sky changed colour!” Shark King was engaged in battle with Yue Yang, but suddenly felt that things were not right.

Even though the sky was already dark, there should not be so many black clouds, what was going on?

The resonant Storm Conch had been blown.

While winds blew between the sky and the sea, black clouds rumbled above, lightning flashed and thunder rolled while torrents of rain poured down from the sky.

Only now, did Shark King and the rest realise that in the middle of the sea of Thorny Flowers, a devastatingly beautiful mermaid was blowing the Storm Conch that could call rainstorms!

Chapter 472 – Who Dares To Stop Me?!

The Sea Anemone Crown Princess pointed at the Storm Mermaid in fury and screamed at the top of her lungs, “Hurry, hurry up, someone, go kill her, kill her now!”

A number of Sea Generals and dozens of Elite Guards heard the command and charged ahead fearlessly, bracing death.

Another Sea Marshal witnessed the situation and bravely dived down quickly, preparing to disrupt the Storm Mermaid’s Conch’s summon. A golden arrow pierced through his shoulder with a swoosh. In an instant, the Sea Marshal’s shoulder started to petrify. He was unable to react in time as a bolt of lightning blasted through the air, striking him right on his head.

His head and face were charred black.

Fresh blood oozed out from his eyes, ears, mouth and nose.

At the very moment he fell down powerlessly, the critically injured Sea Marshal saw two sharp ice blades, which chopped at his throat.

He instantly lost consciousness...

If the Storm Mermaid appeared, how could Stone Element Medusa, Thunder Naga, and Ice Serpent Demon not be present?

The remaining five Sea Marshals retreated hurriedly into a safe region, afraid to follow the same path their companions did.

Stone Element Medusa and Thunder Naga together were fatal enough, what made it worse was that there was the Ice Serpent Demon. In addition, all of them were under the protection of the sea of Thorny Flowers. With the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen present, entering the sea of Thorny Flowers would be courting death!

There were Eight Sea Marshals, and now they have already lost three.

However, the number of enemies were multiplying!

The time that passed was less than ten minutes. For them to complete the mission given by His Majesty the Ocean Emperor, they had to hold them back for another twenty minutes.

Seeing such a grim situation, the Shark King could not help getting a headache.

Yue Clan's Third Young Master was ten times more powerful than what he had imagined. Not only did he possessed the Nirvana Flame and World Exterminating Wheel, he also had extremely quick and powerful beasts. He was unlike young Innates at all. His combat techniques were as sly as an old fox which had cultivated for a millennium. The most terrifying thing was that this Yue Clan's Third Young Master did not exhibit all of his power. He was still holding back.

He probably still wanted to leave some strength to snatch the Mother Earth Potion!

Even if that was the case, there was no one capable of stopping him.

Even Tai Hu, who was a peak Level Nine Innate, was afraid of the the Nirvana Flame and the World Exterminating Wheel... Both of these were his nemesis.

What made Tai Hu and Shark King felt the most desperate was the loli serpent who suddenly swam out from the deep waters. She swam elegantly and quickly under the sea, where other sea creature and Sea Clan members were unable to move in. She could disregard it completely and emerge out of the sea with ease. What drove others mad was that, she was holding the Settling Sea Pearl in her palm.

The Settling Sea Pearl that could not be touched by any sea creature nor Sea Clan was held in her hands with such ease.

How, how was this possible!

Watching her unhindered actions of breaking through the mirror like water surface, rising and floating in front of Yue Yang, eventually handing the pearl over to him, Shark King and Tai Hu wanted to cry on each other's shoulder. Their perfect plan that was drawn up by every possible means became froth and shadows thanks to a loli serpent.

So much that they even lost a treasure like the Settling Sea Pearl.

“Good girl!” Yue Yang took the Settling Sea Pearl, hugged Xiao Wen Li and gave her a peck.

“Hee...” Xiao Wen Li smiled and embraced Yue Yang cutely. She kissed him back.

Her wide beautiful eyes were just like the crescent moon, extremely cute.

Once the Settling Sea Pearl was in Yue Yang’s hands, the mirror-like water surface immediately fell apart, restoring its original form instantly.

Due to the Innates’ Qi, the water surface immediately surged, being also affected by the Storm Conch’s summon initiated by Storm Mermaid, the stormy waves raged, sweeping across the entire sea surface.

Numerous Elite Guards and Sea Generals from the Ocean Emperor’s army fell into the water. The drenched Lava Demon Kings gave a howl of grief as they sank to the bottom of the sea and became stone statues.

The situation for the the Ocean Emperor’s side drastically changed.

Meanwhile all the Hybrid Fishmen who were previously gloomy for quite a while let out a long hiss... Now, it was finally their turn to show their power!

Since they had already become Hybrid Fishmen, being unable to fight underwater, their combat power was reduced by half. In contrast, if they could be in water, their combat power would double. How big would the difference be if that happened? Of course the fighters of the the Ocean Emperor would not weaken, they would also get an increase in their combat power. However, they would never want to battle with the Hybrid Fishermen underwater. This was because they had to face thirty plus powerful Innate Rankers whose powers were amplified multiple times!

“Titan Jr., let us handle this!” The Octopus man Boss signaled Yue Yang that he could leave. He had enough confidence to do battle, even if he could not guarantee the final victory, it definitely wouldn’t be a problem to get a tie.

“Hurry, get someone to enter the Crystal Canyon and block the Five Large Whirlpool!” The Sea Dragon Crown Prince shouted anxiously.

Due to the fact that only five people can enter the Crystal Canyon every time and given that the the Ocean Emperor and An Xi are already inside, If another three people entered, no one else could enter.

Immediately, three loyal and trusted aide entered the Five Large Whirlpool.

Yue Yang watched with folded arms, he did not try to stop them.

The Shark King also felt his head aching, The Sea Dragon Crown Prince was overestimating himself.

If this method of “blocking people” worked then why did the the Ocean Emperor let everyone come out again? Might as well let people block it then?

It must be known that there was a super assassin An Xi inside. Let alone An Xi, there were also a hundred Ancient Guards inside, how long could the three people who just entered last? Even if neither the Ancient Guards nor An Xi attack, in the battle between two Supreme Innates who were at the extreme boundary of Innate Level Ten, how long could those three last? They might become scattered ashes and dispersed smoke the moment they entered.

“How clever, Sea Dragon Crown Prince. Your brain is so good, it must be because you ate moronic stuff?” Yue Yang clapped his hands and praised.

“You... “ The Sea Dragon Crown Prince was trembling with fury.

If it was someone else, he would have rushed over to tear the opponent to shreds.

However, the person in front of him was Yue Yang. He did not even dare to touch Yue Yang’s finger. Even if Yue Yang stated that

he would not move nor counterattack, the Sea Dragon Crown Prince would still not dare to attack. He had already seen it not only once, his Sea Generals being sliced into half and burnt into ashes by Yue Yang's Nirvana Wings.

He hated Yue Yang!

He hated him so much that he gritted his teeth hard. However, he did not dare go close to Yue Yang even by one step. Even if it was a single step.

At this very moment Tai Hu jumped out and acted as an old senior. He waved his Thunder Snake Staff and once again braced against Yue Yang.

Now, he was no longer careless. He displayed the power of a peak Level Nine Innate... It could be said that at this moment, he was slightly stronger than Shun Tian and the Black Prince. However, he was nothing compared to the Scarlet Emperor and the Black Hell King. Even if Scarlet Emperor was at his weakest, he could still kill him in a second.

Yue Yang, who once faced Scarlet Emperor, Scarlet Concubine, Shun Tian and the Black Prince's attack together all at once felt at ease to be facing this pretentious old senior.

Even the sparring sessions with Phoenix Fairy Beauty were not as effortless as this.

Tai Hu mainly dominates his opponents using mental attacks and speed, along with his ability to paralyze using the Thunder Snake Staff.

Others may be afraid of these, but to Yue Yang, these were just like a light drizzle... Talking about mental attacks, Tai Hu could not be compared to Phoenix Fairy Beauty. The Phoenix Fairy Beauty's [Charm] Inherent Skill could all living things, while Tai Hu's Ghost Eye was a joke to Yue Yang. Being blunt, Hui Tai Lang's angry glare was probably more OP than his Ghost Eye.

As for the destructive power of eyes, when was it Tai Hu's turn?

Ah Man's Doom's Eye would probably send Tai Hu crying bitterly, ashamed and unable to show his face.

"Strike!" Tai Hu struck Yue Yang on the shoulder using the Thunder Snake Staff. He was so pleased, he started to hoot and wanted to add another strike.

"Fool!" Yue Yang sneered, the Nirvana's Wings have already transformed into Nirvana Armour to protect him. This strike was useless and only brought a slight pain. However, Tai Hu fell into the range of Xiao Wen Li's Binding Chains Inherent Skill. Now he was out of luck. Before Shark King could assist, Yue Yang quickly attacked. He dealt a heavy blow on Tai Hu's heart using his right fist. Using two fingers on his left hand, Yue Yang also poked Tai Hu's two eyes. Tai Hu was no longer able to close his eyes. Even if he could, he was defenceless against Yue Yang's Innate Invisible Sword Qi. After destroying Tai Hu's Ghost Eyes, Yue Yang added a kick between Tai Hu's two legs, carrying out a heavy blow to "

send him off, a thousand miles away”. Among the sounds of explosion, he faintly heard the sound of balls being bursted.

“Mad Devour of the Raging Sea!” Shark King finally made it, but it was too late.

“Slow!” Yue Yang imitated Shun Tian’s Force of the Dragon and Mammoth as well as Fatty Hai’s Hippo Meteor Punch, forming raindrop like attacks that bombarded Shark King’s body. The Giant Shadow together with the Energy Giant’s additional assistance, the Shark King’s body was indented with deep fist marks. Luckily his body was covered by shark skin which enhanced his defence. With that as well as his strength as a Level Eight Innate, he grabbed Tai Hu and fled in a hurry. He did not plan to take on Yue Yang.

In the sky, the other three kings escaped the Octopus Boss, Whale Zhang and Swordfish Blast’s attacks. They rushed over to protect Shark King and Tai Hu, who was critically wounded and on the edge of death.

Yue Yang held the Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear and charged into the formation of the Ocean Emperor’s army and Sea Generals.

The massacre starts.

Yue Yang only stopped after every one fled in pure terror and no one dared to approach him.

Yue Yang was bathed in blood, just like an ancient demon god, there was no one who was not afraid.

Yue Yang gave the Sea Dragon Crown Prince a quick glance, “Clever prince are you still planning to get people to block? If no one dares to throw away their life, then I will go greet your father! Prince, you wanted to play with me? You are still too young! If you thought that having the Ocean Emperor as your father will make you a real prince, then you are actually just a useless and scaredy little quail. Go back and hide under your father’s bed, the world outside is too dangerous!”

Facing Yue Yang’s cold mockery, the prince felt his face become red and then blue.

He did not dare to retort.

Because Yue Yang was giving off such a murderous aura, and the powerful Tai Hu was in such a pathetic condition, the prince almost peed in his pants. It took him all his effort not to!

The Shark King coughed up blood, while Tai Hu was still being treated by a few Sea Generals. The other three Sea Kings were still busy dealing with the Octopus Boss, Whale Zhang and Swordfish Blast, they could not spare attention away from their opponents. As for Yue Yang’s decision to enter the Crystal Canyon, no one dared to intervene. The Sea Dragon Crown Prince and Sea Anemone Crown Princess both had their heads bowed, pretending they did not see anything.

Yue Yang brought only Xiao Wen Li, and left Hui Tai Lang, Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen ,Bloody Queen Red, Stone Element Medusa, Storm Mermaid, Thunder Naga, and Ice Serpent Demon all outside.

With these powerful beasts, the Emperor's soldiers would not get any advantages.

Furthermore, Mudskipper man and about thirty plus Hybrid fishermen were still there.

Crystal Canyon.

When Yue Yang entered the Crystal Canyon, he was only ten minutes away from the birth of the Mother Earth Potion.

However, he did not expect this place was already a hell of blood.

There were about ten huge beasts which died here. The fresh blood seem to have dyed the entire Crystal Canyon crimson. Even the Ancient Guards were wounded and damaged as they were absorbing the energy from crystals to recover. In the sky, it seemed like there were two suns, the Ocean Emperor, Guan Lan and An Xi. Their battle has reached a climax, both parties attacked without holding back, tension was building up...

In the center of the Crystal Canyon, in the deepest caves, there grew numerous crystals. The crystals grew little by little, just like flower blossoms, the process was extremely slow.

That was the birthplace of the ‘Mother Earth Potion’!

Chapter 473 – Battling The Ocean Emperor

The terrifying shock wave from the battle between the two Rankers spread.

It could move even the mountains and the seas. If not for the fact that the Crystal Canyon was made purely out of crystal, it would have been razed to the ground.

Numerous crystal pillars and shards flew in mid air.

Even the Ancient Guards would be torn into pieces if they were to be in the epicentre of the shock wave.

Yue Yang was lucky enough to pick up two corpses of the Crystal Men but he soon realised that he couldn't bring these men's soul away.

The moment he placed the corpses into his platinum ring, the souls of the two Crystal Men would immediately escape and undergo rebirth in another pile of crystal. Maybe it was due to the restrictions here that caused them to be unable to leave the Crystal Canyon and could only exist as creatures that leach on crystals. Even so, Yue Yang reaped a lot from collecting their corpse. With more in depth research, the body structure of these Crystal Men could be an inspiration in accomplishing Yue Gong's third last wish.

Yue Yang also collected quite a few crystal shards and broken crystal pillars.

The energy from these crystals would be beneficial to the Sickly Beauty.

The Phoenix Beauty, Luo Hua City Mistress, Princess Qian Qian and Xue Wu Xia were making their own progress. Although the sickly beauty isn't part of the main fighting force, Yue Yang felt that it was necessary for her to level up, especially now that he got such high quality energy crystals. There was no harm picking up more since there were so many lying around.

However, what Yue Yang focussed on the most was the crystal lotus that was growing in the canyon gradually. This was where the Mother Earth Potion was going to be born.

In just five minutes time....

The miraculous Mother Earth Potion was about to be born.

It had reached its final growth phase, so even the shock wave from the battle between two Supreme Innates couldn't stop its birth now. The shock wave couldn't even damage the giant crystal lotus which had continued to grow bigger and bigger. Around it were numerous crystal pillars that protruded from the crystal floor and acted like guards to block the impact from the shock wave.

The entire Crystal Canyon was filled with an indescribable fragrance.

It didn't scatter with the wind.

If wasn't the kind of fragrance flowers gave off, but an inherent fragrance that penetrates the soul and nourishes all forms of life.

Those Crystal Men who had broken body parts quickly recovered under this heavenly fragrance... They surrounded the crystal lotus and protected it as they await the birth of the Mother Earth Potion.

The Crystal Lotus was still growing and the fragrance it emitted grew stronger with each passing second.

In the air, the battle between the Ocean Emperor Guan Lan and the hempen-clothed old man An Xi was drawing to an end. It was apparent that the Ocean Emperor was stronger since he had already gained the upper hand.

Yue Yang didn't interfere immediately. instead, he continued to store those giant dead Beasts into his platinum ring. He didn't even leave out the broken limbs, and he even tried to pull out the blood stained crystals stuck in their bodies and then storing them. All of the Beasts of the Ocean Emperor and the hempen-clothed old man were above Diamond rank so this makes them top levelling up supplements for the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen, Hui Tai Lang, and even the Reaper Mantis and the Spirit of Earth Fire, so how could Yue Yang miss this opportunity? With the imminent battle against the Black Hell King, Yue Yang had to power up his Beasts.

Compared to the Ocean Emperor, fighting against the Black Hell

King who is a Level One or even a Level Two Innate Elder was more terrifying!

Boom! Boom!

When the third boom sounded, the hempen-clothed old man An Xi fell from the sky like a meteorite.

He landed on the crystal floor with a thud, as the entire area of crystal he fell on caved in, forming a round cavity on the ground.

The crack spread everywhere and extended towards Yue Yang's feet... He looked at the hempen-clothed old man and realised that there was a hole through his chest. It looked like his heart got struck with the heaviest blow. Other than that, his skull and spine were also struck by the Ocean Emperor.

Although An Xi, the number one assassin, used all his strength to fight the Ocean Emperor, who was one of the Five Emperors of the Tong Tian Tower, he was still defeated in the end.

With blood oozing out from his mouth, An Xi gazed to Yue Yang lifelessly, signalling to him that everything was on his hands now.

The hempen-clothed old man wasn't far from death.

His only wish was to see Yue Yang kill the the Ocean Emperor in front of him before he dies.

Yue Yang looked up and realised that the strong Ocean Emperor Guan Lan was in a similar sorry state. The Ocean Emperor was clad in holy-ranked armor, the Ocean Emperor's Armor, but a holy-ranked dagger was peirced through his chest to his back. This was An Xi's final strike. Even if the the Ocean Emperor was protected by the holy-ranked armor and his Guardian Beast, the Three-headed Golden Dragon King, he couldn't avoid this kind of lethal strike... Although the dagger pierced his heart, the Ocean Emperor didn't collapse as he changed the location of his heart just a few seconds before An Xi struck, thus dodging An Xi's deadly attack.

The holy-ranked 'God Killing Dagger' was undoubtedly stronger than the 'Ocean Emperor's Armor' that was similarly of holy-ranked.

The Ocean Emperor's Armor was a high quality holy-ranked equipment, while the God Killing Dagger was a top notch one!

When these two equipments collided, the God Killing Dagger proved to be stronger.

Unfortunately, An Xi fought with all his might and yet he still couldn't kill his old enemy Guan Lan.

The Ocean Emperor pulled out the God Killing Dagger and tossed it away. No one can use the God Killing Dagger who had recognised An Xi as its master until after he dies. The Ocean Emperor who was heavily injured in the skull and limbs slowly descended and landed before Yue Yang.

He was a giant with a height of over two metres.

He looked majestic with his black hair that flew with the wind.

His buff body looked like a mountain, full of energy. However his limbs weren't buff like a muscle man, rather they were slender and lean. He was really one of those few who looked like an emperor with his body in golden ratio. Even if he doesn't speak, his vibe would have said it all.

His eyes were crystal clear with a tinge of gold around his pupils. It was as if he could see through people with just one glance.

Clad in the holy-ranked armor, he looked even more majestic and supreme. Yue Yang had seen his fair share of rulers but none as superb as the Ocean Emperor.

Although Jun Wu You looked intimidating too, he would be a far cry when compared with the Ocean Emperor.

Shun Tian, the Emperor of Zi Wei, was also one of the weaker ones.

Even the Great Demon King Baruth couldn't compare.

The only one that could win against the Ocean Emperor wasn't the Black Hell King but one who was of equal status as the Prison

Emperor six thousand years ago-the Scarlet Emperor!

Needless to say, the Scarlet Emperor was definitely a demonic existence!

Calling him an emperor would be an understatement. He was definitely a 'demi-god' level Ranker. Even in his weakest state, he could pressure Shun Tian and the Black Prince and make them hang their head low with his intimidating vibe... comparing the Black Hell King and the Scarlet Emperor, one was a marshal while the other one was an overlord, they couldn't be compared side by side.

Although the Ocean Emperor wasn't on par to the Scarlet Emperor, overpowered senior Innate, it doesn't affect his superiority as the one who dominates the entire oceanic region in the high levels of Tong Tian Tower.

Guan Lan was indeed the one and only Ocean Emperor in this world.

Nobody would be able to suppress his presence.

The Ocean Emperor stood in front of Yue Yang. Even at this moment, when he had just finished a life and death battle with An Xi, he still remained as arrogant as ever.

“You want to kill me? “ Guan Lan asked.

“If you can let me take the Mother Earth Potion, I can consider not fighting with you!” Yue Yang said something that couldn’t be achieved.

“Why must I let you do it?” The Ocean Emperor Guan Lan didn’t get angry. Since there was still three minutes before the birth of the Mother Earth Potion, he took his time and inquired Yue Yang.

“Guan Lan, I think you understand even if I don’t say it. You have exhausted all your potential, so you can’t improve any further. Even if you make a breakthrough and reach Innate Elder Level One, you wouldn’t improve any further unless you obtain items like God’s Blood or Mother Earth Potion again. It can be said that it would be a waste for you to consume the Mother Earth Potion. To put it more bluntly, it would be an unforgivable sin for you to consume it. I am younger than you, more potential than you. My future is limitless, so why would I give it to you? In the past, you betrayed the entire team for your own accomplishment. It made you where you are today. In the future, I won’t be any weaker than you, I will only be stronger, so why must I give the Mother Earth Potion to you? Although I may be selfish, compared to your betrayal, I’m better.” Yue Yang stopped for a while before continuing. “Even if I give it to you, you’ll kill me because you wouldn’t be able to bear watching me grow and overtake you... Your daughter asked me once, why must I kill you? If you all didn’t force me into this, I wouldn’t cause trouble at all. My growth was all due to the pressure coming from seniors like you. Let me just summarise this in one sentence. Guan Lan, you are neither the strongest nor the most talented one, if you want to be the big boss, or hinder others from becoming one, you will definitely fall.”

“Indeed.” the Ocean Emperor nodded as he affirmed Yue Yang’s

idea. “Last question, do you think you can kill me?”

“I have no confidence in winning whenever I’m fighting against Supreme Innates. But it’s alright, I’m still young, I can afford to lose, with the experience I will gain, I can fight again. As long as I am not afraid of fighting, the final victory will be mine with perseverance,” Yue Yang answered.

There was only two minutes left to the birth of the Mother Earth Potion.

Now, the gigantic Crystal Lotus had surpassed the highest point of the Crystal Canyon as numerous crystals pointed to the sky.

The energy of the heavenly fragrance had covered the entire Crystal Canyon.

The gentle light that shimmered off the Crystal Lotus and gradually became stronger as numerous energy accumulated, awaiting the birth of the Mother Earth Potion.

The Ocean Emperor Guan Lan peered at the Crystal Lotus in the distance, as he nodded dejectedly. “If only you were my son, I would have passed it to you.”

After finishing his sentence, the Ocean Emperor started to act.

He gave off a light that was even more blinding than sunlight.

Yue Yang also unleashed the power of a Level Four Innate immediately. His current power was a Level Nine Innate. Although it was a far cry from the Ocean Emperor's peak Level Ten Innate, with the aid of the Nirvana Armor, World Exterminating Wheel and Innate Invisible Sword Qi, he had confidence in fighting against the Ocean Emperor. Even if it meant paying a high price for it, Yue Yang would defeat the Ocean Emperor Guan Lan and get the Mother Earth Potion.

“Kill!” With a shout, Yue Yang and the Ocean Emperor charged towards each other as they fought with all their might.

Only one minute and thirty seconds was left till the birth of the Mother Earth Potion.

The battle between Yue Yang and the Ocean Emperor Guan Lan had officially began!

Chapter 474 – Mother Earth Potion

The shock wave caused by the two parties was comparable to the powerful blast caused by the Ocean Emperor and An Xi.

With the enhancement from the Three-headed Golden Dragon King, the power of the Ocean Emperor's punch was strong enough to raze a hill. While with the help of the two Giant Phantom Shadow, Yue Yang's power was equally earth-shaking. Not only were their strengths close, their combat style were similar as well. They both didn't chose to attack the opponent's body. Instead, they both chose to launch a heavy attack on the opponent's forehead.

Yue Yang was protected by the Nirvana Flame Armor so naturally the Ocean Emperor would not attack his body.

Similarly, the Ocean Emperor had the holy-ranked Ocean Emperor's Armor to protect his body. And, he also had a strengthening-type Guardian Spirit Beast, the Three Headed Golden Dragon King to assist him. Just like the Ocean Emperor, Yue Yang did not aim his fists at his body. Even though the Ocean Emperor's chest was already critically wounded and his heart was left unguarded, it did not become Yue Yang's target.

Bombard the opponent's forehead.

This was both of their choice and agreed on by chance.

Just like matchless mutual understanding, their attacks were

launched, head on.

The Ocean Emperor, Guan Lan's speed was extremely fast!

However, Yue Yang was slightly faster. If he had not experienced the Scarlet Emperor's powerful attacks, he might have been much slower than the Ocean Emperor, Guan Lan.

Other than the Scarlet Emperor, the Ocean Emperor had one of the fastest speeds Yue Yang had seen. Compared to him, the Black Prince's speed which he was so proud of was just like a snail's. It was not surprising that the Ocean Emperor could fight on equal grounds with An Xi, who was the fastest among all the killers...

In between flashes of lightning, Yue Yang brandished the World Exterminating Wheel and furiously slashed him.

It cut through the Ocean Emperor's Innate Qi which was used for protection and aimed right at the Ocean Emperor's forehead. The Ocean Emperor did not avoid nor dodge. Instead, he used all his strength and punched towards Yue Yang's face with the intent to bring Yue Yang down with him! He had the power of a peak Level Ten Innate, and he also had a holy Beast, the Three Headed Golden Dragon King, to strengthen his physical body. He could definitely take risk like this!

The reason why the Ocean Emperor won against An Xi just now was precisely because of the strengthening from the Three Headed Golden Dragon King.

Yue Yang did not retreat but continued forward while bending his left arm to defend his face.

In his right hand, he held the World Exterminating Wheel.

Heaven's Fury Fire Lotuses, Arctic Ice Frost and Purple Lightning Snakes distorted the entire space. As the World Exterminating Wheel slashed through, even the space seemed to have shattered. This was the strongest power Yue Yang could produce in his new realm. Even if the Ocean Emperor had a hard body, after being struck by the World Exterminating Wheel, he would be critically injured and collapse to the ground.

Suddenly, the Three Headed Golden Dragon King grew another huge head on the Ocean Emperor's body.

It fearlessly bit the World Exterminating Wheel.

The World Exterminating Wheel slashed through its head. Although the head was heavily wounded, it continued to charge forward blazing with fury. It violently bit Yue Yang. At that very moment, the Ocean Emperor's huge fist also landed on Yue Yang's left arm, breaking his left arm immediately. Yue Yang was in great pain. After turning his upper body, he lifted his right leg and kicked the Ocean Emperor in the chest. He shot his Innate Invisible Sword Qi right through the crack on the Ocean Emperor's Armor, which was caused by the God Killing Dagger. His Qi immediately shot through the Ocean Emperor's heart.

An arm for a life.

This was all part of Yue Yang's well planned scheme. Even three days before this, he had discussed with An Xi to proceed in such a way.

An Xi recklessly made a small hole on the Ocean Emperor's Armor and gave Yue Yang the chance to land a critical hit on him...

After the Ocean Emperor's heart was pierced, his body became sluggish.

However, he did not stop immediately, instead he counterattacked crazily.

On his body, another huge, Golden Dragon head grew out. It gripped Yue Yang using its jaws and threw him hard onto the crystal floor. While Yue Yang was still suffering from pain and dizziness, a third dragon head grew out from the Ocean Emperor's body. It was gigantic and give off an intense aura. It spat out an odd fork shaped halberd. The Ocean Emperor took it and struck down hard at Yue Yang's body.

"Fuck..." Yue Yang was freaked out, the Ocean Emperor actually had a holy weapon. Even An Xi was unaware of it.

The holy-ranked Ocean Emperor's Halberd flashed with golden lightning and pierced towards Yue Yang's body.

If it pierced through, Yue Yang's life would be on the line.

At the critical moment, Yue Yang freed his body from the pressure caused by the Ocean Emperor's Domain of Power. He used the Elegant Sword Dance of the Three Mysterious Styles to dodge quickly. At the same time, he kicked using his right leg, hoping to use the power to escape from the threat of death.

The huge dragon head on the Ocean Emperor's body fearlessly unhinged its grip from Yue Yang's body.

Even if the Nirvana Armor made from Nirvana Flames quickly combusted, it's huge jaws still refused to let go. Pausing even a single second would be enough for the Ocean Emperor to strike a hundred times. The Ocean Emperor's Halberd fiercely pierced down. Yue Yang had no choice but to dodge it at all costs to prevent hitting his vitals. However, the right leg he kicked out was not withdrawn on time. The Ocean Emperor's Halberd pierced right through and nailed him right onto the crystal floor. The biggest dragon head on the Ocean Emperor's body had been storing up power for a long time. It opened its huge jaws and released a Dragon Breath that was a hundred times more fearsome than "Hell fire"!

A Gold-ranked Dragon's Breath was also an attack that could instantly kill all existence.

It could not be avoided.

Just when the Ocean Emperor thought he would win, the Nirvana Armor on Yue Yang's body instantly transformed into a

Nirvana Flame Phoenix. It threw itself at the huge jaws of the Golden Dragon King which was blasting out Dragon Breath.

Although the Dragon Breath was very powerful, it still couldn't compare to Nirvana Flames.

The Nirvana Flame Phoenix ignited and purified all the Dragon Breath. It then launched itself right into the Golden Dragon King's gigantic jaws. It caused the Golden Dragon King to instantly vanish, forcing it to return back to the Ocean Emperor's body.

If it was late by a second, it would have been burnt alive by the Nirvana Flame Phoenix.

The Ocean Emperor's beast could not be compared to Yue Yang. However, the Ocean Emperor still possessed the powers of a peak Level Ten Innate. With his fists clenched, he aimed and struck with a heavy blow.

Immediately, Yue Yang summoned his Grimoire and raised a protection barrier. Although it got hit and shattered by the Ocean Emperor's fist, he was able to stop him for half a second. Xiao Wen Li appeared from Yue Yang's body. Her pretty eyes glared and activated her [Binding] Inherent Skill. The Ocean Emperor's fist became sluggish once again. The Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man leapt out and used her quick fists to deal a heavy blow on the Ocean Emperor's waist.

When the Ocean Emperor's Armor vibrated, the Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man let out a cry. She lifted the Ocean Emperor who

was still under the [Binding] Inherent Skill and threw him out.

At this moment, there was another thirty seconds before the birth of the Mother Earth Potion.

Yue Yang and the Ocean Emperor were both critically injured.

The only difference was that Yue Yang only injured his left arm and right leg. His organs were damaged from the shock but he could still fight.

The Ocean Emperor was already critically wounded. After being struck by Yue Yang's World Exterminating Wheel and Innate Invisible Sword Qi, he was now on the edge of death. Additionally, his Guardian Spirit Beast, the Three Headed Golden Dragon King, had two of its heads destroyed and faced a great drop in power. It was even harder to defend. When he stood up, he coughed up a mouthful of fresh blood. The Ocean Emperor's body was on the verge of collapsing. Yue Yang was nailed to the crystal floor by the Ocean Emperor's Halberd so could not get free at the moment. The Ocean Emperor forced his heavily wounded body and ran towards the crystal lotus. If he consumed the Mother Earth Potion, then his body would definitely be restored to the best state, perhaps he might even break through to the Innate Elder Realm!

Ah man used all her might as she tried to pull the Ocean Emperor's Halberd from the crystal floor.

However, Holy Weapons often possess a certain intelligence.

It followed its owner's intention and remained nailed to the ground firmly, resisting Ah Man's violent pull...

The Ocean Emperor's Halberd was slowly being pulled out, but at such a speed, it would not be removed from the ground in thirty seconds. This also meant that Yue Yang would not make it in time to reach the birthplace of the Mother Earth Potion.

"Guan Lan, It is time for you to apologize to everyone." Hempenclothed Elder An Xi appeared behind the Ocean Emperor. He deeply pierced the God Killing Dagger in his hands into the Ocean Emperor's carotid artery. The Ocean Emperor held An Xi's hand, stopping him from cutting off his head. He used his last bit of power to lift An Xi and smash him onto the crystal pillar in the distance.

"Now is not the time, when I die, I will go see those people!" The Ocean Emperor pulled out the God Killing Dagger forcefully, causing blood to spurt out like the waterfall.

At this moment, the crystal lotus started to bloom.

It was extremely beautiful.

Thousands of gold rays radiated out from the crystal lotus, making the entire Crystal Canyon become a world of gold.

The Ocean Emperor who was dripping with fresh blood jumped on top of the crystal lotus and watched the view in front of his eyes

in awe.

The Mother Earth Potion he had waited so long for was finally ready!

Ah Man pulled out the Ocean Emperor's Halberd and furiously threw it away. However, it was too late. Even if Yue Yang got up, he would be unable to stop the Ocean Emperor from obtaining the Mother Earth Potion.

Simply because, it was already born!

Numerous gold light shot out from the inside of the crystal lotus and formed a splendid light pillar.

A stream of spring water gushed out from the crystal lotus. It was just like a rainbow. Afterwards it followed the golden light pillar and floated up into the air.

The Ocean Emperor used the fastest speed he could in his entire life and pulled out a jade vase he had prepared a long time ago. Instantly, he loaded the spring water into the jade vase. Before An Xi could reach, he leapt and called back his Ocean Emperor's Halberd that was spiritually connected to him. He blocked An Xi's attack using his halberd and spreaded his dragon wings. With speed faster than lightning, he soared through the air and left.

The Ocean Emperor quickly teleported himself away from the Crystal Canyon.

Yue Yang could only watch the entire process.

Ah Man was furious. She carried a huge crystal pillar and threw it at the Ocean Emperor but it was too late to stop the Ocean Emperor from leaving.

Xiao Wen Li also watched Yue Yang with a pitiful gaze. Her eyes were red as if she would start brawling.

Yue Yang carried her, touched her nose lightly and said, “Why are you crying, the real Mother Earth Potion is still here. Just now what the Ocean Emperor took was merely the crystal liquid! If he really took the Mother Earth Potion, how could I just watch it. It would be weird if I did not fight him. Don’t cry, let’s go get the real thing!”

Surrounding the crystal lotus, all the Ancient Guards kneeled down.

They did not move.

It was as if there was a singing voice that was more pleasant to listen to than the sounds of nature. But it was not a voice yet it resonated in people’s hearts. It was the sound of the Mother Earth Potion’s birth! The entire Crystal Canyon was filled with a scent that was more aromatic and fragrant than all the flowers in the world. When one smells it, one would feel intoxicated. This, was the fragrance of the Mother Earth Potion.

The crystal lotus unfolded entirely and fully bloomed.

Countless lights filled the area above just like rainbows.

All of the crystal energy in the Crystal Canyon flowed towards the giant crystal lotus like a river flowing to the ocean. All essence were concentrated and returned back into the core of the crystal lotus.

The Ancient Guards lost their energy and fell down one by one.

Their souls merged with the crystals and laid dormant once again.

As Yue Yang brought Xiao Wen Li over to the front of the crystal lotus, he realised that there was only a single drop of the Mother Earth Potion inside.

The crystal lotus shattered into a thousand pieces and the entire Crystal Canyon shook, some places even collapsed. The crystal energy seemed to disappear completely, the entire Crystal Canyon became filled with ordinary white stones. Only a small bit of crystal fragments containing crystal energy were left on the ground.

The “Mother Earth Potion”, floating in front of Yue Yang, was something that could not be described by words.

The energy it contained was unbelievable and it was extremely pure and concentrated.

It was golden-bright and dazzling. Despite being at liquid form, it shined rays of wonderful light.

Chapter 475 – Supreme Holy Equipment, The God Killing Dagger

Yue Yang turned around and saw An Xi who was struggling to get up.

If An Xi wished to live, Yue Yang would be able to save him even without using the Mother Earth Potion. However, An Xi didn't care if he can live anymore.

He lived merely to kill the the Ocean Emperor.

Now that the Ocean Emperor was severely injured and was going to die soon, An Xi had no more reasons to continue living.

What could Yue Yang do to a man who wants to die?

“Don't be modest with an old man like me. If eating it could help me live, I would surely snatch it.” The hempen-clothed old man smiled weakly. Yue Yang knew that it was no use to persuade him, so he simply nodded. An Xi slowly laid down. “I saw the Mother Earth Potion, so I have no more regrets... youngster, just bury me here!”

He waved his hand and the God Killing Dagger flew over.

The Hempen-clothed old man then left his last words, which was also his last wish.”I'm not giving it to you for nothing, use it to

decapitate the Ocean Emperor!”

With that, he closed his eyes.

A giant Black Dragon separated from his body. It slowly faded into bright lights and dissipated into the air.

It roared softly before disappearing, as if bidding farewell to its master.

The Hempen-clothed old man’s heartbeat gradually stop with his breath, and with that, the Assassin King of Tong Tian Tower left the world.

Although he died, he fulfilled his hundred year dream, and a smile could be seen at the corner of his mouth... Although he didn’t personally kill his arch enemy, he bore no more regrets knowing that Guan Lan wouldn’t be able to live for long. Furthermore, he was also able to witness the birth of the Mother Earth potion. After centuries of loneliness, he could finally let go of everything, embrace nature and meet his past comrades again.

Numerous lights morphed into different beautiful flowers in the sky.

The Mother Earth Potion wouldn’t exist forever.

Before the Mother Earth Potion disappears, Yue Yang used his hands to guide it as it floated in the air and down his throat.

Initially, his body had no reactions, but after three seconds, his Grimoire floated up automatically. The hornless dragon Jiang Ying, who was asleep, the Spirit of Earth Fire, the Reaper Mantis and even the Quintet Gold Seeking Mice all came out.

The Hornless Dragon was still sleeping while the Spirit of Earth Fire was at loss since she did not know what was happening.

Yue Yang's body gave off an indescribable glow and looked as if he was becoming invisible. At the same time, lights with energy of the heavenly fragrance fluctuated with the runes as they morphed into all kinds of peculiar patterns and sometimes beautiful flowers... Xiao Wen Li, Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man, Jiang Ying the Hornless Dragon, the Reaper Mantis and the Quintet Gold Seeking Mice bathed in the lights with the energy of heavenly fragrance as they obtained different things.

After her fusion with the Heart of Earth, Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man evolved again, making great progress in personifying.

As for Xiao Wen Li, she received the most as she was hugging Yue Yang.

She took in the most energy, even more than 'World' the Halo-type Beast. After this absorption, she would just be a few steps away from levelling up to becoming Level Six Diamond-ranked. She continued to top the list among all of Yue Yang's Beasts in terms of support and combat power.

Jiang Ying the Hornless Dragon, who was still hibernating, the Spirit of Earth Fire, Reaper Mantis and even the Quintet Gold Seeking Mice all got different levels of reward.

Naturally, Yue Yang received the most.

After consuming the Mother Earth Potion, Yue Yang's body was filled with an indescribably immense amount of energy. It was as if the entire Crystal Canyon, or a geographical location even more vast, was stuffed into his body. Yue Yang felt that he was going to explode. All of Yue Yang's physical wounds healed within three seconds... The Nirvana Flame of the Nirvana Flame Phoenix burned rapidly in Yue Yang's body, this helped digest the enormous amount of energy in his body such that they could fuse into the cells in his body. No energy was wasted as all formed the foundation of his body.

His Innate Qi moved at an even higher speed.

If it did not move around, Yue Yang's body wouldn't be able to withstand it and would definitely explode.

The sixth level of the Innate Invisible Sword Qi moved rapidly and carried the enormous amount of energy of the Mother Earth Potion. Then they were quickly absorbed as they moved throughout Yue Yang's body.

Although the Innate Invisible Sword Qi did not upgrade, Yue Yang's Grimoire started to turn as it levelled up.

It went easily to level up from the original Innate Level Four to Innate Level Five, it was even heading towards Innate Level Six... Now, Yue Yang was already going towards Elder Innate level. He was in a bind as he couldn't control himself at all due to his Innate Qi and Nirvana Flame moving around. Yue Yang knew that it was bad for him to go towards Innate Elder Realm with his current condition. With the current situation, his efforts in levelling down to become stronger would easily go down the drain. 升级, 必须一步一步升上去, 获益才是最大的。

He would benefit the most if he takes thing slowly and level up step by step.

However, the problem now was that Yue Yang couldn't control himself.

The pure energy from the Mother Earth Potion was huge, so huge that it exceeded Yue Yang's imaginations. When he swallowed it, it was akin to swallowing the entire Crystal Canyon, his body couldn't withstand it at all. Fortunately he had his Innate Qi and Nirvana Flame, or else his body would have exploded and turn him a spirit.

The level up golden pillar soared to the sky.

However, Yue Yang had only just absorbed ten percent of the energy yet the situation was already like this.

There would definitely be opportunities to level up in the future. Yue Yang guessed that if he absorbed the Mother Earth Potion

entirely, he would definitely move up to the Elder Innate level.

“Wow, you ate some good stuff, I want it too!” With a flash, the Qilin Girl appeared and upon seeing a light shimmering off Yue Yang, she ran towards him and hugged him. As if a child fighting for candies, she leaned in and sucked Yue Yang’s lips.

She took away at least one tenth of the pure energy of the Mother Earth Potion. She then released Yue Yang and pretended to have done nothing.

Xiao Wen Li copied her and went up to suck a mouthful of energy.

The pleasant sound of the Phoenix resonated through the entire Crystal Canyon. It could even make one’s soul tremble.

A huge Nirvana Flame Pillar rose from Yue Yang’s body. Countless rays of light followed as the Phoenix Sister arrived in the air while riding a Phoenix, that spanned over a thousand meters. They then direct it to enter Yue Yang’s body and pushed the enormous amount of unabsorbed energy out of Yue Yang’s dantian. Then they condensed it into a single drop and partially sealed it such that Yue Yang could refine it slowly in the future.

“I did not eat anything!” The Qilin girl waved her hands adorably, indicating that she had been obedient all along and hadn’t been eating anything discreetly.

“Haha!” Xiao Wen Li was more obedient. Although she didn’t admit it, she did not deny it either. She was merely laughing discreetly.

“...” Phoenix Sisters both entwined to become a streak of rainbow light as they fused into Yue Yang’s body and disappear. As they disappeared, the Nirvana Flame Pillar also simultaneously disappeared as it dissipated into the air within a few seconds, as if it was never there in the first place.

Once they left, Yue Yang who was still in a daze collapsed to the ground.

Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man tried to carry him quickly.

Bing Ying the Qilin girl waved her hand. “Stop, let him rest. It was not a good thing to level up too quickly since his body won’t be able to take it. He is resting now, so he can let his body adjust by itself. Ah, I’m sleepy again, I’m going back to continue my sleep!” She cutely yawned as she prepared to take her leave. On seeing the God Killing Dagger lying on the ground, she became enthusiastic again as she waved her hand to get the God Killing Dagger into her hand. She quickly frowned. “Which idiot used the God Killing Dagger like this? I haven’t seen such a fool that didn’t clean the Demonic Qi and caused it to rust. This God Killing Dagger isn’t a good thing in the first place, now, it is just plain rubbish...”

If the Hempen-clothed old man An Xi were to hear this, he would have cried.

Luckily he's dead, if not he would have committed suicide in shame.

The Qilin Girl shot out a white ray and purified the tainted God Killing Dagger instantly.

The God Killing Dagger, that reverted back to its original state, brightly flickered. There was at least a meter of light that surrounded the tip of the blade. When the Qilin Girl lightly waved it, a ten meter Sword Qi extended outwards. It even tore a ten meter deep crack on the solid crystal floor.

"I'll give this to you, it isn't very useful." The Qilin Girl Bing Yin was generous enough to give Xiao Wen Li Yue Yang's possession.

"..." Xiao Wen Li waved her hand to reject her.

"Then pass this to him. Tell him I gave him this and ask him to thank me because I don't usually give things to people." The Qilin Girl's last sentence was the most honest one. She had always been the one receiving things. The things she gave out was indeed very little. Moreover, Yue Yang could be considered to be one who benefitted from it the most. He hadn't even open the Golden Coffin given to him by the Qilin Girl the other time!

"Okay!" Xiao Wen Li nodded as she received the God Killing Dagger on Yue Yang's behalf.

It was good enough for the God Killing Dagger to be returned to

Yue Yang's side after going through the Qilin Girl. If Yue Yang were to know about this, he would be so surprised to the point of being drenched in cold sweat.

Yawning, the Qilin Girl went back to sleep.

Xiao Wen Li and Ah Man stayed to protect Yue Yang who was in deep sleep.

After three hours, Yue Yang was finally able to completely stabilize the energy in his body. Although he only absorbed one tenth of the energy of the Mother Earth Potion, Yue Yang realised that his power surged. He estimated that he was now a Level Ten Innate, making him on par to the Phoenix Beauty before her breakthrough. He also wasn't too far from levelling up to Elder Innate level.

For others this might be good news.

But for Yue Yang, it caused him a bit of a headache. He had to think of a way to sit at Innate Realm and at the same time absorb the energy from the Mother Earth Potion without levelling up to Elder Innate level. It wouldn't matter if he couldn't think of anything, he could always ask the Heavenly Sword Goddess, she definitely had the answer! However time wasn't on his side, so Yue Yang decided to walk back out to the Graveyard of the sea. It was because he sensed Bloody Queen Red's call more than once when he was in deep sleep.

"Why did the God Killing Dagger become like this?" Yue Yang

received the God Killing Dagger and realised that the original Holy Equipment had become a Supreme Holy Equipment that was very close to becoming a Divine Equipment. Yue Yang was shocked.

Xiao Wen Li made a cute gesture with her hands acting as horns on her head. Yue Yang immediately understood that it was the Qilin Girl who did it.

Although she always causes trouble, she would sometimes help a bit!

The God Killing Dagger which became a Supreme Equipment caused people to be attracted to it just by looking at it, so Yue Yang quickly put it away.

Yue Yang was prepared to put away his Grimoire and looked at ti.

He went up from being a Level Four Innate to a Level Five Innate. Since he already knew about it, he ignored it.

But what made Yue Yang the happiest was the fact that his Heaven Eyes Divine Vision got upgraded.... He had been awaiting for this level up for a long time!

Chapter 476 – I Want Your Life!

As Heaven Eyes Divine Vision upgraded, its ability grew stronger.

Upgrading from Level Five to Level Six, Heaven Eyes Divine Vision gained the ability to look through the enemy's internal blood flow and the movement of their internal energy. Yue Yang felt that this upgrade came at the right timing.

When facing against Supreme Innates such as Shun Tian, Black Prince and the Ocean Emperor, Yue Yang's Heaven Eyes Divine Vision was unable to see the weak points of the opponent's body. It could only see special characteristics of the opponent's items or the weak points of the opponent's moves. Yue Yang was unable to see the movement of their internal energy and their body's special characteristics, especially those reinforcements that come from combined Beasts. That was why he was unable to directly attack the weakness that the enemy concealed and only able to try to trick the enemy to reveal it through ploys.

The upgrade of Divine Vision once again perfectly complemented with his Heaven Eyes Divine Vision.

Its power was entirely different.

Now, It could not only see the concealed weak points of lowly warriors, but even Innate Rankers and Mythical Beasts.

With this, Shun Tian and Black Prince could now announce the beginning of their tragic fates. However, it could still not see

through Black Hell King who was already at Heaven Rank and Scarlet Emperor that demon. They were much more powerful existences. If Yue Yang wanted to see through them, Divine Vision needed to level up to Level Seven and Eight or even Nine. By then, not to mention Scarlet Emperor, even Heaven Realm's Three Great Leaders, or even more powerful existences could be seen through. However, Yue Yang cannot rush the process. He must slowly level them up and use Heaven Eyes Divine Vision more in the future... Now that it could be used to see the body's internal blood flow and energy movement, it would be great help during cultivation and healing.

“Let's go!” Yue Yang unsummoned Barbarian Cow Shadow, Spirit of Earth Fire, Reaper Mantis and Quintet Seeking Golden Mice , and only brought Xiao Wen Li back to the Graveyard of the Sea.

The Barbarian Cow Shadow still needed to digest the energy she absorbed. As for the Spirit of Earth Fire, she was reluctant to leave the energy that was still left around the place.

From her point of view, there was still a lot of energy that could be absorbed.

However, she still had to obey Yue Yang.

Yue Yang left behind the shattered Crystal Canton.

A small Crystal Man jumped out from the shattered crystal pillar.

It turns out that the original one hundred Crystal Men had been reduced to one single Crystal Man. It was not that all the other ninety-nine have died, but rather all the energy left in the Crystal Canyon was now only enough to revive a single Crystal Man. Maybe after a few thousand years, the Crystal Canyon would be able to return to what it was like before, and all the Crystal Men would be revived.

However, the Mother Earth Potion might not be born here again anymore.

They teleported out from the Five Big Whirlpools.

Graveyard of the Sea.

Yue Yang was stunned by the sight before his eyes.

Yue Yang could not believe his eyes when he saw the Graveyard of the Sea.....

Half of the sea surface, including those sunken ships were entirely covered by Thorny Flowers, more precisely, Thorny Flowers that had just devoured corpses and were still digesting them.

Bloody Queen and Hui Tai Lang were chasing Tai Hu's Nine Headed Devil Fox, which was normal. However, on the other side, the Ocean Emperor seemed to have gone mad as he was killing his own subordinates and children..... Those that attacked the Ocean

Emperor was not limited to the Hybrid Fishmen, there were also a dozen unfamiliar Innate Rankers and even the princes and princesses who viewed Sea Dragon Crown Prince and Sea Anemone Crown Princess as their leader.

Squid King, Jellyfish King and Manta Ray King have all died.

No one knows who killed them.

Shark King was heavily injured and was lying on the wreckage of a sunken boat. He would most likely die soon.

The Ocean Emperor's injuries were worse. After being mortally wounded by An Xi and Yue Yang, he had been engaged in a 3 hour battle with more than thirty Hybrid Fishmen, a dozen Innate Rankers and many of his own children. The Ocean Emperor had reached his limit.

He was too weak to even wield his halberd.

If not for the combination of the super defence of his armor and the valiant body of the Three Headed Golden Dragon King, the Ocean Emperor would have collapsed long ago.

“Even if I die, all of you have to die with me!” the Ocean Emperor roared madly. He gathered his remaining power to wave the Ocean Emperor's Halberd. In that instant he regained the power of a peak Level Ten Innate and killed the Hybrid Fishmen on the frontlines. He then beheaded two of his sons who could not retreat in time.

Lastly, he threw out his halberd in fury, and killed another one of the Innate Rankers.

His might was unparalleled in the world. For a moment, no one dared to go near him.

Even Tai Hu stayed out of the way and shouted as he evaded: “Everyone keep surrounding him, he has no more energy and will die soon. Now is the best chance, do not let him go! 3 more minutes, persevere for the last three minutes and victory will be ours!”

Yue Yang now understood.

This was betrayal!

The Ocean Emperor suffered the biggest betrayal of his life..... Not just his friends, his subordinates and even children have all betrayed him!

If he was not seriously injured, if he had not come out from Crystal Canyon first, if he had been more cautious and wary of his own children, the Ocean Emperor would not have been reduced to such a state. All those who had not betrayed him were all dead. The three Kings and the eight Sea Marshals were all dead. The only one still alive was Shark King..... But even Shark King was not far from dying. If anyone attacked him, Shark King would die in front of the Ocean Emperor!

A prince secretly flew towards the wreckage of the sunken boat, ready to attack Shark King to give the Ocean Emperor another blow.

Shark King suddenly flew up into the sky, exploding with Innate Level Eight power.

A giant shark shadow flashed in the sky and devoured the prince, killing him instantly. It then killed several of the prince's guards, and then grabbed onto a lowly Innate's body and tore it apart. He stretched out his neck and madly drank the fresh blood of the enemy.

The Ocean Emperor slowly landed on the wreckage of a sunken ship. Shark King took large strides forward and kneeled on his knees in front of the Ocean Emperor.

"I was incompetent, I am willing to die with your Majesty." Shark King heavily kowtowed on the deck of the sunken ship.

"A Sha, do not call me your majesty anymore. I remember that you are my son too. Now, I will restore your real identity. You are my son..... In the past, to gain more power to secure a better future, I betrayed my friends and family, I even married the enemy's daughter to establish the dominance of the Ocean Emperor. I gained many things, but I lost even more..... I am aware that you are my best son. However, I have no way of letting you inherit my position nor do I have a way to acknowledge you as my son. Without the support of Sea Clan, I could not become the Ocean Emperor nor could I conquer the oceans of Tong Tian Tower. With just my own ability, I could not match with Emperor

of the Underworld, nor the Sky Emperor's congress, and not even the Dragon Emperor who is caught in his clan's rebellion..... The power of Sea Clan was never truly in my hands, but I kept trying. However, all that I have gained were superficial compliance and illusory power. At this moment before I die, A Sha, call me father once more. I am no longer the Ocean Emperor, I am only a lonely father who has been betrayed by all." the Ocean Emperor helped Shark King up and looked into Shark King's eyes.

"Ma...Father!" Shark King, a man of steel was in tears. "Your son was incompetent, and could not help you conquer the world!"

"Indeed, you are not the most outstanding son in the world. However, A Sha, I am already very much contented to have a son like you." the Ocean Emperor reached out to stroke Shark King's head, sighing: "Son, if I had the ability to save your life, I would do whatever it takes."

"It does not matter, father! As long as I can die with you in this ocean, I have no regrets." Shark King wiped his tears dry and bowed to the Ocean Emperor: "Your son will leave first!"

Shark King roared and pounced at Sea Dragon Crown Prince.

He wanted to kill this unfilial son for his father before his death.

But how could this Sea Dragon Crown Prince be willing to come forward to fight? A dozen Innate Rankers rushed up to support him, surrounding Shark King.

The remaining Hybrid Fishmen and Tai Hu that old guy threw themselves at the Ocean Emperor.

The bloody battle where the Ocean Emperor was utterly isolated, the battle between his blood began again.

Not even three minutes passed before Shark King was at the point of exhaustion. He kept forcing his power even after being heavily injured. He broke out from the encirclement and pounced in front of Sea Dragon Crown Prince. However, he was too weak to even raise his fist. With a kick from Sea Dragon Crown Prince, Shark King fell heavily on the deck of the wreckage of a sunken boat. He sneered: "You are now infected with my 'Poison Dragon Plague', yet you still want to show off in front of me? Who knew you are the bastard child of the old guy, no wonder you are so loyal. Hehe, this prince is now going to send you back to reunite with that old guy....."

The Ocean Emperor on the other side was also hanging on by a thread.

After killing two Hybrid Fishmen, the Ocean Emperor was smashed towards the deck of the sunken ship by Tai Hu's Thunder Snake Staff. His whole body trembled in pain.

However, he still stood up.

Even if Tai Hu repeatedly knocked him onto the deck, the Ocean Emperor still stood up, his body straight as a spear.

“Such pride, the Ocean Emperor who has conquered the four oceans is really different from the rest.” Sea Dragon Crown Prince clapped his hands in praise. He kicked Shark King, who was at the verge of fainting, towards the front of the Ocean Emperor and flew down to step on Shark King’s head forcefully. He trampled on Shark King, and grabbed Shark King’s scalp to show the Ocean Emperor Shark King’s face that was horribly twisted in pain. “Old guy, do you see, this is the son you gave birth to. Such trash! You think that this prince is your child? You idiot, this prince has the pure blood of Sea Clan, and not the blood of a lowly human like you! You are only fit to breed with Fishman, giving birth to mixed breeds!”

“Puh!” Shark King spat on Sea Dragon Crown Prince’s face.

“You want to die!” Sea Dragon Crown Prince was furious and began beating Shark King like a madman. He also spat several times on Shark King’s body and finally sneered hatefully: “Even if you wished to die, I won’t let you die so easily. This prince is going to hang you up to dry! Old guy, do you see? If you want your bastard child to die in peace, then hand over all of your treasures. Hand over your treasure map, the key to the Door of Heaven Realm and the Mother Earth Potion!”

“You idiot, do you really think that there is a key for the Door of Heaven Realm, and you really think that I have strange treasures? No medicine could save a fool like you, hahahaha, hahahaha!”

The Ocean Emperor laughed and Tai Hu knocked him down with one hit of the Thunder Snake Staff.

However, he still continued laughing.

Finally, the Ocean Emperor struggled to stand up and towards the direction of Yue Yang's concealed body, said slowly: "You have watched a joke. It cannot be help, this is retribution. Let us make a deal, as long as you save my son, I will give you the Mother Earth Potion."

His words shocked everyone.

No one knew about Yue Yang's presence.

When Yue Yang appeared from behind the dark clouds and appeared before the Ocean Emperor in a flash, everyone was shocked.

Only his Guardian Beasts like Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen, Bloody Queen and Hui Tai Lang knew that Yue Yang was long back. Yue Yang's arrival at this point of time made Octopus Man Boss, Whale Zhang, Swordfish Burst, Crab man and Mudskipper man who did not participate in the war spirited. They quickly rushed over.

Faster than them were Stone Element Medusa, Storm Mermaid, Thunder Naga and Ice Serpent Demon.

They surrounded the Sea Dragon Crown Prince and the rebels.

Yue Yang's appearance scared Sea Dragon Crown Prince that he

almost peed his pants.

He quickly escaped back to the clan.

The Ocean Emperor brought out a White Jade Vase that shone with seven colours and passed it towards Yue Yang: “You can have my life and this Mother Earth Potion, just bring A Sha away!”

“No, father.....” Shark King was close to death and weak to the point that he could not even speak, yet tears were streaming down his face.

“I said it before, I will do anything to save you... I have already lost everything and am left with a son... At least, I, Guan Lan, am fortunate to still have a son! Haha, this is not bad, the heavens have at least left me something!” the Ocean Emperor suddenly laughed aloud. He was coughing blood badly, yet he was still laughing in delight. He looked as if he gained the best thing in the world.

“Do you know what I want to say? This Mother Earth Potion is a fake, it is only a Hundred Year Crystal Liquid, worthless! Forget it, if it is just disposing garbage, I am occasionally willing to do a good deed and treat it as good karma.” Yue Yang grabbed the White Jade Vase from the Ocean Emperor’s hands and kept it without even glancing at it. The Ocean Emperor was stunned. He could never have thought that the Mother Earth Potion that he had obtained was a fake.

Yue Yang did not explain anything and kicked Shark King into

the sky.

Hui Tai Lang coordinated with him and caught Shark King in his mouth.

A few Innates, who were ready to move, looked at the Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Dagger in Bloody Queen's hands, and looked again at the Golden Arrows in Stone Element Medusa's hands before retreating, no one dared to be the first.

Tai Hu's complexion was now worse than a corpse's.

The heavily injured Ocean Emperor, after being infected by Poison Dragon Plague and surrounded for three hours had reached his limit.

And now, Yue Clan's Third Young Master had appeared.

This Yue Clan's Third Young Master was a freak that caused headaches. Tai Hu would rather have to attack the Ocean Emperor all over again and not fight against this Yue Clan's Third Young Master. Thinking that the opponent possessed World-Exterminating Wheel and Nirvana Flame made Tai Hu want to bash his head against the wall.

"Cough, this issue has nothing to do with you, the Ocean Emperor is your enemy too." Tai Hu meant that as long as Yue Yang was willing to overlook such a matter, he would give Yue Yang the Ocean Emperor's Halberd and Armour in exchange. Just

one word, as long as Yue Yang was willing to let go of this issue, Sea Clan could even give more gifts, be it beauties or gems, anything that Yue Yang asked for!

“The Ocean Emperor is indeed my enemy and I have to kill him.” Yue Yang’s words made color come back to Sea Dragon Crown Prince’s face.

“That means we have the same goal, and that we are on the same side..... As long as you ask, we can give you anything you want!” Sea Dragon Crown Prince looked very respectful. To him, the two Holy-ranked treasures had already moved the opponent. Even though this was a little painful, this pain was only superficial. As long as this Yue Clan’s Third Young Master was willing to stay out of matters, he would only resign himself to part with these treasures. He silently vowed to use all methods to torment this Yue Clan’s Third Young Master.

“What do I want? I want your life!” Yue Yang raised the God Killing Dagger and a long Sword Qi appeared.

Sea Dragon Crown Prince, who was a dozen meters away felt a chill on his neck.

His head fell to the floor and blood sprayed to the sky!

Chapter 477 – Ocean Emperor Gets The Ax

When Yue Yang leveled up to Innate Level Five, the entire sea surface raged.

Waves that were more than thousands metres tall rose.

Including Tai Hu, all of the enemies who saw this scene went pale.

Even the Ocean Emperor Guan Lan could only sigh in amazement. Originally he had guarded the secret of Crystal Canyon for hundreds of years with great difficulty. In the end, it had become this youth's dowry. The Mother Earth Potion ultimately landed on this youth's hands... If you are destined to have something in your life, you'll eventually have it. When you are not destined to have it, do not even insist on having it! The Ocean Emperor finally accepted it, what was not his will never be.

Let alone the Mother Earth Potion, even the position as the ruler of the seas of Tong Tian Tower was the same.

In the end, it was all a lie.

Everything he invested on for these thousand years were exchanged with betrayal.

Even if the Ocean Emperor's sons and daughters did not betray him, Yue Yang was also prepared to kill all those who knew. Other

than those Yue Yang could command, everyone else would be buried at the Graveyard of the Sea.

Yue Yang did not hide his strength anymore.

He continued to unleash his Innate strength and rose from Innate Level One to Innate Level Five.

With his strength at Innate Level 10, even if the Ocean Emperor did not have any injuries, Yue Yang would be able to tie with him. As a result, everyone including the old bastard Tai Hu would not be fight against Yue Yang... a massacre was about to begin. Yue Yang did not hold back anymore and decided to end everything quickly. All of the rebels, princes and princesses, even other Innates that Yue Yang did not recognize, and even a few greedy Hybrid Fishmen were finally going to finish their fight... and the Graveyard of the Sea would be their final resting place.

“Ha!”

Yue Yang’s world-shaking roar was clearer than thunder from a clear sky by a hundred times.

The entire sea trembled.

Countless shockwaves were manipulated by Yue Yang into a giant tornado. The tornado sucked the sea water as it soared into the skies.

The Storm Mermaid seized the opportunity to blow the Storm Conch to assist her master. The storm became much more violent, countless whirlpools formed on the sea surface and swallowed the sunken ships like a menacing beast. The Thunder Naga summoned countless lightning bolts, that not only struck the enemy, but also made the Graveyard of the Sea look like Bloodbath Hell. The Stone Element Medusa and Ice Serpent Demon worked together and continuously reaped the lives of the enemy. With every attack, one Sea Clan rebel would die.

The Bloody Queen Red let out a soul shaking Banshee Scream and dived down.

The Nine-headed Devil Fox fainted as if struck to death by lightning and fell like a meteor.

The Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen held the 'Tong Tian Dragon Edge' that the small golden beast transformed into. With a slash, she split the cunning Nine-tailed Devil Fox in half, instantly killing it!

Hu Tai Lang's split body guarded the Shark King and he himself dived in the group of Sea Clan rebels. He was invincible, whenever he slashed and bit, a rebel would be met with a violent death. Below him, countless Thorny Flowers devoured the corpses, even the fresh blood that dropped was not let off and completely absorbed... The Golden Tiger Shark summoned by the Stone Element Medusa could only pick up a few meat pieces. However, it was still lucky since it was able to rush and swallow the corpse of one of the princes. After digestion, it would probably level up once.

Three minutes.

When Yue Yang begun his massacre, it took only three minutes to finish the battle.

Tai Hu obstinately defended, but in the end he wasn't able to escape and killed by Yue Yang's God Killing Dagger and World Exterminating Wheel.

As a result, the Sea Clan rebels, Innate Rankers and most of the Hybrid Fishmen became the Thorny Flower's food. Those who made Yue Yang into an enemy all died... the storm gradually calmed down. In the entire sea surface, other than Yue Yang, Bloody Queen Red and his beasts, only seven people remained.

Two of them were the Ocean Emperor Guan Lan, who was on the verge of death, and Shark King, who had received heavy injuries and fainted.

Besides them were five Hybrid Fishmen. They obeyed the contract and did not work together with the Sea Dragon Crown Prince. They were Octopus man Boss, Whale Zhang, Swordfish Blast, Mudskipper man Sui Zui and the Crab man Ao. The other thirty Hybrid Fishmen were either killed by the Ocean Emperor or killed by Yue Yang's beast after they broke the contract. The few that survived those were instantly killed by Yue Yang before they could ask for forgiveness.

Regarding traitors, Yue Yang would definitely not mercifully give them a second chance...

“It ended, everything finally ended.” Whale Zhang was a bit sad, after all his thousand year comrades were dead.

“Idiots, they were all idiots. They can’t blame others. Moreover, we had warned them to not do stupid things. These beasts were still alive. How could something happen to the Yue Clan’s Third Young Master, how could he be defeated by the Ocean Emperor? They were too greedy. They got enticed by treasures and authority and worked together with the Sea Dragon Crown Prince. If they did not attack the Ocean Emperor, how could they have died? I feel that their deaths were rightly deserved. They said something about can’t be compared to freedom, but what we want was freedom!” The Mudskipper man sneered. He looked down upon their comrades betrayal and felt that they were shortsighted, too shortsighted.

“They would rather believe the Sea Dragon Crown Prince’s idiotic promise and did not uphold the original contract. Their deaths truly could not wipe out their crimes.” Swordfish Blast actually wanted to kill those comrades that betrayed them but Octopus man Boss dissuaded him.

“This is also good. We are the only ones that think alike and remained.” Crab man Ao was much more optimistic and felt that this was a good thing.

“That’s right.” Whale Zhang hummingly approved.

The few remaining Hybrid Fishmen looked around the

Graveyard of the Sea and reminisced before they leave.

Yue Yang descended in front of the Ocean Emperor.

Hui Tai Lang carried Shark King and flung his hill-like body in front of the Ocean Emperor. The last step was to kill the Ocean Emperor and complete An Xi's wish. However, this was already set in stone, even if Yue Yang did not make his move, the Ocean Emperor Guan Lan would undoubtedly die. Yue Yang generously waved his hand: "I must take your head since I promised An Xi. However, I can give you ten minutes."

The Ocean Emperor sent a weak energy towards Shark King.

He then looked at Yue Yang with an exhausted yet bitter smile: "It's a pity that you are not my son, otherwise...although A Sha is related to me by blood, our attributes are completely opposite. He cannot inherit my energy and treasures, such a pity!"

Shark King woke up and struggled to get up.

He kneeled in front of the Ocean Emperor Guan Lan. Hot tears dripped from his face.

He understood his father's regret but he was powerless. It was just like the time when he saw his father being attacked from all sides yet he was unable to do anything to save him!

"Originally I did not want to say it, but Ocean Emperor, there

may still be hope. You have a daughter whose attribute is the same as yours. Moreover, her potential is not bad.” Yue Yang brought out the passed out Hai Yingwu out from his Grimoire World and passed her over to the overjoyed Ocean Emperor.

“You did not kill her? Very good, I, Ocean Emperor, finally have a qualified successor...” At this moment, the Ocean Emperor’s face showed a never before seen excitement. Tears glistened from his eyes and indicated Shark King to come over: “A Sha, in the future, you must help your little sister. You are not destined to be the Ocean Emperor but your little sister, who inherited my energy, would be able to!”

“Yes father! I swear to definitely help little sister to truly unify all the seas of Tong Tian Tower and become the Ocean Empress!” Shark King kneeled and seriously pledged.

“Since I, Guan Lan, was born, I have a son and a daughter. My blood has been passed down to continue my legacy. I have no regrets, I have no regrets!” Guan Lan laughed loudly.

He first lightly laid Hai Yingwu down the deck and then pierced his own heart with the Ocean Emperor’s Halberd. The blood dyed the Ocean Emperor’s Halberd and Ocean Emperor’s Armor. They turned into golden light and entered Hai Yingwu’s body.

Soon after, Hai Yingwu’s body flashed and the treasures recognized her as their mater.

Guan Lan spat out blood. In the blood mist, the heavily injured

Three-headed Golden Dragon appeared and became a disabled dragon-winged woman. Just like the Ocean Emperor, she also pierced her own heart and let the burning hot dragon blood flow towards Hai Yingwu's body, covering her entire body in blood.

When the dragon's blood was reconstructing Hai Yingwu's body, the dragon-winged woman spat out a shining dragon pearl and let it enter Hai Yingwu's forehead.

In an instant, Hai Yingwu's body emitted rays of brilliant light and became a cocoon. The sight was extremely dazzling.

Afterwards the dragon-winged woman slowly turned around and hugged the Ocean Emperor.

Her body blazed into flames. The dragon fire continuously cremated her body.

"Come, what I owe An Xi and the debt of blood, let me return it to him." The Ocean Emperor Guan Lan extended his hands. Yue Yang tossed the God Killing Dagger and then returned to Yue Yang's hands. When it flew back, the meter long blade qi directly cut the Ocean Emperor's neck.

The Ocean Emperor died!

Shark King heavily kowtowed and respectfully sent off his father.

The blazing dragon fire burned the Ocean Emperor and the

dragon-winged woman into ashed. The entire sunken ship burned and exploded. Thick smoke rolled on as it gradually sunk.

Shark King, who carried the continuously evolving Hai Yingwu in the dragon blood cocoon, painfully closed his eyes. In one day, he finally obtained the father that he always wanted and at the same time lost him forever.

The only thing that remained was his father's final wish to conquer the seas.

“Uwaaa, waaaa waaaa...” Mudskipper man Sui Zui suddenly cried loudly. He cried loudly but there were no tears so it was extremely comical.

“What are you crying for?” Swordfish man Blast simply didn't understand. He thought that the Ocean Emperor was not the Mudskipper man's father, what business does his death have with you?

“The Ocean Emperor died with his son and daughter paying him their last respects. If I die in the future, I would have nothing!” When Mudskipper man said this, Swordfish man Blast was speechless. This was what he was actually thinking about!

“After you leave this place just find a woman and let her give you dozens of children, then wouldn't there be people to send you off?” Octopus man Boss comforted him.

“I have already become a mudskipper. I am neither human nor fish. Who would marry me. Uwaaaaa waaaaa...” Mudskipper man broken-heartedly howled.

“It seemed that you are at least aware of it.” Swordfish man Blast reevaluated Mudskipper man.

From who knows when he dived into the sea, Yue Yang floated back up/

He looked at Shark King and Hai Yingwu in the dragon blood cocoon. He did not say anything and left.

Whale Zhang and Swordfish man Blast looked at each other.

Happiness flashed in their eyes.

Could it be that the ancient seal had already been unsealed?

Octopus man Boss quickly chased after Yue Yang and asked: “Is the ancient seal already unsealed? Impossible, it was this fast?”

Yue Yang ‘humbly’ shrugged: “Actually I was already considered slow. It has been a long time since I have unsealed runic circles so I’m a bit rusty...” This brat bragged. The Hybrid Fishmen who heard it all fainted. All of them fell down into the water.

Chapter 478 – Work Hard, Adorable Slave

Tong Tian Tower, Thunder Fortress.

It was midnight when Yue Yang left Fire Island. He wanted to return to Soaring Dragon Continent previously, but he did not expect that the Hybrids would follow him around so closely.

It wasn't surprising as they hadn't been out for thousands of years. Even seniors like the Octopus man boss and the Mudskipper Man were still adapting to it. They could only follow Yue Yang around as they had nowhere to go. How would Jun Wu You, Elder Yue Hai and the Old Fox feel if he were to bring back a bunch of Hybrids that were at worst Level Five Innate and at best Level Eight Innate? Moreover, if the Black Hell Army and Zi Jin Kingdom were to know of the strong aid Yue Yang got himself, they would harbour second thoughts, hence that would cause Yue Yang's plan to lead them on, to fail.

So Yue Yang could only bring them to the Thunder Fortress.

It was definitely impossible to bring the Hybrids in blatantly. So Yue Yang smuggled the few Hybrids into the Thunder Fortress.

“There's a lake here and some houses around it. If you guys want to swim or bath in the sun, just go ahead. You can also instruct the housekeepers here to cook for you, You don't have to be modest about it.” Yue Yang felt that having these seniors act as guards for free wasn't half bad.

“How is it a lake, it’s just a bathtub.” The Mudskipper Man mumbled as he thought that the man made lake was too small.

“Senior, the Graveyard of the sea is huge...” Yue Yang reminded him that they had to get used to the unfavourable conditions. It was already a luxury to have water available for them.

Upon sensing Yue Yang’s abnormal tone, the Mudskipper Man quickly smiled. “Nope, I was just saying that this bathtub is very cute and exquisite, it looks quite fun too. I have decided to stay here. Oh yeah, when are you going to help to release the seal in our bodies. It’s miserable for us now being neither human nor fish! If I return back to man form, I can also get my Grimoire back too, and with it my power would come back to me. Quickly think of something, everyday is a misery with only this much strength!”

Yue Yang ignored him. It wouldn’t be easy to release the seals in their bodies.

Moreover, it’s high time for him to cultivate so that he could fight against the Black Hell King, how would he have time to care about the Hybrids’ business now?

The Octopus Man Boss and the Swordfish man Burst weren’t anxious on the other hand. With powers as Level Eight Innates, they could still defend themselves.

Whale Zhang and the Giant Crab Man Ao didn’t care about it either as they first ordered over hundreds of delicacies.

Apart from dishes that served fish, they ordered everything else.

Because they hadn't had anything other than fish for the past thousands of years, they missed them a lot... Looking at the mountain-like body figure of Whale Zhang, Yan Zheng and the Fat Toad had already instructed the slaves to prepare all kinds of meat like barbequed camel, barbequed Turkey and barbequed goat. After half an hour of preparations, the dishes were served one after another.

With this, Mudskipper Man and the lot stopped arguing about the size of the man made lake as they pounced on the food like hungry beasts and wolfed them down.

The way they eat was even more unsightly than Hui Tai Lang.

The Fat Toad even asked discreetly. "Master, where did these hungry creatures come from?"

Yue Yang explained casually as he ate his barbequed dragon wing. "They are innates who were just released. They are staying here temporarily. The Octopus is the eldest, while the Mudskipper man is the youngest. If anyone comes to find trouble, just let them fend off the troublemakers."

Yan Zheng the Butler had always been meticulous. He probed further. "What are their levels as Innates?"

"The weakest is the Mudskipper Man who's a Level Five Innate."

Upon hearing it fat toad Jia De fell to the ground with a thud and Mr. Chen who was drinking almost choked on his beer. Even the stone-faced Yan Zheng looked shocked.

“Hello Seniors.” Mr. Chen quickly got up and paid his respect. He really didn’t sense that all these weird looking people were powerful seniors.

“I finally heard someone calling me a senior after thousands of years... That time when Third Young Master called me senior did not count. His call was filled with a threatening and ridiculing feeling.” The Mudskipper Man talked as if he was going to cry. Upon hearing it, fat toad Jia De fell again. The next few matters would be simple and left with Mr. Chen, who respected the seniors, and the fat toad, who knew how to bootlick.

When Yue Yang was returning to his room to rest, he saw Xia Yi in her policewoman costume. He coughed softly to indicate his presence.

Although Xia Yi didn’t want Yue Yang to ignore her, she doesn’t know what to say to him.

Yue Yang suddenly reached out his hand. While Xia Yi was still in shock, he pinched her face lightly. “Is your body still in pain recently?”

Xia Yi realised that Yue Yang was teasing her again. She was incensed, but just as she raised her fist, she thought that he might actually be concerned about her. She put down her fist slowly and

replied hatefully. “It’s all your fault!” She said with tears in her eyes. She felt that Yue Yang’s concerns came too late. If he had done it earlier, she might have forgiven him. But now, it’s too late!

Actually she realised that she didn’t feel that uncomfortable anymore.

She was getting used to the weird power too.

Now, she was ten times stronger than she was before.

Xia Yi knew that this was a good thing, but she couldn’t forgive Yue Yang as he made her suffer in agony without telling her anything. She wouldn’t forgive him even though he did it out of good will... Especially this attire, he must have done something to make her uncomfortable whenever she isn’t wearing it. A narcissistic guy like him doesn’t deserve her forgiveness!

Thinking about it, Xia Yi wanted to fiercely bite Yue Yang. Although she definitely wouldn’t be able to defeat him, she would still try to bite him!

She would oppose him to no end!

Although Yue Yang was wearing the Gemini Mask and his expressions couldn’t be seen, it was obvious that he was smiling just by looking into his eyes. He was smiling brightly. “If you don’t want to feel uncomfortable anymore, then come find me at night!”

Xia Yi was a little flustered after looking at him.

She realised that his eyes appeared to be shining. As if his smile could enter her heart.

She was in a daze for a moment before Yue Yang reached out his hands to touch her cheeks. She regained her composure and quickly pushed his hands away. “In your dreams, I won’t go find you at night, I’d rather die than to do that. And, don’t touch me!”

She quickly turned and ran off to her room. It was after she shut her door that she heaved a sigh of relief and leaned on the door, covering her quick heartbeats, phew, she nearly forgave him just now... His gaze is a little weird, she mustn’t have eye contact with him next time, if not she would definitely fall into his trap... Xia Yi realised that her heart was thumping and her cheeks were burning.

Touching her cheeks that was previously touched by Yue Yang, Xia Yi’s cheeks become even more red.

It was after a while that she suddenly slapped the cheek Yue Yang caressed. She reprimanded herself. “Are you an idiot, why didn’t you hit him, you still talked to him, Xia Yi you idiot!”

Yue Yang initially wanted to return to the Grimoire World to check on his possessions.

However, when he returned to his room, he realized the half elf

girl in her costume, eagerly preparing his bed, over and over again without neglecting any slight details. It was near perfect. From her well practised moves, Yue Yang knew that this wasn't the first day she had been doing this. Her actions had already become a habit, even if Yue Yang didn't rest here, she still did it without any complaints.

“Master is back!” The half elf girl cheered when she saw that Yue Yang return. She thought that he would return to the Grimoire World directly. Never did she imagine that he would pass by. She quickly bowed happily. “Would you let me massage your legs for you before you head back to rest?”

“...” Yue Yang took off his Gemini Mask.

There was no point wearing it since the half elf girl had already known what he looked like.

Seeing her act of making the bed, Yue Yang decided to rest here for the night.

Although she was just a female slave, she was really very cute.

The half elf girl was initially stunned. But being sharp, she soon realised and her cheeks blushed so red as if they were two apples. She threw herself at Yue Yang and embraced him tightly. She even asked unbelievably. “Master, are you resting here tonight? I'm so happy, is this real? Is this real?”

Yue Yang responded by touching her nose gently.

Tears welled in the beautiful doe eyes of the half elf girl. She even pouted her mouth.

She almost emotionally cried but desperately tried to keep them from falling in an adorable manner.

“I’ll go get some water...” The half elf girl suddenly remembered that she had to help to wash the face and the feet of her master. She then went out quickly.

Due to her excitement, she almost tripped over the doorstep.

Yue Yang pitied the half elf girl as he saw her running out, with tears of joy falling onto the ground along the way. She was really quite pitiful since she was always here alone. Yue Yang decided to bring her back once in a while, since she likes to serve people, the pampered girls in his house needs one like her too. In this way, the half elf girl wouldn’t be lonely.

When she was back with the water, the half elf girl’s cheeks were burning red. She did not dare to look up at Yue Yang as she was afraid that he would make fun of her.

Yue Yang got a towel. After wetting it, he helped to wipe the face of the half elf girl.

With it, tears rolled down the face of the half elf girl like a waterfall. She grabbed onto Yue Yang’s arms, and spoke in

between her tears. “Grandma didn’t lie to me, master is indeed the best...”

It was with great effort that Yue Yang got her to smile again.

The half elf girl who dried her eyes was even gentler than a kitten when she served Yue Yang.

She helped to massaged his shoulders and legs.

When Yue Yang laid down, she tried to suppress her shyness as she rolled down the veil. Seeing that Yue Yang did not object to it, she slipped into the blanket quickly like a cat. She initially curled herself up due to nervousness. After mustering up enough courage, she stretched out her hand and searched around for a while before finally finding Yue Yang’s big hands. She then hugged it. Her legs also stretched out. She stole a glance at Yue Yang. Seeing that he still did not object, she pressed Yue Yang’s leg between hers and got closer to him.

“Let’s sleep!” Initially Yue Yang wanted to enter the Dream Realm to ask the Heavenly Sword Goddess about ways to absorb the Mother Earth Potion without levelling up to Elder Innate Level. But on hearing the half elf girl quick heartbeats, he reached out his hands and caressed her silky hair.

“Okay... but we haven’t done it, you must be feeling uncomfortable...” The half elf girl fought hard to suppress her shyness as she placed Yue Yang’s hands on her butt, indicating that she was ready to serve him anytime. She felt that if she couldn’t

make her master happy, then that would be her greatest failure. She did not even bother to consider if it will hurt.

“Don’t let your imaginations run wild, sleep!” Yue Yang patted her curvy bottom and kissed her forehead softly.

“Okay!” The half elf girl felt that she was the happiest person in the world. Although master did not ask for it, he did not reject her either. To be able to sleep together and cuddle with her master made her beyond happy.

Happy and contented, she laid in Yue Yang’s embrace like a little kitten.

Before she slept, she decided to work extra hard to make her master the happiest person in the world.

Two hours later, she kicked against the blanket that was making her too warm as she placed one of her fair leg on Yue Yang’s chest and rotated herself. Originally hugging his arms, she now held onto his legs. Five minutes later, while muttering that she wanted to make Yue Yang happy, she fell off the bed when she turned. She then woke up from the pain of the fall.

She saw the blanket that was kicked away and her master not being covered with the blanket.

She poked her tongue out adorably as she tucked Yue Yang in and slipped back into the blanket and hid there for a long time.

It was until she realised that Yue Yang didn't wake up to see her embarrassing state that the half elf eye heaved a sigh of relief.

It was indeed not easy to serve master... The half elf girl felt that she had more to improve on, but at least this was a good start!

Chapter 479 – Gold Coffin

After returning back to the Yue Clan Castle at the Soaring Dragon Continent, Yue Yang had nothing to do. Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the rest went to the areas surrounding Death Canyon to train.

Yue Yang took a stroll and then slipped in Tian Luo Palace's Mirage.

Luo Hua City Mistress and the Sickly Beauty were both present. Due to the fact that it was still day time, they did not get intimate with Yue Yang. If it were at night, the guy from the other world would probably be having a threesome. The Phoenix Fairy Beauty already left. She probably went to find the Night Empress. Yue Yang did not worry about her. As a new Innate Elder, even if she encountered the Black Hell King she would be able to retreat with ease. If Yue Yang was not worried about revealing her true ability and cause Black Hell King to turn tail, Yue Yang would have considered bringing the Phoenix Fairy Beauty to fight Black Hell King in that mysterious space.

As for Yue Yang attacking the Sea Clan at the Graveyard of the Sea and seizing total victory, his Fourth Mother and Yue Yu were both happy for him from the bottom of their hearts. Yue Bing, his younger sister was worshipping him with admiration.

The Ocean Emperor, Guan Lan, as one of the five emperors of the Tong Tian Tower was actually defeated by her own brother.

Although the main reason for his death was due to An Xi, the

ultimate assassin, and the Sea Clan's betrayal, the final victor was her brother. This trip not only allowed them to obtain the Mother Earth Potion and the God Killing Dagger, he was also promoted to Innate level 5. Yue Bing thought that her brother was the world's most perfect man and no one could beat him.

“That's too dangerous, you only won by chance!” When the Sickly Beauty heard about the battle at Crystal Canyon, she placed her hand on her chest to ease her lingering fear.

“I'm about to laugh to death. The Ocean Emperor actually took the fake Mother Earth Potion. He mistook the Crystal Liquid as the real thing, hahaha, his insight is so...” Luo Hua City Mistress had now become Yue Yang's second wife, however her bold and sexy laughter hadn't changed. She supported herself by holding onto Yue Yang. She laughed so much that her shoulders shook, what's left is for her to laugh until she faints and fall into Yue Yang's embrace. In fact not only her, Yue Yu and Yue Bing also found it funny. The majestic Ocean Emperor waited for hundreds of years but ended up taking the fake one. He still thought he successfully snatched the real thing. Just thinking about it made people speechless.

“No one can escape a traitor's karma. However, the Ocean Emperor has a son and a daughter, he is still counted as lucky. San Er, you did well this time.” The Fourth Mother praised Yue Yang's decision to give Hai Yingwu to the Ocean Emperor. She felt that he did the correct thing.

Normally, Fourth Mother hardly praised Yue Yang.

It did not matter how many treasures he obtained. However, this time Yue Yang gave up on the Ocean Emperor's Armour and Ocean Emperor's Halberd, and gave Hai Yingwu to the Ocean Emperor, allowing her to succeed the throne.

This action made Fourth Mother very gratified. She happily praised Yue Yang.

In reality Yue Yang also did not wanted to take the Ocean Emperor's Armour and Ocean Emperor's Halberd as those were things that required special conditions to use. Even if he obtained them he could not use them, so he simply took advantage of the situation and did the 'right thing'.

Letting Hai Yingwu become the new Ocean Empress might just be a good thing for future.

Even with Shark King's assistance, Hai Yingwu would probably have no chance in succeeding the Emperor's throne. The Sea Clan was dominated by the Sea Dragon Crown Prince and his mother's clan, they would definitely plan to take the throne. After all this... Yue Yang reckoned that he had lots of things to deal with. Naturally, Yue Yang was not sure about future developments, but he still buried a chess piece beforehand, making the first move.

"Brother, since the Mother Earth Potion cannot be seen now, can you show me the God Killing Dagger. Let us have a good look." The little girl Yue Shuang tugged Yue Yang's arm. Her little face slightly reddened from her excitement. Even until now she could still not ease the excitement in her heart, she just had to see the spoils of war.

“Be careful, it’s very sharp, do not cut your hands.” Yue Yang was worried that she’d play with the holy-ranked treasure so he held her hand lightly before placing the God Killing Dagger.

“It is not pretty at all!” Yue Shuang this little brat was not interested in weapons. In reality, she was only interested in tasty food.

“Fire Island has a type of snow coconut that tastes really good.” Once Yue Yang mentioned it, Yue Shuang immediately beamed with joy. She quickly shouted ‘Big Brother is the best!’ and pulled him lower to kiss him. In the end, she held the specialty of Fire Island ‘snow coconut’ and ran around with it. She did not immediately eat it and instead played with it first. Seeing her cute appearance, Luo Hua City Mistress and the others couldn’t help laughing.

“Mother Earth Potion and God Killing Dagger, pretty good rewards!” Yue Bing exclaimed in admiration.

Actually, Yue Yang did not just simply obtain the Mother Earth Potion and God Killing Dagger. Almost all of his beasts got a level increase from the naval battle this time.

After receiving the Mother Earth Potion’s energy, Xiao Wen Li rose from Level 5 Diamond rank to Level 6 Diamond rank.

Bloody Queen Red would soon become a Divine Beast and only required Yue Yang’s help.

The Barbarian Cow Shadow, Ah Man did not reap a lot of benefits. However, after combining with the Heart of Earth and being bathed under the energy emitted by the Mother Earth Potion, she would be closer to perfection.

Even the Spirit of Earth Fire, Reaper Mantis and Quintet Seeking Golden Mice all received rewards from this trip.

The only question was how much.

Yue Yang felt that the Quintet Seeking Golden Mice who previously showed no sign of evolving seem to show some changes after absorbing the energy emitted by the Mother Earth Potion.

As for the actual circumstances, Yue Yang still did not have enough time to investigate.

However as for Yue Gong's will, Yue Yang felt that he would soon make a breakthrough.

The one who reaped the most benefit was undoubtedly the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen. The Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen who was at Level 1 Gold rank broke through to Level 1 Platinum rank or perhaps even Level 1 Diamond rank. During the battle, the Thorny Flower controlled by her swallowed many people and allowed her to level up. What she ate included more than thirty Hybrid Fishmen, that were above Innate Level 5, dozens of unknown Innate Rankers, the three Kings, who were on the same level as Shark King, the eight Sea Marshals, 108 Sea

Generals, 3000 Ocean Emperor's elite soldiers, and even dozens of princes and princesses. The greatest catch of all was the Level 9 Innate Tai Hu!

Although a little part was nibbled off by Hui Tai Lang, it was negligible.

Yue Yang reckoned that if the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen came out again, she would be extraordinary. Even without his enhancement she would be able to reach the level of a Divine Beast.

The Golden Beast swallowed Tai Hu's Thunder God Staff and digested it into a heap of rubbish. Yue Yang did not feel that it was a pity at all. As long as this little creature could 'eat', it did not matter what treasure it ate.

In fact, Yue Yang reaped numerous gains: Sea Dragon Crown Prince and Sea Anemone Princess's ring, treasures and magic crystals.

At the moment he still did not have time to sort out everything. As for the Golden Beast that madly swallows magic crystals, Yue Yang has chose not to stop it. Regardless the capacity of its stomach, it continued to eat crystals one by one. Compared to the Halo-type beast 'World', it was still considered normal. No matter how many magic crystals were placed in the halo, even if it was a hill of them, they would all be swallowed. There was no such thing as satisfaction... As for the impressive beasts, Yue Yang would place priority in developing them. The Black Hell King had holy treasures all over his body. Yue Yang reckoned that even the God

Killing Dagger was unable to kill him. The one that could most likely kill him was probably the Golden Beast, which was able to ignore any kind of defense.

After he transform into the Sky Dragon Blade, together with Yue Yang's Innate Qi, even if the Black Hell King had a holy armour to protect him, he would still suffer!

“This, is the magic crystal of the Nine-Headed Devil Fox. I have already purified it using Nirvana Flames.” Yue Yang passed a piece of sparkling and transparent energy crystal to Luo Hua City Mistress.

“Aiya nice timing... If we could find another special flower then it would be splendid!” Luo Hua City Mistress's Six-tailed Spirit Fox has already evolved into Fox Lady. However she was still a few steps away from becoming a Holy Beast. Normally, the six-tailed Spirit Fox will maintain the state of three-tailed Snow Fox but she could transform into Fox Lady anytime. The greatest obstacle for her to break through was the lack of one Eastern Goblin Tribes Men's Orb. To create one her own was too slow. Luo Hua City Mistress had always been trying hard to assist her in evolving. However, Yue Yang felt that it was not slow if it was only leveling into a Holy Beast. If she wanted her to level up into a Divine Beast, she would probably need to become a Nine-tailed Spirit Fox first.

“Take it slowly, it will level up in the end. Where is the tigress and Yi Nan?” Yue Yang asked about Princess Qian Qian and Yi Nan.

“Yi Nan is at the Valley of Butterflies and Flowers. Her

improvements aren't bad. She came back last time but you were not here. She returned back to the Valley of Butterflies and Flowers to continue training. Her rate of improvement is quite fast. Next time when you see her you would be surprised. I don't know about Princess Qian Qian. She sent us letters last time. It's been about ten days since she has written to us." The Sickly Beauty knew Yue Yang the most. She knew, in his heart, Yue Yang was probably the most concerned about Xue Wu Xia. But he did not ask.

Xue Wu Xia had followed Zhi Zun to train, she probably cannot return at the moment.

Yue Yang nodded his head, "Okay, everyone is improving. This is good news. I need to work hard too. Since there is still time, let's see if we can fulfill Ghost Genius Yue Gong's third will..."

Fourth Mother was sitting right next to him. After hearing what he said, she opened her mouth to correct Yue Yang, "Do not call your ancestors by their nickname, you should address them respectfully."

Yue Yu and Yue Bing were secretly laughing. When Fourth Mother was not home, Yue Yang had always called the Yue Clan's ancestors' names casually.

Now, he was finally caught red handed by Fourth Mother.

Yue Yang quickly pretended to be a good child. He suddenly recalled something, "Last time I obtained a Gold Coffin. Because, I

was busy I did not have the chance to open it. Now is a good time. I am prepared to open it and take a look at the things inside!”

“Gold Coffin?” Luo Hua City Mistress and the rest were all very curious upon hearing this.

“I got it last time from a mysterious palace...” When Yue Yang returned last time, he did not mention about it to Luo Hua City Mistress. Right after he returned, he dragged the Sickly Beauty to bathe with him. He did not mention about it at all. After that he went to find the Phoenix Fairy Beauty, and after a series of trials, he ate her. The girls were also absorbed by the news of Phoenix Fairy Beauty leveling up to Elder Innate Realm, so Yue Yang almost forgot about the Gold Coffin.

After that he went to find the Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying to get the Mother Earth Potion and many things happened in the process.

He met Hai Yingwu and almost pushed down the Hornless Dragon Jiang Ying.

Finally, he cooperated with An Xi and the Hybrid Fishermen, fought the Ocean Emperor, Guan Lan, obtained the Mother Earth Potion and buried all the Sea Clan elites. Only after all these did he remembered about the Gold Coffin.

He brought out the Gold Coffin. There were peculiar and mysterious runic carvings on top. Even Yue Yang was unable to understand them. He did not know anything at all.

However Fourth Mother was astonished, she blurted out "This looks just like the Gold Coffin that sealed the God's Servant inside God's Ruins!"

"Ah, Fourth Mother, you recognize it?" Yue Yang, Luo Hua City Mistress and everyone else all looked at her.

"No, No I heard it from my sister... San Er, you people should investigate it slowly. I'll go open the coconut for Shuang Er!" The Fourth Mother's expression seemed to change, she waved her hand immediately, showing that she did not know. She took the little girl's hand and led her to open the coconut. Yue Yang, Yue Yu, Yue Bing and Luo Hua City Mistress all looked at each other. They did not dare believe that Fourth Mother, who did not set foot outside, actually recognises this Gold Coffin. She even said it was the coffin of the God's Servant from the God's Ruins?

Perhaps Fourth Mother also went inside God's Ruin?

Since Fourth Mother did not admit, Yue Yang felt bad asking it again.

However, after hearing her words, Yue Yang felt better. It appears that there would not be any monsters inside the Gold Coffin. If there was danger she would have alerted them just now.

Yue Yang decided on the spot to open it and take a look at what was inside the Gold Coffin!

Chapter 480 – The Best Treasure Is?

Gold Coffin.

After investigating the Gold Coffin for a long time, Yue Yang and the Sickly Beauty realised that the Runic Circle was extremely complicated. There were about dozens of linked points and three big Runic Circles.

Moreover, they matched one another with the start and the end linked.

It was balanced and profound.

It was extremely complex, and entirely different from normal Runic Circles.

Although the Runic Circles under the Graveyard of the Sea were great in quantity, they could not be compared to this.

To undo that seal, Yue Yang just had to undo one. The chain reaction can undo all the seals and it did not really require a lot of effort. Yue Yang spent only a few minutes to successfully undo the seal.

However, it was not the case for the Gold Coffin.

Perhaps, without a few hours, it could not be done.

While the Sickly Beauty investigated, she also copied the Runic Circle. She had an unusual intuition. She felt that these three linked Runic Circle may be of great use in future, so she was even more focused.

After two hours, Yue Yang and the Sickly Beauty could only undo some of the simplest Runic Circles. To undo the three main Runic Circles would probably take at least three, four hours. Yue Yang and the Sickly Beauty thought that the more seals they undid, the more fulfilling it would be. They were highly motivated, and investigated continuously without rest. Seeing the slow progress of opening the Gold Coffin, Luo Hua City Mistress, who was previously excited, felt bored. She yawned with little strength left and decided to return back to the Grimoire World to take a nap. She reckoned that she had to wage war with her beloved at night so she decided to recharge.

“Brother, after you undo the seal let me know!” Yue Bing also decided to train. She was not much help to Yue Yang anyway.

“Just return back to the Grimoire World, stop bothering them.” Yue Yu realised that Yue Shuang this naughty little kid likes to disturb her brother from time to time. In a moment, she will feed his brother a piece of Coconut and later she would climb onto his back to ask for a piggy back ride. It severely disrupted the investigation process.

Yue Yang had to move the Gold Coffin and returned back to the Grimoire World.

After the separation, Yue Yu did not return back. Now, looking back she had a warm and comfortable home which she also took part in building. She could not help but feel touched.

In fact she really liked living here.

However, she was aware that certain things could not be crossed, or else the consequences would be unthinkable.

She was not exactly worried about others, but rather herself... The environment affects how one develops. Since her destiny was like this, she had no choice... Seeing that her own room was still the same, Yue Yu felt her heart ached. Her eyes reddened. While Yue Yang and the Sickly Beauty were still discussing about the Runic Circle on the Gold Coffin, she quickly wiped the corner of her eyes. She continued to immerse herself in work, copying the changes on the Runic Circle.

Perhaps by quietly helping him would be the best ending for her.

Don't think anymore, as long as he is living well everything's fine.

She should just stay this way!

Yue Yu forcefully pulled herself together. As expected, after she threw away the distracting thoughts, her productivity increased enormously. After another two hours, she copied down all the Runic Circle as well as the method to undo them.

Yue Yang and the Sickly Beauty discussed over and over again. They felt that it was the time to start.

“This place and here, plus the star on top, are all the important parts.” The Sickly Beauty predicted that, with Yue Yang’s power, they would at least need ten minutes.

“Do you want to drink some water first?” Yue Yu poured a cup of water each for Yue Yang and the Sickly Beauty, suggesting that they should take a break first.

“Sister Yu, thank god you are here. Normally nobody would pour water for me. If it was only me, I would have had to take care of all the young mistresses.” Yue Yang’s inadvertent comment made Yue Yu blush a little. She softly spoke, with a hint of being flustered, “Stop spouting nonsense. Would there be anyone who would trouble the Third Young Master of the Yue Clan. From what I see, you were always like the lord, waiting for others to serve you.” In fact, Yue Yu’s criticism was all true. Normally Yue Yang hardly helped in the aspect of living. He was always busy enjoying himself.

However, Luo Hua City Mistress and Phoenix Fairy Beauty were so used to servants serving them. It was a rare sight for any of them to pour water for Yue Yang.

Princess Qian Qian?

If she was thirsty, and her own cup was empty, she would just

pour some from Yue Yang's cup into her own... Or perhaps when she sees Yue Yang drinking water, she would snatch it first and gulp down a few mouthfuls. This would save her the time to pour water.

After practicing [Body Fusion], Princess Qian Qian no longer refrained from using the things Yue Yang had used before.

According to her, even her lips were already kissed by him so drinking water was nothing. Of course, this was only limited to within the Grimoire World. If they were outside, she would not dare to do so.

The Sickly Beauty knew how to take care of people. She took good care of Yue Yang in all aspects. It was just that when she was copying rune patterns, or when she was investigating some old books, she would be so focused that she forgot about Yue Yang. If Yue Yu was here, with her thoroughness, not just Yue Yang, she could take good care of everyone even including the Sickly Beauty, Princess Qian Qian and Luo Hua City Mistress.

Thus, when Yue Yang held up the cup of water, he recalled Yue Yu's good points.

Yue Yu rolled her eyes at him but deep down in her heart she felt delighted.

This brat did not forget his roots, he still remembered that he had a sister.

The unsealing process continued.

When the Innate Qi from Yue Yang's hands floated across all the Runic Circles on the Gold Coffin, it instantly radiated with brilliance.

There was no need for any external force, the Gold Coffin opened automatically. There were no mummies that jumped out, unlike what Yue Yang imagined. However there was a wonderful scent, it was not the fragrance of a flower but rather a fresh and pure energy. It was similar to the Mother Earth Potion, but it was not as pure nor as grand. It was similar to the Hundred Years Crystal Liquid, but different at the same time.

Inside the Gold Coffin, there was a long silver box.

The top and bottom edges of the Silver box had two crystal stands that bloomed like flowers, brimming with energy. They were more beautiful than the crystal pillars at the Crystal Canyon, they were not just transparent, they also gave out five different colours of light: green, cyan, blue, purple, and silver.

“These two crystal stands are very suitable for you, Wu Hen. I have considered it for very long time, I think I should enhance your powers.” Yue Yang had always felt sorry for her. Although he enhanced the Sickly Beauty's strength and realm, and he first practised [Body Fusion] as a married couple with her, in addition, he learnt many things from her; However, due to the fact that the Sickly Beauty once damaged her body from studying Heaven Realm's Runic Circles, Yue Yang had to use Innate Qi and Nirvana Flames to heal her. But he never had the ability to achieve

the best state. Yue Yang had to find the best crystal energy in order to perfectly repair her damaged body, potential as well as Guardian Beast. This, was one of Yue Yang's wish that he wanted to fulfill the most.

“Um, it's not really a big deal, I am not the main fighter anyway. Having a weaker body is not a big issue.” The Sickly Beauty was definitely happy. However, with her gentle personality, if it was not by chance, she would not force Yue Yang to help her find such treasures.

“Even if we had not obtained these crystal stands, I have already obtained a large amounts of crystals from the Crystal Canyon, as well as God's Water and the Hundred Years Crystal Liquid. Wu Hen, I once said before, you would get better. Not just heal perfectly, you would become my perfect crystal bride!” Yue Yang held the Sickly Beauty and kissed her jade like lips.

“Okay, let me down first.” Seeing Yue Yu present, the Sickly Beauty felt embarrassed and hit Yue Yang lightly with her fist.

When Yue Yang placed her down, the Sickly Beauty gave him a quick kiss back as she realised that Yue Yu was not looking. Actually she felt very thankful for what he had done for her. Knowing that her lover cares for her she felt happy.

Yue Yu pretended that she did not see their skinship. She bent down to lift up the long silver box.

After half an hour, Yue Yang undid the silver box.

It opened.

The three of them were stunned. There was actually a bronze box inside. However, within the silver box, there were also two crystal vase. Wondering what was inside, Yue Yang held it up and opened it. He sniffed it and used his Heaven Eye Divine Vision to see. After one glance, he quickly covered it with the lid and shouted, almost losing his voice, “ Isn’t this water of the ‘Spring of Youth’. My god, two big bottles of them! “

Spring of Youth, as its name implies, is a spiritual water that allows living creatures to maintain their youth.

It was extremely rare. It was just like the Wishing Dutchman’s pipe, Dream Jadeite, and Time Sand, they all belonged to the seven treasures of the world.

Although it did not mean the person would live for eternity, it could extend one’s life and maintain their youth. Legends say that a thousand eight hundred years ago, there was an emperor called Jun Tian Sheng from the Xia Empire of the Dragon Soaring Continent. He obtained a small bottle of the Spring of Youth. This emperor, Wu Tian Sheng was someone who was focused on one person when it comes to relationships. He was very fond of the empress, who was erudite and multi-talented despite her ordinary appearance. He was prepared to consume the Spring of Youth together with his empress, enjoy their youth, and eventually love each other for eternity. If the legends were to stop here it would be a touching story. However, in reality it was a tragedy.

Anyone could be single-minded and faithful in relationships but not the Emperor.

Due to the fact that the emperor only loved the empress, and the empress did not have children, the imperial concubines who were married to him just to give birth were so jealous that they went mad.

One of the concubines who was unable to obtain the love she desired added fatal poison into the Spring of Youth out of pure hatred.

In the end, the emperor Jun Tian Sheng drank and the empress both drank the poisoned Spring of Youth. Not only did they fail to stay young for eternity, they both went to the Yellow Springs and became a married couple with the same fate.

After the prince took over, he placed his father and the empress into a silver coffin and buried them together in one grave.

After three hundred years, the most savage grave diggers secretly dug up the silver coffin from the emperor's grave. After opening, they discovered that the emperor Jun Tian Sheng and the empress' bodies had not decomposed. In fact, they looked lifelike. It was like a miracle. The grave diggers quickly placed the couple back. Only after ten years, after the grave diggers were caught and confessed everything, then did the public find out that the Spring of Youth could cause such a 'miracle'.

If an ordinary human drank a mouthful of the Spring of Youth,

how long can the person's youth be maintained?

Innate Rankers have already experimented on it. An ordinary human's physique could only absorb a small amount of power from the Spring of Youth.

Suppose a mouthful would at most maintain ten years of youth, if it was an Innate Ranker, they would probably exceed fifty years or even a hundred years. Of course, the Spring of Youth's greatest use was not to maintain youth, but to enhance one's potential. It was one of the main ingredients to make a Martial Spirit Pills! The Martial Spirit Pills, that could make a Lesser Innates go crazy, could help enhance one's potential. The Martial God Pill that was even more advanced than the Martial Spirit Pill could even allow people to break through as well as enhance one's potential. It is a high-grade medicine that was popular among Innates. And the ingredient needed to create it was the Spring of Youth.

Previously, the Night Empress once gave Yue Yang a small bottle of Spring of Youth. Yue Yang at that time was still unaware of its value.

Only later did he found out that this Spring of Youth was priceless.

No matter how much money one has, it was impossible to buy!

Yue Yang was getting headaches thinking about the Spring of Youth because many of his medicines need it. However, the bottle, Night Empress gave him, would soon be used up. Now he had

obtained two big bottles of them, he had picked up treasure!

“This is great, everyone come drink a small cup. Last time everyone wanted to taste it, too bad there was too little!” Luo Hua City Mistress who received the news was really happy. She skipped over to embrace Yue Yang, ignoring the fact that Yue Yu was there too. She continuously kissed Yue Yang, “Your luck is pretty good. I thought there would be rotten corpses inside. I did not expect them all to be treasures! Right, what is inside the bronze box?”

“Continue and open, maybe there are better treasures inside...” All three ladies were extremely excited, they had their expectation held high.

“It’s a blueprint?” Yue Yang opened it and found a few blueprints. There weren’t any other special treasures. Luo Hua City Mistress, Sickly Beauty, and Yue Yu were all disappointed. They thought that the best treasure would be at the end. They did not expect it to be a few blueprints and they did not look like Runic Circle patterns, they appeared to be some weird objects and special lines.

“Fuck, this is what I really wanted. Qilin girl was right. Indeed this was the most helpful thing to fulfill Yue Gong’s third will!”

Yue Yang was excited, so he accidentally swore.

The three ladies saw that he was as happy as a lark so they all pretended that they did not hear it. They surrounded him to take a closer look at the blueprint he held.

Just what kind of blueprint was it? And it made him so excited? Could it be that these were the blueprints of the legendary Ancient Battle Puppets?

Chapter 481 – Sickly Beauty, The Crystal Bride

These pieces of paper were clearly designs for Ancient Battle Dolls.

But what surprised Yue Yang was that the designs were of a much higher standard than the Battle Dolls of the Soaring Dragon Continent and that they have exceeded his imagination.

The Ancient Battle Doll was a creation that combined life and machine. It's was not a silicon-based life form like the [Transformers](#), but a life form made of something between silicon and carbon. Its body was a perfect creation made of flesh and crystal. To be more accurate, the Ancient Battle Doll was much more advanced and much more perfect than the Ancient Guards in the Crystal Canyon. It was not only alive but it was capable of self-thought...

These Battle Dolls could even change forms just like a special Innate.

There were forms for fighting, for living and even for studying. Depending on its needs, the battle doll could change its form freely. Thus, it could even be said that they have a superiority, to a certain extent, over other life forms such as humans and elves, who do not have the ability to change forms.

Of course, these Ancient Battle Dolls had one greatest weakness.

It was the problem of growth.

Its abilities were completely predetermined and fixed. From the moment it was made, it would already possess all the powers it could ever possess thus it did not need to grow any further.

This, also meant that it was just like all other battle dolls, its powers fixed forever, and the inability to grow... It could only learn how to master the skills it already possess and absorb energy to grow, but it could not gain any actual improvements.

It would be just like how a Ranker, whose potential had been exhausted, would never be able to level up.

[Battle Angel: holy-ranked, all-purpose Battle Doll with three different forms, possesses a special life and higher intelligence, able to use innate skills as well as learnt skills in battle, needs to contract a strong soul as a host for its spirit, eternally loyal, self-healing, will fall apart upon the death of its contracted master. Any other additional battle machinery has to be taught and learnt before it can be used while its original inherent weapons can be executed by its natural instinct. The degree to which it becomes conscious of its inherent abilities would determine the final effect of using the weapons.]

“There are holy-ranked Battle Dolls? When it is complete, all the Innates who take great pride in their Gold King Beasts would kill themselves.” Luo Hua City Mistress felt that this was too unfair.

Holy-ranked Battle Dolls with both life and intelligence, everyone would go crazy knowing it.

“It is indeed terribly frightening!” Even Sickly Beauty felt that to have Battle Dolls with life and intelligence, was like frogs turning into princes.

“It looks very complicated. It wouldn’t be easy to make right?” Yue Yu worried that the holy-ranked Battle Dolls had too high of requirement to be made and that it might cause more trouble for them if it could not be produced.

“With the designs, we are already halfway there. I believe we can overcome the difficulties.” Yue Yang had faith that they could do it since they had almost all the materials needed: two Crystal Man bodies, highest graded materials like the Meteorite Essence and Obsidian Emperor Heart as well as the ‘Divine Molten Meteorite Gold’ which could be used to make divine weapons and everything else Yue Gong had prepared. Even if there were still some missing materials, they could always just spend more money to buy it all.

No matter what, they had to fulfill Yue Gong’s third dying wish.

The real Puppet Grimoire, the mysterious crystal pillar and the third piece that Yue Gong had not completed. Yue Gong had basically prepared a part of the requirements for Yue Yang. More importantly, he had directed Yue Yang onto an entirely new path.

That was creating battle dolls with life!

To have received inspiration from the talented Yue Gong was no doubt the greatest present to Yue Yang.

It must be understood that if some things were not laid bare, it could cause the technology of the whole world to stop progressing for hundreds, even thousands of years while just a simple exposure would prove that progress couldn't be simpler. For instance, before Yue Yang was transported, thousands of sailors in Europe had been plagued by scurvy, with countless succumbing to the illness. Hence, scurvy was a fearsome disease to all sailors. However, there were practically no sailor who suffered from scurvy in the East and it was for a simple reason. It was simply because the Eastern sailors knew that if they brought beans on board, the beans would grow into bean sprouts which they could use to cure scurvy.

Another example would be the Black Death pandemic which had caused a total of 750 million deaths worldwide and had reduced the entire population of Europe by a third.

It was said that the disease first spread from the ancient Hua Xia Tian dynasty.

The Hua Xia Tian dynasty did have numerous records about the epidemic but the total damage to their dynasty was not even close to what the Black Death pandemic had brought upon Europe. Although the roots and tree barks in Traditional Chinese Medicine seemed to be behind times, but a peek into history would show how the ancient Hua Xia Tian dynasty had managed to keep plagues under control. Even though small outbreaks of sickness were prevalent, plagues were usually brought under control

quickly. If they had employed other methods of treatment such as the European method of letting blood, or the urine baths to treat epidemics... The people of the ancient Hua Xia Tian dynasty would probably be long dead!

It was undeniable that experience was important. Passing down medical prescriptions and the use of roots and tree barks to treat epidemics may not be the best method but they were still better than letting blood and taking urine baths.

If someone had known that letting blood and urine baths had no use, would the European doctors still had done what they did?

Obviously not!

“Creating this Battle Doll can be delayed. The most important thing is to help Wu Hen level up,” A blush crept onto Sickly Beauty’s face as the words left Yue Yang’s mouth. Yue Yu then rushed out of the room hurriedly and returned to her room. She knew that her brother and sister-in-law were getting ready for actions unsuitable for children to watch.

“Heh, then I’ll go back first.” Luo Hua City Mistress knew she was unable to help here. However, she would probably have to ‘join the battlefield’ after she was done levelling up.

Yue Yang brought out the bottle of Crystal Fluid and poured it out.

With his Yin abilities, he suspended the ball of fluid in the air then he purified it with his Innate Qi and Nirvana Flames.

Although this would deplete much of its energy, it would make the liquid purer. The ball of Crystal Fluid became even clearer after purification. Yue Yang immediately manipulated the ball of fluid into a colourful stream of which flowed down Sickly Beauty's throat gently as she absorbed it. At the same time, Innate Qi supported the energy of the Crystal Fluid and flowed through her body slowly.

Sickly Beauty gently held Yue Yang, her lips tightly pressed on his and allowed Yue Yang to direct her body with his Body Fusion skill.

The crystal pillar, numerous crystal fragments brought from the Crystal Canyon as well as the splendid crystal stands from the gold coffin were laid around Sickly Beauty.

Yue Yang directed all their energies into Sickly Beauty's body. They seeped through every part of her skin while the energy of the Crystal Fluid amply nourished the inside of her body. Yue Yang's body became alight with Nirvana Flames and his clothes turned to ashes. Sickly Beauty held him close amidst the burning pain. She endured the painful process of Nirvana Flame's purification with the help of Yue Yang's Innate Qi, which kept her conscious despite the pain. Countless runes appeared from Yue Yang's body and they slowly filled and restoring Sickly Beauty's suffering body. Although her body had been repaired once before, this time she had the help of Yue Yang's Innate Qi, the Nirvana Flames and the energy of the crystals, her body was transformed to be even more

flawless.

Sickly Beauty coordinated well with Yue Yang. Under the guidance of the Body Fusion skill, she lifted her foot high up and swayed her bottom. She was suspended above Yue Yang's waist before she sat down slowly and their bodies joined together completely.

As a wife, Sickly Beauty would definitely pass with excellence.

As the Body Fusion skill brought the two energies together to become one, Sickly Beauty's body finally finished its restoration and achieved perfection.

Innumerable crystals rapidly condensed on her body, forming a special suit of battle armor.

That was her Guardian Beast which had evolved after perfect restoration... What was even more magical, was that it had not only formed a crystal armor on Sickly Beauty's body but had also formed one around Yue Yang's body only that it was much more masculine and mighty. The sole difference between their armors was that Sickly Beauty's had long crystal wings extending at the back while Yue Yang's had wings of Nirvana Flames.

A golden light pillars rose out of their bodies and millions of runes swirled around in the air. After new images had been weaved, the runes returned into their bodies.

Sickly Beauty's Grimoire floated out automatically.

She had leveled up..

Time passed until the two of them finally recovered from the beauty of the situation.

The Crystal Battle Armor was controlled by Sickly Beauty's mind and it returned inside her body. Meanwhile, Sickly Beauty's body was now even more pure and flawless than crystal. She was like a clear transparent crystal doll, sparkling and glowing all over.

After the perfect restoration of her body, there had been one other change to her body.

Her soft black waterfall like long hair had become thinly delicate like crystals, flowing softly and spotlessly. Yue Yang could even smell faint traces of the fragrance of the Crystal Fluid when he leaned close to her. The smell matched perfectly with the natural fragrance of Sickly Beauty's body. Sickly Beauty also felt that she can now fully control the crystal-like strands of hair just like how she could control her Crystal Battle Armor and Crystal Wings.

Yue Yang had always silently regretted the failure of Sickly Beauty's first restoration. Only until today did he finally achieved his wish.

"Wow, you're so beautiful. You really deserve to be called my crystal bride!" Yue Yang praised her repeatedly.

A great sense of accomplishment boiled at the bottom of his heart.

Sickly Beauty became shy at his words.

She buried herself in his chest while keeping her eyes low, afraid to look at him.

When her lover began to be naughty, her high morals held back the shudder of pleasure in her body, her bottom melded with his while she did her best to satisfy all the moves he made on her. She happily accepted his all while enjoying the pleasure he brought to her at the same time...

Her weak body used to be unable to bear his fierce poundings.

However, she felt her great recovery and improvement.

Her body constitution and strength had improved and she had more control over her body. She could even effortlessly match physically exhausting postures. Yue Yang was also quick to notice the change in Sickly Beauty and kissed her passionately while pounding into her more fiercely, bringing greater pleasure to her. Sickly Beauty reached orgasm very quickly as her heart and soul floated in bliss.

“Bastard, you began so soon, I want it too!” Luo Hua City Mistress heard the noise and slipped in secretly, her face flushed

with desire.

She swiftly shut the door behind her and undressed herself to join the battle.

Threesome.

It was not the first nor would it be the last time.

Luo Hua City Mistress and Sickly Beauty served Yue Yang diligently, soft moans and pants continuously escaped their mouths. It was an intense battle.

They threw everything away and drowned in the pleasure their partner brought them.

However, they caused suffering to Yue Yu who could not block out the sounds even with her hands over her ears. Despite being rolled up in her blankets with her hands covering her ears, she could distinctly hear the faint sounds as they travelled to her ears occasionally.

It was still fine with just Sickly Beauty as she was not very loud.

She would even hold back her moans out of shyness.

When Luo Hua City Mistress lost herself in passion, her moans became unsuppressable.

The embarrassed Yue Yu could only pretend that she did not hear anything... This was only natural since her brother had married. Yue Yu did not think it was wrong but she would be embarrassed when she heard them. Moreover, these sounds made her heart race and it was difficult to be unaffected... Just sleep, everything would be gone when she woke up!

Yue Yu tried hard to fall asleep but it proved to be a difficult task.

She actually felt happiness in her heart that she had come back here. Although it was slightly awkward, it was still much better than over thinking while out there, at the very least, her heart was at ease!

Chapter 482 – The Best Gift!

Yue Yu, who had sorted out her feelings, was no longer bothered by other things.

Being attentive, Yue Yu provided the greatest assistance to Yue Yang, when he was creating the Holy-ranked Battle Doll. The Sickly Beauty was in charge of researching the three large Runic Circle of the Golden Coffin. Her instinct told her that the results obtained from her research would definitely be of great use to Yue Yang. As for Luo Hua City Mistress, she usually grooms her Six-tailed Spirit Fox. She lacked the patience in sorting logistics issues.

So this made the astute, meticulous and gentle Yue Yu the best candidate to be Yue Yang's assistant.

During times when Yue Yang's research didn't go well, she would comfort him gently, uplifting his spirit.

Within two days, Yue Yang finished preparing all the materials.

The first breakthrough they needed would be understanding the body structure and nature of the Crystal Men.

The Crystal Men were different from human beings, they do not require any gender difference. They were asexual existence born from crystals and relied on the energy of the crystals to survive. Their life cycle was different from human's cycle of birth, aging, sickness and death. But even so, they are considered to be living creatures. Yue Yang couldn't figure out how their souls can control

their bodies even after researching for a long time. With sturdy crystal bodies, the Crystal Men shouldn't have been able to replicate actions that humans can do. But during battles, they were even more agile than humans.

After observing for a long time, Yue Yang saw some clues with his Heaven Eyes Divine Vision, but couldn't dredge any more details.

Yue Yang was stuck at the stage between knowing nothing and everything.

"Maybe you could consult with the Night Empress when she returns!" Yue Yu advised.

"She definitely wouldn't know." Yue Yang's plan was to enter the mysterious palace again. He should be able to obtain something from it.

Not only was the Black Hell King in the mysterious palace, it was protected by the strong Golden Barrier. Even after his level up, Yue Yang couldn't guarantee that he could get in. Maybe he could try using Liu Ye's Perforate Deer, but it wouldn't be a guaranteed success, he could only try his luck. Moreover, Liu Ye, Bao Er and the others went to the outskirts of Death Valley for training, so they wouldn't be back anytime soon.

Seeing Yue Yang being vexed, Yue Yu quickly changed the topic.

She handed a drawing to Yue Yang. “Why don’t we study the weapon first. We shouldn’t be worried that we can’t make the Battle Doll now. We should make the weapons first.

Yue Yang felt that it was a good idea. It would be good for him to change his train of thought now that he was in a bottleneck. It might even lead to surprises!

So they switched over into making the comparatively easier weapons rather than the Battle Doll.

As the Holy-ranked Battle Angel required weapons that were at least Platinum-ranked, it wouldn’t exactly be easy to make.

Refining a Platinum-ranked equipment would require large amount of components. Although Yue Yang had the Nirvana Flame to refine them, he was extremely exhausted by it... As Yue Yu couldn’t help him, she could only help to wipe away his perspiration, pass him water and record down the components that were being made. As the mountain-like components were all exhausted, Yue Yang finally refined a few tons of things like the Meteorite Essence and the Silver Essence. He had also finished his preparations for other aids like the Obsidian and Red Sand.

To ensure that it would be a success, Yue Yang and Yue Yu discussed and decided to make one using the inferior components first.

They would only start creating it once they are fully confident that they would succeed.

In this way, the supreme components that they refined painstakingly wouldn't go to waste.

“Here in the Rune Circle, And here, the star position is not accurate enough, adjust it again.” Yue Yang, Yue Yu and the Sickly Beauty were extremely exhausted when they finished two “Angel's Blade”. These Angel's Blade could shrink, fold, and rotate. They could even turn into mechanical wings. The only thing that remained was to activate them.

These two Angel's Blades needed to at least be Platinum-ranked to be used. However, since they used inferior components, even if the activation failed, they would still be Silver-ranked.

Yue Yang didn't care about its ranked, he only wanted to succeed.

Five minutes after it was activated by channelling energy into it.

The two Angel's Blade that were joined together twisted and deformed under the enormous amount of energy.

It seemed that the Angel's Blade couldn't take such a large amount of energy... Yue Yang was troubled, he could only melt it with Nirvana Flame and start all over again. The Sickly Beauty then thought over it again, and considered if the problem lied in the Runic Circle and if she could combine the three large Runic Circles. Yue Yu suddenly identified the issue. She spoke excitedly. “Actually we may be close to succeeding. We only lack a medium now. This weapon has to be created on the basis of having a Battle

Angel. If we have a medium, that is, if we have a person to wear it, and then start it and use our mind to control it just like how we do with the Battle Doll, then we may succeed!”

Her words stunned Yue Yang.

It then turned into euphoria.

What Yue Yu said was very logical. All treasures that were above Platinum-ranked would have a consciousness in certain sense, and would be connected to the mind of its owner.

It was the same thing for the Angel’s Blade. If it were to be started without the control of its master, it would go out of control. This should be the reason why he failed. But then again, who would be the medium?

This person had to be one with strong willpower and good at communicating with treasures. Luo Hua City Mistress had been busy breeding flowers and levelling up the Spirit Fox, so she definitely wouldn’t have the time to carry out experiments with him. The same thing goes for Bing’er since she was busy cultivating. Yi Nan has a strong willpower, but she is now in the Valley of Butterflies and Flowers to help the Sickly Beauty in determining the star positions of the Runes. Yue Yang himself couldn’t do it either as he had to be out doing the assembly and inputting of energy at the final stage.

The only candidate would be Yue Yu.

But she is weak physically, so it would be extremely dangerous if any accident happens.

“Let me do it, I’ll be fine. I have faith in you, you can do it.” Yue Yu encouraged Yue Yang. She firmly believed that he could do it.

“Alright, this time let’s do things differently and alter the design... There’s breastplate and wings on the front and back of the original Battle Doll, but Sister Yu you don’t have all these, so we should install two Angel’s Blade on the back, shoulders and arms. This would be more logical and would make it easier to distribute the Rune Circle. We will add a breastplate on the front and use it to connect and stabilize the Angel’s Blade, so in the scenario that you can’t control it, it won’t hurt you, of course, the weight would be more evenly distributed too...” Yue Yang boldly made changes.

With the finalisation of the new plan, as if seeing the light at the end of the tunnel, new ideas kept popping up in Yue Yang’s mind.

He made the two Angel’s Blade again. With his past experiences, the Angel’s Blade made this time was more perfect and more suitable for females to use. Since Yue Yu was the one controlling it, the initially huge Angel’s Blade was shrunk by a large extent.

In order to make the breastplate, Yue Yang even made measurements of Yue Yu’s chest, waist and hip accurately.

Yue Yu was a little awkward when Yue Yang was taking the measurements, but she did not reject him.

“Will you feel uncomfortable with this width?” Yue Yang knew that any slight unfitting issues would lead to serious consequences. So he had to make accurate measurements and inquired Yue Yu.

“No, this is good.” Wearing the sample made by Yue Yang, Yue Yu tried to stand, sit, walk and battle. She then told what she felt to her brother.

“Then this will be it!” Yue Yang felt that Yue Yu’s chest area could be larger, because she restricted it too tightly with her clothes. Once she wears the breastplate made from metal and crystal, she may feel that it’s too tight fitting. But he felt embarrassed to say it, because he saw it discreetly using his Heaven Eyes Divine Vision. He realised that Yue Yu restricted her plump breast tightly, and didn’t allow it to expand fully.

“Okay.” Yue Yu was also slightly embarrassed. She felt that her body was getting more mature as her breasts enlarged and her hips became rounder. She was afraid that her breasts would shake as she walked so she used skintight shirts to restrict it. But she couldn’t tell her brother that she wanted the chest area to be larger.

The Angel’s Blade with breastplate had been made and Yue Yu officially wore it for the first time.

The Sickly Beauty wasn’t there since she had been meditating in order to understand the three large Rune Circle of the Golden Coffin.

Luo Hua City Mistress wasn't there too.

Only Yue Yu and Yue Yang were in the whole of the laboratory, so it made it less awkward for Yue Yu.

Seeing Yue Yang perspiring profusely, busily assembling the Angel's Blade before her chest and on her back, Yue Yu felt sorry for her brother. She felt that he was too serious in everything he did... He did not even sleep or rest when he carried out his research. If no one was there to take care of him, he would collapse from weariness.

After putting on the energy crystal and activating the Runic Circle, Yue Yang used his Innate Qi and Nirvana Flame to fuse it. Dazzling lights shone off the Heaven Rune Circle of 'levitate', 'speed' and 'morph'. With Yue Yu's mental control, the Angel's Blade finally fused with her as it became a super weapon that could help her. During battles, the Angel's Blade would eject from her arms to fight off the enemies, maintaining both wings at the same time. The Angel's Blade has more than eighteen modes for the owner to choose from, when attacking the enemies. During the fight, the Angel's Blade could fold and deform, and be used as an armor for defense purposes. It could then combine with the wings at the back, forming a rotating blade that could defend against opponents from all directions.

It could even form a ten seconds crystal shield using the crystals on the breastplate during special battles.

Normal weapons used for battle wouldn't even reach this kind of standard in the Soaring Dragon Continent or even Tong Tian Tower.

This was an ancient Magic Weapon!

Although it wasn't made from the best components, Yue Yang felt that this Silver-ranked Angel's Blade installed on the back would be a top notch Silver-ranked Equipment. It could even beat lots of Gold-ranked equipments.

Yue Yu operated the Angel's Blade and happily showed off various combat skills to Yue Yang.

Even she could easily operate this remarkable ancient Magic Weapon.

"So comfortable. It feels as if I have my own wings and arms. It is easy to operate and can even do whatever I want to do with it!" What Yue Yu didn't know was that the reason why she felt so comfortable in it was because Yue Yang lengthened the chest area of the armour, and made two cave-ins according to the shape of Yue Yu's beautiful breast. It supported her breasts like a bra, that was why she felt that it was so fitting.

"Had I known that I could succeed on the first try, I would have made a Gold-ranked one for you." Yue Yang sighed regretfully.

"No, this one is good enough, I like it." Yue Yu was very excited.

She wanted to rub Yue Yang's head and compliment him, but due to the height difference, she could only touch his cheeks before quickly withdrawing it. She smiled to him. "Thank you, Xiao San, this is the best gift you have ever given me, and the best one that I would ever receive!"

Chapter 483 – Divine Grimoire

With a good start, Yue Yang's research was finally on the right track.

The successful creation of Yue Yu's ancient magical weapon 'Angel's Blade' was enlightening to Yue Yang. His inspiration was gushing.

Today, Yue Yang and Yue Yu kept on experimenting.

Luo Hua City Mistress filially brought Fourth Mother a cup of fragrant tea. Normally, she would not do such a thing because as a City Mistress, she was used to have others serving her. However, today was an exception. This was because she was holding tea that was brewed with Eternal Youth Springwater and Starlight Serene Indigo Grass. After consumption, this tea would help the body retain youth, and its effects were even more prominent for women.

Simply put, Luo Hua City Mistress this daughter-in-law wanted to win over Fourth Mother this senior.

Fourth Mother did not realise at first, and thought that this was ordinary floral fragrance. She opened the lid of the cup and sipped in delight. She was slightly startled and shouted: "Is this not Eternal Youth Springwater? And Starlight Serene Indigo Grass..... Luo Hua, do you have a lot of Eternal Youth Springwater? To think that you use to brew tea? It is alright if it is for young women like you, I am already the mother of Bing'er and Shuang'er, to use this

tea on me is such a waste!”

Luo Hua City Mistress quickly came over to massage her shoulders to please her: “This is all for you, please drink it!”

Hearing this, Fourth mother smiled bitterly.

In the end, she did not let down the well intentions of her daughter-in-law, and drank it gracefully.

She stretched out her hand to cup Luo Hua City Mistress’s small face: “You are all very good children, but these things are useless to me..... Drink it yourselves in the future, Fourth Mother accepts your well intentions. Right, San’er did not give this drink to Bing’er and Shuang’er right? What? Really, what a troublemaker!” Upon hearing that Yue Bing and Yue Shuang have both drank this Eternal Youth Springwater, Fourth Mother was not happy but instead shocked.

Luo Hua City Mistress was afraid Fourth Mother would be angry, and quickly explained: “He only wanted to give Bing’er some at first so that she could cultivate faster. But when Shuang’er saw it, you know how that girl wants to eat anything, so she wanted to drink it too. After drinking Eternal Youth Springwater, she should still be able to grow right? She would not stay a young girl forever right?”

Having said that, even Luo Hua City Mistress was shocked.

Fourth Mother waved, saying no.

She sighed again: “San’er loves his sisters. However, how could I not know that Bing’er and Shuang’er are the same as me. Drinking this would not benefit them much.....”

When Luo Hua City Mistress went back to tell Yue Yang, Yue Yu and Sickly Beauty this news, all three of them were confused.

Anyone who drank Eternal Youth Springwater should experience the effect of everlasting youth, why would Fourth Mother say that it has no effect on her? Maybe she was being modest and could not bear to waste it, but she said that it had little effect on Yue Bing and Yue Shuang, which aroused Yue Yang’s suspicions. Could it be that in Yue Bing and Yue Shuang’s bodies, there was a secret that even Heaven Eyes Divine Vision could not see?

Yue Yang’s Heaven Eyes Divine Vision could see through Level Ten Innates.

Unless they were Heaven Ranked or Elder Innate leveled, then Yue Yang’s Heaven Eyes Divine Vision should have been able to see through them. It was impossible for Fourth Mother, Yue Bing and Yue Shuang to that strong. If so, who was the one who concealed the secret in their bodies?

Tragic Guy’s mother!

That is Fourth Mother’s older sister.....

In the bottom of Yue Yang's heart, this mysterious woman once again appeared at the bottom of his heart. Turns out that the Tragic Guy's mother was not simple!

She was the first woman to enter God's Ruin's Inner Layer. There was no information about her in the entire Tong Tian Tower, even in all of Soaring Dragon Continent. Her mysterious power exceeded Yue Yang's imagination. The inheritance of knowledge that was as boundless as the sea, the possession of Black Jade Necklace that sealed Empress Fei Wen Li, the knowledge of the secret of Heaven Stairway, even leaving behind the method of ascending the Heaven Stairway that bypasses Heaven Realm's Gate..... Tragic Guy's mother was even more mysterious than the strongest human Zhi Zun.

Now, Yue Yang felt that even Fourth Mother was very mysterious.

Fourth Mother must know some secret, but for some reason she did not mention it to everyone.

This small matter tugged at Yue Yang's heart, he started becoming curious even about the insignificant details around him. While he could not touch Fourth Mother, he was still able to investigate Yue Bing and Yue Shuang these two girls. Maybe within their body there could really be some shocking secret.

"Do not overthink it. Letting children drink Eternal Youth Springwater is not really good." Yue Yu chose to believe. She felt

that for young children to drink Eternal Youth Springwater and not be able to grow up is honestly not a good thing. Yue Yang did not want to let Yue Shuang drink either when she was still so young. However, he could not win against the little girl who was crying after missing out on something her older sister had. Moreover, Little Lolis are pretty cute. It was the dream of otakus to fulfil the wishes of Little Lolis, the legendary [Guang Yuan Shi plan](#) was like this.

(Last: [Guang Yuan Shi plan](#), rough summary of wiki “raising little girls to be your ideal bride”)

“Let us forget this.” Luo Hua City Mistress did not investigate further, she brought Yue Yang another piece of news: “I heard that Fatty Hai and the others are back, when do you plan to go to the Mysterious Palace again?”

“Ye Kong and Fatty Hai are back? What did they obtain?” Yue Yang felt that they returned too early and maybe they had failed.

“They obtained nothing.” Luo Hua City Mistress came to terms with Yue Yang, sure enough, these guys were fools.

“Many Innates fail to achieve anything in Death Canyon. It is very normal for them to have such results, it would be weird if they got anything!” Sickly Beauty snickered, she did not expect much from this exploration. It was just that she did not wish to dampen Ye Kong and Fatty Hai’s good spirits when they were leaving. It could even be said that Jun Wu You and Elder Yue Hai already predicted such an outcome, but they only left Fatty Hai and Ye Kong them to meet with a rebuff.

The outer area of God's Ruins, Death Canyon was full of restrictions and mazes, even the Beasts were ridiculously big.

Without any experience, even if Fatty Hai and the others wanted to explore, they were only being full of themselves.

Yue Yang set aside his research for now and returned to Yue Clan's Castle.

Since Black Hell King was not at the Mysterious Palace, Yue Yang decided to take this chance to bring the rest to gain experience and boost their courage. He also wanted to see whether Liu Ye's Perforate Deer could pass through the Golden Barrier.

Yue Yang was also curious to see what the Divine Grimoire that was inside Mysterious Palace looked like.

When he returned, he found Ye Kong and Fatty Hai dejected and depressed. Ox-headed Fan Lun Tie and the four orcs also laid on the floor in exhaustion, having no regard for their image. Anna was healing everyone, the strongest cool guy Xue Tan Lang, Tian Luo Prince, and Elder Ning Hai who refused to leave were all injured. Only the lucky Bao-er was totally uninjured.

When Fatty Hai saw Yue Yang return, he immediately puffed up his chest and boasted loudly: "You must not be aware what kind of people we met..... the powerful Fierce Tusk of the North! What? You do not know who that is? Gosh, he is one of the five generals of Black Hell Army, War Tiger of the East, Gale of the West, Blood Hoofs of the South, Fierce Tooth of the North, and Thunder of the

Center..... One is a tiger, one a giant bird, one an old bull, one a wild boar and another a lizard! The one we met this time was that thick and rough skinned wild boar Fierce Tusk of the North! You do not know how scary he was, a Level Seven Innate, or maybe even a Level Eight Innate! If not for how fast we escaped, we would have all died.”

“Why did that wild boar go to Death Canyon?” Yue Yang did not think that the Innate Level Eight Fierce Tusk of the North would be so bored to even chase after Fatty Hai them.

“I am not sure of the exact situation, but when we saw him, he was hitting a Bronze Door, and that Bronze Door had a barrier. Even though he was already exhausted, the barrier showed no damage at all, he was wasting his efforts.” Fatty Hai was delighted, it was his favorite thing to see the misfortune of his enemies.

“Is he still there?” If this Fierce Tusk of the North was still there, Yue Yang would go and kill him.

“I don’t know.” Fatty Hai shook his head.

“He should most likely have left, that Bronze Door actually has a time limit. It will only open every three hours. I am guessing Fierce Tusk of the North was hitting the door because his hand was stuck in it..... Actually we already passed through that door, but we walked through it when it was open.....” Elder Ning Hai respectfully reported to Yue Yang.

“What a pity.” Yue Yang was secretly regretful. If they had

immediately looked for him when they had returned, that wild boar would not have been able to escape.

“Impossible? Could it be that you can now even kill Fierce Tusk of the North who is a Level Seven or Level Eight Innate?” Ox-headed Fan Lun Tie reacted in shock at such news.

“Even if I cannot win, it would be good to even cut off an arm or a leg!” Yue Yang would of course not tell them that after absorbing the Mother Earth Potion, he already had the same strength as an Level Ten Innate. If he said it, everyone would still believe it. Since Yue Yang had been able to kill Sky Dragon who was a Level Six Innate, they estimated that Yue Yang could at least fight to the death with an Level Seven Innate with a high chance of winning. Against the Innate Level Seven or Eight Fierce Tusk of the North, if Yue Yang ambushed him using the World-Exterminating Wheel, Yue Yang might still able to cut off an arm. As for whether he could kill Fierce Tusk of the North, they felt that Yue Yang was still a little weaker. However, with his current speed of growth, Yue Yang was extremely abnormal.

“Could it be that you have an even better place to bring us to?” Lin En and Tian Luo Prince felt that Yue Yang would not only come to laugh at them, but also he came with good news.

“Let’s go!” Xue Tan Lang was a person of action.

“No, I need to take a break. If it’s an abnormal place like the Five Elements Palace, please exempt me. I still want to live !” Fatty Hai felt that a single Wind Breath Seabird was exhausting enough, if another Beast wanted to pick on him, he would rather commit

suicide by using noodles.

“I volunteer, the Five Elements Palace is not scary.” Bao’er who had been sleeping the whole time was the only person who felt that the Five Elements Palace was a good place.

“It is not that we cannot all go, but those who go have to account for themselves. I am only in charge of leading the way, you will have to take care of yourselves.” Yue Yang declared in advance before throwing out the biggest temptation in the world: “In that place, there lies a Divine Grimoire. Let alone any treasures there, even junk on the floor is Platinum-ranked, if you have the ability just pick it up! Right, you heard correctly, I am talking about a Divine Grimoire!”

“Wow, does the Divine Grimoire really exist?” Even Liu Ye who was usually not tempted by material objects was excited.

What was the concept of a Divine Grimoire?

Even Black Hell King was thirsty for it!

No one even knew how many years the tragic Black Hell King had been knocking on the Golden Barrier yet unable to enter it.

As for Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others who had never even seen a Holy Grimoire, just by Yue Yang mentioning a Divine Grimoire shocked them so much that they could not even think.

Actually, if they were still clear-headed, they would know one thing. That was that no matter how impressive the Divine Grimoire was, they would never be able to have it. This was because Divine Grimoires chose their owners, even if a Divine Grimoire was in front of them, it would not choose them if they were not powerful enough. Otherwise, why would Black Hell King be so depressed? Only Yue Yang knew that the amount of Divine Grimoire that exists was only ten. Someone who possesses a Divine Grimoire would already be a 'God' from legends.

As for Yue Yang's other 'Holy Grimoire', he still couldn't determine whether it was a Divine Grimoire or not. There was a possibility that it was one and he guessed that it was a growing Divine Grimoire.....

Excluding Yue Yang who was from another world, those like Empress Fei Wen Li, and Heaven Realm's Three Great Leaders only possess Holy Grimoires.

Divine Grimoire, to an ordinary warriors was an untouchable dream, even if they really existed within this world, they would never belong to anyone ordinary.

"Is the place you are talking about very dangerous?" Ye Kong suddenly asked.

"It is not that dangerous, it is just that Black Hell King will occasionally go there." Yue Yang's words scared Fatty Hai out of his wits. Even Xue Tang Lang and the others were dumbstruck.

Chapter 484 – Perforate Deer

Black Hell King's name caused a ripple of fear on everyone.

Fierce Tusk of the North, this wild boar general, could not even be compared to Black Hell King. With Yue Yang there, even if they met wild boar Fierce Tusk of the North, everyone might still be able to escape.

However, even with Yue Yang on their side, if they were to meet Black Hell King, everyone was only going to die, there was no chance of survival at all!

Everyone felt that Black Hell King was at least a peak Level Ten Supreme Innate.....

If they knew the truth, that Black Hell King had the ability of a Heaven Rank Level One or even Level Two, they would be in even greater despair. Naturally, to them, whether it was a peak Level Ten Innate or a Heaven Rank Level One, they would be instantly killed.

Even an enemy above Innate Level Five could kill them in an instant.

Even the strongest among them, Xue Tan Lang was the same.

“I am not going, I do not want to die..... Fierce Tusk of the North, that wild boar, already scared me to the point of peeing. As

for Black Hell King, he will definitely peel of my skin and roast me alive, I do not want to die!” Fatty Hai burst into tears while clinging onto Yue Yang’s leg. He would definitely not go to such a dangerous place. Ye Kong kicked over this timid Fatty and dragged him along with the Li Clan Brothers.

“Do not worry, Black Hell King will at most kill you in a second, he has no interest in your body.” Ye Kong’s words made Fatty Hai cry even harder.

“Go.” Xue Tan Lang had already turned his fear into fighting intent.

Actually everyone knew that even if Black Hell King appeared, Yue Yang would not let anyone die.

Even if Black Hell King did not appear, it seemed that it was an extremely dangerous place. Otherwise, Yue Yang would not tell everyone to take care of themselves so seriously. Xue Tan Lang and their eyes shone with fighting intent. Following Yue Yang meant that they were playing with their lives, but even that was a pleasure. Instead of living a coward’s life, it was better to have an exciting and eventful one.

A place that even Black Hell King went to, no matter what they would have to go and take a look.

It was not just Xue Tan Lang and the others, even the quiet Liu Ye and Anna, and even the fearless Bao’er were all excited.

Excitement!

This was true excitement!

As for the hot tempered Ox-headed Fan Lun Tie, she was unable to wait and kept rushing Yue Yang to hurry up.

Returning to the Mysterious Palace, Yue Yang had already went in once to take a look and had only moved after Black Hell King left. Yue Yang was aware of how Black Hell King moved. Every three days, Black Hell King would appear before this Golden Barrier and hit it for half an hour, using this as a pretext to train his skills and also try to open the barrier.

Black Hell King was extremely cautious, even if nothing happened, he would still investigate each time out of habit. Thankfully, Yue Yang had already figured this out

He also figured out how to dodge it accordingly, that was to borrow the method of the Ultimate Killer An Xi's 'Concealment'.

With 'Concealment', even Black Hell King would not be able to detect them.

They could retreat ten thousand steps even if Black Hell King discovered them.

Alternatively, Yue Yang could also throw Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others into the Grimoire World, and escape with them. With

the upgrade from absorbing Mother Earth Potion, even if Yue Yang could not defeat Black Hell King, Yue Yang was at least unafraid.

Fatty Hai's teeth were chattering and his body was trembling in fear.

In fact, Black Hell King had already left and would not appear for another three days.

Yue Yang did not tell them the truth to toughen them up. He believed that after this matter of life and death with Black Hell King, they would not fear Fierce Tusk of the North even if they met him. The whole team was extremely cautious, no one dared to make extreme movements. Only Bao-er was fearless and even indulged in the beauty of this place. She told Yue Yang: "This place is so beautiful! How about we move here to stay after defeating Black Hell King?"

"..... Good idea." Yue Yang was a little speechless, defeat Black Hell King? Unless they could kill him, this 'home' would never be safe.

"No, I do not want to be neighbours with Black Hell King. I dread even more to have him knocking on the door in the middle of the night." At the thought of these, Fatty Hai had goosebumps.

"This place is too beautiful!" When they arrived at the front of the Golden Barrier, little stars filled the eyes of Liu Ye and the rest.

“This barrier is too big, it seems difficult to enter. Its boundless energy is unfathomable, it really is worthy of being a Divine Grimoire’s barrier!” Before Lin En finished talking, Ox-headed Fan Lun Tie hacked on the barrier with her ax.

As a result, she was thrown 200 meters away.

Everyone’s jaws fell to the ground.

Wasn’t the defense of this Golden Barrier too terrifying?

Battered and exhausted, Ox-headed Fan Lun Tie instantly became listless. She knew that her brute force would not be of any help and could only look at Yue Yang.

Fatty Hai, Ye Kong and Xue Tan Lang all gave it a go. Even though they had already mentally prepared themselves, they quickly realised that the energy that was deflected back to them was not just their own attacking power. There was another force of energy that could not be resisted. When the two energies combined together and returned to them, it could not be resisted. All of them were thrown a hundred meters away, not any better than Ox-headed Fan Lun Tie.

Anna looked at Yue Yang: “Brute force will definitely not work, do you have any solution?”

Yue Yang shrugged his shoulders nonchalantly: “If I had a way, I would have already went in to take the treasures. Not just me, even

Black Hell King can only stare and do nothing!”

Hearing this, Fatty Hai was filled with energy. He got to his feet and rushed to Yue Yang excitedly: “You mean, no one has touched any of the treasures in there? They are all still there, wow wow, if I got to go in to pick a Divine-ranked weapon.....”

With a kick, Ye Kong sent this daydreaming fool ten meters away.

It was not that he could not daydream, but he should pick a better time!

Tian Luo Prince and Lin En have begun to understand why Yue Yang brought everyone here, it was because of Liu Ye.

As everyone turned their eyes towards Liu Ye, her face turned red.

She looked down, and said: “Let, let me try!”

She summoned her Grimoire and summoned out her Guardian Beast ‘Perforate Deer’. She ordered it to rush through the Golden Barrier..... The result was as Yue Yang expected. Perforate Deer was not deflected back, but after entering the Golden Barrier, it instantly lost the mental connection it had with its owner. Without higher intelligence, it was at a loss of what to do. It blankly stayed still, stuck inside the Golden Barrier.

Following such, Liu Ye who was afraid that it would sustain injuries quickly summoned it back.

While it was possible for Perforate Deer to pass through the Golden Barrier, it was still impossible with Liu Ye and Perforate Deer's current ability.

Yue Yang nodded his head. As long as there was hope, it was good.

No matter what, this was still better than how Black Hell King's method of hitting the barrier to death!

As long as Yue Yang could find a way to enhance Liu Ye's ability, and upgrade Perforate Deer's level, the possibility of passing through this Golden Barrier was very high..... Yue Yang had previously already thought of this, and he was very satisfied with such an outcome.

"So, Sorry!" Liu Ye was very embarrassed and apologised to Yue Yang. She knew that Yue Yang must have had high expectations for her. This failure must have been disappointing for him, which made her particularly apologetic. Perforate Deer did not have much battle power, and its level was too low. Furthermore, it did not have very high intelligence and would be at a loss once it leaves the control of its owner.

"Let him help you upgrade your Guardian Spirit Beast, he should have a way." Anna quickly comforted Liu Ye.

“Help me upgrade too!” Bao’er clinged onto Yue Yang’s arm.

“Yes, I am at your service, beautiful Miss Gold Elf.” Yue Yang’s wacky behaviour greatly delighted Bao’er and everyone laughed loudly.

Actually Yue Yang was not just placating Bao’er. He felt that there was also a need to increase this Golden Elf lolita’s Guardian Spirit Beast, her Guardian Spirit Beast was the Little Flower Spirit’ that increase one’s luck.

In this world, there was no other treasure that better than luck.

With luck, one could have everything.

Without luck..... that would be like the unlucky Black Hell King who could only stare at the Golden Barrier his whole life!

To Yue Yang, Bao’er was a human-shaped treasure that could increase his luck. If he did not upgrade her, that would be wasting the chance to tap in on the potential of his upgradable human-shaped treasure.

On the way back, Bao’er this exceptional lucky star brought Yue Yang another surprise. Without even knowing where she touched, she actually triggered a secret switch that even Yue Yang did not discover. A special but broken teleportation circle, flashing with sparks shot out from the ground. Yue Yang did not have time to understand it, but he knew that this was a rare opportunity. In one

swift move, he kicked Fatty Hai in, and with another hand he carried Bao'er and Liu Ye up. He led the way into the low energy teleportation circle that could disappear any moment.

Plop,plop, plop.....

When the last one, Hui Tai Lang fell into the water, Yue Yang realised that it had teleported him into an usual space that was dark and large.

“Let me go!” Liu Ye shook her body bashfully, attempting to escape his big hands. Yue Yang did not notice earlier that while holding Liu Ye's waist, his hand was pressing on her chest and cupping her smallish breasts in his palms.

“Do not let me go, I do not want to fall into the water.” Bao'er hugged Yue Yang tightly, her long legs wrapped around Yue Yang's waist. With her night vision, she could see the distressed states of Fatty Hai and those in the water. She laughed loudly, and felt that holding onto Yue Yang was safer. Even though everyone reacted quickly, they were still all drenched and in a sorry state.

“.....” Liu Ye struggled in Yue Yang's hands momentarily, and felt his big hands loosen slightly. However, she was still embarrassed.

“This place, turns out to be an ancient passage, the ancient passage within God's Ruins Inner Layer.” Using Heaven Eyes Divine Vision to analyse the surroundings, Yue Yang came to such a shocking conclusion. Mysterious Palace was actually connected

to God's Ruins. Could it be that there was a relation between these two places? Could it be that Mysterious Palace was actually a part of God's Ruins Inner Layer?

"This can be any place, as long as this is a place far away from Black Hell King." Fatty Hai felt a little safer.

"Get out of the way."

Xue Tan Lang knew that the real journey has just begun.

While those previous dangers could all have been anticipated, the changes now were out of even Yue Yang's foresight. Inside the ancient passage of God's Ruins, without 100% of one's mental state, one's life was in danger even if Yue Yang was on their side.

This place was not a joke.

Not long later, he and Tian Luo Prince found an exit.

It was a lever-style guillotine door.

In the ancient passage, there were countless strange places like this.

No matter what object that passes through the lever-style guillotine door, it would be sliced through the middle by the 'invisible guillotine'. Even though Xue Tan Lang did not have

Heaven Eyes Divine Vision, but as a warrior, he could instinctively tell when there was danger. He picked up a rock and threw it lightly at the exit. As a result, the stone split into halves. Fatty Hai shivered in shock and quickly retreated behind Yue Yang.

Even though he claimed to be the boss, with Yue Yang here, he would never try to stand out. Instead, he is the obedient tag-along.

If Liu Ye was not here, Xue Tan Lang and the others would have forcefully demolished the entire wall. They would have been exhausted, and might have even attracted the powerful ancient monsters.

“Go and give it a go!” Yue Yang could pass through easily, but he decided to take this opportunity to train Liu Ye.

“Yes.” Liu Ye felt her breast throbbing from his burning big hand. Although she knew it was unintentional, she was still very embarrassed.

Her chest felt strange. She really wanted to reach in and sooth it.

Her body was also a little weak.

Even walking seemed to pose slight issues, out of all times, it had to be know when everyone was looking.

Liu Ye did not want everyone to realise that there was something wrong with her and quickly bowed her head, acting nonchalant.

Willing her mind, she summoned her Guardian Beast 'Perforate Deer'.

In front of the Golden Barrier, Perforate Deer had failed to break through it.

This time, she decided to perform well and live up to his expectations!

Chapter 485 – Special Lesson On Teleportation

The small silver deer appeared in a flash.

It strode forward and instantly became light that pierced through the space.

When everyone regained their focus, they discovered that it safely stood outside the lever-style guillotine door while cutely looking back. Although it was not very intelligent, the Perforate Deer was still a spirit-type beast.

“How will it bring us there?” Fatty Hai felt that Liu Ye and the others could ride it. However, if he rode it, then the small deer would definitely be flattened.

“Shut up. Even if you did not speak no one would treat you as a mute.” Other than during battles, Ye Kong was born as Fatty Hai’s sworn enemy.

“Who knows how to teleport?” Yue Yang asked.

“...” In the end only one person raised their hand. This wasn’t unexpected. What made Yue Yang surprised was the fact that it was the little loli, Bao’er, who knew how to teleport.

“You know how to teleport? Are you sure?” Ning Hai as a self

proclaimed elder grandmaster did not know how so he was shocked that Bao'er knew how to teleport. If it was moving at an extremely fast speed to the point that they can move one hundred meters in a second, many people could do it. Even Xue Tan Lang, Tian Luo Prince, Ye Kong and even Fatty Hai knew how to do it.

If it was based on speed, they could even surpass the speed of Innate Ranker's teleportation.

A normal Innate's teleportation may not necessarily be faster than their speed.

However, teleportation was still teleportation.

No matter how fast on was, nothing could replace the usefulness of teleportation.

Naturally, teleportation was related to one's experiences and attribute. Some people would find it easy to do like Xue Wuxia. She was already capable of fully using [Light Wind Teleportation] when she was young. It was already equal in levels to an Inherent Skill. On the other hand, her brother, Xue Tan Lang, was also innately talented and even possesses the same wind attribute. His speed far surpasses those of the same rank. However, the only thing he was not able to understand was teleportation.

As for Yue Yang, he just looked at the Marquis of Zi Jin use it a few times and learned it in an instant.

Of course, Yue Yang was an extremely abnormal otherworlder. It wasn't appropriate to use him as an example. As for the bald Grandmaster Ning Hai, this old guy had already lived for a hundred years and already learned many skills, but he was simply unable to learn teleportation.

This was very strange.

In fact, the real reason was that those who cannot perceive it will never learn how to teleport.

“Teleportation is a type of breakthrough. It's a type of challenge that surpasses the limits of the body. It can be said to be difficult since some people will never learn it all their lives. It can also be said to be easy since some people could learn it in a day, like me. Those who want to learn it must have be able to perceive it. The better your perception is, the faster you will learn it.” Yue Yang's words made Ning Hai cry thinking that this meant his perception was bad. As for Bao'er, she was extremely proud of herself.

Xue Tan Lang clenched his fists. It was fine for him to be weak but he will absolutely not allow his perception to be lacking.

If a person's perception was lacking, why would they even cultivate?

Actually, Yue Yang knew that Xue Tan Lang and the other can learn how to teleport. Their strengths were already enough to learn it. The only problem was that their thoughts were too rigid and they were used to using their quick speed to move. They could

move to a far distance in the blink of an eye but that was not teleportation. Because they were used to this method, they would not be able to surpass their ego. Normally, they did not have anyone to teach them teleportation. Jun Wu You, Elder Yue Hai and the other elders did not know how to teleport. As for the Old Fox that knew how to teleport, after teaching Yue Yang, he did not have the patience to teach the other idiots how to teleport and only taught them aerial skills.

“The most difficult thing in teleporting is to realize the target location. To do this, you need to be able to interact with the energy around you. Some people can interact farther, and some closer. However, you can just ignore these. No matter how far, as long as you are able to interact with it, then the distance will slowly increase.” Yue Yang benevolently guided them.

“Is it using the air to interact?” Ye Kong asked.

“No. Air can only interact with object surfaces. Teleportation need you to interact more. To be more accurate, it is to use the ‘heart’ to interact.” Once Yue Yang said this, Bao’er kept nodding her head. In fact, she was only able to teleport due to her Inherent Skill. From the beginning, she did not understand how interaction works, but she naturally understood how to use the heart to interact.

“What happens afterwards?” This time, Lin En humbly asked like a student.

“When you are able to interact, you would be able to grasp everything about the target location. Then, you can try to ‘move’

or ‘jump’ towards the target. You must use your body’s energy, not towards you legs, but towards the ‘heart’ and use the ‘heart’ to guide your body... During the process, you will experience many difficulties such as your body being unable to move, or you would suddenly be stopped by some kind of energy before you teleport, or feel the illusion of someone forcible pushing you down. There are other problems but I won’t explain every one of them nor do I need to explain them. I just want to tell you to believe in me. You would definitely be able to move, be able to teleport. Believe in me and believe in your own ability. That would be enough.” Yue Yang then told them to move their energies towards their spirit gates during teleportation.

This was his best insight and understanding, his best teleportation skill, so he did not really count on everyone learning it.

However, as long as everybody could gain enlightenment from his best skill and slowly temper themselves, then it would be enough.

The thing that made everyone sweat was that Bao’er crooking her head after hearing the explanation as if she did not understand Yue Yang’s words.

She even said: “Can you also teleport like that? I do not even think about anything and just rely on my Flower Spirit. She would just teleport me to my desired location. I feel that this way is better!”

“...” Fatty Hai and the others fell to the ground. As it turns out,

Bao'er's teleportation was not something she could control and only relied on others.

“Hey, I can also teleport like this!” Bao'er was almost angry.

Actually, there was nothing wrong with this. As long as one can teleport, any method was good enough.

Xue Wuxia's [Light Wind Teleportation] was different from Yue Yang's. In order to teleport, Xue Wuxia needed there to be wind and air, as long as it was not a vacuum, she would be able to teleport. Yue Yang's teleportation completely did not need this. The only places he was not able to teleport to were places that he could not interact with and this was clearly on a higher level than Wuxia's. However, places that were in vacuum were few. Moreover, after Xue Wuxia performed [Body Fusion] with Yue Yang, she was able to grasp Yue Yang's teleportation skill but she was more fond of using her [Light Wind Teleportation] skill.

Xue Tan Lang let go of his cool and humbly asked Yue Yang a few more questions.

He would never say it but he was full of worship towards this brother-in-law. To learn from Yue Yang and chase after his footprints was his greatest wish.

Tian Luo Prince also thirsted to learn how to teleport and listened attentively.

Not only them but also Lin En, Anna, Liu Ye appeared to be in deep thought as if they understood something.

On the other hand, Ye Kong, Fatty Hai, the Li Clan Brothers, Ox-head Fan Lun Tie and the bald elder Ning Hai were completely confused. As for Ox-head Li Ao and the four orc girls, they completely gave up on learning them. They knew that they could never learn it and sighed.

In the end, Elder Ning Hai deeply sighed.

He had given up on learning it.

Trying to learning something, that he was never able to learn, in just a few minutes was easier said than done.

With regards to teleportation, the one who learnt it the fastest was not Xue Tan Lang nor was it the Tian Luo Prince nor was it Liu Ye, who had the Perforate Deer, but it was Hui Tai Lang.

After listening to Yue Yang, it instantly understood...

When Hui Tai Lang almost failed in his attempt, he was suddenly able to grasp how to teleport and immediately succeeded. Although the result of his teleportation was bad and missed the target by dozens of meters and knocked against the wall, he was still able to succeed. Seeing this, Xue Tan Lang was dumbstruck as if he was ashamed. Could it be that humans could not even be compared to a wolf?

Fatty Hai was close to crying.

He discovered that he couldn't even compare with a wolf

“Success!” After half an hour, Xue tan Lang successfully teleported ten meters away. Although it deviated by three meters, he was still excited and emotionally looked upwards!

“Woof. Awoo, awoo woo...” Hui Tai Lang also looked up and howled. He had now completely grasped how to teleport and did not deviate from the target anymore. Although the distance was not far, compared to Xue Tan Lang he was undoubtedly more outstanding.

“Prrrrt!” Fatty Hai panicked to the point that he let out a fart. When everyone heard it, they quickly strived to hide.

Under this pressure, Liu Ye, Tian Luo Prince and even Anna were able to successfully teleport. Above all, Liu Ye's grasp was much more accurate due to her innate disposition. In order to surprise Yue Yang, she bravely teleported to the other side of the door, towards her Guardian Beast and becoming the first person to cross the door.

Naturally, Hui Tai Lang was already jumping around in front of her.

He quickly teleported inside and out, provoking Fatty Hai to

make him fart again.

Yue Yang decided to give everyone a bit more pressure and teleported to Liu Ye's side. He then stuck a piece of crystal that emitted energy on the floor: "Those who can teleport come over. Those who can't wait until the guillotine door to open by itself. This should be the type to open once a day... I won't wait anymore, slowly train yourself!"

When he said this, Bao'er panicked: "Wait for me!"

She impatiently summoned her Guardian Beast, closed her eyes, and when the Small Flower Spirit waved its hand, she instantly teleported besides Yue Yang. She hugged Yue Yang's arm and proudly raised her head: "We will first go on a treasure hunt. When we find treasure, we will first hold on to them."

Liu Ye originally wanted to stay and accompany everyone to train. However, Yue Yang waved his hand: "You should follow me!"

Her heart strangely jumped a few times. She quickly lowered her head and did not dare look at him in the eye. She softly answered: "Yes."

Once Yue Yang, Bao'er and Liu Ye walked away, everyone relaxed. This kind of strict teacher was too painful, especially when this 'teacher' was very young and made others ashamed.

Xue Tan Lang, Tian Luo Prince and Anna who already learned how to teleport did not follow. The three of them knew that Yue Yang intended to specially train Bao'er and Liu Ye. In particular, it seemed he wanted to train Liu Ye, who possesses the Perforate Deer and [Cleansing] Inherent Skill.

Chapter 486 – Breaking Limits, Stubborn Liu Ye

“I am such an idiot, I still couldn’t learn it until now.” Fatty Hai beat his chest and stomped his foot. Actually he could get the feel of it, but he kept failing. He did not succeed after trying for a few hundred times, so he was rather crestfallen.

“So, you finally found out you are an idiot.” Ye Kong also failed a few hundred times, but at least he succeeded once. Although he was steeped in excitement and couldn’t grab hold of the feeling before it’s gone and had to sense all over again, at least he succeeded once. Compared to Fatty Hai, he was still better. So he rubbed it in even more.

“La, Olala!” Hui Tai Lang was more annoying. It teleported around Fatty Hai, as it shook its butt and wiggled its tail. It started to dance. Its haughty attitude made Fatty Hai even more upset.

“...” Xue Tan Lang clenched his fist.

Not only did he want to succeed, he also wanted teleport fast.

He wanted to be like Yue Yang who could teleport out of free will. Although he knew that there was still a huge gap between him and his brother-in-law, he wouldn’t lower his goal. Xue Tan Lang continued to uphold his stringent standard and swore to be perfect like Yue Yang.

On the topic of cultivating, Xue Tan Lang had always been a perfectionist.

Of course, not only Xue Tan Lang, Prince Tian Luo and even Ye Kong were like this too. Lin En and the rest had long been accustomed to their masochistic cultivation method. They also understood why human beings grow faster than other races like the elves, ox-head people and the orcs! The reason why human warriors could grow so quickly wasn't because of any ethnicity related superiority, but conversely, it was due to their inferiority, short lifespan and weak capabilities. They also lived under harsh conditions.

The reason why human beings could give birth to strong beings quickly was simple. It was because human warriors were too focused and crazed during cultivations.

Forget about Yue Yang, taking the example of the young Xue Tan Lang, his cultivation in a year would be akin to thirty years of cultivations of the relaxed and peace-loving golden elves.

With this comparison, it wouldn't be hard to understand why a golden elf warrior, that was a few hundred years old, was weaker than Xue Tan Lang who was only twenty.

Fatty Hai and the rest continued to cultivate on the other side of the path.

Yue Yang brought Liu Ye and Bao'er along to explore around.

Liu Ye lowered her head. After following Yue Yang around for a long way, she suddenly spoke in a soft voice: “Do you have something to tell me?”

She felt that Yue Yang looked at her various times along the way. Did he have anything to tell her?

Although she was shy, she couldn't help asking.

“I will tell you when the time comes...” Hearing Yue Yang's words, Liu Ye suddenly understood something. Since Bao'er was around, it wasn't a convenient time for him to speak. But what did he want to tell her? Liu Ye was a little curious as she raised her head and looked at Yue Yang's face. Seeing him smile, her heartbeat quickened as she quickly lowered her head again, not daring to look at him again. Yue Yang pointed to the dark path ahead and spoke to Liu Ye. “Let's have a special training, Bao'er and I will be in charge of hiding and you will have to use the Perforate Deer to find us, it is just like a game of hide and seek... We'll hide for ten times, if you could find us ten times, then you pass. If not, I won't train you anymore.”

“Yes, I'll do my best.” Liu Ye had longed for the chance to prove herself in front of Yue Yang. She couldn't tell why, but she didn't wish to see him disappointed. For example, she was upset for a while when her Perforate Deer couldn't pass through the Golden Shield.

“Sensing, you must use your heart to sense... I believe that you can do it since you are very gifted!” Yue Yang encouraged Liu Ye with a bright smile.

Liu Ye did not speak as she looked at Yue Yang. She nodded with great seriousness.

Upon hearing his compliment, Liu Ye's body was pumped with an indescribable sense of excitement. She fought hard to suppress her excitement.

An hour later.

Liu Ye who was tired out of her wits walked around in the dark. She persevered and sensed her surroundings.

She was left with just two more times. But sensing became more difficult as she walked deeper into the darkness.

More accurately speaking, Yue Yang made it more difficult for her to find him the next round everytime Liu Ye found him. It was still manageable at first, but after the fifth time, she had to exhaust large amounts of energy in order to find him. Even if he did not hide in a faraway location and was within fifty metres from her while looking at her, she still couldn't find him.

Suppressing her weariness, she tried to concentrate again and use her heart to sense around her...

Liu Ye searched around in the darkness time and time again, she had failed to sense him dozens of times, and many other times she couldn't sense anything due to her weariness.

She bit her lips and persevered.

Finally, she was able to sense something slightly. Liu Ye was so excited that she almost shrieked. Before the feeling goes away, she immediately ordered the Perforate Deer to confirm the target... When the Perforate Deer arrived, Liu Ye suppressed her dizziness and used teleportation to reach Yue Yang's location and 'nabbed' him according to the rules.

She was finally done with her ninth training.

Due to extreme fatigue, there was a slight deviation in her teleportation. Her hands did not catch him, on the contrary her head knocked onto the wall behind him.

"Are you okay?" Yue Yang reached out her hands and helped Liu Ye, who was too fatigued, up.

"I, I'm fine, one more round to go..." Liu Ye was utterly embarrassed. Covering her forehead in pain, she shook her head shyly. Why was she so stupid? Why was she always making a fool out of herself in front of him?

"Do you need to rest?" Yue Yang rubbed her forehead and used his Innate Qi to ease the bump on it.

"No need." Liu Ye shook her head stubbornly.

Actually she truly wanted to rest because she had already exhausted all her energy and was beyond fatigued. If she were to sit on the ground, she definitely wouldn't be able to get up. Although she knew that the ground was muddy and filthy, she almost couldn't fight the urge to lie down and rest. But when he asked her if she wanted to rest, a strong sense of stubbornness overwhelmed her as she did not want him to see through her weakness. She insisted on meeting his expectations and even achieve beyond it.

Liu Ye stood up straight with great effort and tried hard not to let Yue Yang see that she was at her wits end.

She nodded her head firmly, indicating that she can do it.

But on the insides, she was fighting hard not to cry.

She gritted her teeth.

She didn't wish to expose her weakness, and didn't want Yue Yang to know it even more.

Three hours later, Liu ye staggered along the tunnel. She lost count of the times she fell and the times she sensed wrongly.

She even thought of giving up after one of the falls, as she suddenly suspected that Yue Yang may have departed and left her there to train on her own... But she immediately rejected this idea that shook her determination. She firmly believed that Yue Yang

was somewhere near, looking at her in the dark. Her cowardly tears and uselessness would be all seen by him... He would definitely be very disappointed with her!

She mustn't let him down, she had to meet his expectations and achieve beyond that!

No one had ever given her recognition, only he had.

Only him!

With an unimaginable sense of tenacity, Liu Ye picked herself up over and over again. She sensed over and over again, struggling to support her body under extreme mental and physical fatigue. She kept on sensing for his presence.

There were various moment where her body reached its limit and she almost lost consciousness.

She forcefully braced herself.

Finally, when she tried to sense him once, she discovered a very tiny smell that seemed like his, but also seemed like an illusion at the same time... However, Liu ye quickly bit the tip of her tongue in an attempt to use pain to trigger her numbed consciousness and diligently sensed... In the split second when she could sense things clearly, something in her mind exploded, it was as if a mirror being broken, or an iceberg suddenly crumbling. Liu Ye felt that something in her mind broke, giving her a headache, and all the

tendons and muscles in her body twitched...

Even if she died, she had to teleport to his sides and meet his expectations!

Liu Ye became crazed as she summoned her grimoire and summoned her Guardian Beast Perforate Deer.

“Go, little deer!” Liu Ye pointed towards a dark corner and ordered it to go forward. Before she fainted, she followed closely behind the Perforate Deer and teleported.

“Well done!”

Liu Ye felt that she fell into someone’s warm embrace as a strong arm caught her falling body.

His voice echoed in her consciousness.

He seemed to be praising her...

But even before Liu Ye could hear it clearly, she fainted.

After passing out, she did not see golden light shimmering off her grimoire. A golden pillars rose from it and covered her. Her Perforate Deer that was showered in the golden glow slowly changed and grew in size. The small antler on its head also formed a small fork. Liu Ye levelled up after breaking her limits.

Her Guardian Beast, 'Perforate Deer', also levelled up.

It rose from being Level Two silver-ranked to Level Three silver-ranked.

Furthermore, Liu Ye did not know what she did in the last moment.

When the Perforate Deer went to Yue Yang's sides, she did not try to sense it like she normally did. She teleported without confirming her target. In the last moment, she even managed to teleport before Yue Yang together with the Perforate Deer.

This was what Yue Yang wished to see the most.

Yue Yang originally thought of using one month, or even three months to train her, until she could teleport simultaneously with the Perforate Deer.

He never would have thought that the stubborn Liu Ye did it within three hours.

The outburst of energy from her inherent talent together with her obstinate determination exceeded Yue Yang's expectations.

Although she did not really achieve teleporting as a single body, this was a successful start. Yue Yang believed that as long as he

used his Innate Qi to open up the meridians in her body, and then use the Nirvana Flame to purify her body, with half a month of training, or even shorter, Liu Ye would be able to master the skill of teleporting with her Perforate Deer as a single body. If she could really do it, she would have a bright future.

The golden shield of the mysterious palace and the various restrictions in the God's ruins would no longer be able to stop her...

With Liu Ye, Yue Yang felt that he could enter the mysterious palace before the Black Hell King does.

The Black Hell King can continue to knock on the golden shield outside. He will face a tragic end anyway!

Chapter 487 – Blood Lake Torture Chamber

When Liu Ye awoke, she found herself lying on Yue Yang's back.

On the side, Bao'er the golden elf lolita was cheering, as if cheering someone on. Liu Ye quietly raised her small face and looked over Yue Yang's shoulder, and got a shock. She realised that there was a very large space ahead where Fatty Hai, Ye Kong, Xue Tan Lang and the others were fighting. The battle was extremely intense, countless monsters were coming in like a tide, emerging from the Blood Lake.

“What is going on?” Liu Ye was astonished.

“Oh, you finally woke up. I found this Blood Lake Torture Chamber. Aren't I amazing?” Bao'er started showing off in glee.

From Bao'er's jumbled and illogical explanation that made no sense, Liu Ye got the general idea. With Yue Yang's occasional supplementation, Liu Ye finally understood. It turned out that like herself, Bao'er had joined the special training.

However, her training was easier by ten thousand times. Yue Yang's task for her, was simply sleeping.

Bao'er did not have to do anything, she just had to sleep and let Yue Yang adjust her body.

When she awoke, she realised she upgraded quite a bit.

She was secretly delighted, but because there was no one around her, she had been unable to show off.

Liu Ye had passed out, so Bao'er had nothing to do. Since she was bored, she could only wander around and wait for Xue Tan Lang and the rest to arrive. In this time, she unintentionally discovered a secret door. After Yue Yang's appraisal, it turned out that this ancient secret door could be opened. However, an ordinary man would be unable to open it. To open it, one had to be at least above Innate Level Five. Even if Yue Yang was the one who opened the door, Bao'er still gave herself majority of the credit..... This was how Yue Yang and Bao'er discovered this 'Blood Lake Torture Chamber'.

This was the entrance to the Blood Lake Torture Chamber. Just beside Yue Yang, there stood a strange ancient pagoda.

There were words written in Heaven Runes on it.

If it was translated to modern language, it said:the Giant Wu Su Disrespected God..... He committed a heinous crime, and has to be punished by the most severe punishment in the world..... Death is no longer enough for his atonement, therefore this Blood Lake Torture Chamber was specially set up..... He is to suffer from all forms of torture here, and will only be released from his sentence in a hundred thousand years to formally accept his death trial.....

While Yue Yang did not recognise all of the combinations of the

Heaven Runes, he had a rough idea of what it meant.

The dialogue said, there was a giant named Wu Su who was held captive in this Blood Lake Torture Chamber for a hundred thousand years. Only after a hundred thousand years of torture would he be executed.

If this were another Ranker, he might have wanted to be a saviour to try to save the Giant Wu Su. However, Yue Yang was not a trouble seeker. He also wanted to meet Wu Su but it was not to save him. Yue Yang wanted to kill him. This was because Yue Yang felt that there must be some kind treasure that was keeping Wu Su trapped for as long as a hundred thousand years. Yue Yang did not care whether Wu Su had to undergo torture for a hundred thousand years, he only liked the treasure that held this giant captive! If there really is no treasure, he would kill this giant. Yue Yang felt that his Hui Jin Magic Blade was still missing an evil soul. If it swallowed Wu Su, perhaps his Hui Jin Magic Blade could be refined into a Holy-ranked weapon.

It was not that he did not own any holy-ranked weapon. God Killing Dagger was one, it was even a supreme one.

However, Hui Jin Magic Blade was more important since Yue Yang created it with his own blood and sweat.

It was already unlikely for the Platinum-ranked 'Crescent Blade' to upgrade, but there was still a possibility for the Hui Jin Magic Blade. As long as there was another evil yet strong warrior's soul, combined with Demon Dragon's Crystal from Bone Dragon and Blazing Core from Flame Lord, and even adding Demon Pearl from

Dark Golden Specter and Silver Soul Pearl from Golden Devil, the Hui Jin Magic Blade would level up.

With these, it was definitely possible for Crescent Blade to upgrade to become a holy-ranked weapon.

Who knows, it might even become a supreme holy-ranked weapon.

Maybe even upgrade into a Divine-ranked weapon?

Yue Yang decided to not think about that for now. To upgrade a weapon to Divine-rank the owner had to have equivalent ability. Moreover, it was not as if Yue Yang lacked any Divine-ranked weapons since he still had the Prison Emperor Divine Seal. It just did not recognise him as the master, so Yue Yang could only use it to crack chestnuts for now.

“Do your best and be careful. More Blood Pythons have come out.” Bao’er excitedly encouraged Fatty Hai and the others.

“My little ancestor, it is fine that you are not helping, but please stop talking. Hearing you speak makes my heart shiver.” Fatty Hai begged Bao’er to stop shouting. With every shout, more powerful monsters came out from who knows where. Of course, he knew that Bao’er was not to blame. At such an abnormal place like Blood Lake Torture Chamber, even after killing a few thousand ancient monsters, there were still an unlimited number coming out from the lake.

“All of you get out of the way.....” the fighting was annoying Xue Tan Lang. He exploded with terrifying Qi, and combined with his Storm Giant.

The entire entrance of Blood Lake Torture Chamber turned into a world of ice and snow in an instant.

Countless snowflakes fell from the sky.

Xue Tan Lang’s Guardian Beast Storm Giant turns anything it passes through into an ice sculpture, even the Giant Blood Python that was Gold-ranked Level Six was rolling on the floor in pain and hardening.

With tacit understanding, Tian Luo Prince summoned his Guardian Beast Skyfire Meteor. With a call, the dome-shaped roof collapsed.

Under the double blows from Freeze and Meteor, even the strongest Blood Pythons could not withstand the attack of ‘Fire and Ice Collision’. The Blood Pythons turned into corpses, either shattering or burnt to a crisp. All of them died horribly on the spot. Throughout the entire battle, Yue Yang did not do anything. He only watched Ye Kong and the others fight. This was only the beginning. From here on, there would only be more and more cruel battles awaiting them..... However, these battles were extremely good catalysts in training. Even though it was tough, but as long as Ye Kong, Fatty Hai, Xue Tan Lang and the rest can push through, upgrading was definitely not a problem.

An hour and five minutes later, they passed the entrance of Blood Lake Torture Chamber.

Three hours later, Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others used the Great Totem Pole Battle Technique, and passed the first level of Blood Lake Torture Chamber.

Five hours later, Li Clan Brothers fainted from serious injuries, Ox Head Li Ao and Elder Ning Hai collapsed on the floor from exhaustion. They passed the second floor.

Nine hours and twenty-three minutes later, Fatty Hai turned into an ugly behemoth after using up his energy. The four ocrs and Ox-head Fan Lun Tie collapsed on the ground. Lin En was seriously injured. They passed the third floor.

Eighteen hours, forty-two minutes and nine seconds later, Ye Kong, Xue Tan Lang and Tian Luo Prince suffered heavy blows, Anna and Liu Ye fainted, Fatty Hai fainted for the second time after transforming, Ox Head Li Ao broke his horn, Li Clan Brothers were nearing death. Other than Yue Yang, only Bao'er had energy left. They passed the fourth floor.

The fifth floor.....

When everyone reached the fifth floor, they finally reached the real Blood Lake Torture Chamber.

Here, the weakest monster was the Gold Level Six Giant Python

that was the strongest outside. Among them all, only Yue Yang was still able to fight.

Hui Tai Lang summoned his Grimoire and raised his barrier to protect everyone.

Yue Yang strided forward, spreading his Demon King-like grandeur. All of the monsters fled immediately.

Two kilometers away, there was a wall that was almost a thousand meters tall. Several huge dark gold chains hung down, binding someone.

This person, was an unimaginable giant!

Yue Yang had never seen such a huge giant. Forget humans, even the demons from the Demon Abyss seem insignificant when compared to this giant. This giant had a height of two, three hundred meters, or possibly even more. Even though his lower body had completely disappeared, his upper body itself was more than a hundred meters tall. By pure estimation, this was a giant around three hundred meters tall.

Without a doubt, this was the rumored Titan.

Compared to him, the fifty meters tall King of Black Light or the sixty metres long Black Dragon were as laughable as miniature toys.

Yue Yang had never imagined meeting such a Titan. He would have never thought that he, the fake 'Little Titan' would one day meet the real 'Big Titan'.

It was difficult to imagine the Titan, he was truly a sight for the eyes. All his muscles were tight and sculptured. His skin was black as steel.

Fatty Hai, who was coughing blood, fainted when he saw this giant.

Even the bravest Xue Tan Lang was shocked speechless.

Not just them, even Yue Yang felt his blood pumping..... Who knew how long this Titan had been locked up for. How long he had been tortured in this 'Blood Lake Torture Chamber'. Now, he had only had the ability of an Elder Innate Level One. That is to say, the Titan locked up here was as strong as Black Hell King. The only difference was that this Titan had no Holy-ranked equipment to protect himself, and was even held down by the extremely long dark gold chains.

Yue Yang's eyes flashed with a fierce killing intent.

He wanted to kill this giant to obtain his power, to strengthen his Hui Jin Magic Blade..... As for whatever justice and sin, those had nothing to do with him.

Perhaps, this meeting was fated.

If not, how could it be such a coincidence for him to barge into this Blood Lake Torture Chamber?

“Such an interest young man, after thousands of years, humans are now much stronger than before. Only in your twenties, a young-shoot like boy, yet with such power. Terrifying indeed. Back then, it was right for me to have massacred so many humans. I pity those foolish old guys who thought too much of themselves. Hahaha, I, Wu Su have also said, that humans are the natural enemies of Titans, but no one else agreed! You want to kill me? Young bud, regrettably, I think you do not know yet that all titans are immortal!” When the Giant opened his mouth, his voice was louder than thunder. His voice shook the whole Blood Lake Torture Chamber.

“If there were no God Binding Chains holding you down, I really cannot kill you. But now, you are just a old pathetic dog!” Yue Yang tried to ridicule his enemy, to boost his own morale.

“What? You want me to die of laughter? Wu Su is not one you can defeat, because Wu Su is a Titan. With a Titan’s immortal body, not even God can kill me, Wu Su. Do you understand?” The Giant that claimed to be Wu Su struggled forcefully, pulling on those dark gold chains, instantly causing an earthquake at Blood Lake Torture Chamber.

Chapter 488 – Purple Lighting Versus Titan Thunderbolt

Ye Kong, Fatty Hai, Xue Tan Lang and Tian Luo Prince, who were all bathed in blood, stubbornly stood as they prepared to fight to the end. However, Yue Yang turned his head and waved his hands at them: “You should all go back first. This guy is my opponent.”

“...” Ye Kong wanted to stay, although he knew that he wouldn’t be of much help, he still wished to stay and see if he could help to lessen the burden on Yue Yang.

“Alright.” Xue Tan Lang was different as he turned and prepared to take his leave.

Compared to Ye Kong, Xue Tan Lang’s determination to stay and fight wasn’t any lesser. It was even much more than theirs.

However, Xue Tan Lang was very rational. He knew that with the current power of the team, forget about everyone being severely injured, even if just one person was fatigued and everyone else being perfectly fine, they wouldn’t be of any help to Yue Yang. Staying would just make them a burden, there would be no other possibilities. They didn’t know how many times stronger was this Titan compared to Fierce Tusk of the North that they met from the Black Hell Army. With such an enormous build, it would be hard for them to emerge victorious. If they really wanted to help Yue Yang, they should leave and go find a Supreme Innate like Sky Law to go to his aid.

They would definitely burden Yue Yang if they insisted on staying.

Lin En and the rest understood this too, so they followed behind Xue Tan Lang and left. Only Fatty Hai suggested to return to the Fourth Floor and leave only after they finish the fight.

This was the first time Liu Ye stood out and made a decision. “You should all go, I’ll stay.”

Everyone was shocked by her words.

How could they leave her, the weakest one of the team, behind? Any random python would be able to engulf her in one mouth, let alone the shock wave from the fight between Yue Yang and Wu Su, the giant Titan.

Leave her behind?

Absolutely impossible!

Liu Ye, however, had her own reasons. “I have the Perforate Deer, so if he is in danger, I can teleport to his side and take him away.”

After pondering over it, Tian Luo Prince rejected her idea. “It may be a good idea for you to stay, but Liu Ye, we can’t let you take the risk. And, we need to have faith in Yue Yang, so we don’t need to have this backup plan. We must believe in him, believe that he

will emerge victorious... Without being sure, Yue Yang would never have thrown down the gauntlet. So if he wants to fight, we should trust him. Now, let's leave this place and leave the further discussions in the Yue Clan castle!"

Unable to defy the lot's violent objections, Liu Ye eventually changed her mind.

"Wanna leave? Wu Su will send you all off on your final journey!" The Titan that was being hung on the huge cliff laughed loudly. Numerous demonic beasts flooded out with his will.

But the most terrifying tactic was when he leaned over and shot out two Qi from his fingers.

One of them went for Yue Yang.

The other one went in the direction of Ye Kong and the rest.

The two Qi Wu Su casually shot out from his fingers didn't feel strong at first. But as it continued to move forward and accelerated, it unleashed its true power as it broke through the sound barrier and formed two gigantic wind pillar. As if wanting to tear down the entire space, one of the pillar struck towards Yue Yang who was accumulating his energy, and the other one struck towards the lot who were two kilometres away.

It travelled extremely fast, faster than the speed of sound by several times.

The giant pillar-like Qi was unimaginably fast as it reached Ye Kong and the lot, who were two kilometres away, within seconds.

They were dumbstruck. What they thought was a casual Qi shot had actually possessed such terrifying powers.

As if a Demon King was being born, Hui Tai Lang let out a deafening roar. He burned with dark golden flames and thrust itself towards the pillar with an irresistible sense of invincibility.

Boom!

Hui Tai Lang who had leaped forward by fifty metres was jolted back by over thirty metres from the shock, even with its four claws dug deep into the ground.

Hui Tai Lang left four deep claws marks on the hard ground.

The aftershock of the shock wave jolted Ye Kong and the lot, who were already on their guards.

A Qi could possess such great powers even after travelling for over two kilometres even after being obstructed by Hui Tai Lang. Xue Tan Lang and the lot knew that they were facing a strong opponent, but they did not expect that the Titan named Wu Su was so unimaginably powerful. Now, this completely diminished everyone's determination to stay. Everyone became fully aware that they would be of no help to Yue Yang. They would even

become a burden to him.

Hui Tai Lang killed some of the demonic beasts that charged forward the fastest. It did not indulge in further fightings as it quickly retreated and protected everyone as they took their leave.

Hui Tai Lang handed over the battlefield to its master completely.

Different from Hui Tai Lang, Yue Yang waved away the pillar Wu Su shot out easily. As the pillar deflected to his sides, it also injured numerous Demonic Beasts.

“It’s actually a Divine Beast? Although it’s still at its infant stage, it’s not bad... It’s a pity that I am being trapped here, if not I’ll definitely kill it to end off future worries!” The Titan sneered. There were lightning flickering around his face. It seemed that he had another trump card that could be used in a long distance.

But due to Yue Yang’s casual deflection to his attack just now, Wu Su changed his mind.

Yue Yang unleashed power of a Level One Innate and raised his Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear.

The amethyst Heaven’s Fury Fire Lotus scattered around in the sky. All of the Demonic Beasts that were shot fell to the ground.

The glow of the spear wasn’t huge, but its strength wasn’t any

weaker than Wu Su's wind pillars. With every shot, the glow of the spear would penetrate the Beasts and leave behind a bloody tunnel...

The Demonic Beasts that were extremely powerful in the eyes of Xue Tan Lang and the rest were nothing to Yue Yang. He could kill them easily within seconds.

It was because of Yue Yang's attack that the team could leave the Blood Lake Torture Chamber unharmed.

Before leaving, Hui Tai Lang even called out to Yue Yang.

It was actually the one who wanted to stay the most.

But Hui Tai Lang already possess sufficient intelligence to understand the mission given to it by Yue Yang. It was to protect the team members...

“Are you going to help me pick my teeth with that little toothpick of yours? Haha!” Wu Su the Titan laughed unbridledly. Although the Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear could assassinate the Golden Dragon King, using it against the ancient Titan would render it useless. Unless Yue Yang possessed the full set of Dragon Slaying equipment, and make them unleash power beyond that of a Holy Equipment, Yue Yang would never be able to truly hurt him.

“Will that be your last words?” Yue Yang also sneered. He slowly

unleashed his power to Innate Level Two.

The violent shock wave propagated throughout the fifth level of the Blood Lake Torture Chamber. The amethyst flame formed a fire pillar and continued to burn.

Numerous frost flowers fluttered down.

The Demonic Beasts that were driven out by the will of the Titan were either roasted to death by the Heaven's Fury Fire Lotus, or frozen into ice sculptures under the freezing powers of the frost flowers. Only a handful of the more powerful ones managed to retreat fast enough, saving their own lives.

Yue Yang put away his Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear and unleashed power to Innate Level Three.

Wu Su the giant Titan smiled furtively.

Lightning flickered on his face again.

Hundreds of snake-like electric current rapidly gathered in his right palm, forming terrifying thunderbolt.

In a flash, the energy in Wu Su's body burst out like a volcanic eruption. With energy that could defeat even the giant dragons, all of the shrewd Titan Wu Su's previous attacks had been feints to hide his world-destroying thunderbolt... Within a second, his thunderbolt had already surpassed the speed of sound as it tore

through the space and went directly for Yue Yang.

Yue Yang reached out his hand to receive it, but was jolted back a thousand metres from the unimaginable shock wave.

He crashed into the hard wall with a boom, and was buried deep in the pile of broken rocks.

The shock wave caused broken rocks to fly everywhere as the entire sky was filled with smoke and dust.

There were no activities coming from the huge cavity for a long time.

Wu Su spat in contempt. “Pah! Humans, an insignificant being that actually got the guts to compete with us Titans? He doesn’t know where he stands!”

Although he was a little surprised that he could kill his opponent with just one strike, he did not doubt the power of his thunderbolt. Forget about humans, even giant dragons and the ancient Behemoths in the Heaven Realms would die from the blow.

Although this human was capable, he is too young after all.

How did he even dare to unleash his Innate powers so slowly and relaxedly in front of him? What a sheltered brat! Was he not taught from previous battles that he should always guard himself against the sneak attacks of his opponent? Thinking of this, Wu Su

laughed out loud. He loved attacking and killing humans, especially the budding talents with the most potential. He loved killing these people before they get the chance to grow and maximize their potential.

The thrill of killing these young ones was too satisfying, nothing in the world could ever compare.

“Hahaha...hahaha...”

Wu Su’s thunderous laughter resonated throughout the entire Blood Lake Torture Chamber.

The entire chamber was shaking under his hysterical laughter.

When Wu Su was in his most complacent and comfortable state, a shadow flashed before him, clad in a torn and tattered Wyvern Armor, with slight curls at the ends of his hair due to the lightning that struck him. However, his eyes looked abnormally clear, as if spring water that quietly flowed through rocks in the woods.

He was none other than Yue Yang.

An extremely tiny but concentrated thunderball was slowly disappearing in his hands.

More accurately speaking, he was using the [Devour] ability to continuously devour up the thunderbolt hurled by Wu Su just now.

Seeing Yue Yang's current state made Wu Su's laughter turn into something akin to the sound made by a pig being slaughtered.

An unbelieving glow flashed across his giant eyes for the first time, causing him to shout uncontrollably. "How can you devour my thunderbolt? It's mine!"

"Continue laughing, you'll be history soon!" Yue Yang waited for the last thunderbolt to be absorbed by the uncontrollable black hole in his body before gently tearing away the torn Wyvern Armor on his body, revealing his perfect figure. Wu Su did not spot any wounds on his body. Yue Yang actually took down all his previous blows.

Unharméd!

How was this possible?

Even giant dragons would die if hit by his thunderbolt, how could a little human boy be immune against lightning and thunder? Moreover, it was thunderbolt thrown out by a Titan!

Wu Su suddenly snarled angrily upon his sudden realisation. "Cunning human being, you possess treasures that can defend against thunder and lightning!"

Yue Yang shook his head, the contempt at the corner of his lips was apparent. "Fool, don't think that you are the only one who

know how to control thunder and lightning...” After finishing his sentence, a purplish blue lightning flickering around Yue Yang’s body. Numerous tiny electrical snakes accumulated in Yue Yang’s palms, forming a similar ‘purple lightning’ like Titan’s thunderbolt.

The only difference was the color.

The lightning gathered by Wu Su was a bright silvery Titan Thunderbolt.

Whereas for Yue Yang, his was a dark purple with a tinge of blue. There was even a hint of gold in it.

While Yue Yang was gathering thunderbolt, he unleashed his power to Innate Level Four. He then unleashed the enormous amount of energy and hurled the purple lightning back to Wu Su furiously. “Cry, you pathetic egomaniac!”

Chapter 489 – Seized Territory

Purple lighting mercilessly hit Wu Su's large hands as he tried to block the attack.

Wu Su was confident. As a Titan, he was the master of thunder and lighting, there were no electric currents in this world that was powerful enough to harm him. Moreover, to even harm his hands that were used to condense thunderbolt.

Boom!

A deafening boom exploded between Wu Su's large hands.

Snake-like electric currents flashed madly.

The countless snake-like electric currents spread and formed a mysterious rune circle, the outer rim was wide while the inner rim was small. The electric current seemed to be pulled into the rune as if being swallowed by a black hole. When the limit was reached, an earth-shattering power exploded. The original purple lightning seemed to have gained a certain energy and expanded rapidly to a hundred times of its original power. The lightning turned into a purple lightning thunderstorm and surrounded Wu Su's body, electrocuting him.

Even as a Titan that controls thunder and lighting, Wu Su was shuddering non-stop under the purple lightning thunderstorm. His giant body convulsed violently from the electric currents.

“I, Wu Su, am a Titan. How can I possibly be harmed by electric currents?” Wu Su was simply bewildered. If a normal giant was hit and got injured, so be it. But he was an Ancient Titan, the born controller of thunder and lightning. He was practically immune to any form of electric current in this world.

Yet, when he was hit by the opponent’s purple lightning, the pain he received was unbearable.

This was too strange.

Unimaginable!

His own thunderbolt could not harm his opponent, yet this human boy who was like a small bean sprout, could harm him with his purple lightning to such an extent. Could it be, he was actually dreaming?

Yue Yang sneered without a word.

Since fusing with Phoenix Fairy Beauty, he had slowly begun to master the power of Sky Law. Although he was not as skilled as Phoenix Fairy Beauty who was strong enough to destroy heaven and earth, but he was not weak..... If Yue Yang had fully understood the power of the thunder and lightning, Wu Su, this Ancient Titan, would undoubtedly suffer more severe injuries, he would be in a worse state! Phoenix Fairy Beauty’s Thunder of Sky Law brought with it an extremely strong judgement-like power. Even Hell Black Dragon King who claimed to be immune to all

elements would fall to the ground in a single hit..... Let alone Phoenix Fairy Beauty's power of Sky Law that was judgement-like and destructive, if replaced by Xue Wu Xia, her Yin energy and annihilation thunder was not something Wu Su could remain completely immune to.

Yue Yang's purple lightning's power was as strong as Heaven's Fury Fire Lotus. Combined with Heaven Rune Circle, it formed this purple lightning thunderstorm. Even though it could not cause great damage to the ancient titan Wu Su, but making him suffer was not a problem.

This hit was not to injure him.

Instead, it was to intimidate.

Stepping over the enemy at where he was the most proud of.

Wu Su's strongest titan thunderbolt had finally been suppressed by purple lighting..... This was not because the purple lightning was stronger than the titan thunderbolt, but rather had to do with the user.

"If you think that I only know how to throw some thunderbolt lightning, then you are mistaken! Gravely mistaken!" Wu Su roared.

His voice shook the entire Blood Lake Torture Chamber.

His arms shone.

The originally obsidian-like skin became shining gold.

A giant over a hundred meters tall slowly rose from Wu Su's body. As Wu Su waved his fist vigorously and fiercely pounced towards Yue Yang, the giant also did the same actions. It raised its hand, copying Wu Su's giant fist and pincer attacked Yue Yang.

Yue Yang's after image disappeared.

Teleportation.

Yue Yang appeared beneath Wu Su's melted body. Hui Jin Magic Blade gathered amethyst fire that was more than a hundred metres long and attacked Wu Su's body.

“Useless tricks.” Wu Su jumped up like jumping a jump rope, and then swung the dark gold chains in a circle, putting out the amethyst flames with ease. The shining golden giant moved quick as lightning and quickly turned around, waving its fist to kill Yue Yang. If he were to be hit by this giant or Wu Su's fist, the consequences would unfortunately be worse than being run into face first by a group of Golden Mammoths..... Yue Yang avoided each hit with ease, not even grazed by any of the enemy's attacks.

Under the tacit coordinated attacks of the giant and Wu Su, Yue Yang calmly avoided each hit that came down like rain drops.

Wu Su looked at Yue Yang in disbelief.

Now, he realised that there were also benefits to being small.

Even though humans had very small bodies and their power could not hold up against Titans, Titans had fists that were too big. It was not easy to hit an agile human being, moreover when this small human boy was even more slippery than a mud fish by a hundred times. It was practically impossible to subdue him with brute force.

“Domain.” With Wu Su’s shout, the shining golden giant’s hands fell to the ground heavily.

Its body quickly melted into golden light.

A circle of light quickly spread.

It easily spread around Yue Yang, enveloping him within.

The circle was at least a hundred metres wide.

From the ground, it slowly rose to become a light barrier, similarly as tall as a hundred metres. Yue Yang was completely trapped within. Even within Wu Su’s domain, Yue Yang was unfaltered. He did not even summon his Grimoire. He simply moved his Yang energy and surrounded his body with Heaven’s Fury Fire Lotus, while carefully feeling the power of his opponent’s domain.

What domain energy was this?

This was not Yue Yang's first time seeing a domain. Long ago when he was fighting Moqi Xuling, he already knew of the existence of domain energy.

But Yue Yang had never seen a domain like Wu Su's..... Not only was it surprisingly large, it could even form a semicircle to completely enclose the enemy. Compared to his own [Star Explosion] and [Devour], this shield formed by the domain that the giant morphed into was definitely scary.

"Energy deprivation." Wu Su reached his hand towards Yue Yang.

"Huh?" Yue Yang felt a force that was similar to the Law surrounding his body. The force sucked Heaven's Fury Fire Lotus away and ejected it outside the shield.

"Without it to protect you, what can you do?" Wu Su exploded with the power of an Innate. His entire being looked like a dark golden sun. His dark body was almost golden, glorious to the extent that it was almost impossible to look at him directly. The rays of energy that shot out from his body blazed even hotter than the rays of the sun. It made Yue Yang unable to look at it directly. Among Wu Su's howls of laughter, the energy rays that spread out from his body formed sharp golden arrows. All of the light arrows formed from energy gathered and shot like a storm at Yue Yang.

“Freeze!” Cold air rushed around Yue Yang. The entire space seemed to have become a world of ice and snow, countless snowflakes fell from the sky.

When those light arrows came towards Yue Yang, his frost shield and those crytalized snow flakes reflected them one by one.

Even if he could not use ‘Heaven’s Fury Fire Lotus’, this was not a problem for Yue Yang. Not only could Yue Yang control the Yang energy he was also excellent at controlling the Yin energy. Compared to Heaven’s Fury Fire Lotus, these Frost flowers and Frost shield were much more effective.

Wu Su roared in anger, he reached out his huge hand once again: “Energy deprivation!”

What Yue Yang found strange was that this time again, a force that was similar to the Law appeared again. It drew away all of the frost flowers and frost shield and threw it out beyond the barrier. Yue Yang frowned. He had already consciously controlled the Yin energy, these frost flowers and ice shields were like his own weapons and full of his will. Yet, they could be easily drawn away. Wu Su’s domain was really strange.

It appeared that the ability of this domain was to deprive others of their energy.

Of course this was limited to the energy around the person, it was still impossible to deprive the energy within the body.

“What other tricks do you have? My domain can exist for a month. Before it disappears, you cannot leave nor protect yourself. Watch how I torture you, little bean. Human boy, you can cry, shout, pee your pants. You humans will never win against us titans!” Wu Su burst into laughter. If not for the power of the domain, it would truly be a chore for him to kill this slippery human boy when he was trapped by ‘God Binding Chains’ and especially since thunderbolt was ineffective. But now that the domain is established, this boy was dead meat. It was impossible for him to escape the domain, he could not even protect himself. This boy was fighting him with nothing, he could not win unless he was the incarnation of one of the gods from the legends!

“Ice, fire, thunder all do not work.....” Yue Yang attempted to throw a flash of purple lightning and Wu Su, only for Wu Su to immediately ‘send’ it out of the domain.

Using Heaven Eyes Divine Vision, Yue Yang finally understood the truth of the domain.

[Deprive] Domain of Power: The user can borrow the Law to deprive the will of any item on the enemy, and then send this item out of the domain. Items with life could not be removed. The will of Holy and Divine items could not be removed, but there was a certain possibility of Holy items being thrown out of the domain. Within [Deprive] Domain of Power, an absolute duel would occur. Only when a party survives, would the domain disappear. The current time limit is a month.

Yue Yang understood at once. With this damn [Deprive] Domain of Power, other than Holy items and Divine weapons, he can forget

about using anything else.

Most troublesome of all is the time limit of this domain is a whole month.

Wu Su shook the entire Blood Lake Torture Chamber forcefully, the God Binding Chains clanged loudly under his shaking. He laughed madly: “Human, ridiculous little bean, what can you do now? Do not try to hold it together, just cry, cry out loud, that is the only thing you can do..... Ha ha ha!”

Yue Yang was very speechless.

Even with such a [Deprive] Domain of Power, it did not mean victory right?

Domains, does he not have any?

He even has more than one!

Yue Yang did not summon his Grimoire. Once he summoned it, it was likely that ‘World’ would suck away all the energy of this domain. Even if he did not summon ‘World’, within Yue Yang’s body had the [Devour] domain that was like a black hole. Although it was a little slower at absorbing energy, Yue Yang was still certain that no matter how strong this ‘Deprive’ was, it would lose to his ‘Devour’.

“Cry in pity under my light arrows. I, Wu Su, really could not

bear to kill you in one go! Tremble, human, this is your fate!” Wu Su proudly spilled out millions of light arrows. Without ice shields and frost flowers, what other energy could be used to protect Yue Yang’s body?

“..... Why is the dying guy always particularly good at making people speechless?” Yue Yang’s body shone from raging flames that turned into a fire amour.

“Energy deprivation.” Wu Su did not even look and simply stretched out his hand.

Millions of light arrows shot at Yue Yang and were all burnt into oblivion by Yue Yang’s fire armor. Only then was Wu Su surprised.

After looking again after gathering his senses, he was stunned.

How could the the legendary Nirvana Flames appear on this damned human’s body..... Wu Su was dumbstruck, while Yue Yang showed his signature sarcastic smile.

Nirvana Flames were an unrivalled existence in this world. Even the ‘Twelve Zodiac Temples’ Gemini Temple [Copy] Law was unable to duplicate his Nirvana Flames, how could [Deprive] domain even try to strip it off its owner’s will and try to send it out of the barrier? Of course that was impossible. Nirvana Flames was an existence that no one can replicate, absorb, strip moreover deprive. Even if it was ‘Devour’ or ‘World’, they were not able to even absorb a single iota of the Nirvana Flames.

With just Wu Su's [Deprive] domain, how dare he try to move Nirvana Flames?

This could only be said to be wishful thinking!

At first, Yue Yang was still shocked and worried that this [Deprive] domain would eat at his Nirvana's Flame. That was why he did not dare use it immediately. Who knew that by observing with Heaven Eyes Divine Vision, he would find out that [Deprive] domain could not remove the will of holy items, even more so Nirvana Flames?

If Nirvana's Flame had to be compared to an item, Heaven's Fury Fire Lotus was only a Platinum-Level artifact, while it was definitely a Divine-ranked weapon. It could even be considered to be a Supreme Divine-ranked weapon!

"You have Nirvana Flames?" Wu Su's delight quickly subsided.

"I not only have Nirvana's Flame, I also have World Exterminating Wheel. Isn't this a surprise? Just cry, just tremble, titan, this is your fate!" Yue Yang returned Wu Su's arrogant words previously all in one go.

Chapter 490 – God’s Blood

Yue Clan Castle.

A day had already passed, but Yue Yang still hadn’t return.

Everyone was anxious, but no one could be of any help. After they came out of the Blood Lake Torture Chamber, Xue Tan Lang, Ye Kong and Fatty Hai had been trying to enter it again, but to no avail... The Blood Lake Torture Chamber was completely shut off, so there was no way for them to enter again. What made them more helpless was that ever since they left the place via the Ancient Passage of God’s Ruins and teleported back to the Yue Clan Castle, the teleportation point that was previously recorded by the Ancient Passage disappeared.

Although the Old Fox, who was a master of Teleportation, and the Heavenly Imperial Guardians of Da Xia and Tian Luo Kingdom were around, they had no choice but to give up the plan to return to look for Yue Yang.

Although Jun Wu You, Elder Yue Hai and the other seniors didn’t show it on the outside, they were secretly anxious too. Yue Yang’s opponent wasn’t a normal Innate, but an Ancient Titan.

Will it really not be a problem for a single man to fight against an Elder Innate Leveled Ancient Titan alone?

It would be a lie to say that they weren’t worried.

When Luo Hua City Mistress and the Sickly Beauty heard the news, they became restless and fidgety. Only Yue Bing firmly believed that her brother would definitely be able to defeat this powerful opponent and return safely. She had an indescribable sense of confidence in her brother. Fourth Mother's attitude was similar to Yue Bing's.

Fourth Mother had always been comforting Yue Yu, Luo Hua City Mistress and the Sickly Beauty gently. She then also eased the anxiety of Yi Nan who rushed back upon hearing the news.

“What's an Ancient Titan?” Only the carefree Yue Shuang thought that Ancient Titans were similar to the hawkers selling candies along the streets.

“Go to sleep, your brother will return soon... Everything will be fine, all of you should go and rest!” Of course Fourth Mother was worried about Yue Yang too, but she knew that as the ‘Mother’ of the family, she couldn't show her weak side to the children. She had to have faith in her son. Even if everyone in the world doesn't support him, she had to be his pillar of strength.

“I am unable to sleep right now, let's wait for a while more!” Luo Hua City Mistress steeled herself and smiled to comfort Fourth Mother.

The fifth floor of the Blood Lake Torture Chamber.

The battle had intensified and reached the climax.

In the battle between Yue Yang and Wu Su the Ancient Titan, both sides tried their best to kill their opponent in the Blood Lake Torture Chamber and emerge victorious.

If Yue Yang did not hold back all his dirty tactics against Wu Su, the battle would have already ended. Wu Su who had lost his freedom and half of his body wouldn't be able to fight against Yue Yang equipped with Nirvana Flames, World Exterminating Wheel, [Devour] Domain of Power and Innate Invisible Qi. When Wu Su's [Deprive] Domain of Power lost its effectiveness, the God Binding Chains had already locked Wu Su's fate.

But Yue Yang was not in a hurry to kill his opponent, who couldn't escape the Blood Lake Torture Chamber at all.

He wanted to use Wu Su for training.

Just like fighting against the Diablo in Diablo II, he wanted to grind slowly. He would train and level up his combat skills while injuring his opponent. He wanted to benefit more from this battle.

If the Marquis of Zi Jin, the first guy who was able to beat Yue Yang until he almost died, was Andariel, then Shun Tian would be Duriel; If Emperor of the Sea was Mephisto Pheles, then the current Ancient Titan would be Diablo, and the Black Hell King would be Baal... As for the Scarlet Emperor, Heaven Realm's Three Great Leaders Xu Kong, Jiu Xiao and Ming Yue Guang, Yue Yang didn't have a clear position for them yet.

They were the ones that he could not yet defeat right now.

So Yue Yang decided to use this great opportunity to train and level up.

He wouldn't be able to meet such an opponent ever again in future battles. One that is fixated on a cliff and unable to move was a hundred times safer than the struggling Scarlet Emperor in the Ancient Seal.

As long as Wu Su couldn't kill him in one strike, victory would always belong to Yue Yang who had freedom!

“Goddamn human, no matter what trick you use, you won't be able to kill me. Because I'm an Ancient Titan, I have been bathed with God's Water when I was born. When I entered adulthood, I was bestowed with God's Blood by the King of Titans. With an undying body like mine, you think you can kill me with that little dagger of yours? Goddamn human being, what you are doing now is meaningless... If you can help me burn off these God Binding Chains, I could consider letting you off... Little boy, we don't have to fight, let's be allies instead. If you free me, I can grant you Titan's blood. In this way, you can possess an undying body and also the powers of a Titan. Most importantly, we Ancient Titans are the descendants of God with eternal lives. So little boy with a lifespan of a few hundred years, don't you want to have an eternal life?” Wu Su was in an extremely sorry state right now as his entire body was covered with wounds.

Now, he finally understood that he wouldn't be able to kill this cunning human boy.

He was too fast, and too smart.

Wu Su wouldn't be able to kill Yue Yang no matter what methods he use. Conversely, Yue Yang with the Nirvana Flame and World Exterminating Wheel would be able to injure him severely...

Wu Su had gotten sick of this fight that he could never win, so he made this unimaginable decision to stop the battle.

He negotiated with his opponent in hopes of Yue Yang burning away the God Binding Chains with his Nirvana Flame.

Without freedom, Wu Su wouldn't be able to unleash all of his powers.

Would Yue Yang accept this deception? Of course not! Hearing Wu Su's exasperated words, Yue Yang smiled and summoned his Grimoire for the first time. A golden light shone and a barrier rose up. The unique halo-shaped 'World' expanded, sucking in the energy of the [Deprive] Domain of Power continuously.

Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man, Bloody Queen Red, Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen Duo Duo, the Reaper Mantis and even the Spirit of Earth Fire were summoned.

Only the hibernating dragon girl Jiang Ying who was still in a muddled state wasn't summoned.

On the other side, Xiao Wen Li turned into a rainbow and floated out.

Under the stunned gaze of Wu Su, she summoned her Grimoire, Stone-element Medusa, Strom Mermaid, Thunder Naga and Ice Serpent Demon appeared one after another.

“How can you own two Divine Beasts? Ah, no, this is a Diamond Grimoire, she’s not... What’s going on?” Wu Su was on the brink of insanity. This time his opponent didn’t become fewer or weaker as the battle goes, but instead, they increased and became even stronger!

“I know there’s definitely God’s Blood in your heart. I like it, so I have decided to get it.” When Yue Yang raised his hands, all his Beasts gathered around him, forming a semi circle formation as they got ready for the upcoming battle. Yue Yang had never thought of negotiating with Wu Su, nor did he wish to coexist peacefully with him. Towards this Ancient Titan, he didn’t wish to pursue past serious crimes nor did he wish to consider rooms for further negotiation. All he saw was that he could kill this giant now, get his God’s Blood, level himself up, then move on to kill the Black Hell King, then the Scarlet Emperor. Then he would go to the Heaven Realm and kill two of its Three Great Leaders, Xu Kong and Jiu Xiao.

“You are deluding yourself. It would be useless on me no matter how many Beasts you have.” Although Wu Su said this, his heart was beginning to tremble.

All signs showed that Yue Yang was training his Beasts.

In other words, he had sufficient confidence of killing him.

What should he do?

Wu Su decided to kill the weakest one first, for example, the Reaper Mantis.

Numerous lightning flickered in his hands. They then gathered and formed an enormous silver thunderbolt.

The thunderbolt went towards the Reaper Mantis faster than the speed of sound. What made Wu Su shocked that was the Reaper Mantis didn't attempt to dodge or run even when the gigantic thunderbolt was hurled towards it. Could it be that it was too slow to respond?

Yue Yang didn't act as he watched quietly.

Thunder Naga flew towards the thunderbolt fearlessly... Looking at her, it didn't look like she was trying to stop the thunderbolt hurled by Wu Su, but instead, it looked like she was embracing it.

As for the Spirit of Earth Fire, what she did was even more exaggerated. She made an devouring action.

Still in mid air, the Spirit of Earth Fire had already used her body to wrap around the thunderbolt which had took shape. She tried

very hard to swallow and digest it in one mouthful, but of course it wasn't possible. In the end, the thunderbolt assed through her elemental body, and moved down furiously. Thunder Naga tried to receive it as she raised her hands and held thunderbolt. She then continuously absorbed thunderbolt's electrical energy. She also made use of the impact of thunderbolt's diving action to fly.

The Spirit of Earth Fire charged towards it, unwilling to give up just like that. She opened her mouth widely as she fought with Thunder Naga to absorb thunderbolt's energy like a little child fighting for candies.

Wu Su watched in shock...

These Beasts could actually engulf the electrical energy of a thunderbolt shot by a Titan?

"I'll smash you all to death!" Wu Su was furious as he leaned down and raised his gigantic right hand. He then smashed it towards the Spirit of Earth Fire and Thunder Naga on the ground.

"Roar!"

A thunderous roar resounded.

Wu Su felt that his left hand was controlled by a strong energy, as he missed the duo and smashed his hands onto the ground, leaving a deep handprint on the ground. The entire Blood Lake Torture Chamber shook from this smash.

But Wu Su was stunned.

He forgot how many thousands of years, even before his confinement, had he been controlled the Ancient Behemoth. Other than that no other tribes nor creature could control him not even the Giant Dragons were capable of it... Today, a creature could actually pull away his attacking left hand. What creature was it exactly?

Wu Su turned his head and fixed his gaze on the ground.

In the corner of the Blood Lake Torture Chamber, there stood a extremely tiny girl with horns pulling away his left hand with the enormous God Binding Chains.

It was her, the horned girl who pulled away his left hand.

“Woman of the Goat tribe, no, the Barbarian Cow tribe, whats going on, how can a foolish Barbarian Cows actually evolve to become a Holy Beast and personify so perfectly? Even with evolution, she shouldn’t be stronger than me... “Wu Su realised that the strength of the Barbarian Cow grew stronger. When he discovered that she was almost on par to him in terms of strength, he became even more frightened.

“Ah Man you’re so impressive, keep going, drag him to the ground!” Bloody Queen Red clapped and complimented Ah Man.

“Dream on!” Wu Su was completely driven insane. Even a small female Barbarian Cow could pull down an Ancient Titan like him now? Although he lost both of his legs, he could still shake the mountains with just his arm strength.

“Ha!” Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah man’s strength was extremely terrifying. Flexing her arms, and digging both of her legs deep into the solid ground, she wrestled with Wu Su in a crazed fashion.

Her strength was actually a little weaker than Wu Su the Ancient Titan.

But with the Heart of Earth, she’ll never feel exhausted. Numerous energy from the deepest point of the Earth were channelled into her body continuously, turning into her own energy. Although she couldn’t pull down Wu Su, she could maintain the status quo for a long period of time. At the very least she could hold down Wu Su’s left arm for the entire battle... Under the all out dragging of the Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man, if Wu Su didn’t wish to become the first Ancient Titan in history to be dragged down by a newbie, then he would have to distract himself and allocate part of his focus to defend against Ah Man’s pulling.

The Storm Mermaid blew the Storm Conch, causing flashes of lightning and claps of thunder in the Blood Lake Torture Chamber to appear. Numerous dark clouds descended in the sky.

Boom!

Heavy rain poured down.

The Reaper Mantis flew higher in the sky and started to kill the remaining Demonic Beasts. As for Bloody Queen Red, she dived down and let out an agonizing Banshee Scream.

“Noisy!” Wu Su reached out his right hand in agony as he attempted to catch the Bloody Queen and squeeze her to death.

“...” Xiao Wen Li flashed before him, her beautiful eyes glared in anger as her binding inherent skill unleashed.

“God’s Blood is now mine!” Yue Yang took the opportunity to throw something, that gave off a blinding light, at Wu Su. It was the Prison Emperor Divine Seal. Although it hadn’t recognise Yue Yang as its master yet, it would definitely be terrifying enough to thrust it at someone. The Scarlet Emperor already had a first hand experience. With the God Killing Dagger in his left hand and Innate Invisible Sword Qi on his right, he thrust it into Wu Su beating heart with the power of the Supreme Sword.

Chapter 491 – Killing The Titan, Everyone Levels Up

Ten hours later.

The Ancient Titan who had lost all his fighting strength and was already on the brink of death collapsed after Yue Yang's final strike.

His humongous body landed with a thud on a puddle of bloodied water, causing the water to splatter everywhere. Dead tired, Yue Yang finally relaxed and uncontrollably fell to the ground.

Swaying her tail in the water, the Storm Mermaid swam towards Yue Yang.

Her fair slender hand supported Yue Yang, before she stood against the waves.

In the sky, Blood Queen Red and the Reaper Mantis descended slowly as they were so exhausted that their body could no longer support them to continue flying.

It was still alright for Bloody Queen Red as she landed softly on the back of the Golden Tiger Shark. But for the Reaper Mantis, it heavily fell into the water with its powerless wings, causing water to splash everywhere. It looked extremely sorry. If not for the Stone Element Medusa who pulled it out of the water in time, it would be the first Reaper Mantis in history to drown in shallow

water.

Not only the both of them, almost all the Beasts that were involved in the battle were dead tired.

Only the Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man still had some stamina. She would never get exhausted as long as she remained on the ground. Other than her, the Spirit of Earth Fire, Thunder Naga, Ice Serpent demon, Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen Duo Duo and even Xiao Wen Li were all beyond exhausted.

Although Wu Su lost half of his body, and was only left with the power of Heaven Rank Level One, being an Ancient Titan, he still possessed the capability to fight till this stage without the help of any Grimoires or treasures. All he depended on was sheer physical strength.

The Ancient Titan really lived up to his name.

If... Wu Su was free, or at his peak strength; If he had a summoning Grimoire, or a Guardian Beast, or a supreme treasure... then the result of this battle might be the reverse.

The reason why Yue Yang could defeat Wu Su wasn't due to the number of Beasts he possessed, but the few strands of God Binding Chains.

It restricted Wu Su and hindered his activity.

Being used as a punching bag, it could be said that Wu Su only relied on his extremely strong body as an Ancient Titan to persist until now!

“I will remember you, you are really powerful.” Yue Yang had been through numerous battles. Among them, only Wu Su was the only one who did not use any dirty tactics. He was a big BOSS who relied solely on his combat power and endurance to fight.

Yue Yang’s hand was currently holding a gigantic heart.

This Titan’s Heart that was even larger than a house continuously shrunk due to the Nirvana Flames...

After ten minutes in the Nirvana Flame, it finally shrunk to the size of a melon. It was sturdy as iron and clear as crystal. Colourful, glowing God’s Blood flowed out gradually from the inside. When God’s Blood flowed out, a dazzling light filled the surroundings, making it hard to look at the drop of God’s Blood filled with immense amount of energy. An indescribable suppression accompanied by a supreme consciousness almost took control of Yue Yang. But as if he had already expected it, he continuously channelled his Innate Qi, that was just replenished, into God’s Blood. A pillar of the Nirvana Flame appeared and condensed into a ball... He wanted to challenge the impossible, that was, to purify God’s Blood completely with his Innate Qi and Nirvana Flame.

Yue Yang did not bother about the divine consciousness present within God’s Blood, because he wouldn’t be able to control it. So, Yue Yang merely wanted the energy in it.

Was the Divine Consciousness inside God's Blood stronger, or would the Nirvana Flame and Innate Qi be more powerful?

Twenty minutes later, the Divine Consciousness inside God's Blood continued to fade away. The drop of golden God's Blood became nearly transparent with a tinge of gold and red. This was an abnormal phenomenon caused after the Nirvana Flame and Innate Qi drove away the Divine Consciousness and Yue Yang's consciousness taking over the God's Blood completely.

While other Beasts weren't interested in the fading Divine Consciousness, the Spirit of Earth Fire kept on trying to take it in.

Yue Yang did not stop her. Conversely, he felt that this might be a good thing.

"Just a drop of God's Blood is already so powerful..." Yue Yang focussed on the drop of God's Blood that had undergone purification. Just one drop of this God's Blood already contained the energy of Innate Level Ten.

"Ha!" Xiao Wen Li smiled at Yue Yang sweetly. She was tired out just to get this drop of God's Blood for Yue Yang.

"Good girl, I'll give this to you!" Yue Yang moved the drop of God's Blood in front of Xiao Wen Li.

"..." Xiao Wen Li smiled. She waved her hand and kept shaking

her head.

“You don’t like it?” Yue Yang was stunned.

“...”Xiao Wen Li suddenly opened up her fair arms as she held on tightly to Yue Yang’s leg, indicating that she already possess the best thing in the world, so she doesn’t need God’s Blood. Yue Yang was initially shocked, this loli lamia had always been like this. She would always be the first one to stand out when it comes to fighting off Beasts. But she had never been greedy for any kinds of reward. She did not even care about the God’s Blood, which everyone were crazy after.

“I will give most of the Ancient Titan’s body to Duo Duo, and grant most of his blood to Little mantis and you all, and Titan’s Heart to Ah Man. Since Xiao Wen Li doesn’t want this drop of God’s Blood, I’ll give it to you!” Yue Yang felt that this drop of God’s Blood would be helpful to any of the females, but he was afraid that their bodies wouldn’t be able to take it. The Phoenix Beauty would be capable of it but she was already an ELder Innate, so she can take her time in levelling up. Yue Yang decided to use the God’s Blood to groom his Guardian Beast instead. Especially for Ah Man, Bloody Queen Red and Duo Duo the three main players, he would place more focus on them.

“Thank you master, but Red doesn’t want the God’s Blood.” Bloody Queen Red shook her head and waved her hands. She wasn’t the only one as Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man did the same thing.

“How about you, Duo Duo?” Yue Yang was puzzled. Why did they

not want it?

“Heh... Me too...” Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen did not receive over the God’s Blood in Yue Yang’s hand. But she stuck out her tongue happily and licked the wounds on Yue Yang’s body. It made her look like a greedy kitten. Normally Yue Yang would get angry since he wasn’t grooming vampires!

“Could it be that you guys like my blood better?” Looking at this, Yue Yang seemed to understand something.

“It’s very sweet!” Duo Duo’s physical appearance had already evolved to become a drop dead gorgeous beauty, but her personality hasn’t matured yet as she still behaved like a big loli.

In the aspect of personifying, she was better than Red.

She was intelligent too, but was a tad weaker than Red in terms of human emotions.

Actually Red had just surpassed Duo Duo recently. If the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen Duo Duo didn’t have to evolve numerous times during her growing phase, causing her to hibernate too much, or if Bloody Queen Red did not get inspired by Yue Yang and his ladies, the Sickly Beauty, Luo Hua City Mistress and the Phoenix Beauty, Red wouldn’t be able to compare with the Queen of Plants.

Although Duo Duo and Red did not answer directly, Yue Yang

already got his answer.

Maybe their reactions were out of their instinct since they couldn't understand it themselves. However, after Yue Yang went through Empress Fei Wen Li's Spirit Blood Contract, Xiao Wen Li undergoing rebirth with his blood, and then Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen's act of licking his blood, and the miracle where the Reaper Mantis and Spirit of Earth Fire were obtained due to his blood, Yue Yang would be a fool if he still wasn't suspicious about himself.

Yue Yang had always thought that the Innate Qi in his blood was producing a special effect all along...Now, it seems that it wasn't entirely true.

The Innate Qi definitely had its plus points, but what that was really making all these happen was Yue Yang's own blood.

Maybe the old priest's kick might have injected certain immortal energy into his blood and then caused the nature of his body to change.

Or could it be that his body's nature changed when the Sword Spirit Goddess made him eat the elixir from her Universal Pouch when he almost died during his travel through dimensions?

Yue Yang couldn't come to a conclusion.

But since Red and Duo Duo would rather have his fresh blood

than God's Blood, it had proven a point. Even if his blood wasn't God's Blood, it must be good stuff. It might even be akin to [Tang Seng](#)'s meat, where one can enjoy immortality just by having it... Yue Yang started guessing randomly, but he couldn't arrive to a conclusion, so he had to leave it aside and study it further another day.

(Last: Tang Seng is the monk from [Journey To The West](#).)

He first packed up God's Blood and then used a Nirvana Flame Blade to slowly dismantle the body of the Ancient Titan.

Apart from his right arm, he gave the rest of his body to Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen so that she can level up from where she is now... Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen had already swallowed lots of Innates and Hybrids, so she can at least level up to become a Divine Beast. She's only left with digesting all of them now.

Now, with the body of the Ancient Titan, Yue Yang guessed that her future would be limitless.

Of course, the growth potential of the Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen was extremely high, and Yue Yang had always been giving her the best, so he definitely wouldn't be reluctant to give her the corpse of an Ancient Titan.

"Wait for me to wake up from my hibernation, I'll definitely work hard to repay you, Master." Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen hugged and kissed Yue Yang before she reluctantly returned back to hibernate.

“Collect all the fresh blood.” Storm Mermaid gathered all the fresh blood that dripped into the pool, forming a gigantic bloody ball before she raised it up into the air and slowly moved it in front of Yue Yang.

She was the one whose intelligence was developing the quickest among Stone Element Medusa, Thunder Naga and Ice Serpent Demon.

When Storm Mermaid could speak clearly, Stone Element Medusa and the rest were still struggling to learn the human language, even their master Xiao Wen Li couldn't speak. But Yue Yang suspected that Xiao Wen Li already knew how to speak. She might be like the Qilin Girl, Bing Yin, who did not want to talk as her voice still sounded very immature. This could also be caused by her personality.

Titan's Blood is also a good stuff, Yue Yang felt that if it could refined further, it would be the top choice used to groom Beasts. It shouldn't go to waste.

But the problem was that he didn't have the time, neither does he have the energy for further refinement.

So Yue Yang could only keep the Titan's Blood.

He put it away into his Platinum Ring and decided to take his time to deal with it.

An hour had passed as Yue Yang broke one strip of God Binding Chain with his Nirvana Flame...

Suddenly, numerous light shone appeared from Yue Yang, Xiao Wen Li, Bloody Queen Red, Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man, Reaper Mantis, Spirit of Earth Fire, Stone Element Medusa and the rest's bodies. The reason was that the battle had only officially ended just now. The Summoning Grimoire flew to Yue Yang's side as 'World' the Guardian Beast shot out a blinding ray that caused the halo with an initial 80 meters diameter to increase to over a hundred meters.

All of the Beasts levelled up together, including Xiao Wen Li, who was the hardest to level up among them all.

She levelled up consecutively after the attack against the Scarlet Emperor, assassination against the Emperor of the Ocean and joint attack against Wu Su. Part of the credit also went to the training she got from fighting against these extremely strong opponents.

But most importantly, she had absorbed the energy of the Mother Earth Potion.

Her energy instantly surged.

These, combined with the training and experience she got from this battle, how would she not level up?

Xiao Wen Li rose from Level Five Diamond-ranked to Level Six Diamond-ranked.

Yue Yang's decision to kill Wu Su was to groom this loli lamia. Seeing that she finally went past Level Five and had moved on to Level Six Diamond-ranked, his heart was brimming with joy.

Rainbow-colored lights were everywhere and filled the entire room. The aromatic fragrance in the room soothed everyone's soul.

Xiao Wen Li gradually rose into the air under the dazzling glow. Her entire body looked sparkling and translucent as if a piece of white jade as she slowly grew bigger. Although she was still a small loli, Yue Yang excitedly discovered that Xiao Wen Li had grown again. He had to continue with his loli grooming plan. It looked like he's getting obvious results!

For a moment, Yue Yang felt a huge sense of accomplishment, and also felt unusually relieved at the same time.

Chapter 492 – Look At How Impressive My Son-In-Law Is!

Yue Yang felt that some kind of secret energy burst forth from his mind as if he had attained enlightenment. The knowledge passed onto him by the tragic guy's mother was greatly unlocked.

Xiao Wen Li returned into Yue Yang's body.

Immediately, his state of enlightenment became much more clearer.

What Yue Yang felt was not only the tragic guy's mother's knowledge. He also Xiao Wen Li's knowledge, memory fragments and Empress Fei Wen Li's inheritance.

At the same time during this state of enlightenment... when he was soaking in this kind of sensation, the Blood Prison Torture Chamber began to shake.

The surface was gradually collapsing. The indestructible walls were also cracking.

The Blood Lake Torture Chamber could collapse at anytime, even the entire space would collapse.

Barbarian Cow Shadow, Ah Man, was the first to awaken from her level up and rushed towards Yue Yang. She quickly picked him

up with all her strength.

Bloody Queen Red followed closely behind as she flew up to the sky and shielded away the stones that were continuously falling down on Yue Yang and Ah man. She did this so that her master, who was still in his meditation, wouldn't be affected. Reaper Mantis flapped its wings and flew up. When it looked down, it realised that there was still one God Binding Chain that Yue Yang was not able to store away in time. As if thinking it out, the Reaper Mantis hovered in the sky before diving down. Even though the entire Blood Lake Torture Chamber could collapse in any time, it did not forget to bring the treasure its owner obtained with great difficulty. On the other hand, the Spirit of Earth Fire who had absorbed part of the Divine Consciousness did not have such awareness.

The Spirit of Earth Fire became more gigantic and near to human form after absorbing the Divine Consciousness.

Most importantly, she was fusing with the Divine Consciousness, drawing support from it such that she could make use of the energy to level up, perfect herself and make a breakthrough... She flew about the Blood Lake Torture Chamber excitedly as she knocked away the falling broken stones and used part of the controllable Divine Consciousness to gather surrounding rocks together before shooting them out again.

She was immersed in her play and was completely oblivious to the surrounding danger.

To her, there was no danger involved in the collapse of the Blood

Lake Torture Chamber. Of course, she did not know and wasn't aware that her master was a human mortal.

Stone Element Medusa, Storm Mermaid, Thunder Naga and Ice Serpent Demon followed closely behind Yue Yang as they guarded his front and back to ensure his safety.

The one on the frontline was the Stone Element Medusa. She stopped swinging her tails due to a noise.

It was a Gold-ranked Level Eight Blood Python King.

It was unknown why the Blood Python King was so tenacious as it still hadn't died. It hissed painfully towards Yue Yang and the rest.

Initially, the Stone Element Medusa thought that it was trying to attack them as she knocked her arrow and prepared to shoot it.

The Blood Python King was sensitive enough to know that it was about to die as tears rolled down its eyes.

Seeing it cry made Stone Element Medusa put down her bow and arrow... Ice Serpent Demon who was dressed like a female general yelled unpleasantly. She who was strongest in the team did not allow her sisters to be distracted while protecting their master, let alone to lose focus and stay in a space that was going to break down soon for a negligible Blood Python King.

“Hiss hiss!” Blood Python King seemed to be imploring for Stone Element Medusa’s help as it couldn’t leave the Blood Lake Torture Chamber with such heavy injuries.

Moreover, it was restricted by the ancient code in the Blood Lake Torture Chamber, so it wouldn’t be able to truly leave the place.

When it saw that the Stone Element Medusa left it behind, it looked up at the sky and hissed in pain sorrowfully...

Stone Element Medusa stopped and looked back.

Blood Python King quickly struggled towards her, but before it could reach her, the Ice Serpent Demon let out another strict yell. Stone Element Medusa quickly raised her bow after hearing her.

Since it wasn’t able to catch up, she’ll help to end its life then!

Even before Stone Element Medusa could release her golden arrow, the Blood Python King rolled around the ground in pain.

There were large amount of blood oozing out from its tail as a tiny head slid out from its reproductive hole. A little life kept struggling in the almost transparent sac as if wanting to get out and see the world. It was because of this premature baby that Stone Element Medusa gave up trying to kill the Blood Python King. She fished out a green crystal stone and faced the Blood Python King’s direction... Even before Stone Element Medusa could start chanting the contract, the Blood Python King hurriedly

turned into a golden ray of light and shot towards the green crystal stone with its little offsprings.

Yue Yang who was still in his meditation was unaware of all these.

Of course, even if he saw it, he would not stop it.

He would be happy that Stone Element Medusa was no longer a cruel killing machine as she started to possess human intelligence and emotions. This was a huge improvement.

It wasn't until they reached the ancient pagoda at the entrance of the Blood Lake Torture Chamber that Yue Yang was jolted awake... When he saw that the entire Blood Lake Torture Chamber was turning into ruins and the whole space was beginning to be distorted, he quickly fished out his best teleportation crystal. Bloody Queen Red, Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man, Reaper Mantis, Stone Element Medusa, Storm Mermaid, Thunder Naga and Ice Serpent Demon all returned to the Grimoire World. Only the Spirit of Earth Fire, who was late, made Yue Yang incensed and got a scolding in return.

Spirit of Earth Fire was scared but she still couldn't understand why, she only remembered that she would be scolded every time she played for an extended period of time. She finally remembered it this time.

After Yue Yang unsummoned the Spirit of Earth Fire, put away the God Binding Chain, and broke his teleportation crystal, the

entire Blood Lake Torture Chamber finally collapsed.

It was world shaking.

The exact instant that Yue Yang teleported away, the whole space started to distort and deform as a huge explosion occurred in the Blood Lake Torture Chamber.

Boom!

Although it was a successful teleportation, the shock wave from the explosion still sent Yue Yang flying. When he arrived at the training grounds, there was an error in the landing. The spacial distortion sent Yue Yang flying like a bullet and smashed him on one of the Yue Clan Castle's training ground's flag tower. The tower was partially destroyed. Luckily, the Yue Clan flag and the Da Xia flag did not break, or else it might be viewed as an unlucky sign about the war. If that happened everyone's morale would probably plummet.

Hui Tai Lang was the fastest as it reached Yue Yang's side before anyone could respond.

It wiggled its tail furiously as it was extremely happy.

"Don't you find your return a little too exaggerated?" Jun Wu You came out when he heard the noise and discovered Yue Yang, who was covered in dirt, standing up from the rubble. He was extremely happy and didn't reprimand him for damaging the

tower, instead they started to laugh pleasantly.

“Youngsters should be more earnest in doing things. How are you going to take responsibility for your recklessness?” Although Elder Yue Hai was reprimanding Yue Yang, he was actually thanking his ancestors on the inside.

If something happened to this rare obedient genius grandson of his, then he would definitely not be able to live on anymore.

The hope of the entire Yue Clan was on Yue Yang's shoulders.

If he couldn't come back, the entire Yue Clan would fall!

Luckily, this little guy, who made others worried sick, finally returned. He looked fine, and wasn't heavily injured as expected.

The Old Fox acted immediately smoothed things over. He flew toward Yue Yang, who was still a little dizzy, and pulled him back before patting away the broken rocks on his body. “It's good enough for you to be back here, it's good enough. Don't say anything, we all understand... Fatty Hai, what kind of boss are you? Quickly go fetch some water for the Third Young Master to wash his face, your little brother is already like this, do you still have pride as the boss?”

Fatty Hai, whose face was previously full of tears, wiped his face and started to become proud. “Rest assured, you don't need me, many people would fight to do this. Liu Ye, although I'm good at

fetching water, as your boss I have decided to give you an opportunity to present yourself!”

Even before he could complete his sentence, Ye Kong had already kicked him away.

As compared to Bao'er, who rushed into Yue Yang's embrace and cried hysterically, Liu Ye was more reserved as only tiny teardrops could be found on her face.

Forget about her, even the usually aloof Xue Tan Lang also turned his head away as he tried to stop himself from crying. Ye Kong and the Li brothers, together with the rest rushed up excitedly as they released all their pain and anxiety from waiting for Yue Yang for one day and one night. Girls could cry to their heart's content but as guys, they were too embarrassed to do it, hence they cheered and hurled Yue Yang up in the air.

“Shoo shoo, go over there. My student and I haven't seen each other for a long time, let us have a chat.” Old Fox waited for them to finish their things before placing his hand on Yue Yang's shoulder and asked him excitedly. “Brat, what treasures have you gotten yourself, take it out and broaden my horizon!”

“Nothing much, just a bunch of junk. This time, I got a Holy-ranked God Binding Chain but it is broken.” Yue Yang deliberately acted humble.

“Pu,pu pu...”

Jun Wu You and Elder Yue Hai realised that they shouldn't drink water when Yue Yang was around.

If not they would choke to death.

Initially they wanted to act like they were seniors and wanted to stop embarrassing themselves. They wanted to be indifferent towards anything like seniors, but they still couldn't hold it in in the end. Who has a Holy-ranked treasure among them? Forget about normal warriors, even Innate Rankers and the Imperial Guards didn't own any, they would already be proud if they were to own a platinum-ranked treasure. Now, just a casual trip to the God's Ruin could give Yue Yang a Holy-ranked God Binding Chain, how would they have the face to live on? But thinking of it again, Yue Yang already possessed a lot of magic weapons. His self made Hui Jin Magic blade was close to being Holy-ranked, so the God Binding Chain would be nothing to him.

Old Fox knew that he wouldn't have a share of the God Binding Chain so he didn't probe any further.

It would be a waste of his energy anyway. It was used to bind the Ancient Titan, so even if it was given to him, he had no way of using it.

He continued to place his hands on Yue Yang's shoulders and congratulated him. "Are there any that we can share? You can keep the God Binding Chain to deal with the Black Hell King, give us some Platinum-ranked or Gold-ranked treasures... I'm very easily satisfied, just any two random treasures would suffice."

Feng Xiao Yun, Xue Wen Dao, Yan Qian Zhong and the others almost collapsed when they heard it.

Did the Third Young Master of the Yue Clan learn to become shameless from this old guy?

Elder Yue Hai wanted to beat up the Old Fox. There was finally a genius junior in the Yue Clan, and was sent to you with much anticipation, but you actually taught the aspiring hero to become a shameless pervert! Although being shameless would prevent Yue Yang from being taken advantage of, it would tarnish his reputation and he couldn't even find an excuse to compliment his grandson...

“No other treasures.” Yue Yang rejected him. As a treasure collector himself, why would he give the treasures to others easily?

“Is the Ancient Titan dead yet? I don't mind getting some of its meat since I just contracted a baby dragon recently. If it could have some Ancient Titan's meat... eh? You really have it? My God!” Old Fox saw that a huge figure appeared in the sky.

The hundred meter long arm suddenly fell to the ground, causing the entire Yue Clan castle to shake slightly.

The entire training ground was completely demolished with the bricks shattering into a million pieces.

Forget about the Old Fox who was standing between the gaps of the Ancient Titan's finger, even Jun Wu You, Elder Yue Hai, Eastern Sky King and Feng Kuang, who were standing from afar, were scared witless as they shuddered causing the tea cup in their hands to fall.

Everyone present felt a dizzy sensation as they couldn't recover from the shock they felt for a while.

Any random finger of the Ancient Titan would already be twenty meters long. Its entire arm was more than a hundred meters.

The reason why Yue Yang left the arm was to encourage everyone.

First, he wanted to boost their morale; second, it was to level of their beasts. With the Ancient Titan's blood and meat, he believed that the ranks of the beasts would increase by another level.

A long sword light shot out from the God Killing Dagger as Yue Yang sliced piece after piece of meat from the arm and used it as gifts for the Old Fox and the rest... Yue Yang definitely wouldn't forget Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the rest too. Hui tai lang? It had already started chewing on it. It wasn't modest at all as it knew that Yue Yang prepared most of the arm for it, so it started to eat without any restraints.

"OK, OK, I don't need so much, you should keep this precious arm. They are all old guys, it would be a waste for them to use it, giving them a bit of it will do." Old Fox quickly stopped Yue Yang

from slicing the meat as it would be useless for their beasts to continue levelling up. It would be better used in levelling up Yue Yang's beasts.

“That makes sense!” Ascetic Practice Saint strongly agreed.

“My good son-in-law, you killed the Ancient Titan all on your own? Hahaha, amazing, I'm very pleased!” Eastern Sky King was very pleased. He thought “What use is a son when I am superior without one? It's good to have a daughter, look how impressive my son in law is! Feng Xiao Yun and Yan Qian Zhong, you guys who only have sons should go cry in the corner!” Although he did not say it out loud, his haughty gesture made Yan Qian Zhong and the rest extremely mad.

“Don't boast in front of me. Who doesn't have a daughter?” The only one that could despise the Eastern Sky King would be Jun Wu You who had given birth to the tigress.

“Qiu Er, San Er is working very hard. You, you can rest in peace now...” Elder Yue Hai turned around discreetly, tear-streaked.

Chapter 493 – Have Some Tea, Young Master!

After the fight at the Blood Lake Torture Chamber, Ye Kong, Fatty Hai, Xue Tan Lang, Tian Luo Prince and the rest all levelled up to different extent.

Amongst them, Xue Tan Lang, Ye Kong and Fatty Hai levelled up the greatest.

Under Yue Yang's guidance and his own hard work, plus the resources of two kingdoms used in grooming him, Xue Tan Lang was highly anticipated to become the second person after Yue Yang to turn into an Innate at age twenty. He was already a Lesser Innate, and very close to becoming an Innate. Just by consuming the Martial Spirit Pill, it was guaranteed that he would level up to become an Innate and enter the world of Rankers. Of course, he did not become a Lesser Innate from self cultivation like how Yue Yang did. If not for Yue Yang's guidance, he would need at least another fifty years or even longer to reach where he is now.

It was because of this that Xue Tan Lang was unwilling to break the record set by Yue Yang, so he did not consume the Martial Spirit Pill immediately.

He prepared to wait for another month before turning into an Innate.

That way, he would be ranked below Yue Yang.

“What I want is relentless pursuit for excellence, not overtaking by self-deceit.” Xue Tan Lang felt that if he were to break Yue Yang’s record, it would be a form of disrespect towards his brother-in-law.

Xue Tan Lang knew that without the advice Yue Yang gave, he wouldn’t be able to rank up so easily.

Yue Yang helped to purify his body and made him go through rebirth. Yue Yang then passed on many of his own enlightenments to him, saving him fifty or even a hundred years of cultivation time. If Xue Tan Lang were to use this to break Yue Yang’s record, and top the list among those who became Innates through self cultivation, not only would it be a sign of disrespect, this would also be an uncondonable shame on himself.

“Why be so bothered by these? Everyone knows your brother-in-law is indeed the strongest. Moreover, even if you don’t break his record, Yue Bing and Yue Shuang would definitely do it in the future.” Old Fox’s persuaded. However, Xue Tan Lang rejected him.

“The mainstream idea in the Soaring Dragon Continent is to honour men. If Yue Bing and Yue Shuang were to become Innate at the age of twenty, everyone would know the reason why, so they won’t be bothered. But as a man, I can’t do this. My brother-in-law will always be the top in the history of the Soaring Dragon Continent, no one can surpass him, I will never destroy his reputation just to become an Innate one month earlier.” Xue Tan Lang maintained a firm stance on this. This could be the longest

speech ever spoken by the poker-faced Xue Tan Lang ever since he entered adulthood.

“...” The old guys around were very touched when they heard it. How would they not know that this is the result of Yue Yang’s effort? They were just anxious in grooming more young Innates.

Following closely behind Xue Tan Lang, who was a Lesser Innate, were Ye Kong and Fatty Hai. The difference between them wasn’t huge.

Now they were already at half-step Level Eight [Emperor].

There’s still a gap they had to fill before they become Lesser Innates. But according to the speed at which they were improving now, it would just be a matter of time before they become Innates.

It had been a much more tedious journey for Ye Kong and Fatty Hai as they cultivated from lower ranks.

When Fatty Hai first met Yue Yang, he was only a first-step Level Three [Hero]. The strongest Beast he owned was a Bronze-ranked Iron Rhinoceros. Now Fatty Hai owned the not so smart Wind Breath Seabird, and three strong Beasts, with the Level Three Platinum-ranked Diamond Rhinoceros having the most potential, followed by the Level Five Gold-ranked Hippopotamus. As for the Level Eight Gold-ranked Giant Lightning Mammoth, although it was considered the strongest now, it had already exhausted most of its potential, so it would definitely be weaker than the Hippopotamus and the Diamond Rhinoceros in the future.

Ye Kong was also the same. Before he met Yue Yang, he almost starved to death.

He led a meaningless life.

Today, although not equipped with any grimoires, he who picked himself up under the guidance of Yue Yang and the aid of the King Kong Demon Ape and Herculean Rhinoceros Beetle became even stronger than Fatty Hai. He was undoubtedly the second strongest in the team.

When Yue Yang wasn't around, Ye Kong would become the leader of the team. He's got impressive leadership skills, even the poker-faced Xue Tan Lang listened to him.

Apart from the three of them, Tian Luo Prince who was similarly a half-step [Emperor] would likely become an Innate too.

He started high, and met Yue Yang comparatively later, so his improvements weren't that exaggerated as compared to Ye Kong and Fatty Hai.

But his innate abilities were not inferior to Xue Tan Lang. He definitely has a bright future too.

As for the Li Brothers, Lin En, Anna, Bao'er, Liu Ye, Li Ao, Fan Lun Tie and the rest, they wouldn't be able to become Innates in such a short period of time. They were still far from becoming one,

so they had to continue working hard.

“Continue to work hard, don’t let Hui Tai Lang overtake you!” Yue Yang’s words made Hui Tai Lang wag his tail happily.

Of course, Yue Yang wasn’t exaggerating.

With the current standards of Ye Kong and Fatty Hai, they really couldn’t be compared with Hui Tai Lang.

Hui Tai Lang who had ranked up to become a Divine Beast had been becoming more powerful. If Ye Kong and Fatty Hai weren’t able catch up, the gap would become bigger and bigger. Forget about catching up with Yue Yang when catching up with Hui Tai Lang was tiring enough. It was due to this pressure that Xue Tan Lang, Ye Kong, Fatty Hai and the others trained themselves crazily. They really didn’t want to lose out to Hui Tai Lang.

They were fine with losing to Yue Yang since he was an abnormal genius.

But losing to Hui Tai Lang...

They would bring shame to the entire human race!

Yan Po Jun and Feng Qi Sha were upset as they who had just rose to become Level Seven [Overlords] after lots of hard work. When they arrived closer to the team, their presence became weaker. Apart from Liu Ye and Bao’er, they were even weaker than the four

orc girls. They were actually geniuses who became Level Seven [Overlords] at just twenty. Looking through the history of the Soaring Dragon Continent, they could even be the top few hundreds among prodigies. But the problem was that under the lead of Yue Yang the abnormal genius, the Soaring Dragon Continent entered an “Explosive Time”.

Even Ye Kong, Li Qie and Li Ge who did not possess any Summoning Grimoire were already Level Eight [Emperor]s.

So this made the duo who just levelled to Level Seven [Overlord] look pathetic.

“Let’s cultivate together, let bygones be bygones, our future doesn’t lie only in the Soaring Dragon Continent, it lies in the Tong Tian Tower, or even the Heaven Realm.” There’s certain amount of comfort in Yue Yang’s words. Actually Yan Po Jun and Feng Qi Sha knew that the highest level they could ever achieve would be to become Innates. Heaven Realm? It only belonged to Yue Yang the high flyer. It wouldn’t be their place.

“He has become more matured, I was previously still worried about his stubbornness!” Jun Wu You was very happy to see this. Yue Yang’s willingness to allow Yan Po Jun and Feng Qi Sha to join the team united the four big clans. The four big clans would then become entwined and interconnected. They no longer have to be worried of internal conflicts that might break them apart.

“Nah, I still see him as a child!” Elder Yue Hai was humble on the surface, but he was actually very proud.

“He IS a kid...” The Old Fox laughed when he heard it.

After leaving the Yue Clan Castle, Yue Yang returned to the Mirage in the palace of Tian Luo.

Before going to see Fourth Mother, Yue Yang first went to give Tian Luo’s Emperor, Hua Xu Ri, a bottle of refined Titan’s Blood.

He did this to thank Hua Xu Ri for allowing Fourth Mother to safely reside in Tian Luo. It wouldn’t be nice if he didn’t reciprocate his/her kindness; he did it also out of curiosity. He guessed that Hua Xu Ri was a woman, if not he wouldn’t have sensed that she was a girl the first time he fell into the Mirage. Moreover, if he were to be a guy, Fourth Mother wouldn’t be able to stay here for such a long period.

Why wasn’t Fourth Mother living in Da Xia Palace?

Why was Night Empress so close to this mysterious emperor of Tian Luo?

Yue Yang wanted to find out the answers to many of his questions, so he made a special trip down to see Hua Xu Ri, under the pretext of giving him/her Titan’s Blood.

“The Emperor has sent me over to tell you that your gift is accepted and it is well liked by the Emperor. But due to slight physical discomfort, the Emperor wouldn’t be able to see you.

Also, the Emperor heard that Third Young Master is making ancient dolls now, so the Emperor would like to grant you a treasure to help you succeed.” Tian Luo Emperor Hua Xu Ri’s female guard went over to give the reply to Yue Yang. She smiled and bowed to Yue Yang as she rejected his advances to see Hua Xu Ri.

“Then I wish your Majesty to be in good health.” Yue Yang was quite sure that Hua Xu Ri is definitely a girl now, but how was the Night Empress related to her? Was she her sister? Relative? Or friend?

He couldn’t come to a conclusion at the moment.

When Yue Yang went to see Fourth Mother, she had obviously received the news that he was going to return. Although she looked calm on the outside, she was actually very excited.

It was Yue Bing who hopped in joy when she saw that her brother had returned.

She quickly jumped into Yue Yang’s embrace before Yi Nan.

Yi Nan rushed in front of Yue Yang, she wore an adorable expression which made her look like she was struggling to keep in her tears. She bit her lips and suppressed her desires.

She wanted to hug this man whom she had thought of for thousands of times.

But she did not have the courage to express her feelings into action.

Yue Yang secretly reached out his hand and wiped away the tears that rolled down her cheeks. “Don’t worry. Aren’t I safe and sound? I’m fine!?”

Yi Nan blushed as she blocked his big hands shyly. It looked like she did not want everyone to see his intimate action.

She still tried to keep up a strong front. “I did not cry!”

Before she could finish her sentence, another disobedient tear rolled down.

Yue Shuang moved her head around, forcibly trying to squeeze a gap beside her sister. “I didn’t cry too, I have been obedient all along, I did not even cry when mother hit my butt...” Yue Shuang looked at Yue Yang and asked for his compliment.

Yi Nan felt that she was funny, so she quickly wiped away her tears and rebuked jokingly. “It was all your fault!”

When Yue Yang reached out his hands to carry her, Yi Nan saw that Luo Hua City Mistress, Sickly Beauty and Yue Yu were all smiling as they looked in their direction. She immediately hid shyly, as she moved Yue Shuang into Yue Yang’s embrace, dodging from his touchy hands at the same time. Yue Shuang didn’t stand

on ceremony as she hugged her brother intimately and gave him two kisses. Seeing a powdered fruit appearing on Yue Yang's hand, she immediately snatched it over and said brother is the best sweetly.

Her words bore an extremely high sugar content which made people feel sweet.

Yue Bing gave Yue Shuang's butt a slap and reprimanded her. "You only know how to eat. Come down quickly. brother had just returned and he's very tired!"

Yue Shuang wasn't scared of anything except for this strict sister of hers. The powdered fruit was in her hands anyway, so she immediately hopped out of Yue Yang's embrace and grimaced at Yue Bing. "Brother isn't tired..." She turned her head again, wanting to complain to Fourth Mother. "Mother, sister hit me, my butt is hurting..."

Fourth Mother did not attempt to protect her. She raised her hand and indicated that she wanted to hit her too. Yue Shuang immediately turned her head and hid in the Yue Yu's embrace.

She knew that her second sister was the most gentle person. Not only would she not hit her, she doted on her alot.

When Yue Shuang was done, Luo Hua City Mistress rushed forward. She nonchalantly grabbed Yue Yang's arms and hurriedly asked: "Tell me what happened to the Ancient Titan. Did you defeat the Ancient Titan too? How did you do it? I would have

gone if I had known, it's such a pity. It would have been a great opportunity. Oh right, what treasure did you get? No no, you should begin from the start, I'm so anxious, quickly tell us now!"

Seeing it, the sickly beauty laughed. "Let him rest and drink some water, there's plenty of time to ask!"

Luo Hua City Mistress saw Yue Yu brought the water over, she immediately snatched it and handed it over to Yue Yang, acting all obedient. "Drink some tea, Young Master!"

Everyone was left speechless by her...

Chapter 494 – Yi Nan

The joint army of Zi Jin Kingdom and the Black Hell Army officially declared war on Da Xia and Tian Luo Kingdom.

Of course, it was still considered to be a small scale war.

The three thousand elite soldiers of the Black Hell Army captured Da Xia's Xiao Feng City, Hou Tu City and Zhang Mu City. Although Jun Wu You ordered the three City Master numerous times to retreat immediately in an attempt to shrink the defying fighting regions as per their plan so as to prevent meaningless sacrifices, the three City Master still rejected Jun Wu You's imperial order with the reason that being as warriors they should guard their city even if it means that they may die.

With this, the three City Masters, who were part of the minority that weren't bribed by Zi Jin Kingdom, all died on the battlefield.

When the opponents' joint army captured the three cities, they did not carry out a massacre.

Instead, they treated the residents very well, in an attempt to win their hearts.

They even sent their men to deliver the bodies of the three City Masters to Shang Jing, so that Jun Wu You could give them a grand burial.

When Yue Yang heard the news, he sent someone over to ask if they wished to take revenge on the opponent.

“It’s none of your business, it wouldn’t be called a war if nobody dies. You don’t have to worry about these things.” Elder Yue Hai did not give Yue Yang the chance to interfere.

“The Black Hell King is yours, leave the war matters to us. Old guys like us are still quite useful in times like this.” The Old Fox managed to convince Yue Yang against it. As for Fatty Hai, Ye Kong, Xue Tan Lang and the rest who volunteered to fight, he chided them. “Soldiers against soldiers, generals against generals and emperor against emperor. How many soldier can you all kill? Three thousand, thirty thousand or three hundred thousand? What use is that? Do you guys know how many demons there are in the Demon Abyss? Or how many mercenaries there are in Tong Tian Tower? There’ll never be a shortage of soldiers in this world, only the generals and emperors are lacking, so go do the things you need to do, cultivate and level up! The war had only just began, it won’t end in a month’s time. It’s gonna last for years or even decades. The Black Hell King is just testing waters now do you understand? He is only making his first move on the chessboard, so we respond by moving too. If you’re so impulsive, then how are we gonna continue like this? The only thing that should be moving now should only be the chess piece!”

Since the old guys who specialized in military affairs were so steady, Yue Yang wouldn’t interfere further.

Jun Wu You and Elder Yue Hai had already mentioned earlier on that they would first lose then win. The joint army of Da Xia and

Tian Luo Kingdom would make use of time and space to fight against the Black Hell Army and the Zi Jin Army.

Moreover, Yue Yang guessed that the Black Hell King was still knocking on the Golden Shield.

Without obtaining any treasures to strengthen himself, he wouldn't act immediately.

After a day, Yue Yang finally knew why the Black Hell King had declared war. Ou Gen from the Warrior Guild wrote a letter to Titan Jr. In the letter, he mentioned that the Sea Clan in the Eighth and Ninth Level of Tong Tian Tower were incensed and decided to take revenge when they heard that the Ocean Emperor was killed by An Xi and Titan Jr. together. the Ocean Emperor's 'Empress Jellyfish' sent out over one hundred thousand Sea Clan Elites. Led by the sole remaining King, the Shark King. In three months time, they would enter the Soaring Dragon Continent through the Ancient Passage to look for Titan Jr. who killed the the Ocean Emperor and their Sea Dragon Crown Prince.

The Black Hell Army most probably had already formed an alliance with the hundred thousand of Sea Clan Members, so they launched the attack first to gain the upper hand.

The name, Titan Jr., had currently shook the entire Tong Tian Tower.

Forget about a newbie killing Tiger Nian, Nightmare and Demon Eye, they were all Innates below the level five after all, so they

weren't considered to be true Innate Rankers, his act of killing Sky Dragon made others reel in shock. Sky Dragon was not a simple person, his name had been known for quite a long time.

Luckily the Sky Demon Palace did not pursue the matter with Yue Yang, so not many knew about it.

But the shocking thing Titan Jr. done after that couldn't be hidden no matter how one tried to cover it up!

The name of the Ocean Emperor, one of the Five Emperors of Tong Tian Tower, suddenly dulled on the Innate Crystal that day... What does that mean?

He died!

So who killed the Ocean Emperor Guan Lan?

Results obtained showed two names. One of them was An Xi the King of Assassins, the other one was Titan Jr., a newbie who had just entered the Sixth floor of Tong Tian Tower. He was registered as a mediocre level six Elder, a rank that would have meant nothing to Guan Lan. He could instantly kill hundreds of such people with just a point of his finger.

But Titan Jr. survived a battle which nobody knew what happened in the process.

But the Ocean Emperor and An Xi, two Supreme Innates, both

died.

It was only until now that the Warriors of Tong Tian Tower discovered the terrifying truth that Titan Jr. had already killed Tiger Nian, Nightmare and Demon Eye who were three Fallen Innates in the Thunder Fortress and then killed another Sky Dragon who was part of the ten Sky Demons of the Sky Demon Palace. Moreover, Sky Demon Palace did not even pursue the matter. Their leader, Sky Execution, acted as if she didn't know that Sky Dragon was dead. There was an earlier rumor that even before this, Titan Jr. had already went into the Demon Palace by himself, and killed Demon King Baruth's ally in front of many demon kings. And even way back, when the Eastern Goblin Tribe kidnapped an Emperor of the Soaring Dragon Continent, Titan Jr. rushed into the Ancient Passage to chase after the people from the Eastern Goblin Tribe. The Dragon Emperor of the tribe then decided to release the kidnapped emperor upon hearing Yue Yang's brave deeds.

It remained unknown if it was the Black Hell Army or others with ulterior motive who did it, but all the warriors in the Tong Tian Tower finally knew Titan Jr.'s real name.

In the Soaring Dragon Continent, this man is called Yue Yang.

With his own innate gift and effort, Yue Yang was a genius who cultivated himself to become an Innate at twenty years old. No one had preceded him, and it was believed that no one could succeed him too.

“The drawing on the wanted warrant is so ugly.” Ou Gen even

mailed Yue Yang a copy of the wanted warrant made by the Sea Clan. They offered ten million gold to get him, together with a Holy-ranked treasure, ten mysterious ocean treasures that were above rank seven and one hundred Wisdom Fruits. Yue Yang wasn't satisfied with the drawing of his Gemini Mask on the portrait, he felt that it was too ugly. But he was pleased with the bounty as it made him the most expensive convict in the history of Tong Tian Tower.

“Xiao San, I didn't know that you are so expensive!” Yue Yu saw it and kept laughing discreetly.

“Nah, he is still far from it. Get rid of all the whatnots like the Dragon Emperor, Sky Emperor and Emperor of the Underworld, and aim to raise the reward to one billion, that would be more impressive.” Luo Hua City Mistress was in a good mood as she hugged and kissed Yue Yang, and asked him to keep it up.

“If he were to kill all the four Emperors, who will dare to go after him? Moreover, no one will have that much money!” The Sickly Beauty felt that the reward of ten million was already the limit.

“Yes, grandpa An Xi's reward is only five million, it's only half of brother's!” Yue Bing felt proud of his brother.

“That's because the old guy's dead, if not the person in this wanted warrant would have been him. His would have been mine.” Yue Yang smiled and waved his hand carefreely. “Don't care about the Sea Clan now, our focus will still be on cultivating. With power, we won't have to fear anyone who comes in our way. Luo Hua and Wu Hen you all can stop for a while, Yi Nan, the most

important person to level up is you, follow me!”

“Wait...” Luo Hua City Mistress grabbed Yue Yang’s waist, and went over to the other side from under his armpit. She raised up her face and asked flirtatiously. “You have already talked about Jiang Ying. I want to know matters about Hai Yingwu right now... If this wanted warrant doesn’t exist, it seems that there are still of a lot of things that we do not know! Would you care to explain?”

“Xiao San you have to explain things clearly.” Yue Yu did not stand on Yue Yang’s side this time round.

“Brother definitely won’t like the daughter of the Ocean Emperor. Impossible, brother is her arch enemy since he killed her father!” Yue Bing was the only one who had always trusted Yue Yang.

“Even if there’s something going on, it doesn’t make any difference with the addition of Hai Yingwu.” Although the Sickly Beauty’s words seemed to be aggravating the situation, it definitely came from the bottom of her heart.

“There’s really nothing going on between me and her. We were merely acquaintances.” Yue Yang waved his hand sheepishly, indicating that he was a good guy that didn’t fool around.

“Really? Okay, I believe you... not!” Luo Hua City Mistress ferociously bit Yue Yang’s chest.

“Okay, okay, since he said that there is nothing going on, then maybe nothing really happened. Stop all your wild guesses, I feel that it is also impossible.” Yi Nan saved Yue Yang from Luo Hua City Mistress’s claws. She tenderly rubbed Yue Yang’s chest. “Is it painful? We can do this amicably, why did you have to bite him!”

“Hmph, he won’t die from it anyway!” Usually, Luo Hua City Mistress wasn’t this unruly, but seeing Yi Nan’s repeated attempts to protect Yue Yang, she felt upset. She had to do something to anger this girl who dared to be engaged without the consent of her parents, and said that she wanted to betroth her sister to Yue Yang as an excuse. Yi Nan was still only eighteen, when she met Yue Yang, she was only sixteen, she was just a child then. She actually dare to be engaged on her own at sixteen. On comparison, Luo Hua City Mistress felt that she was extremely pure at sixteen.

“I’ll settle the scores with you at night...” Yue Yang did not say it, but his expression revealed it all. He was warning Luo Hua City Mistress not to be too proud, if not he would punish her.

“You think I’ll be scared of a pervert like you?” Luo Hua City Mistress did not speak too, but her expression showed that his warning was useless. At most they could carry out the scenario of Beauty fighting against a Devil at night.

Yi Nan and Yue Bing couldn’t see it, even if they had, they wouldn’t be able to understand what Yue Yang and Luo Hua City Mistress meant.

Only Yue Yu saw it and understood.

With her heart racing, she left the place quickly, blushing.

When Yi Nan followed Yue Yang back to the Grimoire World and prepared to start her cultivation, Yue Yang used his Heaven Eye Divine Vision to check her progress out of habit. He was shocked by what he saw.

He realised that Yi Nan's improvement exceeded his imaginations by a lot. She was ten times more powerful than what he had imagined. In terms of preparations, forget about combat power, Yi Nan was already stronger than Yue Yu, Sickly Beauty, Luo Hua City Mistress and even Princess Qian Qian in the mental aspect. She was on par with Xue Wu Xia and was only ranked below the Phoenix Beauty who owned the [Charm] Inherent ability and himself with the Heaven's Fury Fire Lotus.

How did this girl even cultivate?

How did the results come so rapidly?

Yue Yang was amazed.

Could it be that Yi Nan's aunt possessed some treasure that helped to increase Yi Nan's strength quickly? Or could it be that the Valley of Thousand Flowers itself was a hidden valuable location, such that Yi Nan could strengthen up quickly by cultivating there?

“Actually, it’s because...” Yi Nan seemed to know what Yue Yang wanted to ask. She began to phrase her sentence out with an emotion mixed with joy and awkwardness.

Chapter 495 – Silver Horned Pegasus, Hallucination Butterfly

“Aunty told me that the best method of training the mind is to maintain a spiritual state, let the body rest and expand the limits of your mind. However, I couldn’t calm myself and in the end... in the end, I thought of this method.” Yi Nan’s face reddened as she felt embarrassed. She lowered her head, not daring to look at Yue Yang. It was only after a while that she peeked at him and spoke with a mosquito like voice: “...once, I accidentally discovered that thinking about you... thinking about you with all my might, could stabilize my heart and soul. Although it wasn’t a spiritual state, it was a lot better than letting my imagination run wild... In the end, with the support of my Guardian Beasts, Small Fairy and Spirit Mirror, I was able to comprehend a new fantastic realm. Aunty told me that it was called the ‘Soul Realm’.

Yue Yang muttered to himself.

He knew that Yi Nan was very accomplished in the mental aspect. However, he was unable to understand the Soul Realm that Yi Nan was talking about.

Yi Nan thought that he did not believe him and summoned her golden grimoire.

Bright lights flashed.

The barrier quickly expanded. Compared to the past, Yue Yang felt that this barrier was bigger and had a faint mental defense

power.

Looking at Yi Nan's grimoire, she was actually a Level Seven [Overlord] and not yet a Level 8 [Emperor]. However, Yue Yang felt that Yi Nan's mental powers had already surpassed most Rankers but her close combat strength was weak. If a condition was set before battle like being unable to begin a close combat battle, or protected by a barrier, then Yi Nan would probably be able to torment a Level Two Innate to death with her mental powers.

During the battle in the Prison Emperor's Divine Palace, he could already see through Yi Nan's potential.

She could truly formless kill people.

Her combination with her Spirit Mirror was simply perfect.

Small Fairy: Elemental-type beast. Guardian Beast. Silver Level Three. Physical body. Intelligent. Special Skills: "Assist", "Clarity", "Spirit Chains"

Spirit Mirror: Special-type beast. Gold-ranked Level Five. Spiritual, illusionary body. No Spiritual Knowledge. Special Skills: "Spirit Transformation", "Spirit Absorption", "Spirit Mirror Fusion".

Other these two potentially limitless beasts, Yi Nan also had a Hallucination Butterfly and a Silver Pegasus. As for the timid Spider Witch, it had already been neglected for a long time to the

point that Yi Nan and Yue Yang almost forgot about it.

Yue Yang had never fully nurtured Yi Nan before because she was never part of his main fighting force.

In terms of attack power or killing power, Yi Nan couldn't even be compared to Yue Bing.

If it was the past, Yue Yang still didn't have the best method for Yi Nan to level up since mental powers were not Yue Yang's strongest point. However, after doing [Body Fusion] with the Phoenix Fairy Beauty, the mental powers from her [Charm] inherent skill and the Charm Demon Queen's innate ability to excite a person had merged with Yue Yang's mental power. This had greatly benefitted Yue Yang's mental aspect.

When Yue Yang helped the Phoenix Fairy Beauty reach the Elder Innate Realm, he came to realize something. When he looked at Yi Nan again, he discovered that Yi Nan's mental potential was a treasure trove.

It was no wonder that the Compassionate Goddess of the Virgo Temple chose to give Yi Nan the spirit mirror instead of Xue Wu Xia or Yue Bing.

"In the past, I did not understand what to do, but now, I will make you stronger. I can even make you stronger than Luo Hua!" Yue Yang couldn't help but feel guilty. The amount of effort he placed on Yi Nan was the least and yet she never complained. He extended his hand, lightly embraced Yi Nan, and kissed her perfect

forehead as if it was natural.

“I...” Yi Nan slightly trembled. She raised her small hands and slowly closed it. She remembered how she missed her lover’s hug many times.

Yue Yang did not impatiently made Yi Nan level up.

This was because he knew her unlimited potential. She was a treasure trove that should not be rashly wasted. He must use the best method to open it.

Other than thinking by himself, he also wanted to discuss this with Phoenix Fairy Beauty and the Night Empress to see if they had a better opinion. Naturally, these did not obstruct Yue Yang and Yi Nan in performing the lover’s [Double Body Fusion].

They had already performed [Body Fusion] many time already. This time, they will start under the passionate embrace and when the conditions are right to ensure success.

Yue Yang bent his head down as Yi Nan tried to suppress her heart beat.

Yi Nan slightly lifted her scarlet face. She shut her eyes tight and her breath became hurried. Her cherry lips carried a bit of impatience. She tiptoed and at the same time her lips landed on her lover’s burning lips. Almost at the same time, Yi Nan’s white arms circled around Yue Yang’s neck and tightly hugged him. Her

fierce heart beat carried happiness, affection, nervousness, shyness. She felt that his lips carried an attractive force and an electric current. She felt that electric current spread over her body and cycled under their sweet kiss. Her passion blazed under the stimulating kiss...

After an unknown amount of time, Yi Nan, who felt slight pain from her slightly swelling lips, loosened her hold on Yue Yang.

She felt her face burn and her entire body go limp without a single bit of strength left.

However, she loved the feeling of lazily resting on his embrace. She loved the feeling of security, feeling of happiness that he gave her. In his embrace, she did not need to think about anything as if she had everything in the entire world. A thousand-year enmity? A thousand-year secret? Everything felt far away from her.

“Are you tired?” Yue Yang lightly carried Yi Nan up. The little girl’s body was as light as a feather as if it did not have any weight.

“...” Yi Nan lightly shook her head.

Towards Yue Yang’s action of carrying her to bed, she did not think about resisting at all.

She only felt that it was natural.

With just one more step, he would probably want her entirety.

She would not resist at all if it came to it... She had never thought of these things before. She only knew about cuddling in his embrace and soaking in their romantic two-person world. She enjoyed these sweet and warm moments. As long as she had him, she would never be lonely anymore, would not be the disciple, who shouldered the grudge of the Valley of Butterflies and Flowers, anymore. She would be his fiancée, Yi Nan...

Kisses would never be enough.

Again, and again.

On the second day, when Yi Nan glowingly stood in front of everybody, everybody discovered that Yi Nan, who was soaked in love, was emitting an astonishingly beautiful brilliance, as if she was a different person. Because Yue Yang had cherished Yi Nan for an entire night, she did not nag Yue Yang anymore in the day and took the initiative to train battle skills with Yue Bing.

After that was done, she went to help Fourth Mother cook.

For the entire day, Yi Nan was busy and full of energy.

Luo Hua City Mistress observed for a long time. She discovered that Yi Nan was not pushed down and couldn't help curiously asking Yue Yang: "What's the matter? Aren't you going to eat the little lamb in your mouth?"

“It needs to be fattened a bit before eating!” Yue Yang extended her wolfy claws and gently stroked Luo Hua City Mistress’ butt.

“Hypocrite.” Luo Hua City Mistress ignored her lover’s mischief since he had already played with her entire body anyways. Since it was only touching, she also counterattacked and touched the inside of his pants while nibbling on his ears: “You are so pitiful, starving yourself by pretending to be a good child. Tonight, let sister love you...” While the two people were flirting, Yue Yu, who had an urgent matter, quickly came over. When she saw her little brother’s and Luo Hua’s dubious posture, she immediately blanked out and took a while to respond. Afterwards, she quickly turned around and left.

“Finished. We were seen by her.” Yue Yang was rather embarrassed. It seems that his image in Yue Yu’s heart had been shattered.

“It’s not only you...” Luo Hua City Mistress blushed. When the Hero (her) fought against the Demon King (him), she was indifferent towards using charm attacks against him. As a married couple, doing those kinds of things were normal. However, being seen flirting in the courtyard made her extremely embarrassed. She used her white fist to hatefully punch Yue Yang’s shoulder and protested coquettishly at Yue Yang. If it was not because of Yue Yang’s wolfy claws, that touched without caring for the time and place, she would also not be this bold and extend her hand inside his pants... Luckily, it was not Fourth Mother who saw it, or else she would be seen as shameless.

Yue Yang hesitated a bit and still decided to go find Yue Yu since

she might really have something urgent.

He noticed that Yue Yu's ears were completely red. Seeing Yue Yang enter, she waved her hands and revealed what she intended to hide: "Xiao San, I did not see anything. Don't think too much about it! I was just going to ask something about runic circles. You should continue your business first. It's fine if you placed your matters first."

Yue Yang was speechless: "...."

Yi Nan's Guardian Beasts were the Small Fairy and the Spirit Mirror. Yue Yang decided to temporarily ignore them.

He would wait for Phoenix Fairy Beauty's return before thinking about it again.

However, He decided to first level up and strengthen Yi Nan's Silver Pegasus and her two Hallucination Butterflies. Yi Nan's weak point was close combat. With the Silver Pegasus, her movement speed would be guaranteed. As for the Hallucination Butterflies, they would be Yi Nan's 'offensive weapon'. Before the Spirit Mirror exhibits its strongest power, they would be Yi Nan's limited offensive power.

In the past, the Silver Pegasus was already silver ranked. After obtaining the luck blessing from the Golden Horseshoe in the Sagittarius Temple and receiving the reward of intelligence, it had become a gold ranked beast.

Right now, it was a Gold Ranked Level Three beast. Because it was not a battle-type beast and was not given any attention, its level up was very slow.

The Hallucination Butterflies were even more pitiful. Although they were evolved from Confusion Butterflies, they were only Silver Rank Level Four beasts. They were inferior to the Silver Pegasus! Grooming beasts was an endless process. Naturally, other people would say it this way, but for Yue Yang that difficulty simply did not exist, especially battle-type beasts that need to eat magic crystals... First, he brought out two orbs, that he had obtained from Sea Clan Innates that he killed in the Graveyard of the Sea and then refined by Nirvana Flames. He gave one to the Silver Pegasus while the other to the two Hallucination Butterflies in order to help them level up.

If it was just the Silver Pegasus and the Hallucination Butterflies absorbing the Innate Orbs alone, ten years would not be enough for them to finish them.

Moreover, they might even explode since they did not have Hui tai Lang's tolerance.

Naturally, Yue Yang would not sit down and watch such a tragedy happen.

Yue Yang used his Innate Qi and Nirvana Flames to turn the Silver Pegasus into a burning horse. The Silver Pegasus, who could not support itself due to the pain, collapsed on the ground. It continued to neigh miserable... Its rebirth would only be completed after burning it for ten minutes and evolving from it.

Yue Shuang who was watching on the side almost cried. In the end, the Silver Pegasus completely changed. It increased in ranks. From a Gold Rank Level Three Silver Pegasus it evolved into a Platinum Rank Level Two Silver Horned Pegasus.

Its burning wings were completely reborn.

A Silver Horn was protruding from its forehead and its hooves became golden bright. With every step it took, a small round halo spread.

Even if it did not open its wings, it could float in midair.

Its silver eyes flashed with intelligence... a gold ranked beast was simply too different from a platinum ranked one qualitatively. Ninety-five percent of the time, a normal beast would never become a gold-ranked beast. As for gold-ranked beasts, ninety-five percent of them would never become platinum-ranked... As for diamond rank, there were simply no way for beast to evolve into it. A diamond-ranked beast could only be born under special circumstances.

As a result, platinum rank was actually the evolution point that most beasts yearn for.

After evolving the Silver Horned Pegasus' four legs were much slimmer, its body much more elegant, its body proportions can make others gasp in amazement, its skin was white as snow. It could be said that no horse in the world could ever compare to it. When Yue Yang gifted it to Yi Nan, it was only a small Silver Rank

Level One existence, but it already made Yi Nan unable to contain her joy. Now, when she saw that it had successfully evolve into platinum rank, she excitedly cheered.

Happy hot tears came out from her eyes.

Platinum Rank Level Two was absolutely not the Silver Horned Pegasus' potential to evolve. In its stomach, the orb had not yet been fully digested but it would be enough to let it continue to level up.

“Neigh....” The Silver Horned Pegasus looked up and raised its hoof towards the sky. Its snow-white wings softly supported Yi Nan, hinting her to climb on its back, as if it wanted to bring Yi Nan to play in the skies. Faster than Yi Nan, the impatient Yue Shuang quickly climbed on its back and grabbed its elegant silver mane. She shouted in high spirits: “Fly, I want to fly high...”

Yue Yang did not have time to accompany Yue Shuang to play and turned to look at the two Hallucination Butterflies.

Yue Yang had already seen through their evolutionary direction with his Heaven Eyes Divine Vision. They were different from the Silver Horned Pegasus that could be ridden. They would become cold-blooded blood sucking Hallucination Butterfly Demons, Gold-ranked humanoid-type beast with demonic body. They would be able to confuse, poison and paralyze their foes and suck blood...

Like this, the Hallucination Butterflies would already be impressive, but could they become even more impressive?

For example, could he add Night Mare and Demon Eye's power to it?

Yue Yang pondered...

Chapter 496 – Ancient Titan Tree

Yue Yang fused the Sea Clan Innate's Orb, Nightmare's Soul Pearl and Demon Eye's Crystal to make the Hallucination Butterflies evolve. Different from the Silver Horned Pegasus, the Hallucination Butterflies once more entered into cocoons to further evolve.

Yue Yang's prediction came true.

After their chrysalis period, the two Hallucination Butterflies would definitely become terrifying Hallucination Butterfly Demons when they come out of their cocoons.

They were not ordinary Hallucination Butterfly Demons. By taking in Nightmare and Demon Eye's powers, they would also own part of their skills. These would become important skills used to kill off the opponent during a fight... Hallucination, poison powder, blood sucking together with nightmare and demon eye, Yue Yang estimated that even if he doesn't level up Yi Nan to an Innate, just with her own mental power, with two Hallucination Butterfly Demons and Spirit Mirror, she would probably be able to kill off opponents at Innate Level Three and below... In battles where the weaker side wins against the stronger side, Yi Nan might be the one who could bridge the biggest gap. She was even ahead of Yue Bing with her [Intense Poison] Inherent Skill.

Yi Nan also had a silk spitting Spider Witch that was almost forgotten. Yue Yang felt that the Spider Witch's potential wasn't bad and barely acceptable.

If Yue Yang did not know Jiang Ying the Spider Empress, the silk spitting Spider Witch's grooming value wouldn't be big.

Yue Yang would wait for Jiang Ying to wake up, maybe she'll have ways to level up this Spider Witch.

There might even be unexpected surprises.

"Really? Then I'll have to thank sister Jiang Ying lots." Yi Nan nodded her head in joy when she heard Yue Yang. She didn't even mind that Jiang Ying was a personified Dragon Girl. Actually, the silk spitting Spider Witch was still loyal enough not to escape when facing against opponents. It was just that her level was too low and she didn't possess sufficient intelligence, causing her to be scared badly by the Bronze-ranked Barbarian Cow that could use its eyes to insta-kill all life forms.

The Bronze-ranked Barbarian Cow in the past had been dominated by the Phantom Shadow, causing her to turn into today's Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man.

Yue Yang felt that Yi Nan's offensive beasts were too little. The silk spitting Spider Witch's ability to hinder the opponents would be of great help to Yi Nan.

What Yi Nan lacked now was a weapon that could amplify her mental power. It would be best if it was a holy equipment so that even Innate Rankers would be scared witless by her.

Of course Yi Nan's true combat power did not lie in solo fights, but in team fights.

If the team were to be made up of Princess Qian Qian's close quarter attacks with her Prison Emperor Divine Sword, Xue Wu Xia's double layered thunder and frost attacks, the Sickly Beauty's protection with her Crystal Shield, Yue Bing's Intense Poison Inherent Skills, Luo Hua City Mistress's [Spiral Aurora] And Yi Nan's Mental Hallucination...

This combination would probably cause so much headache to Shun Tian even with his Five Transformation Power or the Black Prince even with his Green Phosphorus Ghost Fire.

Yue Yang wondered how Princes Qian Qian and Xue Wu Xia's cultivation went.

Especially Xue Wu Xia who was personally guided by Zhi Zun. Where would she progress until?

Definitely greater breakthrough compared to Yi Nan right?

Could the rogue Tigress completely master the Prison Emperor's Divine Sword?

Yue Yang was anticipating for the return of these two girls. On one hand, he missed them dearly, on the other hand Yue Yang tried to level up Yi Nan and Luo Hua City Mistress's ranks within the constraints of time. One man's strength would definitely be

nothing compared to the strength of an entire team. There was still time. Once they were done defeating the Black Hell King, they would probably head on to Heaven Realm, relying solely on his own power to fight against the Three Great Leaders of Heaven Realm and other powerful Heaven Realm Rankers wouldn't be enough.

Due to the reunion after being apart for a while, Yi Nan changed her usual tomboy attitude and was extra gentle to Yue Yang.

She didn't pester him at night and let him return beside Luo Hua City Mistress.

As long as there's half an hour of private time daily or cultivating the couple's [Body Fusion] together, Yi Nan would be contented. Since she maintained the state of platonic dating, she did not have much desires. Yue Yang's gentle caresses and kisses were enough to satisfy her. Of course, although she would feel a little bit embarrassed, she wouldn't reject Yue Yang's touchy hands. When he reached his hands into her clothes sometimes, she didn't feel uncomfortable, but instead, she would immerse herself in the joy of her lover's caress. It was due to her silent encouragement and ease of mind that their cultivation of couple's [Body Fusion] progressed quickly. When she led Yue Yang into her Soul Realm with her heart and soul, the both of them reached an even higher zenith during their couple Body Fusion.

As compared to Yi Nan, the progress made by Luo Hua City Mistress and the Sickly Beauty were naturally greater as they would cultivate married couple's [Body Fusion] almost every night.

Yue Bing was extremely hardworking. Under the occasional guidance of Yue Yang, her close fight combat skills improved the most.

Yue Yang had already prepared for her Thousand Years Old Treant Generals' level up in advance.

Under the aid of the Wisdom Fruit, Everlasting Leaf, Lustrous Branches, Underground Sweet Spring, and the Evil Tree Root of the Evil Millennium Ancient Tree, Yue Bing's two Thousand Year Old Treant Generals started to evolve. Green light filled the space as a golden ray shot out from the treant. Yue Yang used the Nirvana Flame to burn away the Thousand Years Treant General's leaves and bodies, and then used his Innate Qi to regenerate them. Under the help of Yue Bing's Green Light Tree Demoness, the burning Treant Generals continuously grew in agony, as they were forced to unleash their full potential.

Their tree barks broke apart.

The bark inside lengthened together with their branches as delicate green leaves grew out from the fire.

A golden ray connected the two Treant Generals.

When they were around twenty meters tall and about to stop growing, they got ready to turn into Ten Thousand Year Old Ancient Tree Kings.

Yue Yang had already prepared two buckets of Titan's blood to be poured onto the tree barks. Upon seeing it, the Green Light Tree Demoness used her Spirit Root skills immediately, such that the two evolving Treant Generals could take in the energy in the Titan's Blood with all their might.

The two Treant Generals started to grow crazily at the same time.

Their barks gradually changed, as they lengthened and thickened continuously. It then stopped until they were thirty meters tall.

The barks of the two Treant Generals gradually personified, as enormous pairs of arms began to form, and their treetop looked more like human heads. Their long branches were connected to their heads full of green leaves. Their dark bodies buffed up, and their roots started to become similar to that of long, slender human legs. As Yue Yang carved Heaven Rune Circles on them, their bodies started to change into the skin tone of that of Titan's, causing their dark skin to have a tinge of gold in it.

After Yue Yang channelled through the Heaven Rune Circle, the two Treant Generals leaped into mid air.

With a thud, they crashed into the ground, with their roots anchored deeply into it.

They had officially surpassed the Gold-ranked Ten Thousand Year Old Ancient Tree King.

As they broke through the limit of growth, they mutated and levelled up to become the Platinum-ranked Ancient Titan Tree, a brand new species, and also a brand new beast created by Yue Yang.

Ancient Titan Tree: Beast type Guardian Beast. Platinum Rank Level One. Titan's body. King of all trees, immune to negative disturbances, weakens thunder and lightning attacks. Its leaves will remain green without withering. Its roots absorbs blood of living things and the energy of Earth to regenerate itself. Special skills: 'Entanglement', 'Dizzy Punch', 'Whip' , 'Poison Thorns', and 'Stomp'.

“Brother! “ Yue Bing's face turned red in excitement as she held on to Yue Yang's hand and jumped around.

She hopped and jumped, but felt that it wasn't enough to express the joy in her heart.

She was already very contented to be able to level up her Treant Generals into Ten Thousand Year Old Ancient Tree Kings. Now, her brother even created a brand new Beast, Ancient Titan Tree, uniquely owned by her.

How could she not be touched?

Yue Yu, Yi Nan and the rest were happy for her too. They all went forward to congratulate Yue Bing for owning such a strong new Beast.

Only Yue Shuang looked around for a long time and mumbled. “The trees are huge, but seems that they can’t bear fruits...” This little girl’s priority was to eat fruits, she didn’t care about anything else.

The two Ancient Titan Trees were sufficient to be Yue Bing’s strongest aids.

Next, it would be to groom her element type Guardian Beast, Green Light Tree Demoness. Although the Ancient Titan Tree mutated successfully, it didn’t really significantly amplify Yue Bing’s growth. The Green Light Tree Demoness on the other hand would be of greater help to Yue Bing, and could level up to become a Holy Beast more easily. Ancient Titan Tree? Wait for their wooden brains to develop high intelligence and become Holy Beasts? Impossible!

The problem was that the rank of the Green Light Tree Demoness was still quite low at Silver Rank Level Three.

It would probably require more time to groom her.

“It doesn’t matter. With the two Ancient Titan Tree, I can help Brother with his fight!” Yue Bing was very confident. With these two powerful Ancient Titan Tree, coupled with her own Spirit Manipulation and [Intense Poison] Inherent Skill, her combat power would increase by ten times.

“Indeed, let Bing’er adapt to the control of these two Ancient Titan Trees first. The thing regarding the Green Light Tree

Demoness isn't a pressing issue, I'll think of something that could help Bing'er's Green Light Tree Demoness." Luo Hua City Mistress caressed Yue Bing's little cheeks. Forget about her position as a sister-in-law, even before they had established this relationship, she had already thought highly of Yue Bing, so she naturally dotes on her even more now.

"Thank you sister-in-law!" Yue Bing was the most polite one. If Yi Nan hadn't emphasised that she wanted to be called 'Sister' in front of others, Yue Bing would normally address her as sister-in-law.

As for Luo Hua City Mistress and the Sickly Beauty, Yue Bing had been calling them sister-in-law for a long time already.

While everyone was celebrating the Ancient Titan Trees' birth, Yue Yang saw a big sis, whom he hadn't seen for a long time, walking towards them from the aisle.

She was the Drunken Cat Big Sis.

Different from her usual state, she was very sober.

Tian Luo Emperor Hua Xu Ri received Yue Yang's gift, Titan's Blood, a few days ago. Today, she sent the Drunken Cat Big Sis over to return the favour, that was, to give him a treasure called the Dream Jadeite.

Even before the Drunken Cat Big Sis could fish out the Dream

Jadeite, Luo Hua City Mistress already dragged her away for a chat.

Yue Yang welcomed the little Panda Girl Niu Niu even more than the Drunken Cat Big Sis. The cute little Panda Loli liked Yue Yang a lot too. After greeting the few women politely, she quickly opened up her arms and rushed into Yue Yang's embrace after stealing glances at Yue Yang and realising that there was no one around him. "Brother... Niu Niu misses you very much... Oh yea, Niu Niu made a drawing as a gift for you, Grandpa said that it's very beautiful!" Niu Niu said in a loud voice.

The Grandpa she mentioned was Shui Dong Liu the Old Fox.

Yue Yang was amazed. She knew how to draw? What did the little panda girl draw for him?

Niu Niu looked at the Drunken Cat Big Sis discreetly, before leaning in to speak to Yue Yang. "Don't let mother see it, if not she'll be angry. Mother doesn't allow me to draw anything related to you, this was what Grandpa taught me!"

She fished out a drawing. Yue Yang saw three men drawn with disorderly lines.

On the left there was a tall man with unkempt hair, a fat girl with black and white stripes in the middle and a tall woman with long hair on the right. The three of them stood together hand in hand. Other than that, there was a sun, a moon and stars in the sky, with a few flowers and grass on the ground... Yue Yang comprehended

the drawing when he saw it, but he still feigned ignorance. “Who is this? Is this Niu Niu?”

“Yes, this is me, this is Mother, and this is Brother! Shhh, you mustn’t let Mother see this, if not she will hit my butt...” Niu Niu the little Panda Girl indicated that Yue Yang should keep this precious drawing quickly.

“How obedient of you Niu Niu, I’ll reward you with a maltose candy!” Yue Yang was definitely an expert at coaxing children.

The Drunken Cat Big Sis in the distance rolled her eyes. She apparently knew about this drawing, but she pretended that she didn’t know to take care of the little Panda Girl Niu Niu’s feelings.

Yue Yang coughed lightly as he carried Niu Niu and walked over. “What treasure does the Majesty wish to grant me with?”

The Drunken Cat Big Sis reached out her hand. “ Use your Qi Lan Wine to exchange for it!”

Yue Yang was speechless. He knew that things would turn out like this.

Chapter 497 – The Drunken Cat Big Sis, Vow To Fight

Yue Yang had given the Qi Lan Wine to Jun Wu You, Elder Yue Hai and the Old Fox in the past.

He guessed that the Drunken Cat Big Sis knew about it.

“I have the wine, but you can’t get drunk from drinking it.” Yue Yang quickly acted like an obedient child. If Luo Hua City Mistress, Sickly Beauty and Yue Yu weren’t around, he would probably make the Drunken Cat Big Sis drink until she’s drunk since they were alone.

“Qi Lan Wine is famous throughout the Tong Tian Tower. I haven’t tried it before, take it out quickly.” The Drunken Cat Big Sis was definitely a violent woman before she gets drunk.

She grabbed Yue Yang by the collar.

It seemed that if Yue Yang didn’t take it out now, she would force herself on him on the spot.

Luo Hua City Mistress and the Sickly Beauty were accustomed to this already. But this was because Yue Yang was powerful enough, if it were others looking at the Drunken Cat Big Sis’s crazed violent movement, they would have given her the Qi Lan Wine without her opening her mouth. They wouldn’t even dare to look at her in the eye. Princess Qian Qian couldn’t be compared with the

Drunken Cat Big Sis. Although the rogue Tigress loved to be violent, she would only be rough to people she knew well, she wouldn't be violent to others... But the Drunken Cat Big Sis was violent to everyone, except when she gets drunk. But then when the Drunken Cat Big Sis became drunk, Niu Niu the little Panda Girl would be even more violent to protect her 'mother'!

Yue Yang brought out the Qi Lan Wine, but didn't give it to her immediately. "You are an Innate already?"

Luo Hua City Mistress and the Sickly Beauty were stunned by what he said.

Both of them turned and looked towards the Drunken Cat Big Sis.

The Sickly Beauty wasn't calm like she usually was as she hugged her and cheered. "Sister Ye, why didn't you tell us that you became an Innate? When did it happen?"

"Beats me too." Everyone was left speechless by the Drunken Cat Big Sis's words.

"Mom is only an Innate when she's drunk." Niu Niu the little Panda Girl's words made Yue Yang even more speechless. But thinking of it, that sounded logical too.

"I understand now. You can be in two different states now. When you are sober, you are Lesser Innate, and when you are drunk, you become a Level Two Innate. This difference is abnormally huge. If

this persist, your body wouldn't be able to take it." Yue Yang grabbed the Drunken Cat Big Sis's pulse and channeled his Innate Qi into her body. He then openly used his Heaven Eye Divine Vision to look at the conditions of her body. He arrived at a conclusion. "The reason why you binge drink for such a long time was caused by these two states. Other than your own preference, you subconsciously wish to remain as an Innate. That's why you keep drinking."

"Isn't this good? I can drink and become more powerful at the same time, there's nothing bad about this... I think this is great!" The Drunken Cat Big Sis fought hard to snatch over the Qi Lan Wine in Yue Yang's hands. But with her power, it wouldn't be easy to snatch the thing in Yue Yang's hand.

"Sister Ye, drinking frequently isn't good to your body in the long run." The Sickly Beauty tried to persuade the Drunken Cat Big Sis gently. She had done this over hundreds of time.

"How I can live on without drinking?" The Drunken Cat Big Sis' stand was that she could live without anything but wine.

"So, exactly what will happen if this persist?" Yue Yu was meticulous enough to catch the warning undertone in Yue Yang's words. "Xiao San, tell everyone quickly."

She will become more and more crazed after drinking, and will level up faster and faster in her drunken state. But when she's sober, she will forever remain as a Lesser Innate. When she becomes Innate Level Three and above, her body won't be able to take it, and it will destroy itself. If she drinks this bottle of Qi Lan

Wine, she would fall into deep sleep for a few days, everything she drank will turn into her energy, but every aspects of her body will also be damaged. Her body could still withstand it now, but after she becomes Innate Level Three, her body won't be strong enough and she'll have to drink everyday. She'll feel like she's imploding if she did not drink." Yue Yang warned with a mixture of facts and threats.

Actually, if the Drunken Cat Big Sis continued to drink, she might not implode.

Her body might adjust itself, but she won't be able to level up anymore.

The only danger was that in battles in special regions, the Drunken Cat Big Sis would feel tortured without having wine to drink.

After Yue Yang's explanation, Luo Hua City Mistress, Sickly Beauty and the rest were enlightened. Why does Sister Ye drink like her dear life depended on it? The reason was that she subconsciously wants to drink to remain at higher rank. If her body also felt more pleasant after drinking, it would then become an instinctive habit.

And of course this result definitely wouldn't be the best way to progress.

To become an Innate, drinking would only serve as a strong aid. But one didn't necessarily have to drink in order to become an

Innate.

Moreover, if she continued to drink like this, it would definitely be bad!

“Are there no other ways? Help her think of one.” Luo Hua City Mistress looked at Yue Yang, asking him to contribute an idea.

“Ask her not to drink anymore.” Yue Yang laughed.

“No way, I’d rather die if I can’t drink.” The Drunken Cat Big Sis rolled her eyes at Yue Yang and raised her fist in an attempt to punch him. But he received it with one hand.

“There’s another way, that is, to become an Innate even in your sober state, this closes the gap so even if she’s stronger when she’s drunk, her body won’t get hurt. For example, the impact wouldn’t be huge if she’s Innate level Three when she’s drunk, and an Innate Level Two when she’s sober.” Yue Yang’s words intrigued the Drunken Cat Big Sis. Although drinking was her priority, she also needed to take care of her health, she must not let it be destroyed just like that.

“How can we make Sister Ye into an Innate when she’s sober?” The Sickly Beauty felt that it wouldn’t be an easy feat.

“Make her angry.” Yue Yang laughed as he kept the Qi Lan Wine.

When the Drunken Cat Big Sis was preparing to beat him up, he

noded and indicated that this was the angry state that she needed.

That day when the Eastern Goblin Tribute launched their attack, the Drunken Cat Big Sis killed the abnormally strong Mei Hua Bothers on her own. Yue Yang couldn't figure out how she did it, but he seemed to know why now. Although she wasn't drunk, when she's angry, she would unleash her strength, so she managed to kill her opponent. This was similarly uncontrollable like how Yue Yang becomes invincible and would receive a ten times power up when he's angry.

After Luo Hua City Mistress heard it, she immediately patted his shoulders. "We'll leave Sister Ye to you then."

The Sickly Beauty indicated that she had confidence in her lover too.

Yue Yu left closely after.

Yue Bing and Yi Nan went to cultivate together and tested out the strength of the new beast.

Finally, there were only the Drunken Cat Big Sis and Yue Yang left. Of course there was Niu Niu the Little Panda Girl who was still all smiles, unaware that her mother is going to be at Yue Yang's mercy.

"How hard would being angry be. I always beat up so many people in a single day, but I don't see myself becoming an Innate."

The Drunken Cat Big Sis indicated her disbelief.

“Those aren’t real anger...” Yue Yang threw a golden coconut to Niu Niu the Little Panda Girl and asked her to share it with Yue Shuang. He then waved his hands towards the doubtful Drunken Cat Big Sis. “Follow me, I can promise that you’ll be cured within a few days and you can drink to your heart’s content from then.”

“Really?” The Drunken Cat Big Sis initially didn’t believe Yue Yang, but after hearing that she could drink freely, she was a little intrigued. She will follow him for the wine!

They entered the Practice Hall.

Yue Yang first asked the Drunken Cat Big Sis how she was related to the Night Empress. The Drunken Cat Big Sis refused to answer.

He guessed that the Drunken Cat Big Sis was a junior in Night Empress’ clan. She might even be the niece of the Tian Luo Emperor Hua Xu Ri, making her the cousin of Luo Hua City Mistress and the Sickly Beauty.

Of course, the Drunken Cat Big Sis would definitely be older than Luo Hua City Mistress and the Sickly Beauty. From her cultivation, Yue Yang suspected that she was already a hundred year old unmarried woman. To earthlings, a hundred years old is already considered to be a ripe old age, but to the people of the Soaring Dragon Continent, a hundred years old was still young. To people in the higher levels of the Tong Tian Tower, those who are a hundred years old were considered to be children.

Forget about other things, just taking the Golden Elves for example. Bao'er the big loli was already one hundred and sixty years old, but she was still a loli.

An earthling that was one hundred and sixty?

The bones in the coffin would have rotted already!

To those Innate Rankers who were easily a few hundred or even a few thousand years old those hundred year old warriors were just newbies. Only Yue Yang who became an Innate at twenty years old made the old guys hang their heads in shame.

Yue Yang didn't dare to ask the Drunken Cat Big Sis for her age. He would be asking to die if he did it.

Yue Yang asked for the Drunken Cat Big Sis's name, but she refused to answer yet again.

Of course she had a name, but Yue Yang didn't know it.

"Alright, if you aren't related to the Night Empress by blood then I'm at ease." Yue Yang took out his Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear and acted like a bully who wanted to take advantage of women.

"You wanna fight? This is easy!" the Drunken Cat Big Sis was

fearless as she immediately took out a bronze-ranked halberd from the equipment rack in the Practice Hall.

She had previously used an alias, Dragon Spear Girl, and took part in the Hundred Schools Elite Competition.

If not for the invasion of the Eastern Goblin Tribe, she would have fought with Yue Yang.

Now was just right since she had wanted to fight with him.

Yue Yang indicated that there are rules for the fight: “We’ll fight for three rounds, I will unleash my power to the same level as you, so our fight will be purely based on skills and personal experiences, I won’t use my strength to bully you. But, if you lose, you have to accept my condition, for example, if I request to touch your breast, you cannot resist, understand?”

The Drunken Cat Big Sis was incensed. Her beautiful eyes glared at Yue Yang sharply. “You... “

As if he didn’t see it, Yue Yang waved his hands, smiling. “Rest assured, if you win, I’ll let you touch me too if you wanted to. I won’t resist! If you don’t want to lose, then use your best skills and all your strength. I promise not to fight with help of any one of my beasts, I’d just be a Lesser innate like you are in your sober state. If you can become an Innate, you can surely win against me... If you can’t, then blame it on yourself for being weak!”

The Drunken Cat Big Sis who was preparing to flare up was suddenly tongue tied. Indeed, she was definitely at an advantage in this kind of fight.

And she also understood that Yue Yang said those on purpose to motivate her.

But even so, she couldn't accept it.

This was harassment!

It definitely was... The Drunken Cat Big Sis wanted to throw away the halberd and back out from the fight, she'd rather die from her body imploding. But when she saw the tinge of laughter in his eyes, as if scorning at how cowardly she was, she was instantly angered. She smashed the halberd onto the ground. "Let's fight, if I win, I will make an arrogant pervert like you bark like a dog. You actually dared to tease me, you don't know what death is, do you?"

She unleashed all of her power.

She carried a majestic vibe that was akin to that of raging waves.

The whole Practice Hall vibrated under the shock wave from her outburst. A giant silver dragon shadow flashed above her head.

It wasn't a beast but a Domain. Of course it was still far from a real Domain, but even with this, it was terrifying enough. A Lesser

Innate with an energy near Domain energy. Her enormous power could be seen from here.

“Today is a good day...” Yue Yang was undaunted. He was writing his diary, as he prepared to commemorate this glorious achievement where he could blatantly touch boobs.

Chapter 498 – Ashamed Enemy, I Will Remove Your Clothes

Now, Yue Yang finally understood why those students called this Drunken Cat Big Sis, Dragon Spear Girl.

This was because of her battle skill. Whenever she thrusts with her spear, a dragon's shape appears.

Although she was furious, the Drunken Cat Big Sis still hadn't lost her reasoning.

Her first form 'Little Dragon Finding Path' carried a probing characteristic and pierced towards Yue Yang's heart. She knew that using ninety percent of her strength could not even defeat this brat so she was extremely careful in attacking or else she would lose. Moreover, the only possibility of defeating him was if she could rise to the Innate Realm... To not rely on wine to reach that level was her current goal.

Just for this, she agreed to suffer the humiliating condition of letting him touch her breasts.

Under this pressure, she hoped that she could breakthrough, again and again, and beat this brat into a sorry state.

"Skill is lacking, Qi is lacking, killing intent is lacking." In one breath, Yue Yang pointed out three of her weakness. He did not directly thrust the Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear. He rotated

it and used the spear end to push aside the Drunken Cat Big Sis' halberd. Then, he took advantage of this moment to pull the Drunken Cat Big Sis forward and make her lose her balance.

“Is that right?” The Drunken Cat Big Sis was alarmed. Luckily, she was only probing him. If she used all her strength, she would probably be defeated in just one move.

When Yue Yang swiped the spear head in a circle, she used her waist to bend backwards as if she did not have any bones.

She bent backwards in an arch shape to evade the attacks.

Her spear, that had been pushed away, quickly revolved her body to dissipate Yue Yang's pulling force. Afterwards, she pressed the ground with one hand. She used her explosive strength to go under her legs like a snake and fly towards Yue Yang. The halberd in her hands once again burst out a terrifying spear light, that could swallow all living things, towards Yue Yang. Who could have imagined that the Yue Yang in front of her disappeared in a flash... He immediately appeared close behind her... The Drunken Cat Big Sis was alarmed, she simply could not react to this kind of speed.

She gritted her teeth and angrily thrust her halberd with ten times normal speed to move her body forward and escape Yue Yang's grasp.

In this critical moment, the Drunken Cat Big Sis looked back. If this was a real opponent, she would not do such a thing and only defend her body with all her might. However, she knew that Yue

Yang would not harm her, so she turned her head to see how he would actually attack her.

She only saw Yue Yang use the Dragon Slaying Spear to hit the floor; then his entire body shot towards her like a meteor.

The moment the Drunken Cat Big Sis was too late to respond, a kick flew towards her perfectly round and outstanding buttocks.

If this was not a competition...

The Drunken Cat Big Sis understood, that if this was not a competition, if this was a life and death battle, she would have already received heavy injuries or even dead. The brat could completely deflect her attack and kick her butt.

She knew that this was only a warning but she still felt incredibly humiliated.

Without a doubt, the brat's warning continued perverted intent. He could have kicked anywhere, yet he had to kick her butt!

"I will kill you, you huge pervert!" The Drunken Cat Big Sis borrowed the momentum from Yue Yang's kick and spun in midair. The halberd in her hand shot towards Yue Yang like a poisonous dragon coming out of its hole. This attack carried her fury and faintly contained the power of a giant dragon's roar. The atmosphere in the entire Practice Hall slowed down as if a giant head was devouring downwards from the sky.

“Too slow!” Yue Yang calmly thrust his spear outwards. He did not block the Drunken Cat Big Sis’ attack. Instead, he borrowed the power from her attack and spurred her body forwards. It was like the time when she was probing a while ago, but now, she was using her entire strength and did not have the chance to divert it.

The Drunken Cat Big Sis was able to react quickly and immediately let go of the halberd..

The halberd carried great power and fiercely shot towards one of the walls of the Practice Hall.

With a ‘woosh’, the halberd deeply nailed into the incomparably hard wall. It pierced up to the handle and around it was web-like cracks.

While in midair, the Drunken Cat Big Sis was Yue Yang turn his spear around and used the end to sweep her over. In the moment of desperation, she did not think too much and flew towards Yue Yang’s bosom. She used her hands to tightly hold his waist to prevent him from attacking. Then, she looked upward and prepared to give Yue Yang a german suplex. When she placed strength into her waist, the Drunken Cat Big Sis also discovered that Yue Yang also held onto her waist as the other hand went below her hips and propped up her thighs. Being a step ahead of her, he lifted her entire body up with an irresistible strength.

“Quickly let me down...” The Drunken Cat Big Sis anxiously shouted. She discovered that she would only suffer losses when

fighting against him in close combat.

“I will let go once you admit defeat.” Yue Yang shamelessly maintained this posture and continued to enjoy the feeling of her splendid thighs.

After letting go of the Drunken Cat Big Sis, her clothes appeared to be a bit messy.

Her chest moved up and down as she panted.

Her face was red with humiliation and also red from her anger. Her eyes were like spear point filled with killing intent that wanted to instantly kill Yue Yang.

She glared at him for a long time and suddenly took a deep breath. She fixed her clothes and closed her eyes: “If you agree to a bet, you must accept to lose. Come. Let me warn you, you can only use your claws to touch once. If you dare to touch more than once, I will chop it off!”

Actually, she knew her probability of winning against him was slim, but why did she make a bet with him?

Moreover, to do this kind of bet... She also could not understand why... Of course, she at least understood one thing. If the person betting with her was not this pervert, she would not bet at all. She would rather die than to let others humiliate her. As for being humiliated by Yue Yang, she did not feel any aversion. This brat

had already indecently looked at her for a long time. Letting him touch her only added a little bit to her losses... In the future, she would definitely take revenge once the opportunity arises...

Although the Drunken Cat Big Sis showed an uncaring expression, her heart was actually tense.

Her heart was beating like crazy.

She thought: “So what if I let him rub me this once. Once I win, I will chop off those claws of his!”

Although she consoled herself like this, the shame she felt was unendurable.

She felt his fiery hands extend over. He lightly kneaded her left breast and stopped immediately.

The Drunken Cat Big Sis felt that this was too strange. Only this quick? Why didn't this huge pervert take the opportunity to touch more? It was too different from what she imagined!

She opened her eyes and discovered that the brat was writing a diary.

Writing a diary?

She took a peak and rage immediately filled her eyes.

This was because what was written was: ...When I extended my hands to touch her, she closed her eyes with a happy expression...

Who had a happy expression? She wished she could just kill him, why would she have a happy expression? The Drunken Cat big Sis was really angry to the point that smoke could be seen rising through her seven orifices. She wanted to tear that diary apart, snatch Yue Yang's Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear, chase after Yue Yang and insist on killing him.

Boom, boom, boom!

The entire Practice Hall shook from the battle.

In the garden, Luo Hua City Mistress stopped her hands, that were watering the plants. She looked at the distant Practice Hall and proudly smiled. Then, she continued to take care of her beloved flowers and plants.

Yue Yu, who was sitting inside the Battle Doll Room, picked up the battle doll part, that had fallen from the shaking, and slightly sighed.

In the kitchen, the little Panda Girl Niu Niu, who was helping Fourth Mother wash the vegetables, crooked her head and cutely asked: "Are big brother and mother fighting?"

Fourth Mother slightly smiled and softly said: "They are not

fighting, they are training.”

Yue Shuang, who was hugging a snow-white pillow, drowsily walked out: “So noisy...”

Fourth Mother comforted her: “It would be better after a few more days. Do you want mommy to carry you? You should be able to sleep even if a major disaster happens. Ah, you naughty girl. It’s not that you could not sleep, you just want mommy to spoil you, see how I will spank your butt!” Despite her scolding, she still carried Yue Shuang up after spanking her a few times a punishment.

The little girl was not the slightest bit afraid. She embraced her mother’s neck and smiled.

Niu Niu enviously looked at her. Her expression made Fourth Mother feel sorry for her so she slightly stroked Niu Niu’s face: “If you’re tired, Fourth Mother will carry you to sleep!”

“Thank you Fourth Mother, Niu Niu is not tired.” The little Panda Girl Niu Niu happily shook her head. A sweet smile appeared on her round face.

In the Practice Hall.

Yue Yang calmly performed a shoulder throw and strongly threw the Drunken Cat Big Sis on the floor.

In the midst of joy, he shouted: “[Ashamed enemy, I will remove your clothes!](#)”

(Shiro: This is very confusing... I will try my best to explain. Yue Yang is trying to speak Japanese that sounded like “Te ki sho, u chi to ta ri” (敌将、打ち取ったり) which supposedly mean “the enemy’s general is defeated”. But it sounded like “Ashamed enemy, I will remove your clothes” (敌羞, 吾去脱她衣) in Chinese.)

Actually, the Drunken Cat Big Sis was not injured from the fall. She got up and angrily grabbed Yue Yang’s collar. With a murderous gaze, he looked at Yue Yang in the eye and angrily shouted: “What did you say?”

It was more than enough to let him touch if she lost the bet.

But now, this brat wanted to remove her clothes? If this continued for another round, wouldn’t he already rape her?

Yue Yang accidentally let out his thoughts and quickly explained the misunderstanding: “Actually, this is a misunderstanding. This phrase came from the language of a very vulgar race. It means that I have defeated you!” When the Drunken Cat Big Sis heard it, she became madder: “Just because I let you defeat me, I have to remove my clothes? What do you mean by “Ashamed enemy”, who’s ashamed? Didn’t I accept my defeat? Just because I gave you an inch, you already want a mile...”

“This is really a misunderstanding!” Yue Yang tried to endure laughing with all his might.

“If I defeat you, you must also remove your clothes!” The Drunken Cat Big Sis could not endure this brat’s self-admiration anymore.

“If you defeat me you could say ‘Ashamed enemy, I will remove my clothes so go wash it’.” Yue Yang’s words made the Drunken Cat Big Sis flabbergasted.

“Are there any others?” The Drunken Cat Big Sis felt that these two phrases did not fit since she would suffer losses.

“There’s another one, If you defeat me, you could also say ‘Ashamed enemy, I will remove my clothes so go iron them’.” Yue Yang earnestly replied.

“...” The Drunken Cat Big Sis almost fainted. The final phrase could not even be compared to the first two!

The Drunken Cat Big Sis felt the blood in her body boil and seized Yue Yang up. She angrily shouted: “I will not remove my clothes. If I wanted to remove, I would remove yours. Go die you pervert! This mother hasn’t settled anything yet. You want to remove my clothes? I will bite you to death!”

Boom, boom!

Another round begins.

Chapter 499 – It's So Good To Have A Little Brother!

The Drunken Cat Big Sis made an exception not to drink today.

But when she was eating, she glared at Yue Yang with a gaze filled with more hatred than one would use to look at their arch enemy. Feeling that she would flare up at any moment, Luo Hua City Mistress hurried Yue Yu to sit on one side of the Drunken Cat Big Sis while she sat on the other, preventing the Drunken Cat Big Sis from grabbing any opportunity to flip the table.

Everyone was sensitive enough not to talk about what happened so they did not touch anything about her cultivation with Yue Yang. They did so to prevent her from becoming incensed and confront Yue Yang as a result.

Without her saying anything, everyone had already known that she had been taken advantage of.

Forget about Yue Yang being extremely powerful, he had undergone repeated cycles of cultivation already. By just being a Level One Innate, Yue Yang had the power of a Level Six Innate. Even if he lowered himself to a Lesser Innate, Yue Yang did not even need to use his trump cards, the Nirvana Flame and the World Exterminating Wheel, to defeat the Drunken Cat Big Sis. Even if she becomes a Level Two Innate in her drunk state, she would still be far from the power Yue Yang possessed.

To put it short, if she wanted to defeat Yue Yang in his Lesser

Innate state, she would have to level up to become an Innate Level Four or even Level Five.

Even so, it had to be under the condition that Yue Yang didn't use his Beasts, and is solely relying on his skills.

"I'm full." The Drunken Cat Big Sis ate a bowl of rice angrily as she gave Yue Yang a death glare before she left.

She was already very angry.

It was because of Fourth Mother that she was willing to eat on the same table as Yue Yang.

Suppressing the urge to drink, she returned to the Practice Hall and continued to cultivate. Although she was angry, she wasn't stubborn. She practiced all the skills and methods Yue Yang used on her in the morning over and over again, turning his skills into her own. While she kept waving the Gold-ranked Dragon Slaying Spear as she practiced, she gradually gained some understandings... If she didn't attempt to practice, she would never know the secrets that lied in Yue Yang's combat skills, and she would never know the true gap between them. She wouldn't even know that she could use a spear like this, and its use in counteracting the opponent's moves...

The more she trained the more shock she received.

Although she knew that there was a giant gap between Yue Yang

and her, she never thought that he could surpass her in terms of combat skills by so much.

She was best at using spears while he would probably be best at using knives or swords.

He could land her in such a sorry state even without using his Hui Jin Magic Blade and the Crescent Blade, so if he had really used them, then she'd probably... Thinking of this, she calmed herself down and sorted her thoughts. She tried to copy Yue Yang's moves as much as possible in an attempt to understand his state of mind then.

Since he was stronger than she was, it was appropriate for her to copy his skills.

It'd be best if she could surpass him using the skills she learnt discreetly from him. She would then use them on him to make him incensed.

Just when the Drunken Cat Big Sis was focused on learning his skills, Yue Yang got started on creating his own Battle Doll. He had prepared all the components already, and not to mention, he's got the Dream Jadeite, Titan's Heart and God's Blood now. The Sickly Beauty was almost done with studying the Heaven Rune Circle on the Golden Coffin too and would probably complete it within a few days. Yue Yu had categorized the drawings of the weapons of the Battle Dolls and other necessities. The only thing left was waiting for Yue Yang to work on it.

“Let’s create the Angel’s Blade on the Battle Doll at a later time! You really don’t want to level up your Angel’s Blade?” Yue Yang felt that the supreme Silver-ranked Angel’s Blade on Yue Yu had weakened. Since he wasn’t sure when the Battle Doll could be completed, Yue Yang wanted to use the best components to level up Yue Yu’s Angel’s Blade.

“Nope, this is already the best to me.” Yue Yu quickly shook her hand. Her heart warmed up with the mention of the Angel’s Blade created by Yue Yang.

“Actually, we have enough components.” Yue Yang tried to persuade her.

“That’s only the best estimation... I’m not the main fighter, my job is to heal everyone, so the Silver-ranked Angel’s blade is enough. Moreover, it’s better than most of the Gold-ranked treasures.” Yue Yu was reluctant to make Yue Yang waste more components on her, and also, this current silver-ranked Angel’s Blade could already make people in awe and envious of her.

“Alright!” Yue Yang gave up persuading her. He then got out the second inheritance left by Yue Gong—the mysterious crystal pillar.

It spanned over ten meters, with a width of two meters and thickness of one meter. It had a wide base, straight body and a slightly sharp top. It was filled with energy as numerous Heaven Runes were carved on the surface and insides of the crystal pillar.

It gave off a pale white glow, and a faint rainbow-ish shimmer.

Its base was chipped, as if dug out by another sharp treasure.

This was what that puzzled Yue Yang the most.

Yue Gong wasn't a strong warrior, and he didn't have any equipment, so how did he dig out this part of the crystal and use it as the core to move the beasts?

Yue Yang tried to use the Platinum-ranked Hui Jin Magic blade to cut it, but it couldn't cut through this mysterious crystal pillar. The Hui Jin Magic Blade was usually very useful towards other metals and could slice them like they were clay. For the Hui Jin Magic Blade to be unable to cut through the crystal pillar, its sturdiness was clearly shown.

“Let's try using the God Killing Dagger!” Yue Yu saw Yue Yang cut other components using it, but she wasn't sure if it could cut through the crystal pillar.

“Eh?” Yue Yang realized that the Holy-ranked God Killing Dagger was indeed different.

Under the support of his innate Qi, he slowly shaved a bite-sized crystal shard.

How did Yue Gong manage to shave such a large portion of the crystal pillar without the Holy-ranked God Killing Dagger and Innate Qi? Yue Yang really didn't understand why!

Moreover, merely shaving it wouldn't do.

The core of all Battle Dolls must be either spherical or diamond shaped.

How did Yue Gong achieve this? Without Nirvana Flames, how did he melt the crystal shard into spherical or diamond shape? Doubtful, Yue Yang used large amount of Innate Qi and Nirvana Flame that had burned for half an hour to melt the few crystal shards into crystal spheres.

Yue Yu saw that Yue Yang was perspiring profusely, so she wiped them away heart achingly time after time.

Since she couldn't help him in the creation, she could only help by taking care of his well being... Seeing Yue Yang's vexed and doubtful look, Yue Yu wished that she knew all the answers in the world and tell him all its secrets, so that he could stop wrinkling his eyebrows.

Yue Yang didn't know the way to make crystal spheres from crystal shards as it wasn't recorded in the Puppet Encyclopedia.

So, he could only use the most foolish way, that was, to use force.

He unleashed his power to Innate Level Three. He then used the God Killing Dagger coupled with Innate Qi to produce a sharp sword light, which then slowly cut through the base of the crystal

pillar. Afterwards, Yue Yang used the Nirvana Flame blade to slowly melt every line that was cut. He planned to separate the base from the pillar itself and cut the base into irregular pieces that ranged from a few kilograms to over ten kilograms.

Cutting all these made Yue Yang beyond tired.

Surely there was an easier way, but it was a pity that Yue Yang didn't know it.

Using brute force was an inefficient method. Luckily, he had Innate Qi and Nirvana Flame, if not he wouldn't be able to do anything to the crystal pillar.

"You should rest for a while!" Yue Yu could only help by passing Yue Yang water and wipe away his perspirations. She really hoped to be of more help, but too bad she couldn't do more.

"How did he actually do it? How did Yue Gong managed to cause a hole on the crystal pillar?" Yue Yang kept questioning himself.

"..." Yue Yu wanted to answer him very much, but she didn't know the answer either.

"Yue Gong is extremely weak according to hearsay, and he doesn't have any treasures. Forget about cutting the crystal pillar, he shouldn't even be able to move this. This thing isn't tofu." Yue Yang conceded defeat to Yue Gong. He was really a genius that Yue Yang himself felt that he wouldn't be able to compare to.

Yue Yu helped by wiping away Yue Yang's perspirations and helped massage his shoulders.

Seeing that he was comfortable, she increased her strength.

She felt useless that she could only do so much for Yue Yang. However, she was not smart enough so she couldn't help him.

It would be good if Xue Wu Xia or Princess Qian Qian was here. Especially Xue Wu Xia who had been inspiring him the most. She might have some clues.

Yue Yang continued to think for a long time about the method Yue Gong used. As he couldn't arrive at anything, he could only continue to resort to brute force... When Yue Yu was backing off, she saw some of the components there had fallen on the ground. She quickly bent over and picked them up, but before she knew it, her forehead banged onto the Meteorite Vital Gold that was protruding on the table.

She covered her forehead in pain.

Bearing with the pain, she stood up, unwilling to distract Yue Yang and affect his work.

She felt something abnormal in her hand. On reaching it out, she discovered blood stains on her fingers. Turns out that the tender skin on her forehead was torn. She decided to use the Healing

Water to heal it without letting Yue Yang know about it.

Just when she summoned her waterball, a sudden realization flashed across her mind, and she suddenly shouted.

“When did you injure yourself?” Yue Yang raised his head upon hearing her shout and realized that her forehead was bleeding.

“Don’t mind me, I’m fine, go and try it quickly... The reason why ancestor Yue Gong was weak and pale might be due to him constantly losing blood, I mean, he might have used his fresh blood to... Maybe his blood had a certain effect, I don’t know too, but this is my gut feeling, fresh blood might work! I’m not sure if I’m correct since I just thought of this.” Yue Yu was afraid that she would forget about it, so she quickly shouted. Although she wasn’t sure if it was the correct way, her gut feelings told her so.

“Blood?” Yue Yang’s entire body shook when he heard it. There was a light glimmer in his eyes. He was immediately enlightened after Yue Yu’s advice.

He quickly grabbed onto one of the crystal shards and held it in his hand.

He then used the God Killing Dagger to slice his palm.

But there weren’t any activities on the crystal shard long after it was stained with blood.

Yue Yu was utterly disappointed. She saw that her brother trusted her wholeheartedly only to realise that it was the wrong method. She felt very guilty. With tears in her eyes, she rushed to his sides and wanted to heal the wounds on his palm.

A drop of tear dripped onto the crystal shard that was stained with blood.

Suddenly an amazing light was given off.

The entire crystal shard was giving off a blinding white light as numerous Heaven Runes flew up to the sky. They floated in the sky, giving off a bright glow.

Seeing this scene made Yue Yu so excited that she almost suffocated.

They succeeded, turned out that it wasn't enough just with fresh blood, it had to be complemented with tears... Yue Yu wanted to hug her brother and cry, she was finally of some use.

Yue Yang channeled his Innate Qi into the crystal shard, causing the mysterious patterns formed by the runes to form again.

Those solid crystal shards melted like ice and became water. They then accumulated to form a small ball. Using his will, Yue Yang could turn them into crystal beads or diamond shaped crystals. He could shape them into anything he wanted. When Yue Yang stopped controlling them, the diamond shaped crystals gave

out a glow, causing them to harden again and revert back to crystals.

But the shape had already turned into the diamond shape Yue Yang wanted.

“We...we succeeded!” Yue Yu embraced Yue Yang as she cheered crying and laughing. Her excitement couldn’t be described with words.

“Sister Yu, you are my lucky star!” Yue Yang hugged Yue Yu excitedly. He couldn’t suppress his joy, he threw her up and received her when she fell down.

“Eh, Xiao San, put me down... Don’t do this, if people were to see us...” It went on for a few rounds before Yue Yu remembered that she was his sister. She immediately stopped him, and opened up her Angel’s Blade when Yue Yang did it again. She flew two meters away, unwilling to let Yue Yang do it again.

“It was no wonder the weak and sickly Yue Gong could create such a hole, thank you Sister Yu. Eh, you haven’t treat your wounds!” Yue Yang didn’t realize that his affectionate actions appeared ambiguous as he quickly used his Innate Qi to treat her.

“I’m fine, it’s a very small wound!” Yue Yu wanted to reject him. But on seeing his face that was filled with concern, she gave in and let him heal her.

She closed her eyes, and felt his warm hands touching her forehead, causing a cold sensation on her wound.

She didn't feel painful, but instead, she felt joyous.

It's so good to have a little brother!

Chapter 500 – Dream Jadeite

Just like this, Yue Yang became the coach of the Drunken Cat Big Sis during the day, where he would also conveniently tease her and touch her.

And during the night, he would focus on creating the Battle Doll.

With the notes in the Puppet Encyclopedia written by Yue Gong the Ghost Genius and the three six thousand years old Ancient Battle Dolls possessed by the Black Hell King, as a basis, Yue Yang was progressing rapidly since all the components were already prepared.

Yue Yang had already opened up the three Ancient Battle Dolls he got from the Black Hell King's secret base numerous times and studied them.

The three Battle Dolls didn't have genders, but their bodies were made to resemble that of a female's. Maybe through this they could bewitch more people. Who would suspect a beauty to actually turn out to be a robot? Yue Yang also realized that the internal parts of the Battle Dolls were quite similar to that of Cai Yi. As for the other two Battle Dolls named 'Hei Yi' and 'Bai Yi', only their height and body shape differed slightly. If one were to completely cut the their artificial human skin, they were completely similar to the others.

To the Ancient Battle Dolls in the Golden Coffin, these three Battle Dolls were only of mediocre level.

The transformer Battle Doll made by Yue Gong were all low level or below average due to the constraint of certain conditions.

Due to the passage of time and disappearance of technologies, the skills used to make above average and top grade Battle Dolls were already lost.

The Battle Dolls which possess their own consciousness and emotions made by Yue Gong were top notch products similar to the blueprints found in the Golden Coffin. In the drawings, there were a few points stating that there existed a Supreme Grade Battle Dolls during the Tai Gu Period. These Battle Dolls could switch between human form and Battle Doll form, and possess both the characteristics of human beings and Battle Dolls. Not only do they possess life, consciousness, logical thinking and emotions, they also have souls.

These Supreme Grade Battle Doll only existed in legends. Their existences were similar to that of Supreme Divine Weapons.

And the Battle Doll in the Golden Coffin were uncannily identical to Yue Gong's design.

Once they succeed in making it, it would undoubtedly be a Holy-ranked Battle Doll!

It could even turn into a human-shaped Divine weapon!

As for Cai Yi, Hei Yi and Bai Yi the three Ancient Battle Doll, they were probably platinum-ranked... If Yue Yang could think of something to upgrade them, with the power of Runes, they could possibly rank up to the peak of platinum-rank.

Of course, it wouldn't be quite possible for the three Battle Dolls to rank up to become Holy-ranked Battle Doll that possessed life like Battle Angel.

Moreover, if Yue Yang was capable of that, he would have ranked up his Crescent Moon and Hui Jin Magic Blade to Holy-ranked. This would at least increase the power of his weapons.

There were still a lot of possibilities for the Hui Jin Magic Blade since Yue Yang had the Titan's Blood. If Yue Yang could successfully fuse the Flame Lord's Molten Core and Demon Dragon's Crystal, coupled with the Demon Pearl from Dark Golden Specter and the Silver Soul Pearl from Golden Devil, with these five components fusing completely and the addition of Yue Yang's runes, it wouldn't be a problem to level it up to Holy-ranked. But now Yue Yang's ambition was to make it a Divine Weapon... He guessed that he was still lacking certain components...

God's Blood, God's Water, Meteorite Vital Gold, Titan's Heart, Crystal Men Corpses, and Dream Jadeite. He had to keep all these precious treasures to accomplish Yue Gong's third last wish. So Yue Yang had decided to postpone ranking up his Hui Jin Magic Blade.

Firstly, he didn't have enough components;

Secondly, since he had the God Killing Dagger, he had sufficient equipment to use;

And thirdly, since the Black Hell King hadn't launched his attack, it wouldn't be too late for Yue Yang to level up the Hui Jin Magic Blade when the war starts.

"Xiao San, let's slow down. It's not good for your body to lose so much blood in one go." Yue Yu's heart ached for Yue Yang when she saw his crazed act.

"It's okay." Yue Yang used the God Killing Dagger to slice his palm and poured down a large amount of blood. But his body's self-recovery speed was extremely fast, so his wound healed itself at a speed even a naked eye could observe. Even for a huge wound like this, it stopped bleeding after a while, causing Yue Yang to cut open his blood vessel repeatedly in order to make his blood stain the crystal pillar. Yue Yu's heart ached for Yue Yang so much that she cried and tears kept rolling down her cheeks without her having to build up her emotions.

Yue Yang shaped the crystal pillar into all kinds of shapes he desired and fused it with the Crystal Men Corpses he got from the crystal canyon.

He refined the top notch and purest components with his Nirvana Flame and used it to make the Battle Doll's body in Yue Gong's third wish. Even as he exhausted all his crystals and borrowed large numbers of crystals from Tian Luo Kingdom's

treasury, Yue Yang was only able to extract crystal essence the size of a watermelon.

It wouldn't be quite possible to make it into an adult, but it would still barely pass if one were to use it to make the body of a kid.

The best part would be used to make its body.

For the crystal essence that was slightly impure, it would be used to make the Crystal Doll's second form. Because according to the ancient blueprint in the Golden Coffin, this Battle Doll had three forms. The first one would be the 'normal' form, the second one would be 'cultivating' form and the third one would be the 'fighting' form.

Yue Yang would add metals such as the Meteorite Vital Gold and Secret Silver and fuse them together for her third form. They would form her armour, hence achieving the form of the Battle Angel clad in armour.

It was a pity that Yue Yang didn't know how to turn the Crystal Doll into a human body, if not he would definitely have tried to make a Supreme Divine Weapon, the Battle Angel, from the Tai Gu Period.

The God's Blood had already been purified by Yue Yang's Nirvana Flame. Yue Yang even used his own fresh blood to fuse the two together to form a new blood. This was initially impossible as God's Blood would never fuse with other types of blood, but Yue

Yang's bold try proved it wrong. It was an unexplainable success. The huge drop of the new God's Blood would served as the origin of life for the Crystal Doll. As for the blood of the Crystal Doll, it would be a mixture of Yue Yu, the Sickly beauty and Luo Hua City Mistress's blood. Although their blood wouldn't mix together too, Yue Yang succeeded yet again after the fusion of God's water and new God's Blood... But he soon realized that it wasn't enough. If he wanted to make the Crystal Doll similar to that of a human child, he would need more women's blood.

Not only Yue Bing, Yi Nan and the Drunken Cat Big Sis, even Shuang Er and Niu Niu the little Panda Girl all draw out a little of their blood to be added to the pool of new blood.

Only fourth mother rejected directly, refusing to let Yue Yang study her blood.

This puzzled Yue Yang a lot and it made him feel that she's even more mysterious.

Yue Yang had already confirmed the list. It wouldn't matter if the blood essence wasn't enough, there were still the Phoenix Beauty, Xue Wu Xia and Princess Qian Qian. If it still didn't work out, Yue Yang would brace himself to ask Sky Disaster, Night Empress, and Zhi Zun. Maybe they would be willing to offer some of their blood.

And also the Dragon Girl Jiang Ying who was almost identical to any other human girls. The blood of Liu Ye, Xia Yi, and the half elf girl were also in the backup list.

He didn't have to mention his own Beasts. Lamia Loli Xiao Wen Li, Bloody Queen Red, Golden Crown Thorny Flower Queen Duo Duo, Barbarian Cow Shadow Ah Man would be added at the end. Of course, these additions weren't urgent, the most difficult question Yue Yang was facing would be the method he should employ to fuse the Meteorite Vital Gold and Titan's Heart perfectly together. The Meteorite Vital Gold would be a necessity, as it would be the divine tool that could grow and evolve together with the Crystal Doll. And it would also be connected with the armor and weapons on its body. Without it, the Crystal Doll wouldn't have a third form.

It wouldn't do without Titan's Heart too, because it would be used to provide the Crystal Doll with most of its energy to perform its action.

Titan's Heart would be better than any one of the Dragon's Crystals, because Yue Yang hadn't seen any Giant Dragon that was of Heaven Rank. On the other hand, Titan's Heart originated from the injured Ancient Titan Wu Su, who was at Heaven Rank Level One, after Yue Yang's refinement using his Nirvana Flame, he conserved the essence of the Ancient Titan's energy, and also since it occupied a small volume, it would be suitable to be used as the Battle Angel's heart, which would supply energy for all activities in its body.

Yue Yang hadn't thought of the best way to fuse the two.

But according to the drawing, Yue Yang understood that he could place Titan's Heart in the second form and use the Meteorite Vital

Gold to connect the second and third forms together.

How would he achieve perfect fusion?

How would he ensure that he would definitely succeed?

Yue Yang was still in the midst of thinking...

"Actually there is a way, that is, to use the Dream Jadeite." Luo Hua City Mistress came out with a way for Yue Yang.

"It's too risky, I feel that this guy's dreams are all sexual ones, so it will definitely fail." The Drunken Cat Big Sis violently objected to it as she didn't think that it would work out.

Dream Jadeite: The Dream Jadeite was said to be the one of the greatest 'wish granting treasure' in the Tong Tian Tower together with the Wishing Dutchman's pipe. It could realize the dream of its owner, no matter what dream it was. It will realize one's wish strictly according to the dream, showing its owner's truest wish. All wishes would be restricted by the Ancient Code, if the dream was outside of the Ancient Code, and unable to be realized, the Dream Jadeite would then break and be gone forever.

Yue Yang knew about the function of this treasure a few days ago, but he didn't dare to use it.

It could be said that this was the best treasure in the world.

It could also be the worst treasure in the world... Everything was dependent on the user. If he were to be a wishful thinking lunatic who dreams of conquering the world or becoming God, then it would definitely break and dissipate into thin air. If he were to be a decent resident who wished to turn rock into gold, then his wish would most probably be granted... During the ancient times in Tong Tian Tower, there existed a type of warrior that could use beasts to control dreams. They were known as the Dream Controlling Summoners. They specialized in realizing dreams of others, but this profession was lost eight thousand years ago.

If not for the ancient book borrowed by the Drunken Cat Big Sis from Tian Luo Emperor, Hua Xu's imperial library, Yue Yang wouldn't know of such a profession.

What was in Yue Yang's dreams?

Are they all sexual?

Of course not!

The reason why Yue Yang didn't dare to use it was because he would normally enter the space of the Sword Spirit Goddess to cultivate during his dreams.

If this dream is truthfully reflected, he'd be dead meat with Luo Hua City Mistress, Yue Yu and the rest knowing his secrets. That was why he didn't dare to use the Dream Jadeite, he was afraid that this amazing thing would reveal all of his secrets.

“It’s a pity that I don’t know what you want exactly, if not I can help you.” Fourth Mother sighed regretfully.

“What?” Yue Yang was secretly shocked.

Could it be that the Fourth Mother’s occupation was the Dream Controlling Summoner, one that had been lost for eight thousand years?

If she wasn’t good at it, she wouldn’t have put it like this. If she knew how to control dreams, even if she wasn’t a Dream Controlling Summoner, she would be a special person. Normal men wouldn’t be able to control their own dreams. With Fourth Mother’s power, she could actually control dreams... This seemed a little suspicious.

Of course Yue Yang didn’t dare to say it directly. He would wait and observe.

“You can try it yourself, San’er, your willpower is enough to control your dreams.” Fourth Mother seemed to have something on her mind and wanted to teach Yue Yang something, but she didn’t say it in the end. She held onto Shuang’er and Niu Niu and left, as if she hadn’t said anything and reverted back to being any other normal mother. Yue Yang wanted to learn from her very much, but he couldn’t force it. It wouldn’t hurt to try anyway.

If this Dream Jadeite broke, the worst case would be spending huge amounts of money to buy another in the Sixth Floor of Tong

Tian Tower.

Yue Yu supported Yue Yang too: “Xiao San, try it, I think you’ll definitely succeed!”